

101 Sermons on God and Government

Jesus is the King of kings



*Psalm 2:1 Why do the heathen rage, and the people
imagine a vain thing?*

B R O O K Y R S T O C K T O N

101 Sermons on God and Government 1.3



**Brooky R Stockton, PHD
Pastor / Professor Theology, ret.
PO Box 884
Tijeras, New Mexico (87059)**

August 2023

<https://nikeinsights.famguardian.org/>

<https://famguardian.org/>

<https://sedm.org/>

Table of Contents

Table of Contents	III
Preface	VI
Dedication	VII
Disclaimer	VIII
FUNDAMENTALS	9
1. The Authority of Christ	10
2. Kiss the Son All Ye Nations	17
3. Towards a Theology of Politics	24
4. Cultural Foundations	33
5. The Rule of Law.....	35
6. A REBEL’S PRAYER.....	45
SERMONS FROM THE OLD TESTAMENT	47
7. People Think Government is God	48
8. Government is Not God.....	49
9. Hope in the Midst of Political Turmoil	58
10. The Genesis of Government.....	67
11. Foundations Stones of Nation Building	76
12. The Curse of Civil Government	88
13. Understanding Statism.....	98
14. Statism in the Bible	101
15. The Idolatry of Statism	113
16. When the Wicked Rule	125
17. THE GOVERNMENT’S PSYCH-WAR AGAINST ITS CITIZENS	128
18. Be Still and Know that I am God.....	135
19. Fret Not Because of Evil Doers	139
20. Biblical Standards for Civil Rulers	150
21. America’s Politicians lead Us Astray	164
22. Biblical Qualifications for Public Office	166
23. The Civil Pentecost.....	169
24. When God Hides Himself from a Nation	171
25. The Doctrine of Clean Hands	180
26. Patriot Fights Bean Tax Collectors.....	181
27. Naked and Afraid	183
28. Hemlock Justice	189
29. A Polluted Nation	195
30. The Propaganda War.....	198
31. The Death Penalty	199
32. Banned from the King’s Chapel	208
33. Enemy of the State	212
34. The Executive Order that Saved the World.....	221
35. Habakkuk: the Man Frustrated with Politics	228
36. The Lord Controls Politics	242
37. Joy in the Soul	248
38. Ten Marks of a Dying Society.....	255

Lecture Notes

39.	Stop Praying for Politicians	269
40.	God’s Judgment on a Nation	278
41.	The Politics of Division	283
42.	Christians Must Learn the Art of War	288
43.	Nice Christian Soldiers	293
44.	Government Shall Not Steal.....	298
45.	How God’s People Are Easily Enslaved	312
46.	WHAT IS TREASON	320
47.	When Government Turn Bad	326
48.	A Government of Wolves.....	329
49.	The Reason for the Rise and Fall of Empires.....	331
50.	Shall I Not Punish A Nation Such as This?	338
51.	Praying Against Politicians	343
52.	Preachers that Don’t Bark	345
53.	The Man Who Disobeyed the Government.....	354
54.	How to Respond to God’s Judgment on a Nation.....	359
55.	Israel’s Holy War.....	363
56.	The Biblical Doctrine of Self Defense	367
57.	The Revival King.....	378
58.	Cleaning Up the Deep State	385
59.	A Biblical Model of Succession.....	389
60.	How to Deal with a Tyrant.....	395
61.	Samson: God’s Freedom Fighter	403
62.	Faith in the Fight	416
63.	Mischief Thru Law	421
64.	The Rule of Law.....	426
65.	Theonomy.....	433
66.	Hope for Godly Causes	435
67.	An Artillery Psalm	439
68.	Why You Should Not Trust Politicians.....	444
69.	Lift up ye Heads, O Ye Gates.....	447
70.	A Psalm for Presidents and Governors	452
71.	The Politician’s Psalm	459
72.	Is there Hope for America?	465
SERMONS FROM THE NEW TESTAMENT.....		471
73.	How Jesus Drove Government Official Insane	472
74.	World Peace, “Hell No!”	475
75.	Jesus v. the Pharisees	478
76.	If Jesus Lived in America	480
77.	Herod v. Peter	485
78.	Sweet Jesus Whippin’ the Banksters.....	487
79.	Salvation by Caesar	490
80.	Are All Powers from God?	494
81.	No Duty to Government	506
82.	You Can’t Serve God and Government	509
83.	Viva Christo Rey	513
84.	Mixing Religion and Politics	520
85.	What Would Jesus Do?.....	527
86.	How One’s Theology Impacts Politics	528
87.	The IRS is Head of the Church.....	537
88.	Can’t Always Obey the Government	542
89.	No Such Thing as Righteous Rebellion	552

Lecture Notes

90.	Taxation and the Bible	562
91.	Did Jesus Pay Taxes?.....	573
92.	The Law and Taxation	588
93.	Should Christian Pay Taxes to Caesar?.....	591
94.	Is there a Curse on 501 C (3) Organizations?.....	611
95.	Seduction Through Idols	619
96.	A Message from Reverend Cows.....	628
97.	The Porn War.....	634
98.	Whistling in the Wind	639
99.	Christ’s Authority Over the Kings of the Earth.....	645
100.	The Christian Battle Cry	656
REFERENCES		663
BIBLIOGRAPHY		665

Preface

From sunrise to sunset, politics plays a big part in our lives. We are drowning in talk show programs where everyone has an opinion on everything.

Who doesn't feel like the monkeys are running the zoo in Washington D.C? We are a society that boasts in the *rule of law*, but we are a people *ruled by law*. Over governed, we are exhausted trying to keep up with crazy governors and lunatics in Congress that believes in 97 genders, homosexual marriages, baby killing, and the invasion of unlimited number of illegals from south of the border.

Legislators force us to hate them. What do we do? Where do we begin in trying to address the political madness of our time? The Bible, of course!

We need to develop a Christian World View on the subject of Christian Law and Government.

The Bible is all about law and politics, yet we never hear sermons calling governors and congresswomen to surrender themselves to God's law-order. Pastors go to school and study the Bible historically, linguistically, culturally, and theologically. But, very few are ever trained on the subject of law and politics in the Holy Scriptures.

Good Christians feel battered by the antichrists in office and many adopt a strategy of private pietism that makes them irrelevant in battle for political sanity.

Thus, this work is a step towards a Theology of Government - - ammunition for the Christian soldier engaged in the battle for truth.

This is a collection of unedited sermons with different styles and formats, lectures, and articles that reflect my thinking on God and Government from the Word of God over decades. It is not politically correct and often takes on "third rail" issues. In putting a dogmatic view forward, I take a great risk of being disaffected by the reader.

This work is not faultless by any means. This is collection of rough study notes compiled over years of ministry and not edited chapters of a book. This work is saturated with my own political presumptions. It is not a novel to enjoy as much as it is a Resource on the Bible and Politics. You may find much with which you disagree. Please don't take umbrage over paragraphs with which you differ. Just make sure you are moving toward a Biblical world view and not against it. Like a fish dinner, enjoy the meat and throw out the bones. Read it, study it, use it, perfect it, and adapt it to your own ministry for the glory of God.

Brooky R Stockton, pastor and retired professor of theology

Dedication

Dedicated to Chris Hansen:

This student of Scripture educated me about God and government while I was still a professor of theology. His love of the Word, integrity` and skills as a researcher, and insights into the subject of law and government was like beacon from a lighthouse during a midnight storm on the dark, blue sea. Not only was I blessed by his insights, the whole nation is better for his understanding. Consequently, I believe seminaries needs to develop Biblical Studies on God and Government, incorporate them into classes on systematic theology, and to make it mandatory for seminary students.

Disclaimer

This book is not anti-government. It is anti-corruption in government.

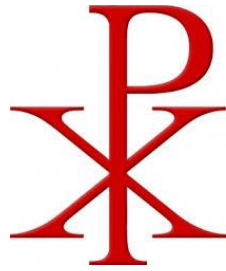
Because the present political climate is pro-Zionism, pro-lawlessness, pro-censorship, antichrist, and antichristian: and, because government employees and government media is more sensitive than a step-mother about criticism, it is necessary to warn government officials of the following:

PUBLIC NOTICE

NOTICE to persons in commerce, State and Federal Government offices and officials, including NSA: All emails proceed on the presumption of privacy. By capturing, reading, storing, and filing any publications from or to Nike Insights nunc pro tunc to 1946, you agree to pay me a fee of one million dollars in U.S. gold dollar coin per email stored, filed, retrieved, printed, or catalogued — Brooky R: Stockton, living soul, under the common law of the LORD God.

Part I

FUNDAMENTALS



1. The Authority of Christ

Revelation 12:10

Christ's Kingdom Authority

Revelation 12:10 The Kingdom of our God and the authority of Christ have come . . . and they overcame . . .

Matthew 28:19-20 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power (authority) is given unto Me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

The Holy Scripture informs us that the Kingdom of God arrived in history in and through the ministry of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Peter proclaimed Jesus' saving work during this age and His session at the right hand of God as Lord and Christ.

Consequently, the saints through the centuries were able to obtain a new victory over evil in the progress of redemption. Much of that victory was due to the insight those believers had into the authority of Christ.

While the Savior was on earth, the Centurion obtained a great healing for his servant because of his great faith regarding the authority of our Lord. Jesus marveled! The soldier's insight was rare and extraordinary . . . something frightfully unknown in Israel . . . something missing in the coffee cup church.

Matthew 8:8-9 ". . . just say the word, and my servant will be healed. For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell this one, 'Go,' and he goes; and that one, 'Come,' and he comes. I say to my servant, 'Do this,' and he does it."

Does anyone doubt that our view of God is too small? Our understanding of Christ's authority is often blurred, foggy, cloudy, and unclear. Nothing is more needed among Christians today than a fresh, unclogged, unblocked, enlarged view of our Lord Jesus Christ. There are galaxies of truth yet to be discovered in the universe of God's Word about the King of kings.

The Great Commission should kindle a blazing fire within the furnace of our hearts. Our eyes should see new vistas of hope, of dominion, of conquest not yet achieved. Can we see a new world made wholly Christian—a world acknowledging Christ as the "King of the Nations" surrendered to His law-order (Jeremiah 10:7)?

Under the countenance of Jesus' charter we can move out of death into life; out of timidity into a fierce boldness; out of private, flickering spirituality into bold public proclamation that Jesus is Lord. If we see His authority accurately, we can move from the mundane to a mighty influence over nations of the earth for Christ.

*Malachi 1:11 For from the rising of the sun even unto the going down of the same my name shall be great **among the Gentiles**; and in every place incense shall be offered unto my name, and a pure offering: for my name **shall be great among the nations**, says the LORD of hosts.*

*Revelation 2:26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will **I give power over the nations**:*

Before we serve, we must SEE— see His authority.

Before the commission comes the charter, “All power is given unto me in heaven and earth.”

The word “power” is the Greek word “*exousia*” which means “*authority*.”

Authority denotes power, permission, privilege, rule, control, influence.

*“The power, and the Kingdom of our God and the **exousia** of His Christ has come . . . and they were victorious because of the blood of the Lamb . . .” (Revelation 12:10).*

We have been purchased by Another; that is, we are under His care, His jurisdiction, His power, and His authority. Anyone who messes with us, messes with the King of kings.

To understand His authority is to stand under His authority; and, to stand under His authority is to stand up to governors, rulers, officials, judges, lawyers, and government employees.

We are familiar with little dominions of authority—authority over a possession; authority in a job or over a department—even authority over a nation.

But His charter is the most vast, most sweeping, most universal claim ever made by a man. He claims authority over heaven and earth; over the seas and continents; over the seen and the unseen; over the known and the unknown; over the tangible and the intangible.

Any church that exchanges the authority of Christ for the authority of the state commits **spiritual fornication** and **abandons** the authority of our Lord (Revelation 2:20). We cannot claim the authority of Christ when we are

operating under a state that claims sovereignty over the church. Authority over the nations demands free pastors in free churches—free from congressional legislation and IRS regulation.

Before we serve, we must see that He claims jurisdiction over the entire universe of created things.

The word “all” challenges our shallow view of His authority. Our understanding of Christ is more like trekking through a puddle on a side walk than sailing on the ocean of truth. The text says that He possesses leverage over the earth with its waters and continents, its weather and storms, its people and its governments. He claims dominion over heaven, stars, and asteroids; over the unseen burning fires of hell with all its demons and tormented dead; over the unseen celestial city with all its angels and saints in all their comfort, peace, and joy. There is no atom, no microbe, no virus, no animal, no man, no king and no nation over which He does not ledger a claim.

Running through His fingers are the lives of men and women, the countless movements of history, the uncharted risks of business, the crushing ambitions of tyrants, and the innocent desires of unknown saints.

As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him -- John 17:2.

This was not the first time Christ claimed to have superior authority. Prior to His triumphant resurrection, His miracles demonstrated his assignment over nature, disease, and death. He even claimed to have power to forgive sins and then to heal paralyzing diseases in evidentiary support of His assertion (Matthew 8, 9).

Jesus was an uncredentialed Jewish Rabbi— a speck floating for a moment on the sea of ages declaring in a prayer that He has authority over all flesh for all of time (John 17:2). From the struggling, warm embryo in the womb to the cold corpse in a tomb, Jesus announces his jurisdiction. All flesh is His! Mankind with all its weakness and mystery; mankind in all their moral defects and scientific accomplishments, the generations are His! The generations past and the generations to come; the Roman and the Chinese; the black and the white; the Russian and the Columbian—all have been received by Christ from the Father—some destined for eternal life and others destined for eternal judgment (Proverbs 16:4; John 3:36).

Jesus announced his authority over all flesh at the most inopportune moment— just before His ordeal of crucifixion. Civil authorities marked Him as a threat to national security. Religious leaders painted him as some kind of tax protestor discouraging men to pay their “fair share” to Caesar (Luke 23:1ff). Within a few hours, He was arrested and the fickle crowd demanded His

execution—“Crucify him!” His little band of followers and the thin cord that bound them to Him was about to snap. One of his disciples committed treason and exposed His location. His sheep scattered. His movement collapsed. His reputation crumbled like a sand castle facing the ocean surf. *And, this is the hour he chose to reveal His universal authority over mankind—the night before his trial!*

Emerging from the terrors of the cross and the hopelessness of a dark, damp tomb, Jesus reappears to announce to His disciples and enlarged claim—a claim so gigantic it encompasses heaven and earth, the visible and invisible, physical and spiritual.

From the hydrogen atom to the M1 Galaxy, from sunset to sundown, from east to west Jesus affirms His comprehensive authority. Jesus claims to be the ultimate Power in life and in death; in heaven and in hell; in science and religion; in politics and law; over business and family:

“For of him and through Him, and unto Him are all things. To Him be glory forever. Amen” -- Romans 11:36.

The Crisis

But, this is not how the average Christian perceives our Lord. His authority today is relegated to a little sphere we call “spiritual.”

Americans are propagandized to believe there is separation of church and state; a necessary segregation of the secular from the spiritual; a necessary disjunction of man’s God’s government from man’s government. The church has lost its ground and been swept out to sea by floods of humanism.

Christianity has been nationalized instead of the state being Christianized.

A few might claim Christ has jurisdiction over the church. Seldom will one come across a Christian that asserts Christ has jurisdiction over the state. Pastors pound the pulpit demanding Christians submit to government, but those same pastors never demand the government submit to Christ! Never! Can you say “apostasy”? The modern American has limited Jesus’ jurisdiction to the human heart, to the piestic struggles of the inner man, to spiritual activities within the walls of the church. No longer is He proclaimed King of kings and Lord over presidents, parliaments, and judges.

The highest glory of the American Revolution was this: that it connected in one indissoluble bond civil government with the principles of Christianity -- John Quincy Adams

The Bible is the rock on which our Republic rests -- Andrew Jackson

In the mind of a propagandized American, religion is irrelevant to the political issues of our time. In some countries, the church is little more than a vassal of the state. Instead of rescuing the state from the chains of paganism, the church has been converted to secularism.

It has been said that when the gospel began in Jerusalem, the church became a fellowship; when it moved to Greece, it became a philosophy; when it went to Rome, it became and an organization; when it came to America, it became a business!

Instead of the church becoming a prophet, it has become a “non-prophet” 501-c-3 organization under the thumb of the Internal Revenue Service. How can a pastor claim to represent Christ, when he is under the authority of a government agency? No man can serve two masters. No man! No pastor; and, no church.

But, it is worse than this. Our national motto is, “In God we trust.” But, humanists have taken control of the state and advance the theory that to be an effective government, the government must be secular free of Biblical influence. The modern state retains its claim to sovereignty. Liberal politicians believe the state must remain neutral. . . and that somehow the secular, American system of government can unite Christians, Buddhists, Muslims, and humanists around the principles of a secular state—that to remain secular is not only a duty but a priori of leadership.

Even the U.S. Constitution is totally a secular document. In other words, there is tremendous resistance to the prayer “Thy Kingdom come” in American institutions. American corporations and the minds that control them are mission fields for the Christian gospel.

The Cure

The first duty of a Christian is to acknowledge the supreme authority of the Lord Jesus Christ over all things:

-over the earth (Psalm 24:1), over men (John 17:2), over politics, and over kings (Revelation 1:5) and governments (Ephesians 1:19ff: Colossians 2:8-10).

“The kingdom of God is . . .” He is the “King of the Nations” (Revelation 15:3), and all have a duty to honor Him and to surrender to His law-order (Jeremiah10:7: Psalm 2).

In accepting His authority we receive rights for the value¹ we attach to His words — the right to conduct His business on Earth as His ambassador. Without rights, how could Christ drive out money changers and cleanse the temple?

Without rights, a lover is a fornicator;

Without rights a possessor of a thing is considered a thief;

Without a contract a tenant is considered a trespasser.

Without rights, Christians have no authority to preach the gospel.

Because Christ is in authority, **we have obtained rights to do His business.**

Not only does God call men to confess Christ as Lord, but for governments to confess Him as Lord and to be wholly Christian! Both church and state are called to acknowledge the kingdom of God and to support God's law-order— one institution as the ministry of mercy and the other as the ministry of justice.

But, if a state does not accept His authority, it does not possess de jure authority. It becomes a de facto government using force to advance its will upon the people.

When legislators replace Christ's law with man's law-order, then civil Pentecost gives way to Babel and the confusion of tongues (Numbers 11:25; Genesis 11).

Thus, the first and basic duty of man and the state is to recognize the sovereignty of God and to surrender to the authority Christ and His law-order.

The only de jure government is one that acknowledges the authority of the King. All others are de facto actors and imposters – and no Christian has a duty to honor an imposter. While a Christian has a duty to cautiously support a good government, he has *no obligation* to support a government in rebellion against authority of Christ and His law-order.

The second duty of a Christian is to surrender to the divine mandate to make disciples:

to Christianize the nations, to renew the dominion mandate of Genesis 1:26. In giving value to our Lord's command, we obtain the right to conduct His

¹ Accepted for value is a commercial term defined at US Legal as "Acceptance for value is a commercial right that is obtained through instruments such as tax bills and violation tickets. It is a qualified endorsement or modified signature on an instrument. By accepting an instrument for value, one becomes the holder in due course of the instrument and can enforce the instrument on the issuer."

business. In giving value to our Lord's command, we obtain the right to set up churches and schools and hospitals. No government can legitimately deny our right to educate men.

The gospel is not a private matter; it is not for the Christian to obey while leaving other men to do as they please. Discipleship means the surrender of the man, his family, his business, and his state to the authority of Christ. The gospel and the law upon which it is based is not only cogent for Christians but for all men and all of man's institutions. *The law is valid for Christians because it is valid for all men.*

Thus, the Great Commission is a renewal of the creation mandate to take dominion over the earth by winning lost souls to Christ and to challenge nations to arrange themselves under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ.

The third duty of a Christian is to be an ambassador for Christ—a minister of the gospel to friends, neighbors, and states:

He cannot be anything less than Christ's representative on earth calling men and nations to surrender to the authority of the King. It is neither boastful nor presumptuous to insist on the broadest application of the gospel for men. The thoughtful Christian will not limit his ministry to the sphere of the spiritual, but consciously accept his mandate to apply the gospel to all of life, to all men, and to all of man's institutions. Service for the church will include the call governments to surrender to God's law-order and to confess the sovereignty of Christ. *Anything less is to proclaim the death of God in politics.*

This brings up the *doctrine of interposition* wherein de jure Christian leaders have the duty to confront civil rulers when they violate God's law.

-**Samuel** the prophet confronted Saul the King for his dereliction of duty and even picked up the sword to carry out an ordered execution (I Samuel 15).

-**David** confronted Saul for his unsanctioned death hunt (1 Samuel 24);

-**Nathan** the prophet confronted David the King for his adultery and murder (2 Samuel 11-12).

-**Elijah** intervened in King Ahab's dirty business and rebuked him for murdering innocent Naboth (1 Samuel 21). While most believers will never gain an audience before a president or congressman, those that have access into their presence have the duty to represent God's Kingdom.

The fourth duty of a Christian is to claim His power: "Lo, I am with you always."

When we give value to His Word, we obtain the right to conduct His business on earth. When we give value to His word, we obtain resources for our

kingdom mission. It is like obtaining power of attorney to write checks upon an account. We conduct our business under His authority expecting His supply of grace for the task. The right to represent Him is one matter; power to do His business is another. His presence in gospel ministry is the power we need to call men into the kingdom and to conduct kingdom business among men.

The fifth duty of the Christian is obtain authority—a ministry for Christ:

*2 Corinthians 10:8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our **authority, which the Lord hath given us** for edification, and not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed:*

We need power, but more importantly, we need authority — the right to serve and work and represent Him. Just as mayors and senators and judges receive a commission before they perform the duties of their office, the Christian must have a clear commission from Christ; that is, he must come to understand his authority for Christian service.

When we give value to His Word, we receive authority to act. Authority means we have a right to speak and to conduct the king’s business.

Furthermore, the servant of the Lord should know the limitations of his office . . . as all Christian service has one purpose—the edification of the church.

Romans 14:19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.

Conclusion: There are those who would question the authority of Christ over politics, industry, and economics. The blame, however, rests with churchmen who possess a shriveled view of the authority of Christ – a view which causes churchmen to timidly surrender jurisdiction of the earth to godless men. Because we do not give value to His Kingdom-word, Christian men become powerless in politics. The duty of the church is not to interfere with the proper function of state, of business, of economics, but to assert that final jurisdiction over morals and ethics belongs to Him who has authority over heaven and earth by virtue of His death, burial, and resurrection (J.R. Rushdoony, 1973).

2. Kiss the Son All Ye Nations

Psalm 2

The fundamental fact in this psalm is that God has established His king over the earth and the nations are in rebellion against His authority – which all nations are required to surrender to the authority of the Son.

We live in times of political chaos where madmen grip the helm of government. Against the backdrop of surf and foam of political strife is the source of peace and prosperity. Before us is the reason for all political conflict in the world today, and the solution to every political problem in seed form.

The Psalmists Speaks

Psalm 2:1 Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing?

The word "why" is an interrogatory that can be translated "how" or "what" or "how much." It is a question asked for our benefit. The word "heathen" should be translated "nations." The word "go'em" is translated "people" and "nations" in Genesis 10:5. In Jewry, the term *GOY* is a derogatory term for non-Jews, but that is not the case here. Jews are part of the rebellion.

The verb "rage" ("*raqash*") is only used here, and it means to be in "tumult" or "commotion." The psalmist is asking, "Why are the nations always in a furor, a frenzy, a constant state of irritation, full of madness and hostility? The word "imagine" is the imperfect Hebrew verb "*hagah*." It is translated "roar" or "moan" or "growl" in Isaiah 31:4 of a lion roaring over its prey. It is translated "plot" in the ESV and "meditate" in Psalm 1:2.

The word "vain" is the Hebrew verb "*reek*," used adverbially. It is translated "armed" in the KJV and "led forth" in the ESV in Genesis 14:14. It is translated "*the seven empty ears*" blasted with east wind which is a reference to the seven years of famine in Genesis 41:27; and, "*emptied their sack*" in Genesis 42:35. The idea here is of kings "*emptying theirs nets*" of destruction and mercilessly killing people. We need only look at the madness of the Bolsheviks, Lenin, Stalin and others to grasp the harvest of this rage against God.

Before us is the question of the ages. Why can't nations live in peace? Why are they always at war, always in an uproar, always exist in the surf and foam of the sea of conflict? As we listen to the news, it seems that there is always a regional dispute, a political debate, an infringement, a group of rebels protesting some perceived inequity, a nation in political chaos ravaged by civil war. Some nation somewhere is "emptying his net" aggressively shelling another country for power and wealth and revenge, or defending itself against rocket fire with weapons of mass destruction.

2 The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying,

The kings have set themselves against the LORD. The name "LORD" is the tetragrammaton and clearly refers to God's sovereignty and authority. The title "anointed" is the Hebrew name for Messiah, *mashiyach*, meaning "anointed"--a reference to Christ, the Son of God.

Several facts about the verb "set" needs to be noticed. First, the verb "set" (*tithyetsebu*) is a Hebrew Hithpael, reflexive verb; that is, the kings of the earth are stirring themselves up. The hostility clearly resides in the kings who are constantly declaring war against the LORD God; that is, they want to be gods among men and the only sovereigns on earth. Secondly, the verb "set" is in the emphatic position in the sentence and clearly emphasizes the intense, independent, rebellious nature of kings. The preposition "against" is properly translated, but could also be worded "upon" or "over" the LORD; that is, the kings of the earth have stationed themselves as masters over men, and they claim sovereignty over matters pertaining to the LORD God. The rulers of the earth do not recognize the authority of God and His Law-word over them. They see themselves as the only sovereign.

When Chief Justice Roy Moore placed the Ten Commandments in the corridor of the Alabama courthouse and explained that it represented the need of all Judges to surrender to the authority of the LORD God and His Law-word, the federal judge would have nothing to do with it. The Federal Court declared that, "the state may not acknowledge the sovereignty of the Judeo-Christian God" [morallaw.org].

Before us is a continuation of the question: *"Why have the kings of the earth set themselves up as lords and masters in opposition to the sovereignty of God and His anointed King, the Lord Jesus Christ?"*

The Rulers of the Earth Speak

3 Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.

Now the kings speak to one another. The Hebrew Piel, plural verb "let us break" is cohortive in form and meaning . . . and it is in the emphatic position. The Piel verb communicates intense determination to break from Puritan Christianity. Being in the emphatic position this verb clearly communicates the excessive vigor and profound madness of political leaders united in a new world order that incites rebellion against the Triune God and His law-order.

The term "their bands" is a feminine plural, a reference to the Trinity. "Their" would be a reference to the "us" of Genesis 1:26-28. The words "bands" and "cords" refer to chains or ropes that tether animals. These terms designate the Claim the Creator-God has on all the people of the earth. They are used metaphorically of the sovereignty of the LORD God and the absolute binding authority of His law over mankind.

The new world order encourages rebellion against the authority of Christ and His Law-word, and is hell-bent on bringing in a new world order to build the utopia of kings--wealth, power, and control of man's destiny.

Today, there are no kings who have taken an oath to the LORD God and His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ to uphold His law and to honor Christ save one--the Queen of England. But, she has so violated her oath, she has committed treason against God and the British people. At best, kings take oaths to uphold the laws of man--which by the way, are almost always hostile to God's law-order.

Heaven's Reaction to the Rebellion

4 He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision.

To an informed Christian the hostility of congressmen and our nation's leaders is like a burr under our saddle. We are constantly irritated and agitated by the insanity of our political leaders. Rightly so. Thus, we pray, "Hallowed be thy name; thy Kingdom come;"

How does God respond to the psychotic, sociopathic madness of kings? Well, He certainly isn't threatened by any . . . or all of them! "He laughs!" The term "laugh" (*shachaq*) is translated "to make sport of" in Judges 16:25. It is a term of contempt. The word "derision" (*la-ag*) means "to mock" and is translated "laughed thee to scorn" in 2 Kings 19:21. The temporal power of weak, proud rulers is no threat to the omnipotent power of the eternal God.

5 Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure.

What is the future of the rebel kings? He has a message for them. The verbs "speak" (Piel) and "vex" (Piel) in Hebrew poetry are complementary terms. Both clearly state intense energetic action. The word "vex" is translated "troubled" (Genesis 45:3), "dismayed" (Exodus 15:15) and "terrified" (ESV 1 Samuel 28:21). God is not some sweet, indulgent passive Santa Claus type figure. Before us is the image of deliberate, controlled, intense action of an angry God.

The word "wrath" and "sore displeasure" are also complementary terms. The Hebrew word for "wrath" is "nostril" (*aph*); that is, when a man feels wronged, his nostrils flare. The Hebrew word for "sore displeasure" means "heat" or "burning anger." The imagery before us is that of an angry dragon with flared nostrils blasting balls of fire upon his adversaries. The sudden, stroke illness, stroke, and death of Lenin (1924) after his order (1922) to starve five million Russian peasants comes to mind.

To put it bluntly, God is not happy with the nations. Today, there is no government committed to His law-order. Consequently, He is opposed to the

proud, humanistic states. It is not his will that any of them succeed. All will fail. He will vex them in His wrath.

The Father Speaks

6 Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion.

The Father speaks. "I have set" is the Hebrew Qal perfect verb *nacak* which means "to pour out." The imagery before us is that of a metallurgist heating iron ore in a blast furnace at a smelting plant to pour hot iron into a mold to make steel. The Father emphatically states that He has His king, and He has installed him permanently on His holy hill.

The "holy hill" is a reference to the Heavenly Mount Zion, the city of the living God, the assembly of the saints, the heavenly Jerusalem of which carnal Jerusalem was a type.

This is a decree "written in stone" sort of speak! It is an iron-clad, perpetual, indisputable fact. In contrast to antlers that fall off every season among deer and elk, are permanent horns of power like that of a ram. In contrast to the changing winds and the sands of time are the eternal shores; in contrast to the fading grass on the prairie are the mighty rocks and boulders of the earth; in contrast to the fragile tents of man are the pyramids of Almighty God. In contrast to fragile, weak, temporal rulers is God's eternal, immutable, anointed King. In contrast to the weak, flawed egotists that arise to power out of the sea of politics to ride the wave of temporal power to the sand castles of nations is God's chosen King, the Lord Jesus Christ, established forever on God's holy, eternal mountain. God rules, not man!

Before us is the SOLUTION to all political disputes--recognition of and submission to the Lord Jesus Christ as Head of the Nations. Oh, that the kings of the earth were humbly submitted to the authority of Christ, under oath to obey His Law-word. How different the evening news!

The Son Speaks

7 I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee.

The Son speaks. A public notice is given. The term "decree" refers to a resolve, order, or statute. The first usage of the word "decree" (*choq*) is in reference to land given to the priests by Pharaoh which Joseph, Vice-regent of Egypt, was not permitted to seize or sell (Genesis 47:22); that is, Pharaoh's decree was set in stone. His decree was absolute and permanent. It is like an executive order, but more firm. Thus, God's decree to the Son is absolute, permanent, forever, immutable, and unchangeable.

The decree is one of relationship. The Son is very God of God, eternal, from the beginning. But, at a point in time, if we dare use the term "time," the Father declared His relationship to the Second Person of the Triune God as that of a father to a son. He is now "The Son." The term "begotten" does not refer to an actual birth, but the genesis of a legal relationship. In the movie "Ben Hur," Ben Hur wins the affection of a Roman Senator, receives his freedom, and is declared a son. He existed before the declaration. The decree did not initiate his existence; only a new status. Likewise, between the Father and the Son. The Second Person of the Triune God was declared a Son.

8 Ask of me, and I shall give *thee* the heathen *for* thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth *for* thy possession. 9 Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

Favored by the Father, the Son is granted special favors. All He has to do is ask, and the nations are His. This is the Spirit's way of informing us that Christ claims jurisdiction over all men and their institutions. Both the right and power to rule the nations belong to Christ: "Who is the head of all rule and authority" (Colossians 2:10). But, Christ has done more than ask. He has purchased the nations with His own blood, the currency of the spirit world. The iron sceptre is in nail pierced hands. The nations are as fragile as pottery. The One who made a whip and cleansed the temple will use His rod of iron to smash the nations. Rebels who will not bow the knee will be broken into hundreds of pieces.

The Spirit Speaks

10 Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth.

The Spirit of God gives sweet counsel to the rulers of the earth. The object of instruction are kings, presidents, parliaments, public officials in the executive, legislative, and judicial branches of government. They are exhorted to be wise and receive the following instruction. Unfortunately, however, the nations seem to be in the hands of fools and madmen.

11 Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling.

The word "serve" means "to work" or "to labor" or "to obey." The kings of the earth are exhorted to serve the LORD; that is, to obey His Law-word. The command "rejoice" refers to voluntary service. Holy fear must mix with joy and the privilege of serving the LORD God. Governments are in place to serve the interest of Heaven and the law of the LORD God; to protect human rights and freedom; and, to punish those who infringe on the rights of others.

The phrases "with fear" and "with trembling" is a call to careful and precise obedience to His commands and purpose (Deuteronomy 5:29; 6:2, 13, 24; 8:6; 10:12, 20; 13:4; 17:19; 19:20).

The Spirit is calling for allegiance to the Word of God, not allegiance to a political party or the new world order or to the U.S. Constitution. Oh, what a different place the world would be if we had Christian leaders committed to the will of God and served His purposes to the best of their knowledge and ability. Today, however, it seems we have madmen ruling nations who are hell bent on serving their own lust or Marxist program or the agenda of the new Zionist world order to mention a few.

12 Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.

"Kiss" refers to the ancient tradition of subjects kissing the ring or scepter of a king; that is, of demonstrating devotion and loyalty to the crown. Kings take no pleasure in rebels. To arouse the wrath of a king is to perish like Haman before Xerxes. After the Earl of Essex "half" draw his sword against Queen Elizabeth, she determined to have him executed.

All the kings of the earth all called to "kiss the Son:"

Kiss Him as the Son of God, the historical Christ who appeared in Bethlehem.

Kiss Him as the Creator for "by Him all things are Created."

Kiss Him as the King of the rulers of the earth.

Kiss Him as the only Lawgiver, King, Priest, and Prophet.

Kiss Him as the Savior King Who gave His life to save His people from their sins.

Kiss Him as the Way, the Truth, and the Life.

Kiss Him as the Gateway to God.

Kiss Him as the Mediator between Heaven and Earth.

Kiss Him as the Lamb of God, the Sin-bearer.

Kiss Him as the Way of Salvation.

Kiss Him as the True Israel of God, the fulfillment of all OT promises.

Kiss Him as the Head of the Church.

Kiss Him as the risen, ascended Savior and Lord sitting at the Right hand of God.

Kiss the Son lest He be angry you perish in the way.

Kiss the Son that you may be truly blessed of God with eternal life and enter His kingdom.

Kiss the Son is equivalent to invitation terms like "receive Christ as Lord and Savior," "believe," "repent," "bow the knee to Christ," and "Confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God raise him from the dead" (Romans 10:9). The psalmist is telling us to "look to Christ" and be saved. To reject Christ is to perish, for "whoever does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only Son of God" (John 3:18).

The term "blessing" refers to salvation. To "kiss the Son" is to be reconciled to God and to possess eternal life and the blessings of the age to come.

A blessing is promised to rulers and all those who put their trust in him. Trust here is more than an occasional glance toward heaven, but a genuine commitment to trust and obey. "In God we Trust," is our nation's motto. Oh, that it would be more than mere words. Oh, that we might acknowledge there is only one God and one mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus.

The schism between the United States and Russia or between Hamas and Israel are the result of the nation's rejecting God's Law-order. The solution between the United States and Russia and between Gaza and Israel is for all parties to "kiss the Son." There is peace at the cross. If Jews and Gentiles can find peace at the cross, so can Arabs and Jews, Americans and Russians.

Before us is the reason for all political conflict in the world today, and the solution to every political problem known to man in seed form. The problems are not political, but spiritual; likewise, the solution is not political diplomacy or war, but confession of and surrender to the Son. Kiss the Son and be reconciled to God.

3. Towards a Theology of Politics

Matthew 6:10

"Thy Kingdom Come, thy will be done."

Is there a day in our lives that we don't feel like madmen are running our government?

From sunrise to sunset, politics plays a big part in our lives. The legislative lightning storms in Washington D.C. are nothing short of stunning. We are inundated by laws to obey, forms to fill out, and taxes to pay. We are a society of rules, rules, and more rules . . . and it is exhausting to keep up with the demands the State places upon us.

During the revolutionary period of our nation's history, the maxim "No king, but King Jesus" thundered from the lips of patriots. That thinking soon dissipated like a grey mist on sunny day. With government playing the peeping tom and licensing everything from driving a car to marriage, it's time to revisit the theology of politics from the Holy Scriptures.

Our goal is to develop a Biblical world view of government, law, and politics in order to be good soldiers of the cross.

OT Politics Centered Around Israel's True King and Their Duty to Obey Him.

The LORD God was Israel's king and they were expected to have no kings (no gods) before Him (Exodus 20:1).

Psalm 10:16 The LORD is King for ever and ever: the heathen are perished out of his land.

Psalm 24:8 Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle.

Psalm 47:2 For the LORD most high is terrible; he is a great King over all the earth.

Psalm 89:18 For the LORD is our defense; and the Holy One of Israel is our king.

Isaiah 43:15 I am the LORD, your Holy One, the creator of Israel, your King.

The prophets called Israel's God the great "Lawgiver" and "the King of the Nations" (Jeremiah 10:7; 33:22).

The OT predicted that a special personage would appear in history who would be called "Wonderful, Counselor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace who would carry the government on his solders and whose reign would have no end In anticipation of this divine personage, the psalmist predicted resistance to His rule and encouraged the nations to "Kiss the Son" (Deuteronomy 18:18; Isaiah 9:6-7; Psalm 2).

When Israel demanded God given them a visible earthly king, God rebuked His people warning them of the abuses of human governments. A virtuous, authentic omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent transcendent heavenly King

was far superior to sinful, defective, ignorant, weak, finite immanent, earthly potentate (I Samuel 8).

Israel had kings, but they acted as “servant-leaders” subordinate to the Law of God and the Rule of YHWH. The OT is replete with abuses and sins of these kings.

The OT acknowledged a limited purpose for civil authority and warned against presumptuous and overreaching regimes: drafting men into military service, oppressive taxation, expropriation of property by the State and debasing coinage for the enrichment of the State to the detriment of families (I Samuel 8, 2 Chronicles 26:8-21; I Kings 21; Isaiah 1:22).

The State is not the source of law Israel’s God was the source of law and the nation was charged to vigorously protect its Source of law by having “no kings before Me!” But, Israel fell into the sins of the nations by granting their kings prerogatives that belong only to God.

Isaiah 1:3, 4 The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master’s crib: but Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider. Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the LORD, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, they are gone away backward.

The King’s Appearance in History and Triumph

Christ was born from a long line of kings and was called “Immanuel” meaning “God with us.” He was announced as one who “would save His people from their sins. The Magi from Babylon called him the “King of the Jews.” But Jerusalem was troubled by this announcement.

Upon entering His ministry, King Jesus’ taught “the kingdom of God.” He encouraged men to adopt his law and seek the rule of God. Like a great legislator, He spoke with authority and expounded law. He rebuked lawyers for their statutory nullification of God’s law. He indicted and condemned them for their presumptions, abuse of authority, circumvention of God’s law and legal tricks. Unable to find a defect in Christ, they charged in him with “not paying taxes to Caesar,” tried him for treason against Rome, and crucified him. But, our Lord proved him to be the true King of the nations by virtue of His resurrection (Matthew 1:21-23; 2:2-3; 4:17; 5-7: 6:33; 15:1-10; 23:1ff).

When Christ entered Jerusalem on a donkey on Palm Sunday an OT prophecy was applied to Him, “Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, sitting upon an ass, and a colt, the foal of an ass” (Matthew 21:5).

Crafty lawyers asked Him a trick question about whether it was lawful to pay taxes to Caesar. Jesus answered, “Give unto Caesar what belongs to Caesar and

to God what belongs to God." What actually belongs to Caesar remained unanswered question. But, every Bible student knows that since "the earth is the Lord and the people thereof" the answer is closer to nothing than something. Even Caesar must give what is God what is God's (Psalm 24:1; Matthew 22:21).

When examined before Herod Jesus answered Him not a word. Our Lord did not acknowledge Herod's authority, or contract with him, or submit to Herod's jurisdiction. A superior has no duty to answer an inferior (Luke 23:11).

The final conflict during Christ's interrogation was regarding his authority as a king Pilate asked, "Are you king of the Jews." Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not of this world." In so doing, Jesus confirmed that He was a king but inferred His authority was not of man (of this world). When Pilate asked Jesus directly, "Are thou a king"? He answered, "To this end was I born and for this cause came I into the world . . ."

The Jews responded, "We have no king but Caesar. In so do doing, Jews confessed no authority higher than the Roman State (John 18:33, 37, 39; 19:3, 12, 14, 15, 19, 21).

Peter's Declaration of War in Acts 4:12

There is an historical context to Peter's statement: "*Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*"

The Roman Empire was morbidly engrossed in emperor worship. To the Romans, the greatest sacrifice a man could make was to Caesar. Gladiators destined to be hacked to death saluted Caesar saying, "Hail Caesar, we who are about to die salute thee."

The same phraseology is found in the angel's announcement of the birth of Christ to Mary. What a contrast! "Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women."

What a conflict: Hail Caesar or Hail Christ. Worship Augustice who was called the son of God or worship Jesus who was the Son of God. Pledge allegiance to the Savior or pledge allegiance to the State! (Luke 1: 28); (Pierre Grimal: *The Civilization of Rome*, p. 332, 456. New York: Simon and Shuster, 1963).

The era of Christ's birth burgeoned with the expectation of a world savior. The Roman poet Virgil used the word *adventus*. Christians use the term "advent." When Augustus came to power, Virgil hailed him thus:

"This is the man, the one who has been promised again and again...The turning point of the ages has come." In the year 17 B.C., at the appearance of a strange star, Augustus inaugurated a twelve-day Advent celebration, and messengers

were sent all over Italy to announce the celebration. The Roman college of priests, headed by Augustus, gave the masses absolution from past sins. The coinage hailed Augustus as "Son of God." But, another king was born 15 years earlier and the Scripture declared, "He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David (Luke 1:32); (Ethelbert Stauffer: *Christ and the Caesars*, pp. 81-88. Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1955).

A coin was created for the special occasion: Two related coins from Spain expose the spiritual climate at this time in world history. One is like a summary of the scenery on the armor of Augustus: the sun-god is soaring up with his crown of sun-rays and his outspread heavenly mantle, with the Capricorn below, and between them the single word AUGUSTUS. The other shows the Capricorn again, this time with the emblems of world dominion, the helm and the globe, and above them the emblem of the king of paradise, the cornucopia with the diadem, and again the single word AUGUSTUS.

The symbolic meaning is clear: a new day is dawning for the world. The divine savior-king, born in the historical hour ordained by the stars, has come to power on land and sea, and inaugurates the cosmic era of salvation. Salvation is to be found in none other save Augustus, and there is no other name given to men in which they can be saved. This is the climax of the Advent proclamation of the Roman empire. (Ibid., Stauffer, p. 88).

Around the year 30 AD, Augustus Caesar issued a proclamation throughout the whole of the Roman Empire. The proclamation stated:

"There is no other name on heaven and earth by which men might be saved other than the name Augustus Caesar."

When Peter announced that there was no other name given among men whereby men must be saved except King Jesus, **Peter declared war on Rome**. Conflict between heaven and earth, the god State and the Eternal God; Caesar the moral man, and the Lord Jesus Christ, the immortal God; the true Son and the false son was inevitable.

Warfare between these two kings and their jurisdictions erupted into an eternal struggle between the church and the State, between the kingdom of man and the kingdom of God; between the Law of God and the laws of men; between the savior State and the Savior God; between tithes to Caesar or tithes to the Church (Acts 4:12).

Rome in its building of bridges, roads and ports; in its erecting of coliseums and schools; saw itself as a god providing order and salvation to men. Hence, Rome concluded that men owed their ultimate allegiance to the god-State who nurtured men from cradle to grave.

Against this presumption is that the source of ultimate order is God, not the State; that order is transcendent rather than immanent; that devotion should be to Christ the King rather than the god city-State.

The message that turned the world upside down

When Paul the missionary, ex prisoner, fugitive, preacher, and herald of the gospel arrived in Thessalonica, his opponents accused his gospel team of “turning the world upside down:” Actually, with Caesar worship so prevalent in the empire, Paul turned it “right side up” by proclaiming that Jesus was the King of the nations. So powerful was his message his opponent accused him of disparaging the “decrees of Caesar” and advocating people surrender to Another King and his laws, King Jesus (Acts 17:6,7).

A third of the Book of Acts is about the State’s confrontation with Paul, his arrests, defenses, and imprisonments on behalf of the gospel. Luke summarized Paul’s message as

*Acts 28:31 Preaching the **kingdom** of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.*

Paul’s message did not advocate anarchy nor was it anti-government nor did it promote the overthrow of Caesar. Rather, his message proclaimed “King Jesus,” the need for all to repent, and for men to arrange themselves under His Lordship (Romans 10:9; Philippians 2:10-12).

Paul wanted the church, the New Israel of God, to know that this risen, transcendent King sitting at the right hand of God is truly God and truly man in authority over “all rulers and powers” and that it was a serious thing to deprecate the authority and headship of Christ (Colossians 1:15-18; 2:9, 19).

John’s Declaration in Revelation

On the Isle of Patmos, John introduces us to “Jesus Christ” “the Prince (*arche*) of the kings of the earth” who has the scroll, the Last Will and Testament of the Eternal God in his hand. From his position in heaven He protects and disciplines his churches, and initiates war against the anti-god forces, Satan, the beast, Rome, and Mystery Babylon.

From his transcendent position in heaven, John unveils Christ as the Rider on a white horse, splattered with blood, waging war on behalf of truth by the Word of His mouth against the monsters of government and their subsidiary agencies (Revelation 1, 5, 13, 14, 19).

The imagery of the seven headed monster known as the beast depicts government, particularly the Roman government, as an undefeatable, grotesque centaur waging war against the saints who are devoted to another King. The

King's followers are viewed pure, chaste virgins devoted to their King and His laws (Revelation 13-14:1-5).

The imagery of Christ in Revelation 19:16 reveals that He has a name inscribed on His thigh as "King of kings and Lord of lords." The true King is waging war against the false kings. False kings are those who without knowledge of the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ and who promote a program of conquest over men by their rebellious regimes.

The Lord's Prayer

Christians are called to pray,

Our Father, which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, As it is in heaven

Christians pray that God's name will be honored on Earth now as it is in heaven; that His will be done on Earth now as it is in heaven; that His kingdom rule would be acknowledge now on Earth as it is in heaven.

Jesus did not say, "Pray this prayer but realize that none of this will be realized until after 2000 years in a Zionist millennium." It is sheer nonsense to think that Jesus expected his disciples to pray this prayer for two-thousand years but not for them to expect the reign of the King Jesus until after the Christian dispensation.

The first century missionary team went forth on a mission to proclaim the sovereignty of Christ and that all who trust him will be transferred to His kingdom. Believing that "All authority in heaven and earth was in His hands," the disciples launched their gospel that Jesus was Christ the Savior. They saw Messianic communities develop in all parts of the Roman Empire. Believing Romans and Hebrews confessed Christ as Lord. Proclaiming the King and His Law-word, they "turned the world right side up."

All this was accomplished within 30 years after our Lord stripped "principalities and powers," "disgraced them publically, and triumphed over them by virtue of His resurrection from the dead (Colossians 2:15).

The early Christians went from a small minority to a vocal minority in the Roman world. The triumphant, transcendent Christ proved more powerful than the immanent Caesar, the Roman Senate, and their world-wide police force (Matthew 28:19, 20; Colossians 1:9-14).

By 350 BC, Constantine begged church Presbyters to hear civil cases in Ecclesiastical courts because government courts were sluggish and corrupt. While Rome saw the State as the source of law, the ecclesiastics saw Christ as the source of law and themselves as the administrators of justice and grace.

When the State sees itself as the source of law, then the object seeks deification. But, the ecclesiastics saw God as the Source of all good.

Because the gospel taught that Christ died for all men, the gospel magnified the importance of human life. This gospel went forth into a world where meaning was not attached to the individual, but to the collective, to the city, and to the State. In Rome, all citizens belonged to the State. Children belonged to the State. Men belonged to the military. Meaning was derived from the State because the State was god.

It was in this context, the disciples prayed: "Lord, thy will, thy law, they rule, thy values, thy name, thy rule, and thy authority be recognized now!"

The Modern State

The modern State follows the Roman model rather than the Biblical exemplar. Law is in WE THE PEOPLE, not the Lord God; law is defined legislatively, not magisterially for the good of the people.

States rule by law instead of surrendering to the rule of law. Law is what the State says it is rather than how God defines it.

Individuals must obey the State, but State workers are generally exempt.

Good is defined by the majority opinion, rather than the character of Almighty God. Individuals are viewed as having a duty to the State, rather than the State having a duty to God: "Ask not what your country can do for you, but what you can do for your country" (JFK).

People are expected to yield individual rights for the enlargement of power for the State rather than the State yield power for the promotion of liberty. Property is transferred to the State for its growth and success rather than resources being saved to increase the strength of the family. Education is no longer the duty of a father, but the duty of the government. Virtue is no longer defined as a man walking in good conscience toward God, but a man sacrificing himself for public service.

To the modern state, right and wrong is not defined by the Ten Commandments. Rather, right is whatever the State does.

When liberals attack the gospel of Christianity and its source of law in the Ten Commandments, it enables the State to be its own god. Truth and falsehood, beauty and ugliness, right and wrong, lawful and legal are determined by the all-wise, all-knowing, all-caring, all-benevolent State.

Paul said that in God "we live and move and have our being;" i.e., that man is dependent on God for life and meaning. But, modern men believe that "in the state we live and move and have our being;" i.e., that life and meaning is

defined by the government. In Marxist countries, the state is unable to correct itself. Multiplying misery among the population, the state must enlarge controls to keep the order and the peace.

When Christians practice silence and the exclusion of God's law from public debate, they proclaim the death of God in the arena of politics (Acts 17:28).

Modern man is no longer interested in "philosophical principles" that promote social order, but "what works." Pragmatism is the new god on the block.

Though modern man will not admit it, every government is its own ultimate religion.

Every man operates on the basis of some value system. Even atheists have ultimate values. Every law represents somebody's values. It is only a matter of who's values are ultimate going to rule society – the values of secular humanists or Moslems or bankers or the NWO or the King of kings?

Ancient Roman gladiators paraded into the Coliseum and shouted, "Hail, Caesar, we who are about to die salute you." Today, the state trains our impressionable youth to be statist by saying, "I, pledge allegiance to the United States of America, one nation, under God (undefined) . . ."

Conclusion

The major message of John the Baptist (Matthew 3:2), the major message of Jesus (Matthew 4:17), the major message of the disciples (Matthew 10:7), the major message of Peter (Acts 4:12; 2 Peter 1:11), the major message of Philip (Acts 8:12), and the major message of Paul (Acts 28:, 23, 28), and the major message of John (Revelation 1:9; 12:10) was **the kingdom of God**. But, who among us can be accused of promoting the kingdom of God today? We simply must return to the message that Christ is the King of the nations to whom all will give account (Acts 2:30-32).

Remedy

There is only one remedy and that is a return to the gospel of Jesus Christ and to the proclamation that Christ is King. All men, and all man's institutions must repent and surrender to His authority.

Stop worshipping the state. Obey one Master . . . for no man can serve two masters. The overreaching state is not the solution, but the problem.

Act like a citizen of heaven (Philippians 3:14-20). Be free. Claim your rights on earth. Minister in the authority of the Son. Harm no man. Practice the golden rule. Suffer patiently! Radical allegiance to Christ will bring us into conflict with a tyrannical state that believes in radical allegiance to the government.

Thus, we pray, "Thy kingdom come; Thy will be done on Earth Now, in My Life Time;" "May I be subject to your rule now." "May my neighbors be subject to your law now."

4. Cultural Foundations

Psalm 24:1

"The earth is the LORD's, and everything in it, the world, and all who live in it"

FOUR CULTURAL FOUNDATIONS

To be a nation you must possess four cultural foundations

- ONE LAND with borders
- ONE RELIGION which is the basis of law
- ONE RACE OR PEOPLE that have a common ethnicity.
- ONE LANGUAGE to facilitate communication and ideas.

Questions

1. Do we still have a nation where the government lays title to 28% of the land, but thinks all land belongs to the State; where only 20 % of the people own their land; where those who own land are taxed into poverty; where government seizure is a daily practice by the Federal government; where millions of military age young men from communist countries are invading the United States across the southern border?
2. Do we still have a nation when the people forsake Christianity to embrace polytheism, multiculturalism, and legal pluralism? Where average people think diversity is a strength and not a weakness to overcome?
3. Do we still have a nation with at least six major races . . . and all rallying for BLM and affirmative action. Can a nation exist with boundless sociology and multiple cultural values?
4. Do we still have a nation when its Congress refuses to embrace English as its language; where one out of five students in the school system does not speak English (KCPS).

Chief Thundercloud: Who Owns the Land?

Me face big fight at Little Big Horn.

Great White Chief Yellow Hair say Chief Thunder Cloud owe property tax on land which Teepee pitched.

Me say White Chief have no right to tax land.

Indians say, "No man owns the land, the land owns us."

Thunder Cloud look in Great Spirit Bible and it say, Great Spirit form man out of dust of the ground . . . from "dust thou art, and unto dust shall thou return."

Thunder Cloud right, "No man owns the land, the land owns us."

Me organize great pow wow with Yellow Hair Chief called "county assessor." Yellow Hair say, "We have right to tax all property in county." "Do you own all land" in big forest"? I ask.

Yellow Hair acts like her tribe owns all the trees and lakes and buffalo.

Thunder Cloud go back to Teepee and read Great Spirit Bible. It say, "The earth is the Lord's and the people thereof" (Psalm 24:1).

Thunder Cloud know that Thunder Cloud own no own land . . . but may use land for benefit of tribe.

Great White Chief can no own much land outside of District of Columbia.

Me ask for second pow wow with Yellow Hair. Me show her Bible verse. She say Bible teach, "Give unto Caesar what belongs to Caesar."

Thunder Cloud go back and read Great Spirit Bible. It no say Great White Chief own all the land. It say, "the earth is the Lord's and the people thereof." I pray much. Then answer come. If Great Spirit created all the land and all the people, then White Chief no can say all land belong to him. Little belongs to White Chief. Much belongs to God.

Thunder Cloud think Yellow Hair Chief speak with forked tongue. No understand Great Spirit Bible.

Thunder Cloud go to white man supreme court library to discover law upon which Yellow Hair claims power to tax land on which Thunder Cloud sleeps.

Me discover White Chief only have power to tax land with a "situs" in the State. Me look up word "situs" and discover it means "business." White man law lists business it can tax: apartments, nursing homes, child-care facilities, but not tribe teepee.

Thunder Cloud no run business from teepee. Land in forest no produce income. Thunder Cloud land is place where tribe eats, plays, and sleeps.

Yellow Hair lie and uses law to steal beaver pelts from tribe of Thunder Cloud. She say, "You need to pay tax so blue coats with guns can protect you." Thunder Cloud say, "No need blue coat. Me protect tribe with my own bow and arrow."

Chief Yellow Hair use tax to pay government blue coats salary, but Chief Thunder Cloud needs beaver pelts to swap for supplies at the trading post for squaw White Feather and Little Running Fox in papoose.

Yellow Hair say, "Tax used to pay for public school." Chief Thunder Cloud no send Little Running Fox to crazy government school that teach Indian brave marry Indian brave.

It now time for Thunder Cloud to fight at the Little Bighorn and not let Yellow Hair tax assessor take away land on which teepee sits.

Yellow Hair no own land; land owns Yellow Hair. She die soon and return to dust.

Thunder Cloud write letter in White Chief speech saying no more pay tax. White Chief no own land, land owns White Chief. Yellow Hair no write back.

Thunder Cloud send three more letters to White Chief. Yellow Hair remain mute. Silence must mean that Yellow Hair agree with Thunder Cloud that White Chief have much greed and speak like serpent.

Thunder Cloud expect Yellow Hair to show up with blue coats to steal Thunder Cloud's tee pee.

Thunder Cloud got to go now to prepare for big battle at Little Big Horn with Chief Yellow Hair

5. The Rule of Law

Jeremiah 33:22

Isaiah 33:22 For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; it is he who will save us. ... For the LORD is our judge, our lawgiver, and our king.

James 4:12 There is one lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

If there is no God, there is no source of absolute law other than death and taxes.

Show me your law, and I will show you your gods (John Rushdooney).

Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge” (Jesus, Lk. 11:52

“How strangely will the Tools of a Tyrant pervert the plain Meaning of Words!” (Samuel Adams)

A scientist will attempt to make the impossible possible, while a politician will almost always make the possible impossible. Lawyers seem to make it impossible to do anything without their assistance.

“Men do not make laws. They do but discover them. Laws must be justified by something more than the will of the majority. They must rest on the eternal foundation of righteousness. That state is most fortunate in its form of government which has the aptest instruments for the discovery of law,” Calvin Coolidge, to the Massachusetts State Senate, January 7, 1914.

The key question throughout this work is this: What if the enemy of the Christian is not his neighbor down the street, but the State turned traitor against the Law of God and his own Constitution? In such a political climate, the gladiator Christian who exercises his unalienable rights will sooner or later find himself in conflict with some government statute. Christians, therefore, need to know how to go on the offensive when they are attacked by the Goliath of Government for non-criminal acts. The greater problem in society is not individuals that break the law, but governments that violate their own law.

“Crime is contagious. If the government becomes a lawbreaker, it breeds contempt for law; it invites every man to become a law unto himself; it invites anarchy.” Olmstead v. United States, 227 U.S. 438.

There is a difference between the ***rule of law*** and the ***rule by law***. The former refers to legitimate law that regulates society—law that even the government must obey. **Rule by law** refers to the raw power of government to advance its control over every aspect of society. *When the government practices rule by law and exempts itself from obedience to its own laws, citizens are no longer secure in law.*

What is Law?

Jus est ars boni et aequi. Law is the science of what is good and evil.

To study law is to study the character of God. Law is nothing more than applied theology whether that theology be right or wrong.

Probably the most ridiculous phrase ever uttered is that “you have to have a license to practice law.” It is even more insane when one realizes the definition of license is “permission to do that which is otherwise illegal.” Since when did practicing the law becomes illegal so that one needs to apply for a license to practice law? The very nature of the Biblical admonitions to obey God’s law contains within it, the unalienable right of man to practice law. From the time we get up in the morning to drive through morning traffic, to the time we drive home during rush hour, we are practicing law. Every stop sign is an undisputable reminder that the citizen must practice law. Without the practice of law, society would drift into chaos. Thus, the Biblical word for cultural chaos is “anomia,” meaning “without law.” But, what is law?

Most people’s view of “the law” is whatever a “law enforcement officer” says it is—yet, none of them are lawyers nor are they competent to testify in court about “the law.” Policemen operate under a hierarchy and simply puppet what they are told.

The study of law can be mind-boggling. With common law, constitutional law, statutory law, criminal law, civil law, corporate law, equity law, commercial law, admiralty law and numerous jurisdictions, it is difficult to know what responsibilities belong to a citizen. To say a person must obey the law is over broad and rather naïve and simplistic.

Pharaoh issued an executive order that the midwives were to execute post-birth abortions against Jewish babies (Ex. 1). Nebuchadnezzar passed a law that all had to honor his image and idolatrous command (Dan. 3). Persia passed a law that nobody could pray to the true God but only the head of State, King Darius (Dan. 6). The Sanhedrin ordered the disciples to stop preaching in Jesus name (Acts 5). Haman charged the Jews with obeying laws contrary to Persia and obtained an executive order to have them charged and executed (Esth. 3). Micah rebuked his nation for following the laws of Omri (Mic. 6:16). Amaziah, Secretary of Religion under Jeroboam, banned Bible preaching in the King’s chapel (Amos 7:13). In all of those jurisdictions, God’s people had **NO DUTY** to obey those “laws.”

So, what is law and what laws do Christians have a duty to follow?

What is usually stated as “law” by policemen or bureaucrats is usually nothing more than unwritten policy by some State agency. The Constitution mentions the “supreme law” of the land, and if there is a supreme law, then there must be something less than law. Codes, statutes, and ordinances apply to some

status of persons, but do not rise to the level of being called “law.” Even the Constitution which calls itself the “supreme law of the land,” is hardly on par with Biblical law.

“It is a well established principle of law that all federal legislation applies only within the territorial jurisdiction of the United States unless a contrary intent appears” (Foley Brothers, Inc. v. Filardo)

“Men do not make laws, they discover them,” declared Calvin Coolidge. There is only one Lawgiver and one law says James (Jam. 4:12). Criminal laws are reflections of the Ten Commandments which is true law; that is, the will of God over that which He creates. Civil laws are not laws at all but merely codes and ordinances of men that reflect the will of a legislature over that which it creates, namely, corporations and artificial entities. All individuals are required to keep the Ten Commandments, but no man is required to submit to civil laws/codes/ordinances of men unless he contracts to do so.

Martin Luther King said, “We should never forget that everything Adolph Hitler did in Germany was ‘legal’ and everything the Hungarian freedom fighters did in Hungary was ‘illegal.’”ⁱ

Definitions Surrounding the Term “Law.”

To begin to understand law, you will need to know the following terms. [Note: unless otherwise stated, the following definitions are supported either by a modern or older version of Bouvier’s Dictionary.]

Law: Generally, law refers to a set of rules that govern persons, corporations, or industry.

Webster’s Dictionary Definition of Law:

“all the rules of conduct established and enforced by the authority, legislation, or custom of a given community, State, or other group (b) any one of such rules.”

Black’s Law Dictionary:

“That which is laid down, ordained, or established . . . Law, in its generic sense, is a body of rules of action or conduct prescribe by controlling authority, and having binding legal force . . . Law is a solemn expression of the will of the supreme power of the State” (6th Edition). But, Black’s is wrong when it says that Law is solemn expression of the will of the State. It may look like law, but if it not supported by God’s Word it is not law. It only has the force of law.

Bastiat:

“Law is the collective organization of the individual’s right to lawful defense.”

Blackstone:

“This will of his Maker is called the law of nature. For as God, when He created matter, and endued it with a principle of mobility, established certain rules for the perpetual direction of that motion; so, when he created man, and endued him with free will to conduct himself in all parts of life, He laid down certain immutable laws of human nature, whereby that free will is in some degree regulated and restrained, and gave him also the faculty of reason to discover the purport of those laws. . . . Upon these two foundations, the law of nature and the law of revelation, depend all human laws”ⁱⁱ

Bible: The key word for “law” is “Torah.” The first usage of the term “torah” is found in Exodus 12:49- “One law (torah) shall be to him that is homeborn, and unto the stranger that sojourneth among you.” Torah means “instruction.” Later, the first five books of Moses became known as “the Torah.” See how the law of God is a reflection of His character:

Psalm 119:137 Righteous art thou, O LORD, and upright are thy judgments.

Psalm 119:142 Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth.

Psalm 119:144 The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting: give me understanding, and I shall live.

The Ten Commandments are a reflection of the character of God. Because God is righteous, His law is perfect, objective standard of righteousness. Because God is eternal, His law is absolute and unchangeable. Because God lays a claim on all men by virtue of His creative order, His law is not only for Christians, but for all men and their institutions.

Mine: Law is a universal fixed principle so associated with the character of God that it is binding upon all men that if so violated would injure the prerogatives of God or the rights of other men. The collective conscience of legislature known as “codes,” “ordinances”, and “statutes” are “laws of men” which apply toward a specific class of people, but in reality do not rise to the level of Law.

For “there is one lawgiver” (James 4:12).

Blackstone makes an interesting distinction between *compact* or *agreement* and *law*. A compact proceeds *from us*; a law is directed *to us*. The language of a covenant is “I will.” The language of law is “you shall” or “you shall not.”

Perhaps the best way to understand law is to look at three words: **Agreement** and **Trespass** and **Remedy**. All law is based on an understanding of these two words. Every five year old after a couple of sessions on the playground understands this intrinsically. Every worker in America that sweats out his duty understands these two words. Every manager trying to hold on to his job is acutely aware of these principles.

It is not easy to obey good laws any more than it is to resist bad ones. Because a Christian is called to do both, He needs to chart his course before he sets sail on the high seas of citizenship. Consider the following as you seek to walk with a good God in an evil world.

Know that there is only one Lawgiver; i.e., your foremost responsibility is to obey Him, and in obeying Him you will be no threat to rights of other men; however, you may be a threat to the plans of evil men.

Isaiah 33:22 For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us.

No free government now exists in the world unless where Christianity is acknowledged, and is the religion of the country . . . Its foundations are broad and strong, and deep . . . it is the purest system of morality, the firmest auxiliary, and only stable support of all human laws . . .

Christianity is part of the common law (Undegraph v. The Commonwealth, 1826).

“The Bible is for the government of the people, by the people, and for the people,” (Wyclif).

Know your conscience is more important than man-made laws. It was because of this principle that Justice Jackson was able to effectively prosecute the Nazi criminals at Nuremberg. Even the government recognizes one **must** be true to the dictates of one’s conscience. **House Document 103, 86th Congress, 1st Session Passed by Congress of the United States on July 11, 1958, passed the following:**

Put loyalty to the highest moral principles above loyalty to persons, party, or Government department.

Romans 13:5 Wherefore it is necessary to be in subjection, not only because of wrath, but also for conscience ’ sake.

You conscience may not always be correct, but truth is greater than your conscience. For this reason, you must educate it. A new convert explained the

difference between herself as a believer and her friend who was not a Christian. “I am of the Word; you are of the world,” she said. The Word of God is greater than our conscience and we must submit to it.

Know the source of your rights. Rights come from God. The most important Statement in our historical documents is in the Declaration: “*We are endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable rights.*” It is God who gives us the right to life, liberty, and the right to own property. We are free to do anything we wish in this life as long as we do not infringe on the rights of others. And, no legislative body can take away rights without treading on the Law of God.

Know the purpose of government. The purpose of government has been effectively defined in the Declaration:

. . . that, to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed; that whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to affect their safety and happiness.

The purpose of government is not to provide a welfare for the people, or to take care of the poor, or to educate children. It is to protect God-given rights. We have a moral duty to peaceably and respectfully protest government action that fails to protect our rights. Because the fathers were suspicious of our government going astray they outlined a peaceable means of protest in the First Amendment. “There are only two things that stand between the people and government tyranny—our Constitution, and our will as a free people to protect and defend it” (Shultz, Memorandum of Law, 9.11.13, p. 24).

“Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God,” (Benjamin Franklin).

“We must obey God rather than men,” (Acts 5:29).

“But government even in its best State is but a necessary evil” [Thomas Paine, “Common Sense” (Feb. 1776)].

Know that in America sovereignty resides with the people, not the government. The Founding Fathers believed they were kings and sovereigns in post-revolutionary America—not because they felt that way, but because they had a **legal** right to say so. On September 3, 1783, the king of England ceded his sovereignty to the American people, to the colonies, and to their posterity. Because America had no king, sovereignty was ceded to WE THE PEOPLE. For

the first time in history a nation was created without a king where the citizen had no one over him but God and conscience.

“Under our system the people, who are there {in England} are called subjects are here the sovereign . . . Their rights, whether collective or individual, are not bound to give way to a sentiment of loyalty to the person of a monarch” (United States v. Lee, 106 U.S. {Supreme Court} 196, at 208).

“When the {American} Revolution took place, the people of each State became themselves sovereign” (Pollard v. Hagan, 3 H. 212).

“Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts. And the law is the definition and limitation of power,” (Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356, 370 (1886)).

“People of the State are entitle to all rights which formerly belonged to that King by his prerogative” Lansing v. Smith (1829) 4 kWend. 9, 20.

This means that WE THE PEOPLE are sovereigns in the political sense and not subjects; that the President of the United States of America is not a sovereign, but a public servant. While we should respect our servant, we are not bound to treat him as a king, nor are we obligated to act like servants!! This means, under our form of government, the legislature is not supreme. The United States government is not supreme. The role of government is not to protect its own interests, but the rights of the people. Government gains its authority by the “consent of the governed” and its purpose is to protect the life, liberty, and property of sovereigns.

This means WE THE PEOPLE must apply Biblical passages differently than NT peoples who were subjects of kings. The American Christian must learn to see himself as a master and not a subject; the government officials as servants, not masters.

Know the difference between the rule of law and rule by law. In saying the “rule of law,” we are correctly describing a lawful maxim directly founded in the common law of the people; that is, that each man might acknowledge the Law of God and his duty to submit to a higher authority than his own desires. In saying the “Rule by law,” we are describing a legalistic dominion not unlike what was in ancient Rome and also among the Nazis; that is, legal dominion. There is all the difference in the world between good people submitting to good laws and an imperialistic government that creates statutes to control and manipulate its citizenry.

*Psalm 94:20 Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee,
which frameth mischief by a law?*

In America's culture wars, we are seeing a rule by law when officials order the Ten Commandments to be taken down from court room walls, or when school administrators forbid teachers to say "Merry Christmas," and when Christians are ordered to remove nativity scenes from the public square. These extreme man-made statutes are examples of the attempt to amputate Christianity by a rule by law.

A traveler arrived in a village on the day a child was born to the mother of savages. A crowd of soothsayers, magicians, witchdoctors, and quacks armed with rings, hooks, and cords hovered over the infant.

"This child will never smell the perfume of a peace pipe unless I stretch its nostrils." Another said, "He will never be able to hear unless I draw his ear lobes down to his shoulders." A third stated, "He will never stand upright unless I bend his legs." The last said, "He will never learn to think unless I flatten his skull."

"Stop," cried the traveler. "God's creation is good. Do not bind the child with ropes and fetters. Let the child be free and he will grow to be a strong, healthy lad." Bad government is like the witchdoctor that seeks to bind the free born. Away with the rings, the chains, and the hooks. Let men live free.

Know that the "second" highest law in the land is the Constitution. WE THE PEOPLE OF THE UNITED STATES, as political Sovereigns,² in **order** to secure the blessings of liberty, did ordain an establish a Constitution – the Constitution of the united States of America – As the HIGHEST LAW IN THE LAND. The Supreme Law of the land is the United States Constitution. Chief Justice Marshal said in 1803 in Marbury v. Madison 5 U.S. 137 anything repugnant to the Constitution is null and void.

Marbury v. Madison, 5th US (2 Cranch) 137, 180, we find this principle: All laws, rules and practices which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void.

² The use of the term "sovereign" does not infringe upon the sovereignty of God. Only God is sovereign in a true and spiritual sense. However, the term "sovereign" is used in a political sense in relationship to freedom. No man has the authority to rule another without his consent. In this sense, America was built on the belief that free people are sovereign in relationship to one another and government.

I am sorry, but the highest law in the land, is the law of God. God's law is not only for Christians, but for all men and their institutions!!

Micah 4:2 And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.

Know that the U.S. Constitution was designed to limit government. Every word in the Constitution was created to restrain bureaucrats from infringing upon the rights of the people. However, there is not a single instance where the Constitution limits the rights of man.

The government of the United States is of the latter description. The powers of the legislature are defined and limited; and that those limits may not be mistaken, or forgotten, the Constitution is written. To what purpose are powers limited, and to what purpose is that limitation committed to writing, if these limits may, at any time, be passed by those intended to be restrained? The distinction between a government with limited and unlimited powers is abolished if those limits do not confine the persons on whom they are imposed, and if acts prohibited and acts allowed are of equal obligation. It is a proposition too plain to be contested, that the Constitution controls any legislative act repugnant to it; or, that the legislature may alter the Constitution by an ordinary act (*Marbury v. Madison*).

"The conventions of a number of the States having at the time of their adopting the Constitution, expressed a desire, in order to prevent misconstruction or abuse of its powers, that further declaratory and restrictive clauses should be added: And, as extending the ground of public confidence in the Government, will best insure the beneficent ends of its Constitution" (Preamble, Bill of Rights).

Know the issues of jurisdiction. What is law? To most people, law is what the police officer uses when he pulls them over. "The Law" is any system that creates or recognizes rights, duties, or obligations and provides a forum to seek a remedy. Statutes are made for evil people without a conscience and for "artificial entities" or "legal fictions," that have no conscience (1 Timothy 1:8-10). Law is styled in many different jurisdictions such as common law, equity law, admiralty/Maritime law, private law, international law, federal law, State law, family law, corporate law, labor law, civil law, and many more. In order to understand what law applies to you, you must understand jurisdiction. Just as you have no responsibility to obey the laws of Russia, you have no responsibility to submit to laws outside of your jurisdiction. Laws applicable to Americans must be published in the Federal Register.

There is a difference between criminal law and civil law. Criminal law is binding on all men. Civil law is entered into voluntarily. When the Bible commands Christians to submit to law, it is speaking about common law or criminal law, not civil law.

Know that indulgence to government is a form of idolatry. We must harden our hearts to the false notion that government is God. Government is not our God, it is our servant. The hope of this country is not in a government of men, but in the living God who sustains us.

Isaiah 40:15 Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, he taketh up the isles as a very little thing.

All nations [including the United States] before him are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity.

When Paul says, “Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work”, Paul was totally unaware of the American system of jurisprudence. He is addressing the Cretans who were “always liars, evil beasts, slow bellies” (Tit. 1:12) — a people who had not yet learned to submit to God and His law. He is contrasting paganism, which disregarded the rule of law, with Christianity, which acknowledge the rule of law. Becoming godly involves being a good citizen. Good citizenship begins when we submit to the rule of God and acknowledge His Lordship (Romans 10:9). If we are to enjoy freedom, we must respect the rule of law as well as resist those who seek to gain legal dominion over people with a rule by law.

6. **A REBEL’S PRAYER**

Matthew 6:9-10

“Thy Kingdom Come”

A Morning Prayer

Our precious Lord taught us to pray, “Thy Kingdom Come.” It is part of the Lord’s Prayer a.k.a. the “Disciples’ Prayer.” Positively, it is a plea that all men and all man’s institutions would surrender to be ruled by God’s law; negatively, it is *coup de’etat* against godless authorities and de facto officials.

This is the rebel's prayer—a revolutionary's cry against the immorality of this age and the promotion of wickedness by men in rebellion against the Creator. This prayer is God's permission to resist evil, to take the high road, and swim against the stream; it allows men to shout "No King, but King Jesus." It is permission to adopt the motto "one nation under one God and one absolute law."

It is a prayer against the belief that man is god; that government is god; that man's law or their constitutions are absolute.

It is a prayer against the status quo where ambitious men seek to advance the lust of the eyes, the lust of the flesh, and the pride of life. It is a prayer against abortion, oppression, homosexuality, pornography, and greed.

It is a prayer against secularism, atheism, humanism, socialism, Marxism and every other ism wherein secularists seek to build a city where man is the measure of all things.

It is a prayer against rulers in rebellion against "the LORD and His Anointed"—against governments who seek to enslave and control men through coercion, intimidation, and fear.

It is a prayer against governments hostile to the maxim that the Bible is the Source of all Law; and, it is a prayer against governments that break their own laws.

It is a prayer against unjust laws and legislators "who do mischief through law" by creating a system of man-made statutes and codes that enslave their citizenry [Ps. 94:20]; who seek to create a new world order through law; who promote alien laws that undermine the Ten Commandments and the virtues they advance: faithfulness, justice, and mercy.

It is a prayer against those who defraud others; against rulers that steal from the people through color of law; against unlawful taxation that transfers power from the family to the State.

If you are angry at godless politicians, this prayer is for you: "Lord, Thy kingdom Come."

COME NOW!

Part II

SERMONS FROM THE OLD TESTAMENT

“You perform according to your theology whether it be right or wrong” - Tozer



7. People Think Government is God

Exodus 20:3

“Thou shalt have no other gods before me.”

Generally speaking, Christians will not say government is God, but in practice people pay tithes to Caesar first, talk more about Caesar than the Lord, and listen to media reports on a daily basis to learn about what government is doing rather than read the Scripture.

That the STATE sees itself as modern god is absolutely true for the following reasons:

1. The State is a god because it seeks the total subjugation of the total man to total government.
2. The State is a god because it sees itself as the source of law. Since the source of law is Congress and State legislatures, then government is the new god.
3. If the source of law is in “We the People” and not in the LORD, then the American system is idolatrous.
4. Since the State seeks the prerogatives belonging to God, it has become a god.
5. The State is a god because it demands a tithe of the people. Because it demands its tithe first before the people tithe to the church, the State thinks is a higher priority than the Christian religion; and, because it takes 30% of a man's income, it thinks it is more important than the living God.
6. The State is a god when it thinks it can solve global warming.
7. The State is a god when it seeks to save mankind from asteroids.
8. The State is a god when it attempts to control the world and to be the source of predestination.
9. The State is a God when it seeks to become the great and merciful, all-providing, all-caring Sovereign.

10. The State sees itself as a god when it punishes treason to itself, but doesn't punish treason to the Christian God.
11. The State becomes a god when it seeks to arrogate to itself all power and bows to no other. Such a government is totalitarian. Rehoboam, King George, Lincoln, and the Democrat / Republican Party come to mind.
12. The State performs as a god when it seeks to be the solution to all of man's problems: education, health, economics, et al.
13. The State sees itself as a God because it acknowledges no higher authority than itself and its institutions.

The God of the Bible is the LORD God. He is the source of law. To allow another source of law to rule men is idolatry and rebellion. To give a tithe to support another system of law is idolatry . . . and Jeroboam and the ten tribes refused to do so.

8. Government is Not God

Deuteronomy 6:4

“Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord:”

In America, people believe government is god and that what happens in the Municipal Corporation in the District of Columbia determines their future. Therefore, people listen to new reports daily, write, vote, protest, and tithe to this federal corporation as if was the supreme being of the universe.

Don't Trust the Poly Tics

Isaiah 31:3 Woe to those who go down to Egypt for help and rely on horses . . . Now the Egyptians are men, and not God; and their horses flesh, and not spirit.

The background to this text is the Assyrian Invasion of Judah circa 705 B.C.

This text ought to be studied because we are living in time where people think government is the solution to all of man's problems.

PART I

Facts About Isaiah the Prophet

1. Isaiah lived 700 years before Christ (760 A.D. and 680 A.D.).

2. Assuming that he was a young man when Uzziah died in 742 B.C., which is when he received his commission to the ministry, he could have been 70 or 80 at the time of his death (ca. 680 B.C.).

3. Therefore, the prophet would have ministered for at least 60 years in an effort to bring the nation back to God – a ministry which took place during the military expansion of Assyria (745-640 B.C.).

Facts About the Assyrians

4. The Assyrians were the first real historians as they recorded and preserved texts and art in their archives.

Ashurbanipal established the “Great Library at Nineveh.”

Over 30,000 cuneiform tablets have been unearthed. The Epic of Gilgamesh comes from Assyrian tablets which contain a primitive tertiary source story about creation and Noah’s flood.

5. Nineveh is located in modern Iraq on the Tigris River with a perimeter of about 7.5 miles. It flourished between 800 and 600 B.C. Further, it contained a city within a city about 3 miles in perimeter.

6. The Book of Jonah calls Nineveh “an exceedingly great city, three days’ journey in breath. It had 15 gates and many canals running through it. At the gates, the visitor was met with reliefs of lions and horses. It took three days to tour the metropolis. It was called the “white city.” As travelers approached the main gates, they saw white light flickering off the walls which turned out to be the skulls of defeated peoples.

7. From reliefs, we know the Assyrians wore headdresses, braided their beards, and wore skirts, carried spears, swords, and bows. They loved horses, chariots, lion hunts, and war.

Subjects of the nation brought the Assyrian kings monkeys, elephants, camels, lions and other species as gifts to the monarch.

8. The Assyrians were traders without a huge manufacturing industry. They lived off the spoils of war as a nation of pirates and looters.

9. Assyrians were cruel soldiers who butchered and tortured their victims.

Assyrian armies also had a corps of engineers who employed movable towers and iron-headed battering rams for sieges on walled towns. They used iron swords and spears as opposed to bronze weapons.

The brutal soldiers were known for pushing survivors over cliffs, flaying men alive, crucifying them by sticking a pole down their throat and turning men

upside down to be impaled alive, staking men to an ant hill and then pouring honey over their victims. These were not a people you wanted to irritate.

10. The city rolled in wealth. Sennacherib explains in his own words on a tablet that was discovered by archaeologists:

“He sent [a convoy] after me to Nineveh, my royal city with 30 talents of gold, 800 talents of silver, jewels, antimony ... couches of ivory, easy chairs inlaid with ivory, elephants’ hides, elephants’ tusks ... all kinds of valuable treasures, and his daughters, his harem, and male and female singers” (This is My God, This is My Religion, page 15).

Consequently, Assyria could easily finance wars and accumulate wealth from pillaging and plundering. They were the pirates of desert sand carrying the black flag of death and torture.

11. During the life of Isaiah, Assyria was the greatest, military power on earth. They threatened all the nations in the Levant: Syria, Israel, Jerusalem and even Egypt.

In this political climate of massive military expansion of Assyria, Isaiah ministered to his people urging the nation to repent and to trust God (Isaiah 30-39).

Judah’s Response to Assyrian Imperialism

What would you do if you heard the pounding of the drums, the thundering sounds of marching of soldiers, and caravan rumors Assyria planned to invade your country?

Like all men, you would push the panic button, shake like a tambourine, and seek help from other nations to halt the invading infantry.

And, this is what Judah did.

The leaders of the nation were pragmatic men; they did what any cabinet of politicians would do. They initiated an emergency alliance with Egypt.

Isaiah’s Major Message

It was in this political climate that Isaiah appears on stage announcing woes (30:31) and warning the nation of the futility of trusting in the Nile nation (30:2-5).

He announces a **second woe** in chapter 31:1 for trusting in Egypt’s military resources (an abundance of war horses).

The prophet has one central message: Don’t trust the Egyptians, and don’t make alliances or contracts or international treaties with the kings of Zoan. **The Egyptians ARE men and NOT GOD!! Their horses are flesh, and not spirit.**

There is some irony here. Isaiah's name means "Jehovah Saves" or "Yah Saves."

The Problem with Alliances

Synonyms for alliance include "agreement," "contract," or "treaty."

Note the word "federal" means "contract" in Latin.

The first problem of alliances is that government officials are not reliable. It is next to impossible to get a group of politicians to agree on anything . . . much less going to war. When politicians see a fight a comin' they tuck tail and start runnin'.

Second, War costs money . . . and politicians don't like to spend money to finance wars in other countries.

Citizens don't want to pay for their kings going to war when they can't see how a war will profit them. Politics is a fickle, perilous business and trustees rarely keep their promises when it comes to the nasty work of breaking bones, shedding blood, and spending money.

Thus, Isaiah says,

30:3-5 Therefore, the safety of Pharaoh shall be your shame . . . their princes . . . cannot profit them (Israel).

Moreover, Egypt was no match for Assyria. Standing up to the Assyrian war machine was like going into a life and death battle with pea shooters and wooden swords.

Moreover, the Egyptians didn't have the will power to fight the Assyrians. Can you say "money" and "mummies"? Bringing soldiers back home in body bags is a career bender for every monarch.

The third problem is less obvious and more serious.

These political alliances exposed **the nation's idolatry** and lack of trust in Jehovah. How could the Egyptian government that rejected God's Law-order be of any assistance to God's people? The First Law commanded Israel to "have no gods before Him."

- Isaiah addresses the nation as "rebellious children" who execute plans, but not of God (30:1).
- He charges them for pragmatically making alliances without prayerful consideration (30:2), for rejecting God's Law-word (30:12), and for not looking to the "Holy One of Israel" (31:1).
- Isaiah preaches to the people, "The Egyptian's are men and not God" (31:3).

Trusting in government was apostasy, plain and simple.

The Historical Result

Israel's suspicions of Assyria came true. Their armies marched through the Levant and attacked the nation. Sennacherib's armies took most of the fenced cities of Judah. Moreover, he made preparations to besiege Jerusalem.

Some in Hezekiah's cabinet urged him to surrender. Others pressed him to enter into an agreement with the Egyptians.

Shebna, the Secretary of State (Isaiah 22:19), urged Judah's nobles to disregard the spirit-inspired advice of Isaiah; which advice was to remain calm and quiet within the city and to await Jehovah's deliverance.

Shebna and the nobles secretly negotiated with the Egyptians to send military help (2 Kings 18:21). Furthermore, they sent large amounts of gold and silver to the Pharaoh as consideration for a new treaty, but only received empty promises in return.

Pressures of Egypt

Sennacherib, after conquering the western guard city of Lachish, decided to invade Egypt. But, not before sending Rab-Shakah and Tartan with an armed contingent to besiege Jerusalem (Isaiah 36-39).

Sennacherib began his assault on Egypt and settled into a siege of the city of Pelusium on the eastern most delta of the Nile. The king of Egypt, though having received the shekels from Hezekiah's secretary of state in Jerusalem, entered into lengthy negotiations with Sennacherib by sending ambassadors from Zoan and Hanes, cities further up the Nile. These settlements had large Jewish settlements. And these negotiations continued for some time (Moelerhaus).

Pharaoh found it more prudent to strike a deal with mighty Assyria than defend puny Israel.

Pressures in Jerusalem

Imagine the scene! Thousands of Israelites seeking refuge from the Assyrian army entered the capital city under the protection of King Hezekiah. Jerusalem was packed to the gills.

Imagine what it would be like if your city was surrounded by campfires of the most powerful army in the world with thousands of refugees camping on your streets like homeless vagabonds.

Consider what it would be like to be in Hezekiah's oval office facing the pressures of pragmatic politicians demanding he empty the nation's treasury and to hire mercenaries from Egypt.

These political leaders being practical men, felt they had to do something . . . anything . . . and, therefore, they sent an envoy to Egypt to negotiate a treaty with the Egyptians.

The king's staff saw Egypt as a military power that could save them. But Egypt as a savior was a fantasy . . . a broken reed . . . a chariot without wheels . . . and clouds without rain.

The solution was not an alliance with Egypt, but reliance on the LORD God.

Two Choices Facing Faithless Leaders

The nation's leaders faced two choices: trust God or trust man.

If Israel was not to rally her neighboring countries to resist Assyrian aggression, what was she supposed to do?

Notice the instructions God gave to Israel through Isaiah, "in repentance and rest you will be saved, in quietness and trust is your strength" (30:15).

Furthermore, notice the promises God gives to Hezekiah's cabinet to repent and wait quietly for the Shepherd of Israel to defend them

Isaiah 30:18ff "And therefore will the LORD wait, that he may be gracious unto you, and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the LORD is a God of judgment: blessed are all they that wait for him."

John Gill in his commentary says,

"this is the right and the only way, namely, by "returning" from their evil ways, particularly their purpose of going to Egypt for help, and by returning to God by repentance and reformation, and to his worship and ordinances . . ." The Lord told the faithful to wait and that He Himself would deliver the city "not with the sword of man." (31:8) . . . a tough message for practical men desiring to control of their own destiny. Waiting is always the highest occupation of the trusting heart. Hezekiah was the one nobleman that heeded Isaiah's advice. He took the high road."

God's Deliverance

Hezekiah, against the advice of his cabinet, believed the prophet and urged the people at Jerusalem to be silent and to trust in the Lord.

The historical deliverance was so profound, it is recorded in three places of the Bible (2 Kings, 2 Chronicles, Isaiah).

Hezekiah trusted . . . and God defended the city (Isaiah 36:15, 18, 21). When Jerusalem was surrounded by foreign armies, His angel struck 185,000 Assyrian soldiers.

A huge funeral pyre of 185,000 corpses was gathered into the Valley of Hinom where Israel burned and buried the cadavers.

Instead of being plundered, the inhabitants of Jerusalem plundered the Assyrians.

Thus, the promises of Isaiah 30 were marvelously fulfilled (Isaiah 37-39).

Furthermore, we know that Sennacherib's armies suffered from a plague of mice that crept through their encampments at Pelusium. One of the stunning results was that the mice ate the bow strings of the Assyrian soldiers making their weapons useless. Crippled, Sennacherib was forced to withdraw from Egypt.

Shortly after Sennacherib returned home, he was assassinated by his sons, Adrammelech and Sharezer in his *church* temple (Isaiah 37:36-38).

PART II

(1) Trust God, not the government.

We should carefully consider Isaiah's admonitions to not trust in government. Government is not god . . . nor a savior . . . nor our Lord. It is not our hope.

God's people are not only exhorted **not** to trust government (Egyptians) . . . they are **not** to trust politicians. Take a look at the middle verse in the middle of the Bible:

Psalm 118:8, 9 It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man (politicians). It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in princes (governors and rulers).

(2) It is un-American to trust government.

Our coins are stamped, "In God we Trust." It is our nation's motto that points to a spiritual maxim: True Americans don't trust government, they trust God:

"One cannot be a real conservative, or even a real American, without recognizing the danger that government decisions cannot be trusted and that government needs to be viewed with skepticism, and with public scrutiny. Distrust of government is baked in to the cake of America's governmental institutions and traditions" (Art Chartier, "Real American's Don't Trust Government," (July 6, 2013))."

(3) Trusting God and not Government is a hard lesson to learn!

Isaiah 30:15-16 This is what the Sovereign LORD, the Holy One of Israel, says: "In repentance and rest is your salvation, in quietness and trust is your strength, BUT YOU WOULD HAVE NONE OF IT. You said, 'No, we will flee on horses.' Therefore you will flee! You said, 'We will ride off on swift horses.'

We join parties . . . listen to politicians make outlandish claims while naively trusting their promises to solve our nation's problems. That's why it's so easy for government to grow. They promise us better incomes, better schools, and better health care . . . and Americans believe them.

Government was never intended to change society, redistribute wealth, or control mankind. Its sole purpose is to protect our liberties and provide protection to a free people (See the Declaration of Independence).

But, government officials want us to think that we can't exist without them. They want us to believe they are the solution for every problem . . . that their statutes and codes are needed to regulate men and to shape society into the humanistic, utopian model.

This is why we are always being lectured that more money should be pumped into public schools; more policemen should be hired to protect us; more programs should be created to help the homeless, fornicating pregnant women, and the struggling college students. It's maddening idolatry.

(4) Why would any American trust a secular government?

All government does is steal and plunder its citizens under color of law; enact insane laws; destroy freedom by taking away rights, do mischief through law in their attempt to control the universe (Psalm 94:20).

Only statist with no hope in God trust the State.

Jonathan Moseley raised the same issue, "Should you love and trust your government? Should you respect our leaders"? He said it like this (americanthinker.com, July 6, 2003):

"An enormous cultural divide has developed, from ignorance of American history, on whether it is right or wrong to trust our governments (local, state, and national) in the United States of America.

Many who imagine themselves to be conservative equate loving America with saying the Pledge of Allegiance and loving the government. If you love your country, you have to love and trust our government leaders, they subconsciously assume. They are offended by talk of not trusting our leaders and bureaucracies."

(5) Because government offices are filled with sinners, we should not trust government.

People are flawed, and flawed people get elected to office. Why would anyone trust them. Weak individuals simply hide behind the Democratic process excepting no responsibility for their decisions. In Isaiah's words, "the Egyptians are men, and not God."

Moseley went on to quote Newt Gingrich who explained it like this:

"Last week you thought your brother-in-law wasn't too smart. This week he gets a job working for the government. Now he is all-wise and can make decisions for everyone else in society... because he is a government employee. This author wonders: if that government employee quits his job, does he then lose intelligence and wisdom when he re-enters the private sector?"

Your neighbor on one side works in the private sector. Your neighbor on the other side works for the government. The first neighbor is only a mere mortal. The other neighbor is an all-wise, perfect, noble, pure philosopher king all because he works for the government. Of course, when he quits and gets a private sector job, he will magically transform back into an ordinary human being." (American Thinker Reblog)

Moseley continued (July 6, 2013):

"The very meaning of America is that imperfect men must both be restrained from potential misdeeds by government, yet those same imperfect and untrustworthy men also populate the government. The same nature of people who make government a necessity also fills that government and makes it also dangerous and suspect itself.

Therefore, we must always suspect, distrust, supervise, and suspect government. It is in the DNA of America that we tolerate a limited government because people are capable of evil. But those same fallen people (capable of evil) also work in the government and run the government. So we cannot trust the government any more than we would trust a society without a government."

This is the problem: *"If angels were to govern men, neither external nor internal controls on government would be necessary."*

"James Madison understood that government is not run by angels. Yet, the government being made up of perfect, noble, demi-gods who are all-wise and morally pure is the vision of liberals, moderates (but I repeat myself), liberal-tarians (nasty liberals trying to hijack and abuse the noble libertarian tradition), and the like. But how dare we assume evil

motive by government leaders? Well then, why do we need a government at all if you believe that people are fundamentally good"? (Moseley).

In conclusion,

We would do well to remember Isaiah's admonition that politicians "are men, and not God" and sinful fallen men at that! (Isaiah 31:3)

To get elected they promise their constituents the moon and the stars. But, none of them deliver. Politicians are weak, defective people. They know how to get elected, but once elected they never change the bulky, lusty, tyrannical nature of government.

9. Hope in the Midst of Political Turmoil

Psalm 76

Reviewing the headlines today is like reading the obituary of Christian causes.

Voters who appear to be suffering from traumatic brain disorders are voting criminal gangs into office. Immigrants swarm across the border like trails of ants searching for goodies left over after at an American picnic.

Images of violence, murder, and riots fill the evening news. Communists, feminists, and Sodomites demand center stage in the American theater. Drag queens are invited to read books to children in school libraries. Woke America doesn't know the difference between males and females, between XY and XX chromosomes. Steak lovers are expected to give up eating meat in order not to offend the soy-vegetarian. Crazy politicians are wearing double masks and threatening truthers with forced drug therapy. Warmongers in CONgress talk about surviving a nuclear war as if it like recovering from the common cold. Is there any hope?

Tares are among us -- an enemy has done this . . . and, the problem is bigger than any one of us (Matthew 13:28).

Here is a psalm bursting with assurance that God has command of politicians in rebellion against His law-order. The psalmist gives us assurance that the lunatics in power are limited by the steel arm of God's sovereign power.

The background of this psalm is the Assyrian invasion of Jerusalem under Sennacherib circa 701 B.C. Before us are the lessons the songwriter wants us to learn.

Psalm 76:1-2 To the chief Musician on Neginoth, A Psalm OR Song of Asaph.

The composer delivered this psalm to the Chief Musician after the Assyrian invasion into Judah during the reign of Hezekiah. It is called a “Song of Asaph,” the father of Hezekiah’s secretary (2 Kings 18:18).

A poem set to music, the verse liturgizes the dominion of God over tyrants and their imperialistic agendas.

Like a war-time correspondent, the psalmist publishes his report:

1 In Judah is God known: his name is great in Israel. 2 In Salem also is his tabernacle, and his dwelling place in Zion.

Do you want to know God? Where should you begin your search? Where can you find Him? China? Tibet? India? Mecca? Not hardly.

The grand truth of this psalm is that God can only be known by revelation . . . that He has revealed Himself to men . . . that ancient Hebrews were the steward of this light.

The search for God begins and ends with the record of the LORD’s dealings with Abraham and his descendants? God is known in Israel, and nowhere else . . . until this era the birth of the true Israel of God (Christ) . . . and His representatives, the church.

[Note: Do not confuse modern Ashkenazi s0-called "Israel" (fake Jews) with ancient Israel, a polity of Hebrews.]

The adjective “great” emphasizes the wonder of the manifestation of God among the Hebrews and the reverence they had for His Name.

(Ancient) Israel became His station to telegraph the knowledge of God to the nations. While all people on earth have access to the knowledge of creation, only this nation became the trustees of His special revelation to mankind.

The composer gives four metonyms to identify the locus of the knowledge of God: Judah, Israel, Salem, and Zion.

No man will find God in a Tibetan cave or some Buddhist Pagoda in Asia. But, He can be found in the history and theology of the Hebrews . . . and their NT counterparts.

The name "Israel" was the name given to Jacob, the father of the twelve tribes. Judah was the ruling tribe with its capital in Jerusalem a.k.a. "Salem" which means "peace" -- the ancient name for Jerusalem. Zion is the high hill in Jerusalem—the place where Solomon built the temple. Zion is simply a metonym for the temple or the presence of God in the capital city.

The Glory was pleased to dwell among his people in that nation from 1440 BC to 586 BC, and in and through the personal visitation of the Lord Jesus Christ in the New Testament era whose body was the temple of God (John 2:19-20).

3 There brake he the arrows of the bow, the shield, and the sword, and the battle. Selah.

"There" refers to the landscape of Jerusalem.

With blazing fury, the Assyrians smashed the nations crushing opposing armies in the Levant. When they advanced to the gates of Jerusalem, knees knocked and teeth rattled. The veteran Assyrian infantry seemed undefeatable. Controlling all the roads, they shut Jerusalem in like "a caged bird." Their breath smelled foul and death wafted through the air.

The psalmist wasted no time in rifling his message to the people:

"There" at Jerusalem, God broke the arrows. . . bow . . . shield . . . sword. . . and the battle! The word "brake" is a Piel verb intensifying the meaning that God "crushed" and "smashed" the proud Assyrian Army.

The story of the Assyrian invasion and the events surrounding their defeat is described in 2 Kings 18-20; 2 Chronicles 28-32; and Isaiah 37-39.

In this account, God's destroying angel massacred 185,000 Assyrian soldiers during the night. When sunlight kissed the eastern walls of Jerusalem, the watchmen saw nothing but corpses in the Assyrian camp (Isaiah 37-38). Instead of being ransacked, Hezekiah's people plundered the Assyrians.

4 Thou art more glorious and excellent than the mountains of prey.

Stunned by God's work, the psalmist burst into praise.

A few days before the smashing victory, the refugees in Jerusalem shook like leaves in the wind while considering the power of the invaders. No doubt the

headlines in the “Jerusalem Post” read “City of David Faces Genocide By Assyrians.” A dark cloud of negativity settled on Jerusalem as the people faced the pragmatic reality the greatest army on earth surrounded Jerusalem eager to kill, capture, and plunder.

The “mountain of prey” refers to the territory belonging to the “Lion of Judah.” It was in the Lion’s killing fields wherein the hunter became the hunted; the victim became the victor; and the predator became the prey.

After the crushing defeat of Sennacherib’s army, the nation stood in awe of the glory and excellence of their God.

The psalmist teaches us a lesson that *we should walk by faith and not by sight*; that is, to stand confident in His power and grace even when we hear the thunder of war-rumors, soldiers marching, and drums pounding. Wait on the Lord, and barricade rashness and impetuosity.

5 The stouthearted are spoiled, they have slept their sleep: and none of the men of might have found their hands.

The “stouthearted” refers to the impressive Assyrian army.

“They have slept their sleep” publishes their devastating defeat.

“None of the men of might have found their hands” describes the helplessness of the Assyrian troops to fight against an angel of God.

When the fury of God’s death angel struck the republican guard of Sennacherib’s army, a strange stupor seized them so they couldn’t even grasp their swords to defend themselves against the destroyer. Like bar-room drunks, they staggered through their tents unable to find their weapons . . . and, even if they possessed a sword, what good would it do against an omnipotent Spirit?

6 At thy rebuke, O God of Jacob, both the chariot and horse are cast into a dead sleep.

Chariots and horses on those ancient battlefields were like an infantry facing a German Leopard Tank with sticks and stones.

God did not stop the Assyrian meat grinder from leaving Nineveh, or stop them on the killing fields of Phoenicia, Syria, Egypt, or Moab.

But, when they came to the gates of Jerusalem, the sovereign LORD God of Israel issued His command. Enough! Like the Egyptian charioteers were buried

at the Red Sea, Assyrian corpses littered the treed landscape around Jerusalem like masses of poisoned ants.

When secular man seems to have gained the upper hand in the battle between good and evil, the Christian must remember that God is sovereign and that the wicked are crunched like crackers under His feet.

7 Thou, even thou, art to be feared: and who may stand in thy sight when once thou art angry?

There is a classic riddle that asks, "What is black and blue and red all over?" In our mind appears the loser of an Irish bare knuckle street fight.

What is the answer to the question, "Who may stand when once Thou art angry?" The only fitting answer is . . . "No one!"

The pronoun "Thou" is used twice in the Hebrew making it emphatic: "You, and only You, O Lord, are to be feared!" *We don't fear man, we fear Christ. We don't fear the condemnation of government, we fear the condemnation of God.*

Barnes: The repetition of the word "thou" is emphatic, as if the mind paused at the mention of God, and remained in a state of reverence, repeating the thought.

It is an error to publish how great evil has become in society instead of how great "God is in the generation of the righteous" (Psalm 14:5).

Instead of slogging through the swamp of despair in the dark everglades of politics, we tread the highway of righteousness illuminated by the promises of God.

Instead of focusing on the muscle mass of swamp critters, let us gaze at the authority and power of the Lion of Judah Who commands victories for Jacob in his killing fields (Psalm 44:4).

Considering the might of the enemy instead of contemplating the historical conquests of Christ does nothing to increase confidence associated with faith. Faith does not lead to victory, it **IS** the victory that overcomes the world (1 John 5:4).

*"Now faith **IS** the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen" (Hebrews 11:1).*

God is more interested in our study of Him than in our assessment of the strength of our opponents. Declaring the might of the enemy is to have more faith in the enemy than in the power of Christ!

To fear the wicked is to have more faith in man than in Christ. The only fear permitted in the Christian life is fear of Him who has the power to cast into hell (Luke 12:5).

God limits the power of the wicked (v. 10); unbelief limits the power of God.

The reason for this fear is the anger of God, an ominous virtue that demands expression against the unrighteousness of man.

Study God. Know God. Believe God. Those who challenge His authority will end up being black and blue and red all over.

8 Thou didst cause judgment to be heard from heaven; the earth feared, and was still, 9 When God arose to judgment, to save all the meek of the earth. Selah.

Judgment (*diyn*) refers to God's intervention into history to punish the Assyrian troops with plunder on their minds and murder in their hearts. The roaring discharge of Divine justice pierced every ear. The earth shuddered. All stood at attention stunned by the devastation of unleashed anger on the Assyrians.

The “*meek of the earth*” are the quiet souls in the land that do no harm. When dark clouds gather and naked fear invades souls because of the waves of injustice crashing on the shoreline, Christians know that when their Captain gives the order and says “enough is enough,” the heavens are silent and the earth is mute.

The verb “*arose*” is an anthropomorphism eluding to the fact men wake up from a sleep. Figuratively speaking, when our Captain awakes and shouts His command, the roaring sea of maritime powers gives way to peace and calm.

10 Surely the wrath of man shall praise thee: the remainder of wrath shalt thou restrain.

Which of us hasn't felt utterly exasperated after listening to the evening news? The world is dangerously over populated with reporters that slant the news. The depravity of politicians seems to have no boundaries. Psychopaths seem to be in charge of powerful Western countries. We know there is a limit to intelligence, but there doesn't seem to be a limit to the madness of God's enemies.

"Two things are infinite: the universe and human stupidity; and I'm not sure about the universe." (Albert Einstein)

"Power is okay, and stupidity is usually harmless. Power and stupidity together are dangerous". (Patrick Rothfuss, The Name of the Wind)

*"Never argue with **stupid** people, they will drag you down to their level and then beat you with experience." (Mark Twain)*

Is there an anchor for the soul that can keep us together while lunatics captain the ship?

The conjunction "surely" (*kee*) announces the main lesson of the psalm—a detail about the sovereignty of God, that if grasped, can cause us to experience calm in the midst of political storms.

The phrase "wrath of man" refers to all the insane, imperial ambitions of politicians and social engineers.

Not all psychopaths are behind bars. Maniacs are in power and hold key positions in the apparatus of government institutions. Madmen run for office. Voting fails. Money talks. Justice broken. The status quo in the hands of unaccountable bureaucrats makes ordinary citizens feel as helpless as ants to stop the elephant stampede of lunacy thundering across the land.

"shall praise thee" (todah) means "to throw up the hands." Ellicott says, "Possibly we should render, 'and those who remain from their wrath shall celebrate a festival,' since the suggested emendation is the word used in that sense."

The Cambridge Bible adds, *"All rebellion against God's will must in the end redound to God's glory: it serves to set His sovereignty in a clearer light"* (Exodus 9:16).

The Pulpit Commentary considers man's wrath *"shall give occasion for great deeds on God's part - deeds which will bring him praise and Honor."*

The word "restrain" in Hebrew means "to fasten one's belt" or "to gird" with a sash (Exodus 12:11; 29:9). God restrains these nutcases. Like guard dogs, they are on a leash.

Benson:

"thou shalt put it on as an ornament, which the girdle was; thou shalt adorn thyself with it as a conqueror adorns himself with the spoils of his

enemies."

Barnes:

"It is not that there was anything in the wrath itself, or in their plans or intentions, that was in itself "adapted" to honor God; but that it was overruled by him, so that he took "occasion" from it to display his own character."

Timothy, in his battle against heresiarches in Ephesus, faced "madmen" (*anoia*) like the sorcerers, Jannes and Jambres, Pharaoh's magicians. See 2 Timothy 3:9-10. In this passage Paul assures his son in the faith "they will make no further progress;" that is, there is a limit to what these lunatics can accomplish because God restrains them.

The great question for the godly is, "How much evil must these tyrants do before God shackles them?"

The answer is, "just enough;" that is, these belligerents are not capable of carrying out all their wicked schemes against innocent people. God limits the plans of those intent on world dominion.

The term "remainder of wrath" refers to the frustrated devices of ambitious politicians — evil plans they cannot legislate — cannot mandate -- schemes and dreams they are precluded from executing while in office.

The trusting Christian is not in a panic because he knows that God has these devils on a chain. These criminals that appear to be unrestrained in their folly will be used for the glory and praise of God.

The problem with man is not something from without, but from within.

Jeremiah 17:9 "the heart is deceitful and desperately wicked, who can know it?"

No man knows the depth of his own wickedness. No man is as evil as he can be because God restrains evil.

And in our story, the might of Sennacherib and his army fell as corpses in that ancient theater in order to demonstrate the crushing, bone-breaking power of the Lion of Judah.

The invasion of the Assyrians to Jerusalem and their stunning slaughter resulted in praise to the LORD; their retreat from Jerusalem demonstrated how God restrains the wrath of man.

Now we come to *the main application of the psalm.*

11 Vow, and pay unto the LORD your God: let all that be round about him bring presents unto him that ought to be feared.

Since these heads of state are bridled, and God is the only One to be feared, *believing men should fear God and obey Him Only!* Godly men feed faith and starve doubt; proclaim the power of God and scoff at the illusory strength of *rebels.*

The psalmist calls upon God's people to stay the course; to keep their vows to Him; to not be unraveled by the madness of these political lunatics . . . to not retreat out of fear . . . and, to stand up for righteousness.

12 He shall cut off the spirit of princes: he is terrible to the kings of the earth.

The psalm ends with a great promise. The word "princes" refers to politicians and civil rulers.

The Hebrew word for "cut off" means "to lop off" like a vinedresser prunes a vine (Leviticus 25:5; 11). It is the first word in the sentence, the emphatic position, assuring us tyrants will be pruned.

The Hebrew word "terrible" (*yaw rey*) is translated "*phobeo*" in the LXX meaning the LORD is the fear of kings. An evil prince with standing armies is no match for an offended God.

The psalmist leaves us with a promise. Political leaders like Lenin and Stalin who seem so unrestrained by empathy or guilt, and those modern political leaders that are driven by unrestrained pity to spend a nation's resources trying to solve all the world's problems, shall be "cut off;" that is, God will terminate their ambitions and bring them to an end!!

Just as the LORD God was terrible to the Assyrian army, He will be terrible to modern rulers. He is to be feared because He has them ALL on a leash. He can defeat their imperial ambitions. And, he will subject their evil plans to His will. He will cut down the antagonists and destroy them forever. It is not God's will that humanistic regimes succeed. Napoleon, Hitler, Mussolini, Mao Tse Tung, Pol Pot, Stalin, Idi Amin, Saddam Hussein and their dictatorial ambitions are dead.

These mighty monarchs that thunder on earth for a time have *a terminus ad quem*, but the kingdom of God shall endure forever. The earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea (Isaiah 11:9).

Onward Christian soldiers, onward!

Forget being "safe." We live in a maximum liability universe where living life involves risks!

Don't leave the battlefield. Be true. Be strong. Be free. Take risks. Believe God.

10. The Genesis of Government

Genesis 9:1-6

Genesis is about the beginning of things.

In Genesis 9, we have the FOUNDATION of human government. Jews call it the Noahide Laws which appears to rope people into the Talmud.

We want to stay in the Biblical text.

Genesis 9:1-6 And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth. And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every fowl of the air, upon all that moveth upon the earth, and upon all the fishes of the sea; into your hand are they delivered. Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat. And surely your blood of your lives will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it, and at the hand of man; at the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man. Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man.

Noah Webster (1800s) "affirmed that the principles of republican government have their origin in the Scriptures" and he endeavored to build an educational system embodying "a love of virtue, patriotism, and religion."³

³ Noah Webster, 1828, p. 12.

God ordained three institutions for the good of mankind: the family, civil government, and the church of Jesus Christ.

Genesis nine is sometimes called the “Government Chapter.”

Notice the phrase, “*And God blessed Noah and his sons and said unto them . . .*”

Part of this blessing is authority to judge criminals; that is, God places on man certain duties. Responsibility is a prerequisite to freedom. There is no freedom without individual responsibility.

Robert E Lee advised his son, “Do your duty in all things like the old Puritan. You cannot do more, and you should never wish to do less.”

The Purpose of Government

In this text, God gives men the responsibility to police themselves and to purge society of evildoers: “Who sheddeth man’s blood, by man shall his blood be shed.” God gave mankind the authority to preserve the rights of man by punishing those that violate man’s most sacred rights.

One way to improve life on earth is to purge society of murderers. *Both the saving of life and the taking of life are a duty of men.*

God’s law is not a private matter. It is not for Christians to obey and others to ignore. A civil society and the punishment of rebels is binding on all men.

The command “thou shall not kill” and the prohibition against shedding man’s blood is more than a political maxim. **It is the foundation of all government.** It establishes the grounds of a police force / military to defend the godly order and to punish criminals that crush the rights of others. Thus, the establishment of police power forms the basis of a civil society — *a posse comitatus* among men sort of speak.

Total freedom is neither ideal nor possible, because total freedom leads to anarchy. There is no gospel without law. To love the gospel is to love the law (not Judaism); and to love the law is to love the gospel.

In a sinful world we cannot live without government. A limited government that punishes lawbreakers is essential for freedom. When criminals go unpunished, society breaks down on the shores of cynicism.

Good government not only protects innocent life, it requires moral vigor to take the life of those guilty of capital crimes.

A society that bans the death penalty rebels against God’s law-order either by making *an idol out of life* or by despising *God’s law-order*, or both.

Government Needed

Murder, rape, beatings, theft, plundering, and violence characterized Noah's world. After Noah stepped off the barge, God gave men a remedy to prevent the demoralization of the pre-diluvian world.

God instituted the powers of civil government to correct the pre-diluvian problem of hoodlum gangs controlling and plundering societies of men. We simply cannot live without law and order whether it be through self-government, family government, or civil government.

The fall of man demands forming just powers which will protect good men against evil men who infringe upon the basic rights of others.

In order to prevent another pre-diluvian corruption, God ordained the institution of civil government—a form of police power that came from the bottom up, not from the top down; a government of the people, by the people, and for the people. A civil structure based on God's order, God's command, and God's blessing.

This institution was not the product of man's imagination. It is not the product of natural law. It is germane to the mind of God Who declared his law over mankind.

Since government is an institution sanctioned by God, men should respect and support the original intent of this institution. Those who think government is not needed simply do not understand the raw sinfulness of man. A society built on utopian principles creates anarchy. The French Revolution comes to mind.

Furthermore, since God created the institution, He has authority over it. Governments are responsible to the God of the Bible to conduct their affairs and to obey His laws.

"For dominion belongs to the LORD and he rules over the nations" (Ps. 22:28).

He rules forever by his power, his eyes watch the nations— let not the rebellious rise up against him. Selah (Ps. 66:7).

The LORD has established his throne in heaven, and his kingdom rules over all" (Ps. 103:19)

God did not direct a particular system of government such as monarchy, oligarchy, dictatorship, democracy, or a republic. God ordained it! Men build it. While these systems tend to be flawed because of the inherent weakness of men, any of these systems would produce justice if officials would surrender to the authority of Christ and the limited nature of law (Psalm 2).

The Covenant Nature of government.

It is a blessing to be in covenant with God. Notice the covenant is made “with you, and with your descendants after you.” This is a unilateral covenant where God makes the promises and sets the rules; “I establish my covenant with you.”

Acceptance of the offer is inferred in the text by the fact the covenant was in response to the consideration (sacrifice) made by Noah in the previous chapter. Russians, Chinese, Europeans, South Americans, Africans, Indians, and Americans are duty bound to this covenant.

Every government should be Christian exercising its limited authority under the rule of law.

Notice the Responsibilities of this Binding Agreement.

God has a responsibility to protect the earth from a global deluge, and man has a responsibility to protect the innocent from a deluge of evil.

This covenant has never been revoked or abrogated. The killing of the innocent is always wrong; likewise, permissiveness of evil and obstruction of justice is more than a great evil. The neglect of government to punish its own criminal violation of law invites cynicism.

To view death as the ultimate evil is a failure to see God as the judge of the living and the dead. Men are not to make an idol out of life. Respected and protected, yes! Idolized, no! Both the saving of life and the taking of life is a duty of man. Those guilty of assault, battery, and murder, must face the strong arm of justice.

The positive command, “be fruitful and multiply” created a duty for married couples. Thus, abortion is also a capital crime.

Quite possibly, the final judgment of fire will be a sentence upon the world because men refuse to obey the Noahic Covenant (2 Peter 3).

The purpose of government is to protect the rights of man

Possibly, the most profound Statement in our political history is found in the Declaration of Independence:

*“We hold these truths to be self-evident: That all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; **that, to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men . . .**”*

In a post-Edenic world where men find it easier to plunder the production of other men, the purpose of government is to protect God-given rights and to organize themselves to punish violators. Self-defense against assault, battery, and criminal homicide with lethal force has its foundation in the Noahic Covenant.

Men's rights precede human legislation. Bastiat, the French philosopher and economist stated,

*"Life, liberty, and property do not exist because men have made laws. On the contrary, it was the fact that life, liberty, and property existed beforehand that caused men to make laws in the first place."*⁴

This statement is opposed to *Legal Positivism*, which builds on the false premise held by most members of the United Nations that there is no right or wrong prior to a legislative act of man. We must remember: Only God has the right to define good and evil. When men define "good," we end up with abortion, Sodomy, mask mandates, and oppressive taxation.

There is no such thing as natural law, there is only a law over nature, and that law is God's law.

Every command in the Bible grants a right to man. Likewise, every prohibition limits man. While work is a right, killing an unborn baby is not. While marriage is a right of man, same-sex marriage is not. What is "exceeding wicked," is defined by and proscribed by God's law — not by Congress.

If the purpose of government is to protect human rights, then the purpose of legislation is to protect the life, liberty, and property of men.

Law is negative. Its purpose is not to create justice, but to prevent injustice. Justice is only achieved in the absence of injustice. Every man has a right to defend his life, liberty, and property with lethal force. Likewise, individual men have a duty to kill killers . . . but, in a civilized society individuals give up that right, except for self-defense, to a government of men dedicated to the execution of justice.

A question comes to mind: What is a man supposed to do when a government that he should respect does not protect his rights, or worse, plunders his rights? The answer deserves a studied answer: Part of which is in Proverbs.

Proverbs 28:28 "When the wicked rise to power, people go into hiding; but when the wicked perish, the righteous thrive." (NIV).

Lawful government, therefore, is the collective organization of men united to defend their lives, their freedom, and their property. He gave communities of men the power to organize themselves and to punish aberrant behavior that violated the natural rights of men. In America, a grand jury of 25 can organize themselves as sovereigns and become the ultimate authority on law and justice

⁴ Frederick Bastiat, The Law, Translated by Dean Russell, (New York: Foundation for Economic Education, 1998), p. x.

. . . at least until the unconstitutional expansion of the federal government over the states.

Civil authorities have the commission to arrest those who commit homicide, abortion, infanticide, knifing, euthanasia, assassination, terrorism, lynching, torture, and maiming people; that is, to hunt down those who destroy the life, liberty, and property of others and to arrest, try, and kill them.

This order not only forbids **negative acts** like homicide and premeditated murder, **it demands a positive, vigorous application** of the death penalty towards criminals.

It is clear that exercising **capital punishment** on criminals for capital crimes is a the duty of mankind.

It is NOT murder to execute a murderer. Both the protecting of life and the taking of a life are religious duties of men.

That the State is in place for the purpose of preserving life and administering justice is supported by other Biblical texts.

“Thou shall not kill” (The Sixth Commandment).

For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil (Romans 13:2,4).

Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well (I Peter 2:14)

These verses clearly inform us that government was set in place to punish evil men (murderers) and to promote the general welfare of society. Law is not a means of salvation; it is the means of purging society of evil men.

Our Founding Fathers read the Bible and came to the same conclusion when they stated the purpose of government in the Declaration of Independence that, *“to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed.”*

When the State administers justice, the people enjoy the blessings of liberty. But, when the State advances legislation that plunders its citizens and protects murders, liars, and thieves, government creates confusion of tongues and commits social suicide.

When law and morality are polarized, Citizens face the tough alternative of losing their morals or losing respect for the law.

Genesis 9:5 And surely your blood of your lives will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it, and at the hand of man; at the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man.

Capital punishment was intended to strike fear into the heart of man and to deter crime in society. The means of capital punishment is not specified. But, we know from other Biblical texts that capital punishment was by the sword, by hanging, and by stoning.

The banning of capital punishment is a modern phenomenon. What are men supposed to do when the government they should respect refuses to administer justice toward the wicked or punishes the innocent?

It didn't use to be this way.

"On Feb 15, 1933, anarchist Giuseppe Zangara tried to assassinate President-elect Franklin Roosevelt in Miami. His arm jostled, he killed instead Chicago Mayor Anton Cermak. Five weeks later, on March 20, 1933, Zangara died in the electric chair.

Swift, sure and pitiless, but that legal justice system worked" (Pat Buchanan).

Liberals in our day have disputed the claim that capital punishment deters crime. It is true that capital punishment is not effective as it used to be.

But, the problem is not with capital punishment per se, but with the system of jurisprudence surrounding the charge and the inordinate amount of time it takes to dispense justice. Today, it may take ten to fifteen years to exhaust legal remedies before putting a criminal to death. If justice were administered quickly, the crime rate would drop like a falling star.

Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil (Eccl. 8:11).

We believe in "due process rights" and a trial by jury, but due process doesn't take 12 years to achieve.

Notice the limitations of government.

The purpose of government is to punish killers, kidnappers, and thieves -- not to create heaven on earth. Noah's covenant did not commission a government of do-gooder, charity workers. It simply sanctioned the lawfulness of capital punishment on murderers.

Good government exercises limited authority. Tyrannical states have an unlimited view of government that seek to rule over men from cradle to grave – - governments that seek to be a savior among men for every problem known to man.

The institution of government was put in place for the administration of justice—to “shed blood;” that is, to purge society of its criminal element.

Law cannot save man! More laws do not make a better society.

Law was **not** intended to create a utopia among men. Its purpose is limited in that law **is designed to produce a civil society by purging society of evil doers.**

Zillions of laws do not prevent zillions of crimes; they only make criminals out of every man. In Stalinist Russia, Lavrentiy Beria told Stalin, “*Show me the man, and I’ll find you the crime.*”

In free states, the laws are few; in tyrannical States, the laws are many.

It is the gospel that saves men from sin; a swift and proper application of God’s law saves society of criminals and creates fear in men of doing something wrong.

The opposite of grace, is not law, but permissiveness; the opposite of law is not grace, but lawlessness.

In a secondary sense, the purpose of government is to protect life, liberty, and property.

In an evil world all men have the duty to not only protect themselves but to protect their neighbors from criminals who do not respect the rights of other men.

If the purpose of law is the protection of individual rights, then law may not be used to accomplish what individuals have no right to do. *An overreaching State is as dangerous as a lawless man.*

The modern State presumes that no citizen has a right to control his own land and that every citizen has a right to control his neighbor’s property, his neighbor’s behavior, and his neighbor’s thinking.

The great danger of government is that a certain class of people may use legislation to plunder and control another class of people. Abraham Lincoln’s War of Northern Aggression was the act of a tyrant wherein he used the deadly force of government to enforce compliance toward northern despotism in the South.

The Posse Comitatus Act of 1878 took away from the Republican federal government the power to enforce public policies within the States, and placed the duty of law enforcement on the old principle where the responsibility to enforce the law belonged to the county sheriff, or other law officers, empowering them to conscript able-bodied man to assist the sheriff in keeping the peace.

This principle is Biblical in that it places the onus of law enforcement upon the shoulders of every man . . . and not upon a hired ruffians or a staff of professional accusers.

The purpose of government is not education, welfare, or even the building of roads. It is the execution of justice upon common-law criminals. When a government steps outside its God-given purpose, it abandons its authority, and becomes a god-tyrant to society.

WE THE PEOPLE granted Congress eighteen powers. Other rights were reserved for the States or to the people (Amendment IX, X). When Congress stays within these limits, the People are secure; when Congress over steps its authority, rights disappear and knees knock. Just as a permissive State is a threat to justice, a tyrannical State is a threat to freedom.

- Notice the decentralization of government.
- The command to scatter on the earth in Genesis 9 infers that each clan has a duty to set up a government under the authority of the Noahic covenant.

This secured the purpose of justice in every society. Men have a right . . . even a duty to defend themselves individually and to defend themselves collectively by appointing magistrates that will administer justice among the people.

Proverbs 25:26 A righteous man (or society) falling down (giving way) before the wicked (criminals) is as a troubled fountain, and a corrupt spring.

Furthermore, this prevented a tyrant from perverting justice to his own selfish ends by using the *law* to manipulate huge populations of humanity; that is, tyrant States convert the principle of the *rule of law* into despotic policy of *rule by law*.

In conclusion, because of the pre-flood violence, God ordained government. God established the institution of government as a blessing to protect the life, liberty, and property of its people. To resist the institution of government is to resist the will of God. But is not resistance to will of God to oppose officials who act tyrannically. When government performs its purpose, humanity thrives; when it abandons this purpose or commits ultra vires acts, a culture of death stalks society.

11. Foundations Stones of Nation Building

Deuteronomy 32

The Last Will and Testament of Moses

FOUR FOUNDATIONS OF A NATION

- Political scientists identify four building blocks of a nation: land with geographical boundaries, a race of people, religion / law, and language.
- Eliminate any of these supports and you no longer have a nation.
- The enemies of America are constantly chiseling away at these building blocks:
- **One Race:** America with one foot in the grave is now a land filled with multi-racial people. Cultural warriors push interracial marriages as the new norm aiming their bitter hatred at white Europeans.
- **Land:** America no longer exercises sovereign control over her borders. America is being conquered by millions of unarmed men of military age crossing our southern borders without a shot being fired.
- **Language:** In some public school districts, schools are overwhelmed with students from 60 different language groups.
- **Religion:** As to religion, Congress has targeted Christianity for eradication and embraced polytheism, multiculturalism, and legal pluralism. The trend is to develop an all-inclusive one world religion . . . but to accomplish this, Congress must abolish John 14:6 and Deuteronomy 6:4.

Psalm 11:3 "If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?"

INTRODUCTION TO DEUTERONOMY 32

This is a declaration set to music to remind nations of the **Foundation Stones of successful Nation Building**.

Build on the LORD God and flourish, or build on man and perish.

Moses is credited with writing this canticle. To attribute this to 6th century authors is to rob the passage of its historic harmony.

Hebrews call it, "The Song of Moses."

It has a beginning and an end; and earthly application and a heavenly fulfillment. It includes Miriam's Song of Moses in Exodus 15 written after

Israel's redemption from Egypt, and this chorus in Deuteronomy 32 written after the 40 years of wandering in the desert. This is Moses' last word to the people before he died. It could be called his "Swan Song," or "Moses' Last Will and Testament."

Keep in mind as you read this song, it was designed to memorialize truth liturgically to empower the nation towards obedience and greatness (31:8-13).

Every person in Israel had to learn this canticle. It became Israel's national anthem. It inspired them to remember the LORD God and His law was the foundation of the nation, and that to depart from His law was the short cut to utter ruin, poverty, and enslavement.

Likewise, the song is a prophecy—a witness to Israel's stubborn rebellion against the goodness of God (31:19-22). Its ultimate fulfillment is the redemption of the saints who will sing this song afresh once they have crossed the great sea, Revelation 15:3.

Being Israel's National Anthem . . . Americans would do well to remember the LORD God is the only Rock upon which to build a nation . . . that all other foundations (liberalism) perpetuated by Congressional leaders are "sinking sand."

REMEMBER THE IMPORTANCE OF THIS SONG

Deuteronomy 32:1 "Give ear, O heavens, and I will speak, and let the earth hear the words of my mouth.

So important is this message, Moses calls the heavens and the earth as a witness to the solemnity of this declaration.

The heavens and earth act like a notary public confirming the gravity, authenticity, and veracity of the claims contained herein. Age brings with it certain wisdom. The last things said can be simple but profound.

32:2 May my teaching drop as the rain, my speech distill as the dew, like gentle rain upon the tender grass, and like showers upon the herb.

As rain gives life to vegetation, Moses' words are rivers in the sky that produce cedars in nation. These aerial words are not "nice" poetry, but vita-words that strengthen the bones of the people.

REMEMBER THE NAME

Before us are Two Foundation Stones for nation building.

32:3 For I will proclaim the name of the LORD; ascribe greatness to our God!

The first foundation for building a successful nation encompasses true and correct theology.

As in the Lord's Prayer, Moses' first concern is honor of the name of the LORD. Not any god will do. The people are exhorted to thoughtfully contemplate the superlative character of the LORD God, to credit Him with distinguished greatness, and to center decision making on the hub of His counsels.

A nation's future is based on the importance they place on pursuing the true God. Correct theology remains the bedrock of a nation. Every other foundation builds on quick sand. Moses holds up the Name of the LORD God and *Who He is* as the contingency for successful nation building.

He urges his people to pursue a single heart and to devote themselves to remembering the priority, preeminence, and prerogatives of the LORD God. He does not encourage them to honor the sun, moon, and stars. Nor does Moses exhort his nation to venerate man. Unlike the Greeks who were *anthropocentric*, Israel was *Theocentric*.

The honor men have for the LORD determines their destiny. Since theology is the queen of the sciences, contemplation of God is man's most important occupation.

Moses presented Israel with a *Yahwistic World View*—a world view based on the supremacy of the LORD God and His law-order. He set before them a vision to make the LORD their rock, their banner, their standard, their pride, their hub, and their canon of right and wrong.

Are Americans listening?

32:4 *"The Rock, his work is perfect, for all his ways are justice. A God of faithfulness and without iniquity, just and upright is he.*

The title "Rock" is mentioned five times as the only Sure Foundation for nation building. This canticle calls for continuous allegiance to the LORD as the bedrock upon which to build a civil society. What hope!

Five attributes of God that nations would do well to emulate are as follows: perfection (wholesome and exemplary), justice (fair and balanced), truth or faithfulness, righteousness (correct or lawful), and to be morally straight or accurate. This is Moses' way of ordering the nation to model, imitate, follow, pattern, and organize their conduct around the character of God. Man is more than an animal. He is called to be God-like; not a god, but to emulate the Lord's transient attributes.

Gods are the source of laws. If you want to find a nation's god, look no further than its source of law. Nation's enact laws based on their theology whether it be true or false. In America, the source of law is in "the People," and its god is "whatever" the people imagine him, it, or she to be. In Israel, the Source of law was the LORD God, not fickle man with his love of lawlessness (anarchy).

32:5 They have dealt corruptly with him; they are no longer his children because they are blemished; they are a crooked and twisted generation.

The second foundation stone upon which to build a nation is accurate anthropology.

Mankind has partaken of the fruits of the Poisonous Tree. Man is fallen. Men are sinners and are prone to twist, turn, and manipulate matters for their own benefit.

This is the history of mankind: crooked, perverted, and distorted.

Nations are wise to distrust human nature and to build into their legal systems checks and balances. Is anything scarier on earth than an effective, efficient government with unlimited power? Stalin comes to mind.

Everyone who trusts government obviously failed history class or was hypnotized by some left-wing whacko teaching redacted history he learned from MTI (Moron Training Institute).

Both the French and the Americans built their respective governments on the rights of man. But, the French had a utopian view of man. In the end, 20,000 people lost their heads under the guillotine during the Reign of Terror (September 1793 - July, 1794). In America, the Founders distrusted human nature and built into their government a system of checks and balances. No lives were lost due to internal discord during the revolution.

32:6 Do you thus repay the LORD, you foolish and senseless people? Is not he your father, who created you, who made you and established you?

A correct view of human nature is a prerequisite for good government. While man is made in the image of God, there is none of this nonsense that man is born good; that man's problems are a result of lack of self-esteem, lack of empathy, or malfunctions of his social life.

Moses gets to the heart of Biblical anthropology. Man is fallen, foolish, and senseless. He must be governed by the rule of law, or he will be governed by his own perverted lusts and utopian views of mankind.

Moses believed in the rule of law . . . but not ruling men by law! A nation must build its government with checks and balances . . . always suspicious of flawed, sinful rulers.

REMEMBER YOUR HISTORY

7 Remember the days of old; consider the years of many generations; ask your father, and he will show you, your elders, and they will tell you.

Those who cannot remember the past are condemned to repeat it. George Santayana (16 December 1863 in Madrid, Spain).

Winners of wars write history the way they want you to remember it, attributing God-like virtues to themselves while smearing all that is good about their opponents. Call it propaganda, not history. Only the truth about the past can assure accuracy for the future.

Not all victors are virtuous, nor are all foes are full of evil. The Civil War comes to mind.

“There was a land of Cavaliers and Cotton Fields called the Old South. Here in this pretty world, Gallantry took its last bow. Here was the last ever to be seen of Knights and their Ladies Fair, of Master and of Slave. Look for it only in books, for it is no more than a dream remembered, a Civilization gone with the wind.”(Prologue – “Gone with the Wind”)

REMEMBER GOD CREATED THE NATIONS

32:8 When the Most High gave to the nations their inheritance, when he divided mankind, he fixed the borders of the peoples according to the number of the sons of God.

Notice God created the nation and gave them boundaries. We call them borders. God promoted distinctions, differences, limitations, and jurisdictions.

The Scripture promotes nationalism, not globalism; NATIONALISM, not internationalism; independence and self-sufficiency, not servitude and dependency. This separation is necessary to prevent globalism, a one world totalitarian government as in Genesis 11.

Conservatives believe government officials take an oath to support America and to protect our borders, not to support and fund a world government . . . and certainly not to become the world’s asylum from people south of the border. Enemies foreign and domestic believe America should be fair, practice the principles of equality (communism), and to use its wealth to build and third world countries. The United Nations and the NWO comes to mind.

You can’t have a country if the land belongs to whole world and you have no strict immigration enforcement.

REMEMBER THE LORD’S SUPREMACY

32:9 But the LORD’s portion is his people, Jacob his allotted heritage.

God takes pleasure in His people, and assigned them special benefits and entitlements.

The potential for greatness of ancient Israel was their recognition of God's prerogatives over them by virtue of redemption; that is, to recognize their election and special privileges granted to them as a called-out people among the nations.

Israel's greatness was in her nearness to God and the profound righteousness of the Torah. To the degree she honored the name of the LORD God and His law-order, to that degree she glorified God among the nations. The opposite was also true, to the degree she neglected God and rejected His authority over them, to that degree she was shamed and disgraced.

Romans 2:23 – “You that make your boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonor you God?”

The benefit of nationalism is stated by Paul in his speech at Athens,

“He determined (for all nations) times before appointed, and the setting of the boundaries of their habitation, that they might seek the Lord.”

Next, Moses rehearsed Israel's history to show them how “God shed His grace on thee.” Americans would do well to do the same.

32:10 “He found him in a desert land, and in the howling waste of the wilderness; he encircled him, he cared for him, he kept him as the apple of his eye.

32:11 Like an eagle that stirs up its nest, that flutters over its young, spreading out its wings, catching them, bearing them on its pinions,

32:12 the LORD alone guided him, no foreign god was with him.

32:13 He made him ride on the high places of the land, and he ate the produce of the field, and he suckled him with honey out of the rock, and oil out of the flinty rock.

32:14 Curds from the herd, and milk from the flock, with fat of lambs, rams of Bashan and goats, with the very finest of the wheat- and you drank foaming wine made from the blood of the grape.

REMEMBER THE REBELLION

32:15 “But Jeshurun grew fat, and kicked; you grew fat, stout, and sleek; then he forsook God who made him and scoffed at the Rock of his salvation.

What is about nations that their rulers race to reject the authority of the LORD God over them?

The name “Jeshurun” is an affectionate, ideal term meaning “upright one;” that is, Israel had the potential to be straight and true because she had the advantage of having God's written law among them. To the degree they kept

that law, to that degree would they be the “*Jeshurun*” to the degree they neglected that law, to that degree they would be crooked and perverse.

Like Adam in the garden, Israel had its fall as a nation. When God blessed the nation with prosperity under David and Solomon, the nation grew fat, careless, and proud. The people forsook God during the most prosperous years of their history. It was during the reign of Solomon, that the liberal, sophomore king introduced pluralism and multiculturalism to the nation. The Biblical word for multiculturalism is idolatry. *Diversity is NOT a strength; it is a weakness to overcome* (1 Kings 11:1-5).

32:16 They stirred him to jealousy with strange gods; with abominations they provoked him to anger.

“gods” are the source of law. In adopting the gods of the nations, Israel became increasingly permissive and tolerant of evil. Governments always seek to appeal to the broadest base in order to gain adherents and to enlarge its economy. We call it “liberalism” or legal pluralism. As the affections of the nation were diverted to court the values of other nations, their unfaithfulness aroused the jealousy of YHWH.

Jealousy is not a vice, but a praiseworthy zeal to preserve something precious.

Anger is not always a vice. Anger is an attribute of the LORD God. He can be hurt and grieved by man’s disobedience, and this is the case here.

What angers God are “abominations” (*tohebah*). What sheep are to cattlemen, sin is to a holy God (Genesis 43:42; Exodus 8:20). Abominations include homosexual acts, incest, adultery, rape, murder, fraud and the like (Leviticus 18:22).

32:17 They sacrificed to demons that were no gods, to gods they had never known, to new gods that had come recently, whom your fathers had never dreaded.

How bad was Israel’s apostasy? How low did they sink? They not only forgot God, they worshiped demons.

Brian Bates, in “the Way of the Actor” says, “. . . All Actors are modern day shamans . . . Ancient shamans would use masks or rocks or some sort of magical object that had power to it to invoke spirits.”

And, it appears in looking at promoters of some policies that many politicians have lost their minds. David Freedman of the Huffington Post even asks the question,

“Are Politicians Psychopaths”? His answer is worth sharing, “Could they be right? If these pundits mean that the targeted office-seekers are

evil or “crazy,” probably not. But if they are pointing out that politicians and psychopaths share certain characteristics, they could be on to something.”

32:18 *You were unmindful of the Rock that bore you, and you forgot the God who gave you birth.*

The great command in Deuteronomy is to “remember” (*zachar*) God and His law (Deuteronomy 8:18). The great sin of nations is to forget the Creator and His laws.

The word *zachar* is used 19 times in Deuteronomy, and is translated 14 times as “remember” in English.

Remembering the LORD God and His law is the means to achieving His noble purpose for them. And, the great warning in Deuteronomy was to not “forget” (*shackah*) God and His commandments.

Israel was warned at least nine times in Deuteronomy to not “forget” the LORD or His law-word. YHWH has prerogatives over the nation. Their success was based upon keeping His name holy. But, the presumption in Deuteronomy is that the nation would forget God and His law-order—thus, the reason for the commands to “remember” and not “forget.”

In America, the Supreme Court in *Everson v. Board of Education* (1947) passed their ruling of “separation of church and state,” which in effect ordered the public school to practice amnesia regarding the Bible and the Ten Commandments.

Forgetting God is now public policy -- the grievous sin of Congress, of Presidents, of bureaucrats, and judges.

Next, Moses iterates the terrible consequences of forgetting the LORD God.

REMEMBER THE CONSEQUENCES OF FORGETTING GOD

32:19 *“The LORD saw it and spurned them, because of the provocation of his sons and his daughters.*

32:20 *And he said, ‘I will hide my face from them; I will see what their end will be, For they are a perverse generation, children in whom is no faithfulness.*

32:21 *They have made me jealous with what is no god; they have provoked me to anger with their idols. So I will make them jealous with those who are no people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation.*

32:22 *For a fire is kindled by my anger, and it burns to the depths of Sheol, devours the earth and its increase, and sets on fire the foundations of the mountains.*

Israel inflamed the anger of the Lord God by their abominable acts. The whole idea that God is a God of love and is never angry with man is product of humanism, not Biblical theology. Modern man's fascination and attraction to homosexuality is not a virtue, but a vice . . . and it angers the LORD God.

But, in America, it is much worse. Not only have Americans forgotten God our federal leadership rewards forgetfulness and punishes any mention of the Lord Jesus Christ on high school campuses.

32:23 “ And I will heap disasters upon them; I will spend my arrows on them;

32:24 they shall be wasted with hunger, and devoured by plague and poisonous pestilence; I will send the teeth of beasts against them, with the venom of things that crawl in the dust.

32:25 Outdoors the sword shall bereave, and indoors terror, for young man and woman alike, the nursing child with the man of gray hairs.

Modern man would do well to remember that as God chastised His ancient people for their violations of God's law, He judges modern nations for their abominations and rebellion against His law-order. Taxes, social conflict, and natural disasters come to mind. See God's judgment upon Egypt (Isaiah 19).

“Last year . . . the world sold us \$796 billion more in goods than we sold to the world. A nation that spends more than it takes in from taxes, and consumes more of the world's goods than it produces itself for export, year in and year out, is a nation on the way down” (Pat Buchanan, June 12, 2018).

REMEMBER GOD WITHHOLDS HIS WRATH

32:26 I would have said, “I will cut them to pieces (diaspora); I will wipe them from human memory,” 27 had I not feared provocation by the enemy, lest their adversaries should misunderstand, lest they should say, “Our hand is triumphant, it was not the LORD who did all this.”’

The phrase “*cut them to pieces*” is translated “diaspora.” It means “so scatter” in the LXX, but the likely meaning is “to diminish,” “weaken,” “reduce to naught.” This judgment came to fruition in 722 & 586 BC.

Further, the restraint of God's chastisement on Israel is also motivated by a concern for His own reputation. Israel was spared from total annihilation in order to not feed the defiant pride and skepticism of Israel's enemies.

Note: Deportation is one way God judges nations; immigration of foreigners who neither know a nation's history nor respect its laws is another. In our time, *Americans are being judged, not by deportation, but by immigration from nations that hate us.*

The United States is NOT a nation of immigrants any more than Great Britain is a nation of immigrants. Most of the people living here today were born here.

REMEMBER THE TWO ROCKS

Our Lord discussed two possible foundations on which to build a life, rock and sand (Matthew 7:24-26). Likewise, nations have a choice of two foundations: (1) build their legal system on corrupt man or (2) build the nation on the incorruptible Christ and His law-order (1 Corinthians 3:11).

32:28 "For they are a nation void of counsel, and there is no understanding in them. 29 If they were wise, they would understand this; they would discern their latter end!

The "they" here could represent carnal Israel who was disciplined for their apostasy. Because they adopted the laws of the Mesopotamian kings and forsook the God of antiquity, they became fool-hearted and undiscerning.

But, Mayes, Nelson, and Sanders argue that the nation void of understanding refers to Israel's enemies. Israel's enemies are described in Isaiah 10:13; 19:11-13; Jeremiah 49:7, and Obadiah 7-8 as foolish and without insight. (glos.ac.uk/2123/1/Lee, Boon-Hui Andrew, p. 112).

Wise men seek God; fools ignore Him. Great nations build their country with a consciousness of God; ordinary people built their nation on the whims of man.

32:30 How could one (pagan warrior) have chased a thousand (Hebrew soldiers), and two (pagan warriors) have put ten thousand (Hebrew soldiers), to flight, unless their Rock (Israel's God) had sold them, and the LORD had given them up?

The LORD is called "their Rock." A small nation of pagans crushed Israel, the larger nation.

How can Israel be defeated by their enemies **unless God forsakes them** because of their radical departure from His law? So terrible was Israel's defeat that it is said that one of their enemies had the strength of a thousand.

But, the opposite is also true. When Israel walked with God, one Hebrew could chase a thousand. Samson comes to mind.

32:31 For their rock is not as our Rock; our enemies are by themselves.

A second "rock" is mentioned, the boulder of pagan nations. Here we have the Two Foundations: "their rock," and "our Rock;" the gods of the nations, and the God of Israel; the source of cruelty and falsehood, or the LORD God as the Source of truth and justice.

Religion is about ultimate questions and ultimate values. We would do well to remember that all men are religious—especially atheists. Godless men have values and a rock on which they seek to build their utopia.

“I have dream” cry the revolutionaries, “to use the government to take money from the rich and give it to the poor.” Their dream rock is built on man-made utopian ideals . . . and OPM (other people’s money), not workable plans. Our Rock is the LORD God and His plan is based on genuine application of His law across society.

Man’s political dreams (their rock of idealism) leave every man with a political nightmare crushed by redistribution of wealth using the force of government and heavy taxation to take money from the productive and give it to the unproductive. We call this dream “welfare” or the “nanny state.”

George Carlin knew the corruption of the U.S. government and how it has stolen wealth from the people. In speaking of the illusive American dream, George shouted, “You have to be asleep to believe it.”

32:32 For their vine comes from the vine of Sodom and from the fields of Gomorrah; their grapes are grapes of poison; their clusters are bitter; 33 their wine is the poison of serpents and the cruel venom of asps.

The metaphor switches **from rocks to vines**. The vine of the pagan nations (like America) is called the “vine of Sodom” because its law comes from the Poisonous Tree — the source of all misery and human suffering.

Genesis 18:20 And the LORD said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous (kabad = hard, burdensome);

The fruit Sodom is compared to poisonous grapes, bitter plants (hemlock), and the poisonous bite of serpents and venomous snakes.

Sodom is mentioned because of its extreme wickedness. Nations that eat from the fruit of the Poisonous tree become infected with fornication, adultery, homosexuality, lesbianism, transvestitism, and the social ills of broken homes, unwanted pregnancies, bastard children, crime, famine, and hunger.

The sad tale of this song is that Israel left the Lord’s garden and ate fruit from the vine of Sodom. Thus, the reason for their severe discipline in 32:23-27!

Just as frightening is to see how American politicians grafted the nation into the vine of Sodom and Gomorrah by adopting same-sex marriage statutes and the promotion of gender-bender ideologies.

The News in 2018 read:

Gender-neutral Scouting sparks debate.

States are Beginning to Recognize Third Gender.

How Companies are grappling with the neutral-gender society

Elementary School Designates 'gender-neutral' bathrooms.

REMEMBER GOD'S JUDGMENT AND SALVATION

32:34 Is not this (verdict) laid up in store with me, sealed up in my treasuries?

The LORD's speech resumes after Moses speaks. The "this" refers back to God's verdict on Sodom and their rally around Poisonous Tree. Although God uses the enemy to chastise Israel, YHWH holds the enemies of His people accountable for their unrestrained cruelty and overreaching wrath. There is a day the enemies of the LORD's people will stand before His bar of justice.

God's use of Israel's historic enemies to chastise Israel must also be seen as evidence of His faithfulness to her. Keeping a negative promise, even though it hurts, proves the character of His jealous love for Israel. The chastening of God's people was necessary to protect YHWH's honor as holy and righteous.

Chastisement is not punishment; it is discipline for God's people. Since Calvary, there is not one drop of wrath remaining for the true Israel.

However, wrath is leaking from heaven now against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men who suppress the truth. There is a day when all his enemies will face the full fury of an angry God (See Romans 1:18ff; 2 Thessalonians 1:10ff).

"My treasuries" refers to secret counsels in the vault of God's Wrath. He will punish the wicked . . . but only He knows when, where, and how.

32:35 Vengeance is mine, and recompense, for the time when their foot shall slip; for the day of their calamity is at hand, and their doom comes swiftly.'

Here judgment is announced on the Vine of Sodom, and the grief they cause the people of God. As Abraham pursued the five kings, Sodom pursued Abraham (Genesis 14). Terms like "slip," "calamity," and "doom" announce the certainty of justice upon the pagans.

The Lord claims total authority over vengeance on Israel's enemies. While He often uses civil authority to administer justice upon His adversaries in time, He claims exclusive jurisdiction over the administration of justice as King of the Nations (Revelation 15). He is both the hope, controller, and Judge of history.

THE VINDICATION OF GOD'S PEOPLE

32:36 For the LORD will vindicate his people and have compassion on his servants, when he sees that their power is gone and there is none remaining, bond or free.

In contrast to God's judgment on pagan nations is His mercy toward His flawed people.

12. The Curse of Civil Government

1 Samuel 8:10-20

"Government is not the solution to our problem, government IS the problem" (Ronald Reagan).

"The most terrifying words in the English language are: I'm from the government and I'm here to help" you (Ronald Reagan).

"A government big enough to give you everything you want is a government big enough to take from you everything you have" (Gerald R. Ford)

"Nothing is so permanent as a temporary government program" (Milton Friedman).

"If men were angels, no government would be necessary" (James Madison).

"Government, even in its best State, is but a necessary evil; in its worst State, an intolerable one" (Thomas Paine).

"That government is best which governs least" (Thomas Paine).

PART I

Israel's Pure Theocracy

Israel had the unique privilege of having a **pure theocracy** (1400-1050 BC).

A theocracy refers to a nation that is ruled directly by God as the people's Sovereign without a visible, organized government apparatus over the people.

No nation has ever had a pure theocracy except Israel. During the late Bronze Period or the Period of the Judges (1400-1050 B.C.), Israel had no king, no standing army, no governor, no taxes, and no draft. God was their Protector.

Because YHWH is omnipresent and omnipotent, this was a tremendous advantage for the nation. Because the Lord is unseen, the people had to live by faith—a faith in a real, living, governing, protecting but invisible King.

No nation today is called to organize itself under a pure theocracy, but every nation is called to acknowledge His sovereignty and to surrender to His law-order.

But, it is God's will for a people to confess the Sovereignty of Christ and the excellence of His moral law (Psalm 9:17; 9:20; 22:17; 22:28; 67:4; 72:11, 17; 82:8; 86:9; Isaiah 2:3).

Are not all the problems we experience today are a result of legislators violating the law of the LORD God?

During the Period of the Judges, "every man did what was right in his own eyes."

Personal autonomy replaced the Biblical law order.

When the nation rebelled against God's law, He appointed alien kings to rule over His people who in turn demanded tribute from the nation (Jud. 2:1ff). Wealth flowing out of the country to foreign governments impoverished the people and caused them to cry out to God for deliverance (Jud. 6:1-6). When the people repented, God raised up a military leader called a "judge." The judge might act alone or raise an army to throw off the yoke of foreign oppression. Barak, Gideon, and Samson were judges of this sort.

Note: Whenever imports exceed exports, or the nation sees its wealth going to alien powers, or it is controlled by foreign rulers, that nation is under the judgment of God.

Instead of repenting of their personal sins and returning to the Rule of God, the people of Samuel's day saw the nation's problems as *institutional* rather than a *religious departure from truth*.

They thought a change in the structure of government would save the nation: "If we had a centralized government like other nations, we would be secure." A king could fight for us.

What? The people wanted the government to do their fighting for them?

By initiating a government, the people thought they could be protected from their surrounding enemies. The people, however, failed to realize that big government results in big bureaucracies, big taxes, and heavy chains.

These people wanted God to give them a human, flawed king that would take from them everything that was precious. We call it insanity. God called it rebellion and rejection of Him.

A pure theocracy had an advantage in that the omnipresent God was the nation's Protector. Day and night, YHWH stood guard over His people.

"He who watches over Israel will neither slumber nor sleep" (Psalm 121:4).

What kings and generals could not do because of their limitations, Yahweh could do simply because He is God. Who would want it any other way?

From a human perspective there was a disadvantage in having God as one's King. While Israel could see their armed, muscle bound enemies, they could not be seen with the might and power of God with the naked eye (2 Kings. 6:17).

Other nations had visible kings and standing soldiers armed with battle axes, spears, maces, catapults and battering rams. This caused Israel to cringe. The destroyers were frighteningly visible; their Protector was invisible. For sure, it was much easier to walk by sight than by faith.

Thus, under a spirit of deception, the people came to Samuel, Israel's priest and judge, and begged him to establish a corporate monarchy in the nation saying, *"Give us a king to judge us"* (I Samuel 8:6).

This request displeased Samuel. It displeased Him because he knew the tremendous advantage of having God as the nation's King, and the disadvantage of having weak, flawed, limited, self-absorbed visible monarchs.

Troubled, Samuel went to God in prayer. God answered and informed Samuel that their request was an evil demand because in so asking the people were rejecting Him as their King.

The people wanted a human king they could touch, and see, and hear, and feel, rather than a perfect King they could not see. In reality, they rejected God's law-order and replaced it with a fascism, totalitarianism, and tyrannical government.

God instructed Samuel and said, "Now listen to them; but warn them solemnly and let them know what the king who will reign over them will do" (I Sam. 8:6).

This is God's way of telling the people about the troubles that a centralized human government would cause.

A Change in Government

Neither Samuel nor the Lord were pleased with Israel's request for a monarch. While the Book of Deuteronomy anticipated that Israel would one day have a king, the manner in which this change in formation occurred offended the LORD God of Israel.

This was not merely a request for an earthly ruler, it was a rejection of YHWH and His theocracy; i.e., it abandoned God's government while preferring man's government (I Samuel 8:7).

“The Government! What is it? Where is it? What does it do? What ought it to do?

*All we know is, that it is a mysterious personage; and, assuredly, it is the most solicited, the most tormented, the most overwhelmed, the most admired, the most accused, the most invoked, and the most provoked of any personage in the world . . . **Government is the great fiction through which everybody endeavors to live at the expense of everybody else.**” (Bastiat).*

Looking to government to protect you is a great evil.

¹⁰ Samuel told all the words of the LORD to the people who were asking him for a king.

Loss of Rights and Freedom (8:11):

¹¹ He said, “This is what the king who will reign over you will claim as his rights:

Government abrogates your rights and destroys your sovereignty.

The king will conscript your sons into the military and make them slaves of the military– something dishonorable for the family.

He will take your sons and make them serve with his chariots and horses, and they will run in front of his chariots.

The government will use and abuse your sons to make the government rich and powerful.

Conscription into the Military (8:12):

¹² Some he will assign to be commanders of thousands and commanders of fifties, and others to plow his ground and reap his harvest, and still others to make weapons of war and equipment for his chariots.

The new king would initiate an involuntary draft and commandeer the best of Israel’s sons to serve in his armed forces.

The government will draft your beautiful daughters to serve in the military on their knees like household slaves at the cost of building up the government while weakening the family.

Civil Servitude (8:13):

¹³ He will take your daughters to be perfumers and cooks and bakers.

Your sons and daughters will be drafted into military service against your will. The new king would enlist Israel’s daughters (steal them) and reduce them to handmaids for the king’s business.

The new king would expropriate Israel's work force and place them under martial law to service his fields and factories of war. The will of the king would trample upon freedom and replace it with a form of slavery to the state.

Seizure of Private Property (8:14):

¹⁴ He will take the best of your fields and vineyards and olive groves and give them to his attendants.

Samuel warned the new government would take private property under the rules of eminent domain and convert it to public use (8:14). Legislative theft would become state policy.

Under the State's taxation program, government officials will become rich and private citizens will become poor.

Taxation of wealth (8:15):

¹⁵ He will take a tenth of your grain and of your vintage and give it to his officials and attendants.

The new king would commission tax assessors who would take an additional ten percent of Israel's productivity to support the government—a tithe for God and a tithe for the State.

The government will introduce individual income taxes, corporate income taxes, payroll taxes, capital gains taxes, sales taxes, gross receipts taxes, value-added taxes, excise taxes, property taxes, tangible personal property taxes, estate and inheritance taxes, and wealth taxes.

The government will tax your capital and deprive you of the necessities of life. You will be forced to use substandard products and services.

Induction (8:16):

¹⁶ Your male and female servants and the best of your cattle^[c] and donkeys he will take for his own use.

What the government needs, it takes. The new king would recruit the best young men and household servants to work for the king and his government. The nation's finest would live and die on the battlefield for insidious reasons and frivolous causes.

Samuel warned the government will tax your income and make you an indentured servant.

Slavery (8:17):

¹⁷ He will take a tenth of your flocks, and you yourselves will become his slaves.

The new king would tax (steal) Israel's flocks, impoverish the people, and reduce them to indentured servants. The more despotic the government becomes the more people suffer under the load of heavy taxation and oppression.

The government seeks to control you mind, labor, and property. government will never call its system slavery. It will rename servitude as "duty," "privilege," "honor," and "love of country," but never "slavery."

Unanswered prayer (8:18):

¹⁸ When that day comes, you will cry out for relief from the king you have chosen, but the LORD will not answer you in that day."

Samuel knew the policies of the new king would distress Israel and in their misery cry out to God for relief. God promised He would not listen to complainers who voluntarily subjected themselves to the monarchy.

Nevertheless, the people chose Government instead of God as their protector.

Israel's Rebellion (8:19-20):

¹⁹ But the people refused to listen to Samuel. "No!" they said. "We want a king over us. ²⁰ Then we will be like all the other nations, with a king to lead us and to go out before us and fight our battles."

In wanting to be like the other nations, the spirit of idolatry churned like butter in bosom-barrel of Israel. It was only a matter of time before Israel embraced multiculturalism, polytheism, and legal pluralism.

Eventually, the national passion to be like the other nations and to integrate the cruel, permissive statutes of pagan nations into the legal system led to the downfall of the nation, to wit:

*" . . . So it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God . . . feared other gods [the State] **and walked in the statutes [laws] of the heathen**" (2 Kings 17:7, 8).*

This concludes the list of encumbrances of a man-made government. It does not include the abuses of a despotic government such as abuse of power, tyranny, cruelty, oppression, theft, legal plunder, market manipulation, induced inflation, political assassinations, spying, election fraud, deception, misinformation, permissiveness, nepotism, martial law, and bone-crushing military might of a police state.

Israel was unique among the nations of the world in that it is the only nation to ever have a *pure theocracy*. What a blessing to have God as your Protector! Israel's government changed from a pure theocracy to a *theocratic monarchy*.

Though the adoption of a monarchy was less than ideal, Israel was still a nation ruled by God. He was still King of Israel, but His blessings were now channeled through a narrow, weak, imperfect monarch. This arrangement would be like trying to push ice cream through a straw.

PART III

Government Adrift

We must ask, “What is an evil government?”

Governments by no means confine themselves to their proper functions.

If a good government uses the law to protect individual rights, then a bad government uses the law as a weapon to plunder human rights. Bad governments replace the rule of law with RULE BY LAW and the RULE BY MAN!

When ungodly lawyers use the law in direct opposition to the law’s own purpose, it becomes corrupt. When a government does not acknowledge the Creator God, but sees itself as a god, freedom dies of broken limbs and smashed skulls.

First, evil government converts the power to plunder into a legal right of the State to steal. Lawful defense becomes a crime. When the citizen seeks to defend himself against legal plunder, the bully State converts self-protection into a crime.

The belief that everything legal is lawful has been a product of more than a little evil.

When the law becomes an instrument of plunder, citizens no longer respect the law.

While individual citizens sometimes suffer from illegal plunder by common thieves, the far greater danger to wealth creation is legal plunder by legislators.

This is accomplished through tariffs, benefits, subsidies, progressive taxation, public schools, fees, licenses, guaranteed jobs, minimum wage legislation, free credit and so on.

What is a freedom loving American supposed to do when rule by law becomes a weapon to strip him of any defense by converting his defense into a criminal act against the all-powerful State?

What is a man supposed to do when the government he is supposed to honor becomes his enemy by legislating legal theft?

Second, evil governments see the purpose of legislation as having a philanthropic purpose to change the course of history by eliminating poverty or promoting the arts or helping the poor; that is, the State sees itself as a priesthood with a duty to provide for the poor and minister to the oppressed.

These governments substitute “fraternity” for “freedom.”

Just as it is evil for a church to administer justice through the death penalty, it is evil for a government to engage in charity. The view that the government is to be the GREAT NANNY results in more plunder through the communist plan of redistribution of wealth.

Positive law becomes an instrument to control the people and to create wealth for government workers.

Like Israel, Americans have chosen fraternity instead of freedom; a strong central government instead of individual responsibility.

Having failed to anchor government down with the chains of the Constitution, Americans have drifted into the stormy sea of socialism and big debt.

Behind the legal plunder is a “false philanthropy.” “If philanthropy is not voluntary, it destroys liberty and justice.”⁶

The results of a philanthropic government are big taxes and big wastes.

Instead of staying within Constitutional limitations, the government has devised schemes to extend its power beyond its delegation order.

It has effectively devised a system that plunders the labor of every American — a system that borrows from needs of future generations to support the luxuries of the present generation.

The ruling class sees citizens as pawns on the chessboard of global dominance who are there to protect the kings and queens vying for power.

The working-man’s labor has become the manure that fertilizes the stalks of greed growing in the hearts of those eager to control the world.

Consequently, every American has been reduced to a slave of the United States, Inc. To pay for this monster package, the average citizen works from January till May to pay his “fair share” of taxes.⁷

The husband works to pay for the family bills and the wife works to pay the family taxes. Instead of mom being in the home, she must work for pennies

⁶ Ibid, p. xii.

⁷ “Tax Freedom Day Release”, Tax Foundation 1993, (Tax Notes Today, April 16, 1993).

outside the home. The average American cannot afford health insurance nor save up for any retirement.

"None are so hopelessly enslaved as those who falsely believe they are free" (Johann Wolfgang von Goethe).

The curse of big, bad government is upon us. No matter which political party is in control, government feeds like a parasite suckin' blood out of the body politic; and like a parasite, it spreads diseases of fear, corruption, and poverty.

"Government is not reason; it is not eloquence; it is force! Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful master." (George Washington).

"Society in every State is a blessing, but government even in its best State is but a necessary evil; in its worst State an intolerable one; for when we suffer, or are exposed to the same miseries by a government, which we might expect in a country without government, our calamity is heightened by reflecting that we furnish the means by which we suffer" (Thomas Jefferson).

Do We Need Government?

THINK ABOUT THIS FOR A MOMENT. The following report was issued in the Denver Post following the historic blizzard of up to 44 inches of snows and winds up to 90 MPH and stranded thousands of motorists in 2006:

FYI:

George Bush did not come.

FEMA did nothing.

No one howled for the government.

No one blamed the government.

No one even uttered an expletive on TV .

Jesse Jackson or Al Sharpton did not visit.

Our Mayor did not blame Bush or anyone else.

Our Governor did not blame Bush or anyone else, either.

CNN, ABC, CBS, FOX or NBC did not visit – or report on this category 5 snowstorm. Nobody demanded \$2,000 debit cards.

No one asked for a FEMA Trailer House.

No one looted.

Nobody - I mean Nobody demanded the government do something.

Nobody expected the government to do anything, either.

No Larry King, No Bill O'Reilly, No Oprah, No Chris Mathews and No Geraldo Rivera.

No Shaun Penn, No Barbara Streisand, No Hollywood types to be found.

Nope, we just melted the snow for water.

Sent out caravans of SUV's to pluck people out of snow engulfed cars.

The truck drivers pulled people out of snow banks and didn't ask for a penny.

Local restaurants made food and the police and fire departments delivered it to the snowbound families.

Families took in the stranded people – total strangers. We fired up wood stoves, broke out coal oil lanterns or Coleman lanterns. We put on extra layers of clothes because up here it is "Work or Die". We did not wait for some affirmative action government to get us out of a mess created by being immobilized by a welfare program that trades votes for 'sittin at home' checks. Even though a Category "5" blizzard of this scale has never fallen this early, we know it can happen and how to deal with it ourselves. "In my many travels, I have noticed that once one gets north of about 48 degrees North Latitude, 90% of the world's social problems evaporate."⁸

In conclusion, there is good aspect and a bad aspect of government. We cannot live without good government, but we can live without bad government.

Government is a blessing from God when civil rulers punish criminals and protect the innocent. But, government turns bad when its leaders punish the innocent and reward its own deep state actors.

There is a burden connected to a good government in that the Leviathan must be fed and supported. A bad government is a double curse in that it can strip men of freedom like a herd of elephants shred a forest. We are not against government, but we are against wickedness in government.

13. Understanding Statism

⁸ Received by email. This story is attributed to the Denver Post, <http://www.yayhooray.com/thread/104269/Denver-Snowstorm>.

Daniel 4:30

The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the Honor of my majesty? – Daniel 4:30

From Genesis to Revelation the people of God fight statism. Statism is the belief that the highest good centers around government service. It began with Nimrod who unified man around building the Tower of Babel (Genesis 10-11:5).

Statism is idolatry-- the whoring one's self to the almighty state.

Statism is disguised under such noble gestures as standing at attention before a national flag or repeating statist propaganda as the Pledge of Allegiance.

Statism is the belief that love of country is superior to all other affections. For this reason, the national anthem is sung at every professional football, basketball, and baseball game.

Statism is the belief that government is the savior of a nation. For this reason, the evening news is all about what government is doing to save you from yourself. In the mind of media pundits, if the government just gets a little better, we can have our utopia.

Anytime you have an entire nation so mesmerized by political theater and public spectacle you have statism.

Anytime you have police wrestling with people stamping foot, gasping for breath, and desperate for freedom, you have Statists prison.

Anytime the government spies on you like a peeping tom monitoring everything you spend and tracking you everywhere you go, you have a statist government.

Anywhere people are being robbed by a government of thieves, people cowering in fear over government abuse.

Devotion to one's wife or family or church is given minimal respect. Even though honoring one's father and mother is part of the Ten Commandments, who has ever heard of a Pledge of Allegiance to the Family?

Statism is about power and the belief that government does the most good for the most people—more good than parents; more good than neighbors; more good than teachers; more good than the church; more good than friends, uncles, sisters, wives, pastors, or grandparents.

Lord Acton stated, "Power tends to corrupt, and absolute power corrupts absolutely." But, that is not totally true. Power in the hand of a good man can benefit all under his care. *Sin is the problem, not power.*

Sin not only corrupts the individual, but it also corrupts human institutions.

Just as sin affected the first family (Gen. 3), sin also corrupted the first civilization (Gen. 4-6). Governments go bad when they ignore God and play a god; when they forsake the rule of law and seek a rule by men; when they rebel against God's law-order and replace it with their own.

When statist Barack Obama said, "You didn't build that," he was saying that you owe all your success to government.

R.J. Rushdoony wrote, "the modern State . . . has made salvation its function."

To a statist man is to be saved from poverty, sickness, death, ignorance, sin, war, superstition, and everything else by the all-good, all-power, all-wise saving State—a system which works steadily to create its own divine order and the saving of society.

Every area the State wishes to invade and possess in the name of the welfare of man becomes its legitimate jurisdiction. The Nanny State seeks the total subjection of the total man to total government—something the South refused to let happen in 1860.

The State steadily denies the need of Christian theological order as it claims jurisdiction over every area in terms of its royal divinity.⁹

The saving State thinks of itself as a savior because it is in rebellion to its limited commission as a minister of justice. Jesus is the Savior, not the State. He has appointed the church for missions of mercy, not the State. When the State plays "savior," it usurps the prerogatives of God and neither saves nor surrenders.

An example of this can be seen in Germany where the god-State abused its power against home schooling families who want to raise their kids up in their religious faith (2006). The liberal, leftist German government is threatened by such autonomy. The Germans declared war on home school families, promising to bring those with banned "religious convictions" into alignment with the State regulations—or was that State religion?¹⁰

Statism is the ideology that the State is god; that the State is the highest authority on earth; that good citizenship is marked by devotion to the State

⁹ John Rushdoony, "Politics of Guilt and Pity," (Thornburg Press, 1978: ISBN 1879998076), Quoted by Timothy Terrell in "Evangelism Against Statism."

¹⁰ Bob Unruh, "Government Declares War on Homeschooling Parents,"

Worldnet.daily, December 21, 2006.

where the highest ideal is service and sacrifice for the State; that citizens should live, work, breath, and even die for the State.

A good example of an extreme statist regime is North Korea where it is estimated that between 50,000 and 70,000 Christians are suffering in prison camps in the communist country.¹¹ Soon-Ok Lee shared her cruel experience of life in North Korea to the United States International Commission of Religious freedom. Like all North Koreans, she was taught to worship the State as a god. People were imprisoned for trifles and placed in labor camps because they were a good source of free labor. Christians were separated from other interns and threatened to be killed if they did not worship Kim Il-Sung: "We will save your lives if you say you're going to believe in Kim Il-Sung instead of Christ; we'll free you."¹²

Another good example of statism is in the movie, "The Last Summari" starring Tom Cruise. In the final scene after the final battle, Tom's character limps in to see the emperor, bows down, hands him a sword, and says he is willing to die for him. Emperor worship is statism, the worship of the State, the revival of age-old idolatry.

14. Statism in the Bible

Isaiah 10:1-2

"Woe to those who decree iniquitous decrees, and the writers who keep writing oppression, to turn aside the needy from justice and to rob the poor of my people of their right, that widows may be their spoil, and that they may make the fatherless their prey!"

Proverbs 25:26 "Like a muddied spring or a polluted fountain is a righteous man who gives way before the wicked."

Part I

¹¹ "70,000 Christians languish in N. Korean prison camps: U.S. Christian group" Breaking News, Friday, February 09, 2007.

¹² Soon-Ok Lee, "Promoting Religious Freedom in North Korea," Oral Testimony before the United States Commission on International Religious Freedom, Jan. 24. 2002.

Definition of Statism

Over time statist governments arise where the life, liberty, and property of men are inventoried and controlled by tyrannical regimes — regimes that dominate resources and labor for the “greater good” of society.

Statism is the belief that the State is a god. Statism is the effort of tyrants to obtain total jurisdiction over the total man by total government.

It is fueled by the belief that government knows how to better govern individual lives and property than individuals know how to govern their own affairs. Statism is a faith that has ultimate confidence in the State. Statists believe government should be the ultimate authority on earth . . . that it can create the ideal society through legislation and use of force . . . that government should manage all labor, resources, and information.

Philosophically, statism was developed by Plato who in His work “The Republic” conceived that the ideal government to be controlled by professional wise philosopher-kings who made decisions for the “good” of the people and where the people totally and completely surrendered their individual liberties to their “benevolent” rulers for the good of society.

Statism is the belief that the ruling class is the source of ideas, power, ethics, morality, and welfare. The State is as Marx put it, “god on earth.” Statist governments are heavily invested in a system of taxation that plunders the people. Statism is a particular kind of collectivism where the State takes bucket loads of cash from you and gives back thimbles full of pennies.

The subject of statism is in the Bible so that modern men might recognize statist’s governments in their time, and do all they can to resist the enslavement of men by powerful regimes.

Nimrod, the Genesis of Statism (Genesis 10:8)

And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. He was a mighty hunter before the LORD: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the LORD. And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. Out of that land went forth Asshur, and builded Nineveh (Gen. 10:8-11).

The Book of Genesis is about the “beginning” of things. It is a book of “firsts.” We have the first man, the first wedding, the first family, the first sin, the first murder, the first civilization, the first global judgment, and the first government. God wants us to understand how sin infected the human race.

In Genesis nine, we see God establishing a covenant with Noah and his family and blessing this new beginning with the institution of civil authority. The good quickly turned rotten. In Genesis ten, we Nimrod exploiting political

power for his own ends. He managed to build a kingdom that manipulated and controlled huge populations of people.

The name “Nimrod” means “He rebelled” or “rebellion,” or “one valiant in rebellion.” He lived in the Land of a Shinar. He was a mighty ruler on the earth. He was the first to build a kingdom and to subjugate men under his rule and power. He was the first to unite men under a single government by persuasion and force and coercion. By offering government franchises, protection for loyalty, he enslaved thousands of men in his system. He was the first of the kings, first of the Pharaohs, first of the great monarchs, first of the communist Stalins in history.

Nimrod was a “mighty hunter before the Lord.” The word “before” can be translated “against.” He rebelled against the Lord and established a system of government that was against the Lord. Like a defiant two-year old, Nimrod refused to bow to God’s command to scatter on the earth. He was the first in idolatry and the first in tyranny. He carried on rebellion and violence in defiance against God.

The term “hunter” refers to Nimrod’s character. A hunter is the opposite of a shepherd. He was a wolf herding sheep. A beastly man without feelings for the plight of men, all rules benefited the state. A rebel ruler, he enslaved hordes of people. As a “hunter” of men, he was the first tyrant.

Babylon and Nineveh were both birthed from the corruption and violence established by Nimrod. Both were statist societies where everything had to be done for the State . . . where everyone worked for the state, sweat for the state, bled for the state. Nothing could be against the State. The State was the supreme value and the supreme crime was individualism and freedom — i.e., treason against the state.

Pharaoh and Statism (Genesis 11 & Exodus 1)

“ . . . and the woman was taken into Pharaoh’s house” (Genesis. 12:15)

Come on, let us deal wisely with them; lest they multiply, and it come to pass, that, when there falleth out any war, they join also unto our enemies, and fight against us, and so get them up out of the land.

*Therefore they did set over them taskmasters (tax collectors) to afflict them with their burdens. As slaves of the state, they built **for Pharaoh** the treasure cities of Pithom and Raamses (Ex. 1:10, 11).*

Following Nimrod, **Egypt surfaced as the second statist’s system.** On one occasion, Abraham made a choice to reside in Egypt due to the famine in Canaan. While in Egypt, Pharaoh abducted Sarah into his harem. This monarch believed in the doctrine of eminent domain wherein rulers can expropriate

private property for public use by the State without the owner's consent. Pharaoh's compulsory acquisition of Sarah into his harem was severely rebuked by God. Pharaoh paid penalties for pain and suffering to Abram and Sarah for over stepping the State's God-given authority. Abram left Egypt a rich man having received compensation in gold for his injury by Pharaoh.

In the first chapter of Exodus, we read about **another statist Pharaoh** who enslaved God's people, harvested their labor, and controlled their property. It happened slowly. At first, Pharaoh sought to preserve his power; then, he became obsessed with a fear of a population explosion of the lower classes. He enacted laws that stole the people's liberty. Sending bureaucrats (taskmasters) to control production, the sons of Jacob found every aspect of their lives controlled by the State. Through gradual repressive regulations, they lost their freedoms and became slaves of the king's vision for Egypt.

According to the Book of Jasher, the Israelites were impoverished by a graduated income tax laid upon the people.¹³

Book of Jasher Chapter 1-3 — "... and put a tax upon them, as was their custom."

Book of Jasher Chapter 13 — "... and given him a yearly tax, but in those days in the thirteenth year, they rebelled against him."

Did you notice that Pharaoh enslaved the Israelites because he was afraid of losing his power?

Things have not changed. Politicians, like Pharaoh, are not concerned about the people's welfare as much as they are distressed about the preservation of their power. Have you ever met a politician that did not want to be re-elected?

Book of Jasher, translated from Hebrew, 1840. ... CHAPTER 66 — "*Pharaoh Decrees that every Male Child born in Israel shall be Killed, and still they increase . . .*"

Book of Jasher 11:11 — "And they served him twelve years, and they gave him a yearly tax . . ."

When the growing population of the heterogeneous, racially distinct Hebrews threatened the State's interests, Pharaoh adopted a program to control the birth rate of the lower classes. Serfs had to be sacrificed for the good of the State. His ethnic pogrom involved "family planning" and the abortion of infants in

¹³ J.H. Parry, [The Book of Jasher](#), online, Google Books.

Jacob's tribe. As non-persons, slave babies had no rights. Jewish mothers were property of the State and the king believed that babies had to be sacrificed for the greater good of Egypt. When Pharaoh issued his executive order to sanction post-birth abortions two midwives refused to comply. They clearly understood the king over stepped his authority by his ultra vires decree. Infanticide, though sanctioned by a government, is still murder.

The defiance of Shiphrah and Puah was treason to the State. And, if caught, they could have paid with their life. However, **their disobedience to Pharaoh was obedience to God** and He rewarded them for it.

Politicians are generally concerned about treason to the state but could care less about treason to God and conscience.

Sodom and the Thirteen Kings of Shinar

Genesis 14 contains the first mention of the term "king" (*melek*) as well as the first record of war in the Bible. The number 13 occurs here for the first time and according to numerologists the number 13 stands for "rebellion." Thirteen foreign kings created a coalition to loot the Jordan Valley – Sodom being the main prize.

These rebels plundered Sodom and captured Lot, a citizen of Sodom. But, they did not attack Abraham because Abraham lived the life of a pilgrim separate from the politics of Sodom. Here we see love "rescuing the perishing and putting kings to flight." Lot couldn't deliver himself, but Abraham and his 318 trained warrior disciples delivered Lot, the people of Sodom, and their property from the bandit kings.

The main lesson is that these 13 kings were statist who abused their power by plundering, looting, stealing, kidnaping, and enslaving free people. Has anything really changed?

The second lesson is that only a free man, a man of faith, a pilgrim separate had the skills and power to set the captives free.

The third lesson is that while Abraham pursued the 13 government kleptomaniacs, the king of Sodom pursued Abraham. Selah! Only the mediation of Melchizedek prevented the King of Sodom from attacking God's man.

The fourth lesson is that Abraham had the strength of ten because (1) He lifted His hand to the Most High, Possessor of Heaven and Earth (sworn oath of allegiance); and, (2) separated himself from government pirates, and, (3) refused to enter into franchise agreements (contracts) with Sodom's Godless government.

[Note: While time does not permit, one should notice the statist nature of Abimeleck and the Kings of Gerar (Genesis 20; 26)].

PART II

In Statism, the government controls education, religion, morals, law, commerce, health, and property.

Religion becomes a department of the State. Everything is monitored for the benefit of the government. The State sees itself as the source of authority and power of all legitimate functions. It believes government should control everything from taking an aspirin to the color you paint your bedroom. Everything belongs to the State including people's bodies, their labor, and their property. Citizens become the fodder that feeds the fat cow. Nothing can be done without permission or a license from the ruler. Service to the State is the highest value and evil is defined in terms of resisting the State. Like ants, individuals exist for the good of the whole colony, and individuals are sacrificed for the collective good.

Collectivism is defined as the theory and practice that makes some sort of group rather than the individual the fundamental unit of political, social, and economic concern. In theory, collectivists insist that the claims of groups, associations, or the State must normally supersede the claims of individuals." — Stephen Grabill and Gregory M. A. Gronbacher.¹⁴

Nebuchadnezzar and Statism

Daniel 2:44 And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.

Nebuchadnezzar dreamed a rock roll down a mountain to crush a strange statue made of gold, silver, bronze, and iron. Daniel interpreted the dream and revealed to the king that the statue represented four monolithic empires that would dominate history. The rock represents Christ and His kingdom that would end the bone-crushing imperialism of these global governments.

Daniel carefully revealed to the king that Gentile nations would dominate world history, but *at the end of the Gentile era the monolithic pagan state would be crushed by the coming and power of Christ*. These empires were statist governments controlled by statist kings such as Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus the Great, Alexander the Great, and the Caesars of Rome. In the end, they will be destroyed. *Having to endure all this, Christians must learn to respond to statist regimes that appear in history.*

¹⁴ "Definitions," <http://freedomkeys.com/collectivism.htm>.

Babylon and Statism

“And whoso falleth not down and worshippeth shall the same hour be cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace” (Daniel 3:6).

Eighteen years after Nebuchadnezzar received his vision of the great statute with himself as the head of the great secular empires to come in history, he ordered the people to bow to his golden image.

Over time, pride and arrogance entered the king’s heart. In order to commemorate his dream, he ordered a physical statue built in accordance with his vision. It was six cubits wide and sixty cubits high. The dimensions may remind you of the number 666 in Revelation 13. As head of State, Nebuchadnezzar ordered the construction of a simulacrum of the statue in his dream.

On the day of its dedication, Nebuchadnezzar must have been so proud of his statuary. A marvel to behold and a representation of the State’s supreme power, the king ordered the multitude to bow in honor of his creation. When the flutes and harps played, the crowd fell to their knees as good little citizens are supposed to do. Three radical patriotic Hebrews remained standing. They stood out like hound dogs on a poodle farm.

Babylon is a great study on statism and in order to understand the courage of the Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, one must understand the religious-political philosophy controlling Nebuchadnezzar’s court and the religious-political philosophy controlling the minds of the three Hebrews.

Nebuchadnezzar’s order was an effort to enforce uniformity in religion by using the power of the State to compel allegiance. In the mind of the Babylonians, the State was god and the values that controlled the State were the product of religion. So, what was the geo-religio-political philosophy of Babylon?

Babylon believed deeply in multiculturalism and tolerated all religions as long as those religions did not challenge the power of the State. **When Nebuchadnezzar ordered his obsequious citizens to worship the symbol of the State’s authority, he was NOT forbidding honor to be shown to other gods in that society.** He was not saying the Jews could not worship YHWH. His executive order included devotion to the State’s religion, but it did not ban devotion to others religions. The Jews in the crowd were not being asked to give up their Hebrew faith—for that reason all but three complied with the order.

Ninety-nine percent of those in the crowd saw no conflict with Nebuchadnezzar’s order. Honoring the State seemed the right thing to do—

after all, good citizens were supposed to obey civil magistrates, weren't they? The idolaters could honor the State without any conflict with their religious beliefs. Their religion was not threatened. They could still be devoted to their god and preach the gospel of their god. They were not being asked to give up their religion or values or to forsake their religious practices. All they were asked to do was to honor the king as the supreme authority on earth.

The king's command was an act to unite religions under the State authority howbeit through coercion, threat, and intimidation. The law of Babylon was simply this: *You are not required to give up your devotion to other gods, but you shall be devoted to the god-State. You shall love God AND COUNTRY and obey the king.*

However, the law of the Three Hebrews stated, "You shall have NO gods before me." Devotion to YAH demanded devotees forsake state idols and their statutory laws. The LORD did not desire a prominent place or an important place but the pre-eminent place in the hearts and minds of His people (Col. 1:18). YAH demanded: "The graven images of their gods shall ye burn with fire" (Deut. 7:25). He was intolerant of other religions and demanded uncompromising allegiance to Him. Devotion to YAH meant vigorous carnage of uncontested idols.

Furthermore, the three Hebrews were not rebelling¹⁵ against the king, **the king was rebelling against the God of Heaven!** The men were not disrespecting the king's position, they disrespected the king's order.

What are people supposed to do when the government acts like a god? As good subjects of the king, the three Hebrews had a patriotic duty to resist their erring monarch. It is the duty of inferiors to confront wayward superiors. If there is no place to protest a law, then the State has become a god.

Likewise, Daniel became a victim of Babylonian statist ideas.

Daniel 6:7 "The royal administrators, prefects, satraps, advisers and governors have all agreed that the king should issue an edict and enforce the decree that anyone who prays to any god or man during the next thirty days, except to you, O king, shall be thrown into the lions' den."

When the slick politicians in Darius's court enacted a mandate to trap Daniel and have him removed from office, Darius fell for the legislation hook, line, and sinker.

¹⁵ Rebellion in the Bible is ONLY used in reference to a revolt against God. There is no such thing as a rebellion against human government unless that government arranges itself under God's law-order.

Consider the mindset of Darius and the arrogance of this king. How could he accept such a ridiculous statute as forbidding prayer to any god except himself unless he thought of himself as some kind of deity? Was he not playing the role of a sovereign in accepting prayers from the people? One might think this kind of presumptuous swagger ended with Darius, but it did not. It goes on today. With rare exceptions, all motions submitted to federal and State courts have this language, "We pray the honorable court . . ."

Whether we are talking about the Department of Justice (DOJ) seizing homes without a court order, or the master scheme of the IRS to defraud the American public of its wealth through the color of law, or the violations of the federal government in the WACO disaster, or the seizure of private property for the development of a new shopping center, or the Patriot Act that empowers the feds to tap the phone lines of private citizens, freedoms are disappearing faster than giant pandas and California condors.

PART III

A friend of mine was riding his bike home early in the morning when a policeman stopped him and interrogated him. My friend held his tongue and just looked at the officer. Angry, the officer grabbed the man, kicked his bike into a fence, threw the man on the hood of his car, and hand cuffed him. He then read him his Miranda Rights, "You have a right to remain silent . . ." screamed the "Law Enforcement Officer." Enduring a lecture by this "public servant," my friend remained quiet. Gradually, it dawned on the "Law Enforcement Officer" that my 145 pound fifty year old friend had done nothing wrong and was a threat no one.

Finally, the officer uncuffed him and asked, "Why won't you answer me"? My friend pointed to his throat and toward a pen and paper. My friend wrote, "I have a right to remain silent" (First Amendment). Realizing his BIG mistake, the policeman, to his credit, apologized profusely and offered my friend a ride home. Though this story is kind of funny, it is not funny when public servants think like Attila the Hun because they are guard dogs working for statist.

Statism and Rome

"We have no king but Caesar" (Jn. 19:15).

"The Roman empire presents a classic example of the Messianic man-centered State, of the denial of God's Law, and the implementation of

humanistic law."¹⁶

In Rome, allegiance to the State was the supreme value. And like Islam, it was a great honor to die for the State. "Hail Caesar," was the devoted cry of the gladiators, "today we die for thee." Caesar was seen as a god. Loyalty was rewarded. Perfidy was punished. Not paying taxes was treason.

That Caesar saw himself as a god cannot be denied. The reverses of Roman coins were regularly used as media of propaganda designed to enlarge devotion to the State. After 15 AD all Tiberius denarii were the same type: "PONTIF MAXIM" surrounding a seated female figure. A common expression in the Roman Empire was *neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven, except Caesar, whereby men must be saved.*

It is this apostolic confession of Jesus as the "Savior...the Messiah the Lord" (Luke 2:11) that would bring the early church into confrontation and conflict with a far-flung imperial regime that claimed Caesar as savior and universal lord. This conflict makes sense only insofar as the church was making this confession not as just one "religious" option among many but as a witness embracing the whole of life (Todd Granger, MD)¹⁷.

The basic problem with Rome was its claim of authority to authorize the people to worship as they pleased. The early Christians, however, refused to acknowledge Rome had any authority over the church or its apostolic faith. When Peter preached, "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men (except Jesus), whereby we must be saved)" (Acts 4:12), *he declared war on Statism.*

Rome tolerated any form of idolatry that would recognize the authority of the religion established by the State, *but it could not tolerate a system which maintained that all religions were wrong—or, that one religion was right.* There were no personal liberties in Rome. Religion was tolerated as long as it was a legitimate franchise of the State. All cults were protected as long as the cult registered with the State and received a license to operate.¹⁸ However, early Christians refused to incorporate with Rome. Christians were called "atheists."

¹⁶ Gary Demar, *God and Government*, Vol. 3, (Atlanta, GA: American Vision, 2001), p. 71.

¹⁷ Todd Granger, Acts 4:12. Retrieved online, February 8, 2010 from anglicansonline.org/comment/granger030511.html.

¹⁸ Peter Kershaw, "Incorporation Problems," (Internet resource: <http://hushmoney.org/incorporate-problems.htm>).

Consequently, the State saw the church as an illegitimate cult – that is, “illicit” or unlicensed. The charge of atheism and refusal to incorporate was equivalent to treason against the imperial cult.

Statism and the Beast of Revelation 13

“All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast . . .” (Revelation 13:8).

In modern times, many Bible expositors view the Beast as something totally futuristic to our time. This view allows the average Christian to escape any application of the passage to political tyranny happening now.

If Revelation 13 is always interpreted as something futuristic, there is no need to panic in our day – after all, we do not have a literal 666 stamped on our forehead.

Historically, however, the beast was identified with the Roman Empire.

Under Nero, the totalitarian monarch put to death Christians as enemies of the state. Christians were executed not because they worshiped Jesus, but because they refused to give a pinch of incense to Caesar; that is, they saw Caesar-worship as a form of idolatry.

When Polycarp (155 A.D.), Bishop of the Church at Smyrna and disciple of the Apostle John, was arrested and taken before the civil magistrate, Irenarch Herod and his father Nicetes (both riding in a chariot) approached Polycarp and asked him, “What harm is there in saying Lord Caesar, and in sacrificing, with the other ceremonies observed on such occasions, and so make sure of safety”? At their continual urging, Polycarp finally responded, “I shall not do as you advise me.” Polycarp was charged with treason executed for being an atheist.¹⁹

In Revelation thirteen, Rome is portrayed as a beast without feelings. The beastly State controlled all of life. Some believe the mark of the beast on the forehead and hand is literal. Others believe it is symbolic; that is, since the forehead is the seat of thought, the State sought to manipulate citizens through propaganda; and, since the hand is a symbol of work and productivity, the State sought to control man’s labor. No doubt this is the case in that government controlled buying and selling. Those who demonstrated devotion to the State and acknowledged its power were granted economic privileges. Dissenting Christians were quickly identified, slandered, maligned, charged, and sometimes executed.

And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome

¹⁹ “Martyrdom of Polycarp,” The Anti-Nicen Fathers, p. 40.

them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations (Revelation 13:7).

Whether one interprets this portion of Scripture preteristically or futuristically, **we must discern when governments become beastly and resist them.**

The social security number, driver's licenses, face masks, and vaccines act very much like the mark of the beast. Without a social security number, you can't get a job, rent a car, possess a bank account, vote, drive a car, buy a house, or purchase utilities.

If you get the experimental job, the CDC throws you some crumbs saying you can now travel on a plane, visit family, and associate in small groups of three or four people.

The Beast of Revelation 13 morphs its way through history until the end.

It is in the Bible to alert Christians that when the State takes on the character of the beast, **they MUST DEVELOP A STRATEGY OF RESISTANCE, NOT OBEDIENCE!**

Statism is on the rise in America. We are seeing government seeking to control everything from health care to the number of cars you can have in your driveway. Recently, another friend of mine received a letter from the bank saying they had frozen his account because of an IRS levy. Without going to court, without due process, without a court order, without a jury of his peers in violation of the 4th, 5th, 9th, and 10th Amendment the bank cowered like a beaten dog toward the unsigned, unverified IRS request, stole my friend's money and sent it to the U.S. government.

To understand the shift in power from the private sector to the public sector, we need to look at the subject of statism in God's Word.

It will be all you can do to avoid abuse by the Leviathan State who sees U.S. citizens as slaves and itself at the master.

By way of discussion and application, consider how Agenda 2021, 2030, 2040, globalism, the New World Order, the United Nations, the Green New Deal, Environmentalism, population control, marriage licenses, labor unions, Covid-pandemics, masks, and mandatory "Luciferase" experimental injections with the philosophy "no jab, no job" are products of statism.

15. The Idolatry of Statism

2 Kings 17:7, 8

“ . . . So it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God . . . feared other gods [the State] and walked in the statutes [laws] of the heathen” (2 Kings 17:7, 8).

PART I

After redeeming Israel from political bondage under Pharaoh, He brought His people to Mt. Sinai.

This nation of slaves had no statesmen, lawyers, doctors, philosophers, priests, or prophets. They were “blue collar” people from a “blue collar” neighborhood near the Blue Nile Delta.

Things changed at Sinai. There they received God’s law and the nation’s constitution. Their legal system was a thinking man’s religion. It was everything but wild and subjective. Having one God and one law, the nation achieved greatness.

The first law was that Israel was to have no other gods before the LORD. Idolatry (legal pluralism) was forbidden.

Our concept of Idolatry is narrow and limited. To Americans idolatry is bowing down to a piece of wood or stone. Like Pharisees, our shallow understanding of idolatry leaves us smug and self-righteous. Because we have a shriveled view of idolatry, we seldom see ourselves idolaters.

Ephesians 5:5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

Covetousness is identified as idolatry.

Idolatry is much broader than worshiping a stone.

Covetousness is identified by the Greek word *pleonexia* which in this context refers to an aberrant sexual desire for sexual experiences. Covetousness, lust, and lasciviousness is idolatry because the avarice man or woman is not guided by the Law of God.

Covetousness originated in the garden where man rejected the sovereignty of God while pursuing own wisdom and desire. Anytime men follow their own feeling instead of the written Word, they commit idolatry.

When men are led by desire, lust, and prurient interest, the Bible labels them idolaters.

Colossians 3:5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:

A related question is this: What is treason?

Is treason unfaithfulness to the State or is treason unfaithfulness to the God?

If you answer the "State," you empower government to persecute Christians. For example, Nero executed Christians not because they believed in Christ, but because Rome saw them guilty of treason. In refusing to acknowledge Rome as the ultimate authority on earth, Christians were charged with treason.

Rome did not care what god you worshiped as long as you would say once a year that, "Caesar is Lord." Christians were put to death, not because they were Christians but because they would not confess Caesar as their sovereign.

When Peter proclaimed in Acts 4:12 "there is no other name under heaven whereby men must be saved" he declared war on Caesar because Rome believed the only name under heaven whereby one could be saved was Caesar.

The key question is what if the enemy of the Christian is not his neighbor down the street, but the State turned traitor against the Law of God and its own Constitution?

The U.S. Constitution defines treason in Article III, Sec. 3 as an infamous act of betrayal to the State.²⁰

Treason is defined as an act of disloyalty to the State because disloyalty to God is unimportant to politicians. When treason as defined as perfidity to the State rather than perfidity to God, then the government apparatus engages in Statism – the worship of the State as man's highest duty.

²⁰ Treason in the United States can only be committed by government employees who have taken an oath to support the Constitution.

18 U.S.C. §2381. Treason

Whoever, owing allegiance to the United States, levies war against them or adheres to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort within the United States or elsewhere, is guilty of treason and shall suffer death, or shall be imprisoned not less than five years and fined under this title but not less than \$10,000; and shall be incapable of holding any office under the United States.

If Christians pledge allegiance to any State (State or feds) that is guilty of idolatry, they become idolaters.

Have you heard the phrase, “We can’t fight city hall”? If we believe the State should not be resisted, then we are saying the State is holy and virtuous. If we believe the State is ultimately right and always has power over us, then we commit idolatry. And, idolatry is treason to God.

The State is the Source of Idolatry

First, the state often demands total sacrifice. When you join the armed forces in America, the first thing they do is shave your head. Using sleep deprivation, the army brainwashes you in to obeying their every order, even if it means running straight into a machine gun; that is you are trained to die for your country. The state uses behavioral modification to produce devotion.

The Bible exposes the State as the main source of idolatry.

Solomon (970-931 BC)

1 Kings 11:4ff 5 He followed Ashtoreth the goddess of the Sidonians, and Moloch the detestable god of the Ammonites. So Solomon did evil in the eyes of the LORD; he did not follow the LORD completely, as David his father had done. On a hill east of Jerusalem, Solomon built a high place for Chemosh the detestable god of Moab, and for Moloch the detestable god of the Ammonites.

8 He did the same for all his foreign wives, who burned incense and offered sacrifices to their gods.

In order to please his wives, Solomon used the power of the State to set up temples to other gods – an act of idolatry – an act of treason.

One of the temple’s he erected was a shrine to Moloch. The term *Moloch* is a derivative of the title “king.” **Moloch was State worship** – the belief that the State is god; that the highest crime is treason against the government. The religion believed the king was the divine representative on earth and that the king had jurisdiction over all human affairs.

Notice that Solomon was a king, and that *the king that led the people into idolatry*. When the State is behind idolatry, it is very difficult to resist with impunity. To be complicit with statism is to participate in its idolatry.

Jeroboam (931-909 BC)

Following the death of Solomon, the nation of Israel divided over an issue of taxation. When Rehoboam sought to tax the northern tribes without their consent, they revolted – and, rightly so! A civil war almost erupted. The most prominent political figure, Jeroboam became the de facto king in Israel, the northern kingdom.

The first political challenge facing the new king was how to unite the northern tribes. The people were accustomed to going to Jerusalem to worship YHWH during the festivals. This transfer of focus and wealth to Jerusalem was more than Rehoboam could take. The question that entered his depraved man was how could he unite his people if they remained loyal to YHWH and made pilgrimages to Jerusalem?

Jeroboam thought to himself,

“The kingdom will now likely revert to the house of David. If these people go up to offer sacrifices at the temple of the LORD in Jerusalem, they will again give their allegiance to their lord, Rehoboam king of Judah. They will kill me and return to King Rehoboam.”

After seeking advice from his cabinet, the king made two golden calves. He said to the people, “It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem. Here are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt.” He set one up in Bethel, and the other in Dan.

“And this thing became a sin; the people went even as far as Dan to worship the one there. Jeroboam built shrines on high places and appointed priests from all sorts of people, even though they were not Levites. He instituted a festival on the fifteenth day of the eighth month, like the festival held in Judah, and offered sacrifices on the altar. This he did in Bethel, sacrificing to the calves he had made. And at Bethel he also installed priests at the high places he had made. On the fifteenth day of the eighth month, a month of his own choosing, he offered sacrifices on the altar he had built at Bethel. So he instituted the festival for the Israelites and went up to the altar to make offerings” (I Kings 12:26ff).

Jeroboam set up his own religion in order to confederate his people and to preserve his own dynasty! He was not concerned about religious truth nor the glory of God. He was concerned about protecting political power. Therefore, Jeroboam erected golden calves at Dan and Bethel. Dan was chosen because it was in the far north near Mt. Hermon. Bethel was chosen because it was in the far south of his kingdom just a few miles north of Jerusalem.

In Jeroboam’s mind, having a State sponsored religion would eliminate the need for the people to travel up to Jerusalem enriching Judah in the tourist trade. Jeroboam’s religious policy was clearly political and idolatrous.

Surprisingly, the children of Israel fell for the scheme. The State sponsored religion gave a false sense of propriety. People love it when the State supports religion!

Manasseh (697-642 BC)

“Manasseh was twelve years old when he became king, and he reigned in Jerusalem fifty-five years. His mother’s name was Hephzibah. He did evil in the eyes of the LORD, following the detestable practices of the nations the LORD had driven out before the Israelites. He rebuilt the high places his father Hezekiah had destroyed; he also erected altars to Baal and made an Asherah pole, as Ahab king of Israel had done. He bowed down to all the starry hosts and worshiped them. He built altars in the temple of the LORD, of which the LORD had said, “In Jerusalem I will put my Name.” 2 Kings 21:1

Manasseh, the son of Hezekiah, was the most wicked of the southern kings. He built altars to idols in the house of the Lord. He even promoted sodomites in the temple.

Notice again that it was a civil ruler who pushed and ordained idolatry in the nation. State sanctioned idolatry placed a stamp of legitimacy on the false religious system. People like the broad way and the State’s benevolence in religious affairs. It makes them feel liberal and humane.

Why is government so prone to idolatry? Why are civil rulers the ones who lead the way towards idolatry? The answer is because government deals with law. All law is inherently religious. Law represents a value whether the law is Christian or pagan. There is no such thing as non-religious law.

All law is a value judgment. Since values come from one’s religion, all laws are religious. *Legislation, therefore, is a matter of whose religious values are going to govern society.*

When Washington says we are not bias on this matter, it is a bunch of bunk. Every law represents somebody’s faith. In the name of religion, people have killed their babies, tattooed their bodies, and fornicated with prostitutes.

Psalm 94:20 Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee,
which frameth mischief [trouble] by a law?

Take for example California **Governor Schwarzenegger**. Everyone liked Arnold as an actor. Who can forget his lines, “I’ll be back”? However, Gov. Schwarzenegger exposes his religion by the laws he signs. In August 2006, Gov. Schwarzenegger signed a bill directed toward State and private schools requiring that schools “condone homosexuality, bisexuality and transsexuality.”

The signed legislation is clearly religious in favor of tolerating sin. (See Lev. 18; Roms. 1:18ff; I Cor. 6:19, 20; I Tim. 1:8-10. There appears to be no exception for faith-based organizations.(Baptist Press, October 16, 2007).

Take another example of the swearing in of **Moslem Congressman Ellison** in January, 2007. The modern state endorses pluralism and believes all religions are basically the same. Speaker of the House, idolater Nancy Pelosi, proudly held out the Koran to have Ellison become the first American Moslem and the first representative to swear an oath before Congress based on the Koran. What's next, swearing witches in on a Harry Potter's Book? Why not? In the mind of liberal politicians all religions are equally good? No wonder these same people do not want the Ten Commandments displayed in the classroom. People might actually revere them and take serious the Commandment, "Thou shall have no gods before me."

Why was launching a false religion a part of Jeroboam's political strategy? Because he was fearful of losing power! Jeroboam was not interested in the blessing of the Lord upon the people. He wanted to protect his base of authority. Politicians seldom act for the good of the people. They do what is necessary to stay in power.

Note how the members of Sanhedrin felt about Christ.

John 11:47-48 Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.

Jewish leaders were willing to crucified Jesus Christ to stay in power. Chief priests were willing to slander and murder Him to keep their position and influence. If they did this to Christ, they would not hesitate to sacrifice a Christian to stay in power.

Deportation (722 B.C.)

*"In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria, and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes. For so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, And walked **in the statutes** of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made" (2 Kings 17;6-8).*

Did you notice the word "statutes" in verse eight? This is the word for "ordinances" or "laws." Since gods are the source of law, worshipping a false god means following that god's laws. The people feared other gods and walked in the statutes of the heathen. *To fear a false god is to obey his / her precepts.*

God ordered them to keep His statutes, but Israel rejected His statutes and adopted the permissive laws of the surrounding nations.

Having run the full course of an idolatrous state, God summoned the Assyrians to execute judgment upon the nation. Most people were killed. The survivors were deported, sold as slaves, and scattered throughout the Assyrian Empire. Because Israel feared other gods and enacted laws that corrupted the people, God vomited them out of the Holy Land.

Proverbs 16:6 By mercy and truth iniquity is purged (pardoned): and by the fear of the LORD men depart from evil.

Job 28:28 And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding.

Q: What makes a man depart from his wicked, evil ways?

By the fear of the Lord men depart from evil. Where there is no fear of the Biblical God (like in secularism), men embrace evil and call it good.

When you fear false gods, you adopt their laws . . . rituals . . . and practices. To obey false gods, one must abandon the Law of God. When the kings of Israel adopted legal pluralism, the nation plunged into debauchery. God's judgment was destruction and servitude.

GOD SENT ISRAEL INTO CAPTIVITY NOT BECAUSE THEY DISOBEYED THEIR CIVIL RULERS BUT BECAUSE THEY OBEYED THE LAWS OF THEIR CIVIL RULERS!

Israel obeyed the laws of the heathen kings whose statutes were contrary to God's Word.

2 Kings 18:12 Because they obeyed not the voice of the LORD their God, but transgressed his covenant, and all that Moses the servant of the LORD commanded, and would not hear them, nor do them.

The State becomes the enemy of true religion by becoming intolerant of the truth and by enacting statutes germane to popular religions. Multi-pluralism and tolerance of religious affiliation became public policy. The Scripture says that Jeroboam **drove** Israel away from the law by establishing a false religion. How did he drive them away from God? Ans: By alienating them from God's law and by compelling them to surrender to a man-made religious law order.

*2 Kings 17:21 For he rent Israel from the house of David; and they made Jeroboam the son of Nebat king: and **Jeroboam drove Israel from following the LORD**, and made them sin a great sin.*

Manasseh passed laws encouraging the worship of false gods. Look at 2 Kings and notice how the kings were instruments of idolatry.

*2 Kings 21:9 But they hearkened not: and **Manasseh seduced** them to do more evil than did the nations whom the LORD destroyed before the children of Israel.*

*2 Kings 23:5 And he (Josiah) put down the idolatrous priests, **whom the kings of Judah had ordained** to burn incense in the high places in the cities of Judah*

*2 Kings 23:12 And the altars that were on the top of the upper chamber of Ahaz, **which the kings of Judah had made,***

*2 Kings 23:15 Moreover the altar that was at Bethel, and the high place which **Jeroboam the son of Nebat, who made Israel to sin,***

*2 Kings 23:19 And all the houses also of the high places that were in the cities of Samaria, which **the kings of Israel had made** to provoke the LORD to anger.*

This is statism.

From the above texts it should be clear that **it was the civil rulers that introduced idolatry into the nation.** And, it is no different today. Civil rulers, representatives, senators, and governors enact laws that empower idolatrous practices in nations.

PART II

STATISM AS IDOLATRY IN AMERICA

Politicians love power. They seek to control people's religious faith by changing the language and by punishing those who do not conform to public policy. They make Christians look like buck-toothed, pigeon toed monsters. Listen to these headlines and a few comments:

"Is Being a Christian a Hate Crime"? The SBC was accused of being hateful because Christians wanted to witness to Jews and other groups.

The practice of Hitler, Stalin and every other tyrant of encouraging children to "inform" on their parents is quietly slipping into the United States.²¹

The fact that at one time atheists were not allowed to take an oath and testify in court should tell us that we live in a very different world than existed at the time the Constitution was ratified.

²¹ Wes Vernon, (Online Resource: NewsMax.com., May 26, 2001)

Not all child abusers are Christian and not all Christians are child abusers. But a surprisingly high number of cases of reported child abuse occur in Christian families.”²²

*“My daughters called me, were hysterical, and said, ‘Mama, they (public school officials) took our Bibles and called them garbage and threw them in the garbage and then threatened to call Child Protective Services,’”
Deborah Bedenbender, 37, a Texas homemaker, as reported in Worldnet Daily; Saturday, May 27, 2000.*

“Teaching your children that homosexuality is wrong is child abuse!”²³

“Scientists who believe in God as the creator were subjected to public defamation. Christians, not willing to compromise their faith, had to face ridicule, intolerance, stigmatization and career obstacles.”²⁴

Solomon built altars to Moloch

The word “Moloch” means “king” or “kingship.” In erecting these temples, Solomon established the State as a god. Moloch was a political power manifest in a political religion. The king exercised complete and total power over the people, the land, and the State. It claims to be the total governor of man. It claims unlimited jurisdiction over human affairs *from the cradle to the grave; from the womb to the tomb.*

Statists covet power over the family and over education. Take for example, the “No Spank” bill introduced in Sacramento in January, 2007, they makes it a crime to spank your child if they are under three years of age. To Christians, measured spanking is an act of paternal love (Prov. 29:15; Heb. 12:6); but, the religion of humanism teaches that humans are born good and that children do not need discipline. The NO SPANK law is clearly a religious value being imposed upon the residents of California. Amazingly, there is little to no protest among the Christian community over being forced to comply with laws rooted in the religion of humanism.

Totalitarian Governments are Moloch

If you do not believe that statism has a firm grip on every aspect of life, *try doing something without a license.*

²² Marie Fortune, Director, Center for Prevention of Sexual and Domestic Violence, Seattle, WA, Quoted in “Profane Justice,” by Suzanne Shell, p. 6

²³ “A multicultural liberal sign” (revealing the Left’s version of open-mindedness) in a Corvallis, Oregon supermarket, May 25, 2000.

²⁴ Wolfgang Polzer, “Persecution is Coming to the West,” (Online Resource: ASSIST News Service, Crosswalk.com.).

Try to register to vote without a social security number or identifying with the label “U.S. citizen.”

Try driving on a public highway without a State issued license.

Tell your pastor you want to get married without the State’s permission.

Try starting a business without a license.

You can’t travel, work, or own a dog without a license. You can’t build a storage shed on your property without a permit or even get a bank account without a government controlled number (SSN). In many communities, farmers have to obtain permission to plant a crop. In adopting Agenda 2021 and 2030, U.S. Inc. seeks to issue national identity cards through Driver’s Licenses. Technology is available to implant computer chips for “identification” and “health care” in the human body. Everything is totally controlled by the government.

A Health Inspector confronted a Texas pastor because the church brought homemade sandwiches with the homeless. The pastor was told they had to have a license to give away the sandwiches. The church could throw it in the trash, and the homeless could pick it out of the trash, but they could not give them a fresh, homemade sandwich. One Sunday, they brought trashcans full of trash and a table full of sandwiches and gave the homeless a choice. They chose the clean sandwiches. The city was willing for them to eat out of the dumpsters, but they were not willing to let a Baptist church give out fresh food.

There was a man in New Mexico who bought five acres of land. He placed an old mobile home on his land and bought a compost toilet. He steadily improved his property by cutting down brush, installing a driveway, and erecting a fence around it. The county inspector showed up one day and cited him with eight violations of city codes. Because he did not obtain permission from the county to make improvements on his property, he was put in jail. Eventually, he was forced to sell his land because they would not let him live on his property.

God defines the limitation of government. A government cannot do anything it wants. It is limited by God and by its respective constitution. Because we do not know the Bible or the U.S. Constitution, we let the government get away with anything and everything. For all practical purposes, the Constitution is nothing but a dead piece of paper. In its place we have statutory law. Thus, the supreme law of the land or whatever the judges say the law is.

We are not to fear the State or its public servants. We are to fear only the living God.

Job 28:28 And he said to man, ‘The fear of the Lord– that is wisdom, and to shun evil is understanding.

However, fear is understandable in America! We can't do what needs to be done because the government will sic some government agency on us.

Governments cause people to sin by fraud in the inducement under the color of law.

Psalm 94:20 Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law?

The term "*throne*" refers to civil authority. "Iniquity" describes the character of that rule—a rule opposed to the God's law-order. The word "*mischief*" means "trouble" or "misery." The means of corrupting a culture is by passing ungodly legislation. Laws change the culture. The reason America is not what it used to be is because godless politicians pass laws that reward evil and that punish the good. The government has made sin legal!

- In America, it is legal to kill as long as you do it before a baby is born . . . or afterwards if the woman wills.
- In American, you can steal as long as you are a politician.
- In America, you can obtain a divorce for any reason.
- In American, sodomy is legal.
- In America, you can post an ad promoting homosexuality, but you can't post an ad from the Bible that condemns this perversion.²⁵
- In America it is legal to worship a golden calf, but illegal to post the Ten Commandments in the classroom.
- In American, adultery is acceptable recreational behavior.
- In America, lying is permitted as long as you are a politician. Someone has said, "How can you tell when a politician is lying"? The answer is, "When he/her has her mouth open." Bias reporting, propaganda, slander, mud racking, and legalese are all acceptable forms of speech in the political arena.

The Psalmist asked, "*Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee?*" - Psalm 94:20.

²⁵ Ted Kennedy in the U.S. Senate introduced the "Hate Crimes Prevention Act of 1999" but that bill never became law. Recently, Senator Kennedy renamed the bill and it is now called S. Bill 625, the "Local Law Enforcement Enhancement Act of 2001." (Will such a bill ever be a threat?) Government officials in Staten Island called the word of God "hate-speech" and forced a billboard owner to cover up a Bible quote about homosexuality. One cannot buy ads or use quotes from Bible verses, which condemn the practice of homosexuality on billboards, anywhere in New York City, tbaptist.com/aab/nv308.htm#Purpose.

Shall the wicked, adulterous, homosexual promoting politicians that legalize sin have fellowship with the thrice holy God?

“Most people choose to believe that their leaders are fair and just, even in the face of evidence to the contrary, because once a citizen acknowledges that the government under which they live is lying and corrupt, the citizen has to choose what he or she will do about it. To take action in the face of a corrupt government entails risk of harm to life and loved ones. To choose to do nothing is to surrender one’s self-image of standing for principles. Most people do not have the courage to face that choice. Hence, most propaganda is not designed to fool the critical thinker but only to give moral cowards an excuse not to think at all.”
(<http://www.sfveritas.org/page18.html>).

So, what is idolatry? When we think the government can do whatever it wants and we can do nothing to oppose it, government propaganda is complete . . . this is Statism . . . this is idolatry.

The Marvelous Hebrew Midwives

“When you help the Hebrew women in childbirth and observe them on the delivery stool, if it is a boy, kill him; but if it is a girl, let her live.” The midwives, however, feared God and did not do what the king of Egypt had told them to do; they let the boys live. Then the king of Egypt summoned the midwives and asked them, “Why have you done this? Why have you let the boys live?” The midwives answered Pharaoh, “Hebrew women are not like Egyptian women; they are vigorous and give birth before the midwives arrive. So God was kind to the midwives and the people increased and became even more numerous” (Exodus 16-20).

The midwives had a choice to obey man’s law or God’s law. They chose God’s law. The midwives feared God more than the king and chose to disobey the king’s law. This was acceptable disobedience. In disobeying the king, they were obeying God. In order to obey God THEY HAD to disobey the State! What gave them the courage? They feared God more than they feared the king. *If they had feared Pharaoh, they would have been idolaters.*

Proverbs 16:6 By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: and by the fear of the LORD men depart from evil.

The Disciples

When pressured to submit to the policies of the Sanhedrin Government, Peter, the Hebrew preacher, stated in Acts 5:29: *“We ought to obey God rather than man.”*

When the rulers attempted to lure the disciples into committing treason against Christ, Peter chose to obey His Lord rather than join the Jewish rebellion against the Lord.

Politicians must learn the truth of God's kingdom from Nebuchadnezzar:

"I blessed the most High, and I praised and Honored him that liveth forever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom is from generation to generation" (Daniel 4:34).

Christians will only find power when they follow the faith of Abraham:

"But Abram said to the king of Sodom, "I have lifted my hand to the LORD, God Most High, Possessor of heaven and earth" – Genesis 14:22.

"I lift up mine hand unto the LORD, the Most High God, the possessor of heaven and earth" and not Sodom in Washington D.C.

Leisurely enjoying the empire he built, Nebuchadnezzar strutted through his palace beating his chest like a gorilla when God struck him with seven years of insanity.

The soul-trying question is, "Who is Lord – Jesus Christ or government"?

In the first century, the answer was, "Jesus is Lord." He was Lord in Solomon's day and Jeroboam's day and Manasseh's day. "I am the Lord," (Is. 43:8).

Likewise, He is Lord in our day. The only question is, will Christians obey God rather than Caesar or will they bleat like sheep in the midst of a cultural revolution that is forsaking its Christian base and replacing it with atheistic, secular, man-made statutes?

We simply cannot afford to believe and act like government is God.

The governments only purpose is to protect the rights of man. The LORD has defined and limited its authority. There is one God and one kingdom. Those in His kingdom are required to obey His laws. To ascribe the attributes of God to the State is idolatry!

16. When the Wicked Rule

Proverbs 29:2

"When the righteous are in authority, the people rejoice: but when the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn."

There is a sadness among American patriots.

Psalm 119:53 Hot indignation seizes me because of the wicked, who forsake your law.

The “*righteous*” are those in a right relationship to God and in their right mind; that is, they see themselves under the authority of Christ with a duty to obey His law. If you are angry over the moral decline in America, it is because you are a righteous patriot.

The “*wicked*” in this text are cockroach politicians. They are not right with God nor in their right minds. They see themselves as a god with legal authority to pursue their own pleasures. Call them wicked, twisted, perverted, screwed up, stupid, ignorant, or crazy, most are psychopaths.

“The characteristics that define clinical psychopathy are many of the same that make effective leaders” (James Silver, the Atlantic).

The dictionary defines a psychopath as a “Person” (fiction) with a personality disorder characterized by **anti-social behavior diminished in empathy and remorse with disinhibited behavior**. The promotion of abortion, same-sex marriage, gender-neutral bathrooms, and calling people racists and sexists who disagree with their maniacal agendas comes to mind.

While it’s easy to dismiss labeling politicians as psychopaths as the ranting of angry bloggers, the Biblical text does not lie. When the wicked rule, the people mourn, agonize, grieve, ache, cry, complain, fret, moan, sob, and blog.

- Because politicians with diminished empathy permit butchers to murder, kill, stab, disembowel, decapitate, and rip limb from limb of unborn babies, the people mourn.
- Because these politicians accept blood-money from Planned Parenthood to support their campaigns, the people mourn.
- Because these same people refuse to uphold the law and exercise the death penalty against capital criminals, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths resort to slander, defamation, and accusation to win a campaign, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths can’t stop lying, defaming, smearing, backbiting, depreciating, muckraking, and slamming their political opponents, the people mourn.
- Because these broad-minded politicians care more about the international community, Israel, Iraqis, Iranians, Afgans, Muslims, and European politics than the well-being of individual Americans, the people mourn.
- Because thee psychopaths normalize the abomination of Sodomy as acceptable sexual behavior; and because they legitimize mental disorders

such as transvestism treating it as natural, regular, standard, mental health.

- Because these lusty politicians accept kickbacks and bribes from other psychopaths for the promise to turn a blind eye to the wishes of the American people, to fleece the taxpayers of their hard-earned dollars, to prejudice the elite, to fund the murdering military complex, to favor corporations, and to pay foreign, alien Muslim refugees to flood America in order to disrupt peace and tranquility in this country, the people mourn.
- Because these criminal psychopaths exhibit a high sense of self-worth, callousness, and irresponsibility in a quiet madness that is totally lacking in remorse and concern for what is good and decent, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths wear pride like a peacock, brim with self-confidence, creep with charm, and strut around at fundraisers hell-bent on obtaining money, the people mourn.
- Because of the willingness of these criminal psychopaths to prioritize power above all else, including the welfare of their fellow human beings, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths refuse to enforce obscenity laws and promote the cult of permissiveness, the people mourn.
- Because these politicians spread lies about a war on women, discriminate against blacks, value multiculturalism, war against white Americans, and push for open borders, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths defame Christianity, remove displays of the Ten Commandments from public places, favor Muslims, remove the symbols of noble southern patriots, and redact American history, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths encourage asset forfeiture, raid and harass, charge and fine, seize and confiscate, mishandle and bully, con and lie, detain and jail us when we dare step out of line with public policy, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths refuse to own up to responsibility, or balance the budget, or obey their own law, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths can't balance a budget, have created an unsustainable debt, and tax Americans into subsistence living, the people mourn.
- Because these psychopaths create zillions of laws and regulations, create zillions of new taxes to impoverish Americans, create new police powers while exempting themselves from prosecution, create new jails and penitentiaries, and create quotas for cops to ticket and arrest, the people mourn.

- Because these anti-social, psychopathic politicians have created a debt-based economy so that every man has to borrow money for his education, for his house, for his cars, and for the necessities of life, the people mourn.

We must resist the robbery, lies, murders, and slander of these twisted maniacs forcing Sodomy, transvestitism, radical feminism, abortion, open borders, secular religion, militant-Islam, immigration, and political correctness down our throats.

We must pray and humble ourselves before God.

We are not faceless numbers and sureties for the U.S. debt. We are human beings who want to provide for our families, live responsibly, live freely, and to live happily.

Consequently, because the U.S. government declares war against white males, butchers babies, empowers the IRS to seize private property, supports mask mandates and experimental drug use on the population, the righteous must hide their persons, assets, money, children, and truth from this greedy, grasping government.

Proverbs 28:28 When the wicked rise (to positions of power in government), (thinking) men hide themselves (and their assets): but when they perish, the righteous increase.

17. THE GOVERNMENT'S PSYCH-WAR AGAINST ITS CITIZENS

Isaiah 36:1-20

“On what do you rest this trust of yours”? Isaiah 36:4

Columnist Joseph Sobran writes,

“The prevailing notion is that the state should be neutral as to religion, and furthermore, that the best way to be neutral about it is to avoid all mention of it. By this sort of logic, nudism is the best compromise among different styles of dress. The secularist version of ‘pluralism’ amounts to theological nudism.”(Charles W. Colson, “God and Government”)

From the historical account of Assyria's war against Jerusalem in the days of Hezekiah, look at how the government uses psychological warfare to enslave people.

Though the King of Assyria is dead, the spirit of Assyria is not. The same spirit that worked through Assyria to defeat God's people is the same spirit at work today in the government of the United States.

Because the government seeks to be a god to people, and because government is god to most people, it is of paramount importance that Christian people (and patriots) understand the psychological warfare used by the State to enslave them.

Because we are all targets of mind control, we need to understand psych-warfare and to take steps to reduce our vulnerability.

The Background

Sennacherib, King of Assyrian Empire, was expanding his control over the nations of the Levant. He crushed nation after nation, and then split his army into two divisions. Sennacherib sent a portion of his army with General Rabshakeh to conquer Jerusalem, the crown jewel of the Middle East.

Strategy

When Sennacherib arrived at Jerusalem, his goal was to persuade Jerusalem to surrender to King Sennacherib without a fight. Call it conditioning or programming, it was psychological warfare. Every word, tone, and action was designed to hypnotize his audience and to control them. Thus, he employed psych-war against King Hezekiah and Jerusalem.

Rabshakeh arrived at the doorstep of Jerusalem with a huge police force.

The sheer strength and size of this army was enough to traumatize all of Jerusalem. The arrival of the military police force created shock and confusion, fear and panic. Only by the grace of God could men maintain their wits and not give into hysteria. The presence of this army traumatized God's people and made them think that the only solution was unconditional surrender to the Assyrian government.

The Assyrian officer attempted to create doubt and destroy the people's confidence in themselves, in others, and in the LORD God (Isaiah 36:4-7).

Rabshakeh sought to persuade the people into surrendering to the King of Assyria by casting doubt on their "wisdom" and their "strength" (36:5).

The message rang clear: You Israelites don't have the power to fight us. You are weak, and we are strong; you are stupid, and we are smart. Surrender to us, and we'll take care of you.

Rabshakeh created uncertainty that others (like Egypt) would come to help them (26:6).

This was probably true, nevertheless Rabshakeh attacked any hope that someone from the outside would intervene and come to their rescue.

Rabshakeh sought to destroy their confidence in God.

He threw out the fact that King Hezekiah had destroyed altars around Jerusalem, and concluded that Hezekiah's narrow position was not religiously correct; that God could only be worshiped in one way, and one place in Jerusalem was narrow minded and narcissistic.

Rabshakeh used psych-warfare by playing theologian.

He preached that even the LORD is against Jerusalem! He had a general knowledge about God, but was woefully deficient in particular knowledge of the LORD. He branded King Hezekiah as being disobedient to God. He condemned him for destroying multiple altars in Judah, and errantly concluded that God was against Judah's king.

But, Hezekiah was obedient! By eliminating the idols and alternative places of worship, polytheism, and pluralism, he proved faithful to the LORD and his law-order. There is, after all, only one God, one altar, and one way to approach him. We would do well to ignore any politician playing Bible expert and theologian.

Rabshakeh offered the people of God a contract (36:8-9).

He wanted to barter and strike up an agreement; that is, for the people to give up without a fight. He even offered "consideration," and mockingly pledged to provide them 2000 horses contingent upon the nation's ability to provide enough skilled horsemen able to harness the power of horses to their benefit. He even scoffed and derided the nation's ability to draft enough lancers to form a cavalry.

All this mocking rhetoric was psychological warfare—a type of behavior modification designed to convince the people that any resistance to the Assyrian government was futile and hopeless.

Every day we receive subliminal messages that you can't fight city hall, or big government, or any of its alphabet gangs. The message is resistance is futile, give up, and surrender all your rights to us.

Governments are always offering contracts and programs to people in order to control them. Contracts are one way to manipulate people into being debt sureties for the State (social security, student loans, housing loans, food

stamps, etc.). But, step into one of these traps and the government has a leash around your neck.

The Assyrian mediator tried to convince Jerusalem that God was on the side of the Assyrian government.

“Have I now come up without the LORD’s approval”? (36:10).

He lied to the people saying, “The LORD said to me, ‘Go up against this land and destroy it.’” What presumption!

He insinuated that the Assyrian government was ordained of God and that to resist King Sennacherib was to resist the will of God. What arrogance!

Think of how Officer Rabshakeh popped Judah’s balloon here. God is on our side. He is not on your side. Your sister Israel was destroyed by us, and now God has sent us to destroy you. God doesn’t love you. He doesn’t care for you. He has sent us to crush you. We are His agents and we are obeying His command to smash you. Give up now. Resistance is useless.

The whole psych-ops was designed to intimidate and humiliate, to mortify and horrify, and to create emotion-based thinking among the people.

If modern sugar puff pastor had been present on that wall, no doubt they would have agreed with Rahshakeh and said, “*We should render unto Assyria what belongs to Assyria,*” and then handed them Jerusalem.

Rabshakeh attempted to divide and conquer (36:11-15).

The general spoke in the language of the Hebrews hoping to ignite fear and insurrection against Hezekiah. It was a political tactical maneuver to deflate the people’s confidence in God’s government, and to create impulsive surrender to King Sennacherib. His rhetoric created amnesiac barriers to what God had done in the past. He warned the people against trusting in King Hezekiah. He ridiculed Hezekiah’s admonition for the people to trust in God, and mocked his ability to lead the people through this crisis. He hoped that by attacking the weaknesses of Hezekiah, he could motivate the people to defect.

Thus, slandering a leader is perhaps the most effective and well-known psychological tool used to divide and defeat God’s people. “Attack the shepherd and the sheep will be scattered” (Zechariah 13:7).

[Note: There are Rabshakeh’s in every church capable of creating division, defecting to the government, and betraying free men.]

Rabshakeh, advanced the presumption that government is god (36:16-17).

He promised the people blessings and benefits that only the living God can supply: He offered the people “peace” (a contract), their “own vine,” and their

“own cistern” (food and provision); that is, trust me, and we will take care of you.

Under Solomon, a type of Christ, we see that men were sitting under their own vine and drinking from their own cisterns (1 Kings 4:25). Only God can provide safety, security, happiness, and abundance (Micah 4:1-4).

Hidden from view was Assyria’s agenda of subjugation, deprivation, and enslavement.

Rabshakeh was playing God, and Isaiah called it “blasphemy” (37:6).

Governments often act Divine and make promises they can’t keep. Trust us, and we will make your life better. Give up more of your rights and we will protect you. Trust us, we know what we are doing. Accept this plea bargain, admit guilt, and we’ll only send you to prison for three years.

Rabshakeh, used historical facts to create fear and gain the allegiance of defectors (36:19-20).

The general was quick to point out how the Assyrians had defeated Hamath (Central Syria), Arpad (in Syria), and Spharavaim (the two Sipparas” in the Euphrates).

The point of his psych-ops speech was a greater to lesser argument that if these cities could not defeat the Assyrian Army, then neither could Jerusalem; that is, all resistance is futile. Real facts and not rhetoric have a way of substantiating claims. And, proof of claim is evidence that persuades juries – in this case, the people of Jerusalem.

The best thing about this chapter is that the people did not “under-stand” Rabshakeh, questioned his authority, and exercised their right to remain silent. Emotional chatter and sharing of fears begs surrender.

By way of application, keep in mind that every crisis, real or imaginary, is used to enhance the fascist, totalitarian State thriving off the fears and labors of the people. Mind control, brainwashing, and propaganda and other non-lethal weapons are vital tools in the State’s arsenal to subjugate the people.

First, Governments often play a god in people’s lives, and use psych-warfare to control people.

Government competes with God for the devotion of the people. In the effort to obtain devotion and allegiance, governments strive to be omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent among the people. Through force, they create fear and capture allegiance.

These government corporations seek to control the information. They convince us that they are real deal, and that God is unreal and surreal. However, we the

people are the real deal. Government is a fiction of the mind; a dog and pony show; a figment of the imagination; all show, and no substance.

“The Government! what is it? where is it? what does it do? what ought it to do? All we know is, that it is a mysterious personage; and, assuredly, it is the most solicited, the most tormented, the most overwhelmed, the most admired, the most accused, the most invoked, and the most provoked of any personage in the world . . . Government is the great fiction through which everybody endeavors to live at the expense of everybody else.” (Bastiat).

Where government is a god in the minds of people, cowardice and betrayal are not far behind.

When men trust government, you cannot expect men not to betray you. If you do not submit and follow the status quo, you will be scheduled for elimination. And like good propagandist, handlers for the State will brand you as a “witch,” or “traitor,” or “tax evader,” or “anti-social,” “criminal felon,” “racist,” and other socially accepted criminal labels. You will be reputed, persecuted, and prosecuted with or without justification.

Realize governments use psychological warfare to manipulate people, to divide affections, and to attract allegiance.

Matthew 24:24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

Psychological warfare is a means of dominion and control. Psyops existed before the United States. However, psyops becomes more sophisticated over time. As mind-scientists of the empire continue to discover scientific breakthrough on how the brain functions, new strategies to control the mind will be employed by governments.

The ultimate goal is to control our minds . . . to create zombie-like citizens that trust government, yield all our rights, and comply with all government regulations. Total submission to the “system” will ultimately be required to engage in normal commercial activity – like getting on a plane or traveling from state to state, or obtaining a job or bank account. “No jab, no job” (2021).

They are plutocrats reaching out for supreme power. If you don’t give up your freedom, the terrorists will kill you. If you report “suspicious activity” of your neighbors, we can protect you. If you give up your guns, America will be a safer place.

Strategies are executed to put the citizen’s mind under the control of the State – to dumb down the populace and to create an altered state of consciousness

among the masses. It is during this hypnotic altered state of consciousness that complacency programming is placed into the mind through a multitude of media stimuli to enslave their victims. The objective of these neuro-scientists is illogical thinking, impulsive behavior, and rote performance.

Term like “women’s rights,” “therapeutic abortion,” “homosexual rights,” “radical Muslims,” “Judeo Christian Ethic,” “Anti-Semitism,” “fair taxes,” “pay your fair share,” “Black Lives Matter,” and “White Privilege” are crafted terms designed to win the psych-war against Christians.

Thus, the spirit of Assyria lives on in modern times. By creating fear, States force people to give up rights and to join some government program—in this case, surrender to the King of Assyria without a fight.

Second, no matter what the government offers us, we must reject the offer and trust God.

The State media’s message is “trust in government.” The Biblical message is don’t trust in government. The middle verse in the middle of the Bible says “do not trust in princes” (Psalm 118:8, 9).

When someone comes to you and says, “We are from the government and here to help you,” Run!

“The nine most terrifying words in the English language are: I’m from the Government, and I’m here to help.”

Government is not the solution, it is the problem (Reagan).

Government is not a giver, it is a taker. To trust in government is to believe that government is some kind of god. A government that tries to be “all things to all men” is seeking absolute dominion over your soul. Like Hezekiah, we must tenaciously reject all contracts with government mediators and trust God alone. Hezekiah did, and he found the LORD to be his Savior and his Sovereign.

Headline news is designed to shock, deceive, and create a feeling of helplessness; to keep us preoccupied and bewildered by the erosion of liberty and constitutional rights; to create the illusion that only big government can save us.

Therefore, it is important to stop treating government like a god and depending on government to supply protection, security, wealth, or education.

In this case, God showed the people that Sennacherib was not Divine, omnipotent, or omniscient. The God in whom Hezekiah and the people trusted struck 185,000 Assyrians overnight, and turned Jerusalem into a Hallelujah Choir.

When Sennacharib arrived home in Assyria, he was assassinated by two of sons. So much for him being an all-powerful god.

18. Be Still and Know that I am God

Psalm 46:10

The stillness that leads to the knowledge of God

Psalm 46:10 Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the heathen, I will be exalted in the earth.

Many of us carry a secret pain in our own souls because we can't feel God; because we can't sense His presence; because He seems so aloof; because time with Him seems so unproductive and barren. "Where is God when I need Him?" is the groan within.

Notice our text. There is a connection between stillness and knowing God. Stillness is essential to a closer walk with our Creator. There is so much noise and commotion in this world, it is difficult to stop and commune with Him. He has spoken in history. We have His Word, but we can't seem to get off the treadmill of life to investigate Him.

The Character of the Psalm

Notice this psalm moves from the roar of a waterfall to the quiet trickle of a rolling brook; from earthquakes and political storms to a quiet sunset.

The psalmist speaks of trouble and turmoil in verse one.

He refers to natural disasters . . . killer hurricanes, devastating floods, trembling volcanic mountains, and shifting continents: "though the earth should change . . . mountains slip *(tumble, fall) into the sea."

Can you hear the blast of a volcano, the roaring landslides, and the thunder of collapsing mountains in this verse? Think of the news about how Mt. Etna was sliding into the sea (March 25, 2018)., and of the eruption of Mt. St. Helens in 1980.

Can you hear the plumbing leak, the knock in the engine, the flat tire, the grinding in the washer, the leak in the roof and all those things that annoy us?

Oh, the noise caused by drought, earthquakes, tornadoes, scorching heat, snow storms, spring freezes, blights and crop disease. The forces of nature can blast away peace and burn fig leaves leaving men naked and afraid.

The psalmist addresses political turmoil rising out the sea of politics.

Madmen drunk with power seeking the total subjugation of the total man to total government sit on thrones in legislatures, executive offices, and trial courts eager to prove their power over us. With a dagger to the throat, they prosecute the infractions of the people with vigorous, relentless force and power of the state.

Hell bent on controlling the world, these antichrists seek to silence God's sheep. Our politicians are psychopaths constantly demanding revision and more taxes. They preach change and the necessity of visiting the cults of chaos quartered in Sodom in order to improve society. It is sheer madness. The turmoil created impoverishes nations and strips men of peace leaving society naked and afraid.

Think of all the sounds that drown out the voice of God (Scripture) in our lives.

Sounds of stuff: We live in an industrialized society with international contracts and businesses of all sorts hawking their wares. We are buried in an avalanche of commercials on the radio and T.V. Greedy producers overwhelm us with hundreds of advertisements in every hour of programing trying to sell us things we don't want, we don't need, and we didn't ask for. Newspapers are sprinkled with "buy me now" ads. Click bate begs our touch. In a search for information on a single website, you can find your search hijacked by a dozen commercials. We are bombarded by commercialism, capitalism, and consumerism telling us we need more and more stuff. The noise surrounding things is constant, relentless, and unending. We can't even hear ourselves think.

Sounds of unconfessed sins: There are sins that are known and loved; sins unconfessed and unforsaken; sins screaming for attention begging to be let out of their cage.

There is the guilt that comes crashing in upon us after we sin: "I wish I hadn't;" "Oh, I shouldn't done that!" "Why am I so weak?" "I'm only human!" "I should know better, but . . ."

Oh, the roar of guilt that drowns out the voice of God. And, we do it again . . . and again! Guilt pounds its drums of condemnation. It's hard to be still because of the grinding sounds coming from our own factories of sin. We sin again.

There are more pricks and pains and cries from an offended conscience. This personal, noisy storm within drowns out a walk with God.

Sounds of confessed sins: There are sins we have forsaken; sins we have confessed; sins we have taken to the cross. They reappear like devils shouting their accusations. Their echoes return to us like shouts over a canyon cliff; sins we can't believe are forgiven; sins that we dredge up again and again and again; sins that disturb us and haunt us like ghosts at a séance.

Sounds of hate: Oh, the sounds of malice, of delight in doing evil; of getting even; cheerleading us to win and to crush our enemies with a crushing blow. How can I conquer, get back, and get even? We seethe with anger, wrath, and bitterness. The fury burns and spreads its toxic fumes of destruction. The roar of these fires keep us from hearing God, seeing God, and resting in God.

Sounds of controversy: Many of us are energized by a controversial spirit of heated debate. We use argument to build up our case and to win disputes. We stay awake at night sharpening our tools on the grindstone of revenge where all rhetoric fashions it sharp swords. The clashes of controversy create a clanking noise that drowns out the voice of God.

Sounds of people: Can you hear hammers pounding on your door? The telephone calls, letters, emails, texting make demands on our lives. We are surrounded by the whispers and sounds of wrinkled paper in meetings, staff lunches, and breakfast fellowships. People, people, people . . . dozens of conversations, contacts, controversies . . . and the aftermath--the noise in our soul over unresolved conflict! Expectations, demands, children, church activities, failures, stress—all upset the soul and drown out the voice of God.

Sounds of criticism: Think of the criticism and complaining of men about the weather, government, or the nonsense coming from a disgruntled politician! There is a constant noise of gossip, accusation, slandered, and misunderstanding that muffle the voice of God in our lives. It's like being in a football stadium with cheers and boos drowning out our own thoughts.

Sounds of the media: Think of how quiet it used to be seventy years ago. Today, there are relentless sounds on the radio and T.V. announcing to us all the troubles around the world. The Zionist media is telling what to know, how to think, and what our agenda should be for the day. They are telling us what we should be upset about, angry about, active about. Thousands of words . . . thousands of tones . . . thousands of images . . . thousands of babbling diddies . . . thousands of voices telling us what to believe and what our opinion should be. Be shocked, be angry, jump, write, call your congressmen. Hundreds of voices are telling us what's important . . . but there is not one voice in mainstream journalism telling us to be still and know God. Not one! The

message is the government's not perfect! Be agitated! Be angry! Be disturbed. Be upset. Be involved. Vote! Write! Call! Do! Shout! Scream! Make noise! Government is our hope! God? Where is God in all this clatter?

Sounds in the city: Think of sirens we hear. There are the sirens of police rushing to some accident; giving out tickets; arresting this person or that person; the sounds of fire engines, ambulances, and emergency vehicles blasting down city streets rushing to resolve some domestic crisis . . . to aide in some car crash . . . to arrest some criminal. There are the sounds of legislators enacting new policies to crack down people who failed to pay traffic tickets or fines and fees and taxes. Like a bouncing ball our little brains are shuffled back and forth like a ball on a tennis court always in motion and never still.

Sounds in government: Nightly news is like a junior high band warming up before the teacher walks in--screech, clang, and zang. The cacophony of claims, lies, and accusation split our ear drums. There are the day's police chase, the cops that shoot an unarmed citizen that never get charged for murder; congressmen whining that the government is broke and they must enact new taxes to take from the poor and give to the rich. While IRS agents never go to jail, there are regular reports on the government oppressing some poor sap taxpayer who couldn't come up with the funds to pay his inflated debt with fees, interest, and penalties. There are courtroom reports about criminals being acquitted and good citizens found guilty. Government corruption goes unpunished; politicians get away with fraud and lies and pay offs. Then there is the constant conflict in the Middle East where Moslem clerics are shouting death to Israel while pledging revenge on the great Satan, the United States. There are wars . . . rumors of war . . . international conflicts . . . cruel dictators . . . starving children in Africa . . . psychopathic legislators eager to chain citizens down with new codes and statutes . . . those dead in a terrorist bombing . . . an airliner down over the Pacific . . . the friction and stabbings and shootings are enough to make you go deaf.

All this friction grinds out the voice of God in our lives.

Notice our text: *"Be still . . . and know that I am God . . . "*

The word *"still"* means "to cease," "be quiet," "relax," "withdraw," and to "drop it." It is translated "cease from anger" in Psalm 37:8 and "forsake" in Psalm 138:8 and "let go" in Proverbs 4:13.

Do you see what the psalmist is asking us to do? We can't hear God when we are surrounded by the shouts of commercial hucksters and government propagandists. We can't hear God when our own sins are screaming for attention.

This was this lesson that the LORD had to teach His servant Elijah amid the pounding drums of Jezebel's threats.

1 Kings 19:12 And after the earthquake a fire; but the LORD was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice.

God was not in the storm, the wind, the rain, and the thunder of it all, but in the silence.. "Be still" is more than a rushed prayer in between commercials. It takes decision, deliberate action, days and weeks and even months of pursuing silence so we can hear God.

By hearing God, we do not mean an "inner voice" or some dynamic self-authenticating personal experience.

We are referring to the reading and studying of the Bible in such a way that it can impact and effect our lives with truth—truth about Christ and His accomplishments and His will for our lives; insight that sheds light on our walk with him in this dark world; spiritual food that delights our soul causing us to sing His praises. There is a stillness that leads to the knowledge of God . . . Have we found it?

19. Fret Not Because of Evil Doers

Psalm 37

Are you burdened by the calamitous legislation of higher functioning psychopaths and sociopaths working at the seat of power in governmental institutions? Then this psalm is for you.

Because of the mass media, we are in touch with more political corruption than our little minds and hearts can manage. If your heart is righteous, you are probably angry at the injustice of our time.

Consider the following Spirit-inspired promises about the wicked -- those planners and schemers who introduce corruption into society in the name of freedom and fairness.

Addressed to the godly men, this psalm is about the temporal prosperity of the wicked and God's permanent protection of the righteous.

You can be at rest by considering the destiny of the wicked in your time.

God orders His people to cease fretting over the temporary success of the wicked (rasha).

1 (A Psalm of David.) Fret not thyself (tit'har) because of evildoers (ra'im), neither be thou envious against the workers of iniquity.

'Fret not thyself' is a reflexive verb which prohibits God's man from fueling his anger by stoking the fire with reports about what "evildoers" (pl.) *ra'im* are doing.

The word "fret" (*charah*) is translated by the word "hot" ten times, "angry" nine times, "fret" four times, and "burn" once in Scripture. The word "fret" is the same word used in Genesis 4:5: "And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell;" that is, he was angry enough to kill. Selah. The word "wroth" is our word "fret" in Psalm 37:1. "Fret" is a Hithpael verb (reflexive, future) which means the one fretting is causing himself to suffer emotional strain by burning with anger. The one who feeds the furnace of anger injures himself.

Some reports about the success of the *ra'im* are disturbing. Consequently, some men are tempted to "envy" (*qana*) and be jealous of their financial and social success.

The "evildoers" (*ra'im*) are the movers and shakers in society promoting transgression of God's law-order. . . . such as people in blue suits and red ties in the Municipal Corporation in the District of Columbia.

"workers of iniquity" (*asah-evel*) is contrasted with those who do good in verse 3. These are the people that sow tares in the wheat field with malice aforethought. The *rasha* are more than sinners. They are committed to evil as a means of advancement in society.

The opposite of fretting is trusting (3), delighting (4), committing (5), and resting (7).

The grounds of this "rest" are twofold: (1) God knows and protects the righteous; (2) God knows and punishes the wicked.

REASONS NOT TO FRET

God slashes the hope of the wicked.

2 For they shall soon be cut down like the grass, and wither as the green herb.

The psalmist addresses the *ra'im* as a group ("they") or in the plural. This metaphor pictures the wicked prospering, then perishing.

3 Trust in the LORD, and do good; SO shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed.

There two imperatives in this text: "*trust*" and "*do-good*." The word "*trust*" means to "*rest on*," "*lean on*," "*put your confidence in*" the LORD. It is the opposite of being your own counselor and going your own way.

4 Delight thyself also in the LORD; and he shall give thee the desires of thine heart.

"Delight" (*anag*) is a Hithpael imperative. Cause yourself to "*delight*" in the Lord. Develop a taste for His Word.

5 Commit thy way unto the LORD; trust also in him; and he shall bring it to pass.

"Commit" (*galal*) is another imperative meaning "*to roll down*;" that is, roll all your concerns on to the LORD. "Trust" (*batach*) is an imperative repeated a second time in these first few verses.

The Hebrew word "the way" (*der'ke'kah*) contains a *Kafh* (כ). Rabbinical mystics say the *Kafh* represents a palm as it look like a backward C or a cupped palm; that is, trust in the Lord and he will hold you in the palm of his hand.

6 And he shall bring forth thy righteousness as the light, and thy judgment as the noonday.

Expensive things like gold, silver, and rubies come from the dark caverns of the earth. Likewise, the righteous man is hidden, but the LORD has a way of bringing that righteousness into the light as a shining in the darkness.

7 Rest in the LORD, and wait patiently for him: fret not thyself because of him who prospereth in his way, because of the man who bringeth wicked devices to pass.

There are three imperatives in this verse.

The command "*rest*" (*damam*) means "to be silent, dumb, and be still" -- an action that calls for us to restrain impulses to be nervous and anxious . . . to talk . . . to complain . . . and to nervously do things. When we are anxious our tongues seem to be tied in the middle and flappin' at both ends. "Rest, soul, rest!" "Restrain yourself!"

The command "*wait*" (*chuwl* with an Hith-polel suffix) is verb requiring intense, vigorous action on one's self to fulfill the command "to wait." It means

"to dance," "writhe," or "twist." The opposite of waiting are acts of the flesh. That is "waiting patiently" requires all the energy a man can muster from within himself to "rest" and chain down his soul to the stake of contentment.

The command "fret not" (*charah*) is a repeat of the command in verse one. Saying it twice confirms the divine will to not fuel the furnace of anger with the deadwood of evil reports.

8 Cease from anger, and forsake wrath: fret not thyself in any wise to do evil.

The command "cease" (*raphah*) means "to relax, to sink down, and to deflate."

The imperative "forsake" (*azab*) means "to leave, abandon, or divorce" one's self from "wrath" (*chema*) or the heat and fever caused by anger.

So important are the commands in Psalm 37 the Spirit commands us NOT to "fret" a third time. Repeating a command three times is like adding three exclamation points to an English sentence! But, the Spirit *adds a warning* about "giving up," "resigning or giving into the evil trying to shackle us in its chains. No man is authorized to fight sin with sin.

God thwarts the expectations of the wicked and limits their influence.

9 For evildoers (*ra'im*) shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the LORD, they shall inherit the earth.

Now the author provides the grounds of rest: God will deal with *ra'im* in His time and His way. Selah! The "cut off" is terminal. It means "to cut" and "to kill." It refers to circumcision, cutting off the boughs of a tree, cutting a covenant in blood, and cutting off a man's head.

Before us is a big promise with a big condition. "Wait" is a tough command for ambitious men as it requires one to "trust and obey."

Those that wait upon the LORD are the righteous, the meek, and the humble. The term "*wait*" refers to one Source of hope and protection. Some trust government to deliver them; others trust the LORD.

10 For yet a little while, and the wicked (*rasha*) shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be.

We like the guarantee the wicked shall be cut off. It's the in a "little while" that tests the souls of the *tzadikkim*.

In the second stanza of the couplet we have the promise, "*thou shall diligently consider his place*," but this is a poor translation. The verb "*diligently see*" (*biyn*

with Hith-Polel prefixes) implies *an intense seeing* -- that believers *will see* (*perceive*) the ruination of the *rasha*. The Hebrew word "place" (*me'kow'mo*) refers to one's status, post in life, or abode. The wicked will fall, and the righteous will see it.

The text does not say "thou" shall see ALL the *ra'im* disappear or even see the downfall of particular *rasha*. But the text does declare the Christian man who has his eyes open will see the ceiling collapse on the *rasha*. How many careers of politicians and Hollywood perverts have we seen crumble like a house of cards or suffer a sudden death in our lifetime? The verb "diligently consider" requires acute observation on our part. We must look for it.

11 *But the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.*

This is another strong promise.

The "meek" (*anah'vim*) are the opposite of the *ra'im* (the wicked); that is, the "meek" are the poor, righteous souls who have placed their trust in the Lord and His promises; and, the *ra'im* are the antinomian Christ-rejecters. *Shalom* awaits the *anah'vim* and the horrors of judgment await the *ra'im*.

The earth belongs to those who submit to the dominion mandate, the *anah'vim*, and not the *ra'im*.

God ordains an end for the wicked.

12 *The wicked (rasha) plotteth against the just, and gnasheth upon him with his teeth.*

For literary, communication purposes the terms "wicked" (*rasha*) and the just (*tzaddik*) are in the singular but we can generally apply the principle propounded to apply to more than one *rasha*; that is, the schemes and legislation of the *ra'im* stem from secret motivations to crush the righteous. They are motivated by hate and they take out their animus on the *tzadikkim*.

13 *The Lord shall laugh at him: for he seeth that his day is coming.*

"*his day*" is the Day of Trouble . . . the Day of Judgment.

The language of "*laugh*" does not refer to God jumping up and down with joy, but an attitude of One who knows that all the plans of the *ra'im* are vain - as not worthy of serious thought . . . or worry . . . or care; that all plans to thwart the will of God will crash on the roadway of life. Each individual *rasha* will

have his "bad day!" This fact provides more reasons to rest and be at peace while the *ra'im* initiate their plots against the *tzadikkim*.

God destroys the wicked by using their own schemes against them.

14 *The wicked (rasha) have drawn out the sword, and have bent their bow, to cast down the poor and needy, and to slay such as be of upright conversation.*

The reports of wicked schemes are often true. They have drawn out their sword and have pointed their bows at the poor and needy with the intent of slaying the upright. The phrase "upright conversation" (*yasar derek*) refers to a "straight road" -- a metaphor describing the honorable ambitions of the *tzadikkim*.

15 *Their sword shall enter into their own heart, and their bows shall be broken.*

The psalmist switches back to the plural. Another strong promise that evil plans of the *ra'im* will boomerang back on them.

16 *A little that a righteous man hath is better than the riches of many wicked (rasha).*

This text addresses the insecurities of the *tzadikkim*. Great riches involve many cares. This text assures the reader the few assets that the righteous (*tzaddik*) possess is better status than the status of the *ra'im* with all their treasures.

God crushes the strength of the wicked.

17 *For the arms of the wicked (rasha) shall be broken: but the LORD upholdeth the righteous.*

Another powerful promise that God will break the power of the *ra'im* and sustain the *tzadikkim*.

"Arms" is a metaphor for strength and power. God will break the "arms" (power) of the *ra'im* but He is a sling for the *tzadikkim*.

18 *The LORD knoweth the days of the upright: and their inheritance shall be for ever.*

As the *ra'im* prosper and the *tzadikkim* anguish over their troubles, the godly man is tempted to think his trials are evidence the LORD has forgotten him.

However, this text assures us that God knows all the troubles, in all the days, of the *tzadikkim*.

19 *They shall not be ashamed in the evil time: and in the days of famine they shall be satisfied.*

Here is another powerful promise. Evil times come upon all men in every generation, but the *tzadikkim* have divine assurance of His provision and protection. For insight on the word "ashamed" (*buwsh*) see Genesis 2:25; Ezra 8:22; 9:6; and Psalm 25:2.

"*Jesus wept!*" And, the reason for His grief may have been because Mary and Martha were not taking sufficient comfort in His presence or His promises -- an exhortation to believe more and doubt less. Oh, how the Lord must be grieved by the pain caused by our skepticism.

God consumes the wicked and diminishes their power.

20 *But the wicked (rasha) shall perish, and the enemies of the LORD shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away.*

Two metaphors shore up the confidence of the *tzadikkim* -- "fat of lambs" for the righteous; and, like "smoke" blown away for the wicked. Fat is a picture of health; and, smoke is a symbol of temporary prosperity.

21 *The wicked (rasha) borroweth, and payeth not again: but the righteous sheweth mercy, and giveth.*

The Spirit provides a mark of the *ra'im* -- they do not pay their debts; and, a mark of the *tzadikkim* -- they show mercy and pay their debts. By debt, we mean a contract that involves an exchange of tangible assets -- and, not fake debt due to fake loans base on intangible money of account.

We learn from this text the wicked are takers, and the righteous are givers.

22 *For such as be blessed of him shall inherit the earth; and they that be cursed of him shall be cut off.*

The Spirit repeats the promise in verse 11 -- double assurance that His promise is true, correct, and not misleading.

23 *The steps of a good man are ordered by the LORD: and he delighteth in his way.*

The word "good" (*tov*) is not in the text, but it can be assumed that the man God delights is the *ish tov*, the *ish anav* (meek man of v. 11), and the *ish tzaddik* of verse 16.

24 Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the LORD upholdeth him with his hand.

The Spirit addresses a troubling concern of the *tzadikkim* -- many are often shadowed by their own particular spiritual failures on the road to the Celestial City. The righteous may stumble and fall, but the LORD enables the humiliated to rise and be restored. Solomon informs us the righteous fall seven times and arise, but the wicked fall down and stay down (Proverbs 24:16).

25 I have been young, and NOW am old; yet have I not seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread.

The psalmist now confirms the promises of God with his own experience. In his entire life, he cannot recall seeing a truly pious man destitute as if he had been forsaken by the Lord and constrained to beg at the back door of the *ra'im*.

26 He is ever merciful, and lendeth; and his seed is blessed.

The "He" in this text refers to the *ish tzaddik* who is characterized as merciful and generous -- a family man who not only cares for his children, but shows concerns for the plight of his neighbors.

Again, the *tzadikkim* are givers and not takers. Society is made better by holy men.

27 Depart from evil, and do good; and dwell for evermore.

The lesson is clear: since the above text shows the provision and protection of God upon the righteous, let us too depart from evil and to do good. Let us be generous, pay our debts, and shun covetous practices.

"*dwell for evermore*" is a general promise of not only life in heaven, but for a long life on earth.

God uses the wicked to exterminate the offspring of the wicked.

28 For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked (rasha) shall be cut off.

God loves to do what is right (*mishpat*) toward the *tzadikkim* and towards the *ra'im*. He preserves His saints (*ha'se'dim*) and punishes the seed of the *ra'im*. The word "*forsaketh*" (*azab*) means "to leave, abandon, or neglect." The "not" negates the verb. The *tzadikkim* may feel forsaken, but those feelings are a lie. The LORD forsaketh not His holy ones.

In contrast to the *tzadikkim* this text informs us that the seed (children, offspring) of the *rasha* "*shall be cut off.*"

Application: Stop fretting about abortion. God uses baby killers to fulfill his promise to exterminate the offspring of wicked people.

Psalm 21:10 Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men.

Proverbs 24:20 For there shall be no reward to the evil man; the candle of the wicked shall be put out.

29 The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever.

The promise that the meek shall inherit the earth is now extended to the righteous; that is, the "meek" (*anah'vim*) are the *tzadikkim*. The terms "poor" and "humble" are synonyms for the righteous (*tzaddik*).

30 The mouth of the righteous speaketh wisdom, and his tongue talketh of judgment.

The psalmist continues to identify the marks of the *tzadikkim*. Not only do they do good, they speak with wisdom. The word "speak" (*haga*) refers to a lion's roar or to the *ish* that moans and groans out thoughts on wisdom (*chokmah*) and justice (*mishpat*).

31 The law of his God is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide.

Another mark of the *ish tzaddik* is that the Law of the LORD God rules his heart. He thinks, speaks, moans, does, and talks about *mishpat* (justice) and *emet* (truth).

The Hebrew word "truth" (אמת) (Psalm 31:5) begins with the letter Aleph and ends with letter Tav, the first and last letter of the Hebrew alphabet; that is, truth is about the Lord Jesus Christ, the *Aleph* and *Tav*, the A and the Z, the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end.

God frustrates the plans of the wicked to ravage the righteous.

32 *The wicked (rasha) watcheth the righteous, and seeketh to slay him.*

The distinguishing marks of the *ra'im* and the *tzadikkim* are clear. While the *tzadikkim* think about *mishpat* (justice and goodness); the *ra'im* cast an evil eye on the righteous man with the intent to ruin him. The *ra'im* look for the right time to cast aspersions at the righteous in order to crush their careers and families.

33 *The LORD will not leave him in his hand, nor condemn him when he is judged.*

The *ra'im* devise schemes to attack and destroy the *tzadikkim*, but the Lord restrains their power and provides a way of escape. There are seasons where the *tzaddik* comes under the evil influence of the *ra'im* but the LORD will preserve His own; that is, we are not to interpret troublesome times as God's abandonment of the *tzaddik*.

34 *Wait on the LORD, and keep his way, and he shall exalt thee to inherit the land: when the wicked (rasha) are cut off, thou shalt see it.*

Two more ordinances are issued to the *tzadikkim*: wait and keep. The imperative "wait" (*qavah*) is a Piel verb requiring intense vigor to trust God and to fulfill one's duty . . . even when troubled by the *ra'im*.

His way is the way of righteousness and love as defined in His law.

The *tzadikkim* have the promise that God will "exalt" them and pull them out of trouble to experience goodness in the land of the living whereas the *ra'im* are ruined in this life and the life to come.

Duty is ours and the righteous embrace it.

We have a promise: "thou shall see it;" that is, the observant man will see with his own eyes the fall of the wicked. What have you observed in the last month on how God is using the wicked to destroy the wicked? Wars, shootings, political reversals, abortion, and falls from power are evidence that God is fulfilling His promise to "cut off" the wicked in verse 28.

God impairs the prosperity of the wicked and tempers their influence

35 *I have seen the wicked (rasha) in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay tree.*

Now the author affirms the promises supra from his own experience. In his experience, he marveled at the prosperity of the *ra'im*.

36 Yet he passed away, and, lo, he *WAS* not: yea, I sought him, but he could not be found.

In time, the psalmist saw not only the rise of the ra'im to positions of power, but their complete fall from power.

37 Mark the perfect *man*, and behold the upright: for the end of *that man is* peace.

But, the ish tzaddik has a different set of circumstances than the individual rasha.

The author exhorts us to carefully observe the course of the righteous. The word "perfect" (tam) adds to the list of synonyms for a righteous man: meek, poor, humble, and now the word "complete." A righteous man has many troubles, but at the finish line there is peace.

Ellicott reads this text as "Mark the honest man, and behold the upright; For a posterity (shall be) to the man of peace." Benson interprets this text as the righteous man moving from trouble to triumph.

God counters the ambitions of the wicked and scourges their future.

38 But the transgressors shall be destroyed together: the end of the wicked (rasha) shall be cut off.

"Transgressors" (pasha) is another name for the wicked . It refers to lawbreakers and rebels against God's law-order. Just as the term "poor" (37:4), "meek" (37:22), "humble" (34:2) and "perfect" (37:37) are synonyms for the righteous man (37:16), the term *pash'im* (37:38) is a synonymy for the ra'im (37:1).

39 But the salvation of the righteous *is* of the LORD: *he is* their strength in the time of trouble.

Duty is ours and we must do it; but, the results belong to the LORD. Though a saint may experience deep troubles in this life, his future is everlasting peace. Two powers of God are at work: His power to save the tzadikkim; and, His power to effect the ruin of the ra'im.

The *tzadikkim* are secure. They know power is not their own, but solely due to the salvation of God working on their behalf.

40 And the LORD shall help them, and deliver them: he shall deliver them from the wicked (rasha), and save them, because they trust in him.

This psalm begins with a command to the meek not to be angry over the fleeting prosperity of the wicked and ends with a golden promise that God will deliver the *tzadikkim* from the snares of the *ra'im*. Because they trust God (*ha'saw*) and not themselves, the LORD will help them (*azar*), deliver them (*palat*), and save them (*yasha*).

The general thought in this psalm is that any prosperity the *ra'im* experience is temporary, and that the righteous are safe and secure in the palm of His hand (37:24); that the troubles of the meek are temporary and the troubles of the wicked are permanent.

Note: "*yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be, and, thou shalt see it.*"

Consider the untimely fall of the following: Elvis Presley, Playmate Marilyn Monroe, River Phoenix, Kurt Cobain, Gary Hart, O. J. Simpson, Anna Nicole Smith, Al Franken, Robin Williams, Amy Winehouse, Whitney Houston, Philip Seymour Hoffman, Harvey Weinstein, Jeffery Epstein, David Cameron, Jacinda Ardern,

20. Biblical Standards for Civil Rulers

Deuteronomy 17:12-20

Deuteronomy 17:12ff And all the people shall hear, and fear, and do no more presumptuously.

1 Samuel 23: 3 The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spake to me, He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God.

Truth is the Basis of a Jural Society

John 8:32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

Truth is the soil that produces the wheat of a civilized society. Fatuous leaders are the weeds grown from the soil of humanism. They are the result of God's judgment against the populace for treating government as a god (Is. 19:13).

We are tangled in political weeds because Americans have forsaken the Word of God and rejected His standards for civil magistrates. Consequently, this country is overrun with uncircumcised, pagan minds (Isaiah 52:1).

Opponents may say that we do not want an evangelical leader in our nation because he will make decisions based on his faith. What a red herring! Atheists make decisions based on their unfaith. Humanists make decision based on their faith in human nature. Every leader makes decisions based on his faith or the absence thereof. The question is what kind of faith do we want a leader to possess—the faith of a Napoleon or the faith of a George Washington?

Let us study closely the qualifications for civil rulers from God’s Book in **Deuteronomy 17:12-20**.

And all the people shall hear, and fear, and do no more presumptuously.

The verb presumptuously (*zuwd*) means to act without authority, to rebel, to boil up, to perform emotionally, and to act subjectively. When an individual or a ruler acts without proper written authority, he commits the *sin of presumption*. When a person oversteps his authority, he commits an ultra vires act. The Hebrew verb is a Hiphil verb (causative) intensifying the instruction; that is, “the people shall cause themselves to no longer act arbitrarily or presumptuously.”

Thus, a capricious man threatens the stability of a nation.

During the wilderness journey, Israelites followed their gut instincts and corrupted their ways. In order to have godly leaders, the people themselves must have no other standard than the Word of God for their civil rulers. Following “gut feelings” leads to political disaster!! Which is what we have in this country today!

The Irish Times published an article saying that presumption is a sin against hope because it takes God’s mercy for granted. Presumption is lazy because it shields us from asking too many questions. It allows men to create scapegoats while surrounded by our own ignorance. In court, public officials that lead by presumption presume the people they are killing are their enemy (Michael Commane, 10-11-2014).

1. The Civil Magistrate must be a Man

The LORD God does not permit women to lead men. Women in leadership of a nation is a sign of judgment upon a country.

“As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths” – Isaiah 3:12.

"I permit no woman to teach or to have authority over men" – 1 Timothy 2:12

2. The Civil Ruler Must Be a Believer

17:14 When thou art come unto the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee, and shalt possess it, and shalt dwell therein, and shalt say, I will set a king over me, like as all the nations that are about me;

17:15 Thou shalt in any wise set him king over thee, whom the LORD thy God shall choose: one from among thy brethren shalt thou set king over thee: thou mayest not set a stranger over thee, which is not thy brother.

God anticipated a day when Israel would set up a monarchy. God set down the standards for a leader of His people. The civil ruler must be a man that God chooses. He had to be a man of faith with faith in the Lord, a true Israelite, and a clansman.

Unbelievers were a threat to the welfare of the nation. A foreigner would lead them astray by adopting laws that tolerate sin, promote an alien law order, and produce a harvest of ungodliness²⁶ (Psalm 94:20).

Psalm 94:20 Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a law?

Secular Humanism is an ethical philosophy that emphasizes a worldview based upon naturalism: the belief that the physical world or nature is all that exists or is real. Are not secular humanists the ones who have removed the Ten Commandments from the classroom wall, protected pornography on the internet, and brought us radical sex education programs to our schools including talks by drag queens? Are not agenda-driven humanists bankrupt in moral principle doing whatever their propagandists have successfully orchestrated?

3. The Civil Magistrate Must Trust God

16 But he shall not multiply horses to himself, nor cause the people to return to Egypt, to the end that he should multiply horses: forasmuch as the LORD hath said unto you, Ye shall henceforth return no more that way.

Kings are responsible for the defense of the nation. The only purpose of government is to protect the rights of the people and to punish those that

²⁶ Aliens have no respect for God's Law, the land, or the historical foundations of the country. Barack Obama comes to mind.

violate human rights. A strong military force and the ability to act decisively would naturally be the first priority of a king.

However, the most powerful military in the world cannot stay the judgment of an offended God. According to God's Word, the king's first priority must not be the development of his military, but the development of his relationship to the living God. A new king's first duty was to write a copy of the Torah in his own hand under the supervision of a priest Building trust in God is more important than building trust in the army. This is not to say, however, that a strong faith denies the need for a strong military.

Psalm 118:9 It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in princes.

Proud of his military accomplishments, King David decided to number the people. In so doing, David acted presumptuously and offended the Lord. David learned that his powerful army could not prevent the lethal pestilence sent by an offended God to destroy the people (2 Samuel 24). He lost more people in the three day plague than he did in all his military campaigns combined!

The last ten years of David's life was not spent perfecting his army, but planning the construction of the temple. God, not the government, had to be center of the nation's attention. He learned the hard way that an offended God was more of a threat to national security than all the standing armies of the nations around him. He built the temple in the nation's capital that the nation might focus on their need to be reconciled to YHWH and not focused on the monarchy.

Likewise, all of America's long range bombers, stealth aircraft, navy carriers, surveillance craft, cruise missiles, GPS guiding systems, strike aircraft, refueling tankers, smart weapons, cluster bombs, attack helicopters, talented military personnel, and bunker bursting bombs cannot prevent a Hurricane Katrina, the devastation of an earthquake, or a pandemic ordered by an offended God.

As we have learned in Iraq, the best military in the world cannot change hearts filled with anger and murder (See Amos 3:3; Is. 45:7).

Which American presidents have concentrated on a trust-relationship with the Biblical God? You will be hard pressed to find any.

4. The Civil Magistrate Must Be a Moral Person

17 Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away: neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold.

This text addresses the abuses of power, “the conversion of might into right.” When humanistic political lawyer-leaders define “right” or “good” or “lawful” the nation is in decline. God, not man, has the right to define “good.”

The first abuse of power is sexual promiscuity. Many wives and many lovers are a distraction to civil service. These relationships steal part of the king’s heart and render him incompetent in judging moral issues and matters of State. It is difficult to condemn what one condones. Clinton said after his sexual escapades, “I just want to get back to the work of the American people.”

The second abuse of power is using one’s office for wealth creation at the expense of the people. A king motivated by lust for riches will not do what is best and fair for the people. He is going to use his political power to increase his own opportunities and wealth. “Pay to play” schemes are quite common in politics.

Have you ever heard of General “Spoons” Butler (Benjamin F. Butler)? He also had the nickname “Beast Butler” because of his savage cruelty toward the people of New Orleans during the civil war period. Butler hanged William Mumford merely for lowering the Union flag that flew over the New Orleans branch of the United States Mint. He obtained the nickname, “Spoons,” because he stole the silverware from the southern homes he raided. To him, stealing private property was justified in war. Likewise, many politicians feel like theft is acceptable under color of law.

We are in trouble when unbelieving, humanistic politicians occupy positions of authority. Even those candidates, who profess to be Christian, are often shallow and uncommitted to Biblical values. What lies behind us and what lies before us is not as important as the principles and virtues that lies within us.

Consider the wisdom of Dietrich Bonhoeffer:

“What is worse than doing evil, is being evil” (Ethics, p.67).

To lie is wrong, but what is worse than the lie is the liar, for the liar contaminates everything he says, because everything he says is meant to further a cause that is false. The liar as liar has endorsed a world of falsehood and deception, and to focus only on the truth or falsity of his particular statements is to miss the danger of being caught up in his twisted world.

This is why, as Bonhoeffer says, that “it is worse for a liar to tell the truth than for a lover of truth to lie” (Ethics, p.67).”

5. The Magistrate Must Know God’s Law

18 And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites:

19 And it shall be with him, and he shall read therein all the days of his life . .

The first duty of a new king was to write a personal, accurate copy of the Torah under the supervision of a priest, and to read it every day of his life; that is, the king had to be a man of the Book, a man of Law, a man of ethical principles. He had to know his law-source and to reject alien law!

Deuteronomy 17:18 And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites:

Only by heeding God's Word could he avoid the great errors of kings. The Law would never cause him to wander, but it would cause him to wonder.

Strangely, Israel's kings appear to have had little interest in God's law. As heads of state, they had more important matters to deal with—or, so it seemed. Remember, Israel collapsed not because they disobeyed their leaders but because they obeyed the alien laws provided to them by their unfaithful kings (2 Kings 17:1-10 et seq.)

Any proper framework for Christian politics is shaped by a biblical worldview. A biblical worldview takes as its guiding light the biblical story of creation, the fall, and the history of redemption. The great themes of Scripture provide the window through which all political issues must be viewed. Thus, performing law is a king's business.

God is at work calling people to justice from the earliest chapters of Genesis throughout Revelation. God condemns those who do not cry for justice. Living under the reign of God's righteousness as expressed in kingdom theology as revealed in Christ is not only a future hope, but also a present requisite for every believer (Micah 6:8; Isaiah 59:1-3).

Not only must our rulers be Christian, our government is required to "seek first the kingdom of God" (Mt. 6:33). Christ is even now restoring men and their institutions. His present risen life at the right hand of the Father touches all of human life. His rule grows every day like a small, hearty mustard seed through the work of Christ's faithful disciples.

When Christians administer justice through governmental service or undertake other responsibilities in obedience to God, they share in the task of caring for and restoring God's redemptive order to politics. The purpose of government is to administrate justice toward criminals and to protect the innocent. It is an

error for believers to be content to turn over God's institution of government to be governed by pagans and Zionists—an apostasy of modern Christianity.

Consider the tragedy of America's tolerance of traitors: Jonathan Pollard, a Jew convicted of passing U.S. military secrets to Israel and China, stated his philosophy: Jews 'will always have dual loyalty' and would counsel young Jews to consider spying for Israel

6. The Civil Ruler Must Fear the Lord and Be Pious

19 And . . . he shall read therein all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of this law and these statutes, to do them:

What is going to keep a king from following his feelings or fears or anger or lust or pride? What is going to keep him from being deceived by "lying lips" from crafty advisors (Ps. 120:2)? What is going to keep him doing what is right when the pagan international community sanctions his policies or pressures him to join unbiblical wars?

Job 28:28 And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding.

Proverbs 1:7 The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction.

Fear is a part of leadership—fear of man, fear of consequences, fear of rejection, fear of being misunderstood, fear of criticism, fear of political fights, fear of war, fear of international disapproval seduce presidents and kings every day of their administration. "Fear is a tyrant and a despot, more terrible than the rack, more potent than the snake." "Fear makes the wolf bigger than he is."

What is going to keep a political leader on the straight and narrow path? Only the fear of the Lord! Only when a man fears God more than he fears man, will he make the righteous, moral, good-for-America decisions facing his tenure in office.

Proverbs 29:25 The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the LORD shall be safe.

God ordered Zerubbabel, the leader of the return, and Joshua, the high priest, to build the second temple (Ezra 1-4). In the middle of the difficult project, the nation's political enemies obtained an order from King Artaxerxes to terminate the construction: "The work on the house of God in Jerusalem came to a stand-still" in 530 B.C. (Ezra 4:34).

Because their fear of the king was greater than their fear of God, they ceased work on the temple. In obeying the king, Zerubbabel and Joshua disobeyed their God.

Ten years later in 520 B.C. Haggai the Prophet and Zechariah the Prophet began to preach. During that time, King Darius came to power in Persia. How would they overcome the fear of this civil ruler? If they obeyed their prophets and disobeyed the king's order, they could be in political trouble. They could be arrested, fined, fired, property confiscated, put in prison, or executed for treason. It is not easy to resist an executive order of a government. —but, it is sometimes necessary. Though God understood their stress, Haggai and Zechariah motivated them to disobey the executive order and to obey the call of God.

Notice how the temple work was revitalized:

“The people feared the Lord . . . they came and began to work on the house of the Lord [despite the command of the king]” (NIV Haggai 1:12, 14; addition mine).

Only when the fear of the Lord is greater than the fear of man, will civil rulers do what is right.

7. Civil Magistrates Must Be Humble Men

20 That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren . . .

Not only must a magistrate be a man, he must be a humble man.

Nothing intoxicates a politician like a sip of authority. There is no room for pride in civil magistrates. Be humble or stumble. Leadership is a public service one performs for the good of the public as a public servant.

Newt Gingrich, Speaker of the House (1995-1999) observed that when an ordinary American is elected to office he becomes a genius and expert on everything. Everyone seeks his opinion. When he retires, he goes back to being an ordinary citizen where no one seeks his opinion.

When a civil ruler is filled with self-esteem instead of esteem for Christ and His Holy Word, his pride will be his downfall (Proverbs 11:2). When a politician rides his high horse, he will hit the ground with a thud. Humility strengthens the spirit, sweetens the temper, quenches anger, subdues pride, and bridles the tongue.

It was said of Robert E. Lee that he “was never known to lash out in anger when reminded of the bitter defeat he suffered as Commander of the Confederate Army — this exchange portrays Lee’s humility and refusal to let even the most callous reminders provoke him.”

On one occasion an arrogant student rebutted General Lee saying, "But General, you failed!" Lee's simply responded, "I hope that you may be more successful than I" (*The Maxims of Robert E. Lee*, p. 23).

8. Civil Magistrates Must Possess Integrity

20 . . . and that he turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand, or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.

Being in a position of power is a sacred trust. Political leaders have a duty to obey God and His Law as well as the laws of a nation. God said of Joshua that he was a "servant of the Lord." (Josh 24:29). There is no greater complement that can be given a man than he is a servant of the Lord. Joshua was not the servant of men. He was not the servant of his lusts. He was not the servant of his greed. He did not take an opinion poll to determine political policy. His goal was not to get the will of man done in the nation, but to get the will of God done among the people he served. How can a man avoid being like a reed shaken in the wind? Only by being a man of integrity that fulfills his sacred trust.

Again, we must look at General Lee.

He was the only West Point graduate never to suffer a demerit.

Walter Taylor wrote of him, the general "seemed to address himself to the accomplishment of every task that devolved upon him in a conscientious and deliberate way, as if he himself was directly accountable to some higher power for the manner in which he performed his duty."

To Lee the Christian gentleman "was not about self-fulfillment, but about subordinating oneself to help others . . .'

His supreme fear was that one of his students at his college might not become a Christian.

When General Lee suffered his bitter defeat at Gettysburg and was forced to retreat, a wounded Union soldier lying under a tree shouted, "Hurrah for the Union." Lee dismounted his horse, went over to the terror-stricken soldier who thought the General was going to kill him. "My son, your wounds are not that serious" Lee said, "I hope you will soon be well." Lee then proceeded to mount his horse and continued his retreat. The man never forgot about the grace and integrity of General Lee (Robert E. Lee, *Maxims*, p. 24).

Benjamin Hill described the integrity of General Lee:

“a foe without hate, a friend without treachery, a soldier without cruelty, and a victim without murmuring. He was a public officer without vices, a private citizen without wrong, a neighbor without reproach, a Christian without hypocrisy, and a man without guile. He was a Christian without hypocrisy, and a man without guile. He was Caesar without his ambition, Frederick without his tyranny, and Napoleon without his selfishness, and Washington without his reward. He was as obedient to authority as a servant and royal in authority as a king. He was as gentle as a woman in life, pure and modest as a virgin in thought, watchful as a Roman vestal, submissive to law as Socrates, and grand in battle as Achilles” (The Maxims of Robert E. Lee, p. XX).

9. Civil Magistrates Must Have a Biblical World View

For this reason, John Jay said, “Providence has given to our people the choice of their rulers, and it is the duty, as well as the privilege and interest of our Christian nation to select and prefer Christians for their rulers” (October 12, 1816)

The majority of problems we face in America are the result of electing ungodly humanistic leaders to office – politicians who have an agenda contrary to the kingdom of God. Because we lack a Biblical world view, we tolerate ungodly politicians to rule over us. Consequently, we are now subject to immoral sex education in the schools, gay “rights,” abortion on demand, and oppression at every level of society. What America needs is not more democrats or republicans in power, but men of deep integrity elected to office – men like General Robert E. Lee – if you can find them. We need knowledgeable, talented, God-fearing Christians in office. Washington D.C. needs a powerful intestinal cleanse. Only when we have Christ-honoring leaders in the D.C. will it cease to be the District of Criminals.

The story of the Bible is the story of redemption. God is at work redeeming men, families, and nations to Himself. We pray, “thy kingdom come, thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.” The ultimate vision of the universe is a world under God’s rule and authority (Rev 5; Ps. 2, Is. 2:1-6; 9:6). His law is not only for individual men, but for families, the church, and all of man’s institutions.

The Bible teaches,

*Proverbs 29:2 When the righteous are in authority, the people rejoice:
but when the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn.*

When government officials are righteous men, the people are safe and secure. When pagans rule, people grieve because of their tyrannical actions. Ungodly

rulers covet power and oppress the people through heavy taxation and demoralizing legislation. When the wicked rule a righteous man goes into hiding (Prov. 28:12); that is, he must hide himself, his family, his assets, and his possessions from predatory magistrates.

The founders of this nation understood that if we are going to advance as a nation, we must be led by Christian men – men whose conscience is trained by the Law of God.

During the Revolutionary Period of American history, the movers and shakers of colonial history understood the importance of having only Christian men in office. Consider the following constitutional excerpts from the colonial States.

New Jersey, 1683

XVI. All persons living in the Province who confess and acknowledge the one Almighty and Eternal God, and holds themselves obliged in conscience to live peaceably and quietly in a civil society, shall in no way be molested or prejudged for their religious perswasions and exercise in matters of faith and worship; nor shall they be compelled to frequent and maintain any religious worship, place or ministry whatsoever: Yet it is also hereby provided, that no man shall be admitted a member of the great or common Council, or any other place of publick trust, who shall not profaith in Christ Jesus, and solemnly declare that he doth no ways hold himself obliged in conscience to endeavour alteration in the government, or seeks the turning out of any in it or their ruin or prejudice, either in person or eState, because they are in his opinion hereticks, or differ in their judgment from him: Nor by this article is it intended, that any under the notion of this liberty shall allow themselves to avow atheism, irreligiousness, or to practice cursing, swearing, drunkenness, prophaness, whoring, adultery, murdering or any kind of violence, or indulging themselves in stage plays, masks, revells or such like abuses; for restraining such and preserving of the people in deligence and in good order, the great Council is to make more particular laws, which are punctually to be put in execution.

Delaware 1701

AND that all Persons who also profess to believe in Jesus Christ, the Saviour of the World, shall be capable (notwithstanding their other Persuasions and Practices in Point of Conscience and Religion) to serve this Government in any Capacity, both

legislatively and executively, he or they solemnly promising, when lawfully required, Allegiance to the King as Sovereign, and Fidelity to the Proprietary and Governor, and taking the Attests as now established by the Law made at Newcastle, in the Year One Thousand and Seven Hundred, entitled, An Act directing the Attests of several Officers and Ministers, as now amended and confirmed this present Assembly.

Delaware 1776

ART. 22. Every person who shall be chosen a member of either house, or appointed to any office or place of trust, before taking his seat, or entering upon the execution of his office, shall take the following oath, or affirmation, if conscientiously scrupulous of taking an oath, to wit:

" I, A B. will bear true allegiance to the Delaware State, submit to its constitution and laws, and do no act wittingly whereby the freedom thereof may be prejudiced."

And also make and subscribe the following declaration, to wit:

" I, A B. do profess faith in God the Father, and in Jesus Christ His only Son, and in the Holy Ghost, one God, blessed for evermore; and I do acknowledge the holy scriptures of the Old and New Testament to be given by divine inspiration."

Georgia 1777

ART. VI. The representatives shall be chosen out of the residents in each county, who shall have resided at least twelve months in this State, and three months in the county where they shall be elected; except the freeholders of the counties of Glynn and Camden, who are in a State of alarm, and who shall have the liberty of choosing one member each, as specified in the articles of this constitution, in any other county, until they have residents sufficient to qualify them for more; and they shall be of the Protestant religion, and of the age of twenty-one years, and shall be possessed in their own right of two hundred and fifty acres of land, or some property to the amount of two hundred and fifty pounds.

Maryland 1776

XXXIII. That, as it is the duty of every man to worship God in such manner as he thinks most acceptable to him; all persons, professing the Christian religion, are equally entitled to protection in their religious liberty; wherefore no person ought by any law to be molested in his person or State on account of his religious persuasion or profession, or for his religious practice; unless, under colour of religion, any man shall disturb the good order, peace or safety of the state, or shall infringe the laws of morality, or injure others, in their natural, civil, or religious rights;

North Carolina 1776

XXXII.(5) That no person, who shall deny the being of God or the truth of the Protestant religion, or the divine authority either of the Old or New Testaments, or who shall hold religious principles incompatible with the freedom and safety of the State, shall be capable of holding any office or place of trust or profit in the civil department within this State

Pennsylvania 1776

We, the representatives of the freemen of Pennsylvania, in general convention met, for the express purpose of framing such a government, confessing the goodness of the great Governor of the universe (who alone knows to what degree of earthly happiness mankind may attain, by perfecting the arts of government) in permitting the people of this State, by common consent, and without violence, deliberately to form for themselves such just rules as they shall think best, for governing their future society, and being fully convinced, that it is our indispensable duty to establish such original principles of government, as will best promote the general happiness of the people of this State, and their posterity, and provide for future improvements, without partiality for, or prejudice against any particular class, sect, or denomination of men whatever, do, by virtue of the authority vested in use by our constituents,

SECT. 45. Laws for the encouragement of virtue, and prevention of vice and immorality, shall be made and constantly kept in force, and provision shall be made for their due execution: And all religious societies or bodies of men heretofore united or incorporated for the advancement of religion or learning, or for other pious and charitable purposes, shall be encouraged and

protected in the enjoyment of the privileges, immunities and the states which they were accustomed to enjoy, or could of right have enjoyed, under the laws and former constitution of this State.

Vermont 1777

House of Representatives: And each member, before he takes his seat, shall make and subscribe the following declaration, viz.

” I ____ do believe in one God, the Creator and Governor of the Diverse, the rewarder of the good and punisher of the wicked. And I do acknowledge the scriptures of the old and new testament to be given by divine inspiration, and own and profess the protestant religion.”

Think of some of these statements. You could not be a representative unless you believed in the Christian religion and acknowledge the Old Testament and New Testament as the revelation of God.

Danger of Destruction

Because we no longer have Biblical thinking, America is in danger because its pagan rulers do not share our Biblical values. Many are mule-stubborn to overthrow Christianity and to establish secularism as the religion of the west. Let us not forget that it was secular atheist who killed and murdered more than 130 million people in the last century. Mao killed about 72 million. Stalin killed 40 million. Hitler killed 15 million. Add to this the other killings of totalitarian regimes and we have about 130 million deaths. And, this is not counting loss of life from the wars of the last century which would add another 40 million deaths.

When Samuel realized the kind of man that Saul had become in his disobedience to the divine charge to execute the Amalekites. He grieved and cried out all night to the Lord (1 Samuel 15). The word “grieve” can be translated angry. Samuel was “ticked” over Saul’s disobedience. Saul endangered the nation. Samuel was a man of faith and he is mentioned as a hero of the faith in Hebrews eleven. His anger was not childish or fleshly, but deeply rooted in the anger of God against ungodly rulers (See Hosea 5:10, 11; 7:2, Micah 3:3:1-4; 6:16).

Rather than being angry and irate at what is happening in this country because we have elected non-Christian men to office, we have become tolerant and cultured Christians. Because we lack Biblical thinking, we have made peace with secular government and are content to have atheistic men rule over us.

When professing Christian, Jimmy Carter, was interviewed by Playboy Magazine in the mid-seventies, he said he would not let his Christianity affect his presidential decisions. Unfortunately, this may be the only promise he kept while in office. In an interview with Jonathan Serrie, Fox News Correspondent said the following on a question about abortion:

When I took my oath of office as president, I swore to uphold the laws and Constitution of the United States as interpreted by the Supreme Court. So I enforced Roe versus Wade, and I did it without embarrassment or anguish.

What? “Enforce Roe versus Wade” without “embarrassment or anguish”! How could any true Christian permit the murder of a million innocent babies a year? Further, if Mr. Carter had read the Constitution he would have seen that it was established to “secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and OUR PROSTERITY” (Emphasis added.). He should have denounced Roe versus Wade as unbiblical, wretched, and unconstitutional.

The Biblical Christian seeks to adopt the mind of Christ (Philippians 2:5; I Peter 4:1; Romans 12:2). Because we do not have Biblical thinking when it comes to our world view as those Christians Statesmen during the formation of the Declaration of Independence, we have tolerated ungodly politicians to lead our country and to enact all kinds of legislation to expunge Christianity and its moral values from courtroom to the classroom.

We can only recover, when Christian pastors come to their senses and Christians demand true Christians be elected to political office.

21. America’s Politicians lead Us Astray

Isaiah 9:16

“For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed.”

A pre-requisite for political leadership is righteousness. Righteousness is the foundation of justice. “What is worse than doing evil, is being evil” – Dietrich Bonhoeffer.

To do good one must be righteous. To be righteous, one must believe in the Lord Jesus Christ.

It is grievous for good men to do evil, but it is even worse when evil men pretend to be good. And, no man is elected to office unless he is good or pretends to be good.

Politicians can lead, but a **secular** ruler pretending to be good can **only** lead people astray. It is his nature to do evil. Under the mantra “Yes, we can,” proud Americans are led to the slaughter: run-away spending, undisciplined budgets, regulation nation, amnesty, sodomy, porno plague, IRS bullying, taxation on everything, death panels, debt to foreign nations, racism, cultural division, gun confiscation, surveillance of average Americans, perpetual propaganda, undefended borders, media fraud, radical socialism and Marxism.

Calvin said about the leaders:

“He means that the rulers and magistrates, whose duty it was to restrain the people within the limits of decent behavior, allowed all to indulge freely in crimes and wickedness. On this account they ought justly to be reckoned seducers and corrupters, for corruption flows from them to the whole body of the people, as from the head to the members. Magistrates and pastors are appointed in order to restrain the waywardness of the people, to enjoin what is good and right, and especially to defend the honor of God. If they neglect these duties they ought to be reckoned impostors and not rulers, for they give rise to miserable confusion. Now, when everyone does what he pleases, and the reins of government are nowhere to be found, can there be anything but the most terrible result? When the common people are thus punished on account of their faults, no lighter vengeance awaits the rulers, because they have neglected the duty entrusted to them, and have occasioned so many evils.”

The governed are destroyed by Utopian politicians are “the cause of the destruction.” “No plague is more destructive than when they are bad men, and rule according to their own caprice . . . they who rule are the causes of the evils, and they corrupt everything”

“By this clause he means that wicked princes, and those who rule according to their own caprice, are destructive; and in like manner teachers who rather deceive and impose on men than point out the way of salvation, because through their fault the people are ruined. But at the same time he shows that this affords no excuse to any one for seeking to make bad rulers a cloak for their own transgressions, as is commonly done, for if the blind lead the blind, as Christ says, both will fall into the ditch. It is certain that none are ruined by wicked and treacherous leaders, but those who of their own accord wish to be led astray.” (John

Calvin's Commentaries on Isaiah 1-16).

The names and faces of civil magistrates change, but sin working through politicians remains at work in every generation. Modern rulers are reprobate and are leading the nation down to the abyss. They are enemies of God and His law. God is not in fellowship with wicked politicians who do mischief through legislation by legalizing sin (Psalm 94:20) and such deserve nothing but the animus of good Christian men.

And, the failure of the Founders of this Country to build a nation on Christian law is the fatal flaw of the United States.

John Adams: "As the Government of the United States of America is not, in any sense, founded on the Christian religion . . ."

Letters of Thomas Jefferson: "If, therefore, from the settlement of the Saxons, to the introduction of Christianity among them, that system of religion could not be a part of the common law, because they were not yet Christians; and if, having their laws from that period to the close of the common law, we are able to find among them no such act of adoption; we may safely affirm (though contradicted by all the judges and writers on earth) that Christianity neither is, nor ever was, a part of the common law.

('Whether Christianity is Part of the Common Law?', letter to Dr. Thomas Cooper, from Monticello, February 10, 1814]")

For this reason public schools banned the Bible and prayer in the classroom, but promote feminisms, Islam, atheism, evolution, abortion, open borders, pornography, homosexuality, drag queens, transvestites, and gender transformation in the curriculum.

Deep sins call for deep repentance. America will never rise out of the graveyard of nations unless it repents deeply of its idolatry – something that seems impossible in the present political climate.

Matthew 19:25 Jesus looked at them and said, "With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible."

22. Biblical Qualifications for Public Office

Exodus 18:21

Courts, Judges, and Government Officials

Exodus 18:21 Moreover thou shalt provide out of all the people able men (enosh - males), such as fear God, men of truth (enosh - males), hating covetousness; and place such over them, to be rulers (sars: masculine) of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens:

2 Chronicles 19:6 and said to the judges, "Consider what you do, for you judge not for man but for the LORD. He is with you in giving judgment. Now then, let the fear of the LORD be upon you. Be careful what you do, for there is no injustice with the LORD our God, or partiality or taking bribes."

In a social order, the judge / officer is one of the most important positions. It was the first institution in Israel's law order. Much of the Torah was written for Judges and public officials (John 10:31-16).

Five Qualifications for Public Office

1. The First Biblical qualification for public office is the candidate must be a man (a male).

Notice the phrase "able men" in the text. Just as men were to lead their families, men were to lead the nation. No, God is not against women! They have their own roles and duties before God. But, leading the nation is not one of them! While this is not politically correct in our pajama boy, cuddle bunny, feminist culture, it is the Biblical standard. And, the Word of God, I remind you, is perfect (Psalm 19:7) "that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works" (2 Timothy 3:16-17).

2. The Second qualification for office is competence.

The candidate had to be a competent male; that is, he had to be a reasonable, successful man in the community. Competence as a family man, in business, law, and general decision making was to be studied and approved.

3. The Third qualification for office is faith; that is, the man must be governed by the fear of God.

The candidate had to fear God; that is, He had to be a man of conscience, with good character, and who exhibited evidence of obedience to the law of the Lord God.

The prestige of a judge / official is not the critical issue, **but his faith and character**. If all judges were men who feared God, then numerous people could be qualified to serve. As it is, degenerate men rise to power under the electoral process loving money and power with no fear of God. Relativism and pragmatism prevails. See Jethro and the rule of tens (Exodus 18).

If a judge represents a class or political party, perversion of justice is introduced into the life of a nation. He represents a faction, another value system, another religion that competes with the truth.

4. The Fourth qualification for office was that he had to be a man of truth.

The candidate had to be an honest man; a reliable man; a man in pursuit of truth and not lies and deceitful schemes designed to defraud men. All wisdom begins with the premise “Let God be true, and every man a liar” (Romans 3:4). Political leaders are famous for their propaganda and spinning the news. A Biblical candidate for office had to love the truth and hate lies. King David could say,

Psalm 119:163 I hate and abhor falsehood, but I love your law.

A candidate who tells Americans the truth instead of manipulating the public through “spin-doctoring” would do much to restore people’s confidence in government. Truth about taxation, the IMF, and the corporate character of the State might be a good place to start.

5. The Fifth qualification for office was that the candidate had to hate bribes.

Payoffs, blackmail, gifts, gratuities, compensation, and kickbacks are synonyms for a bribe. It was crime for an official to receive a kickback, but it was not a crime to offer the official a bribe – even a man will offer a dog a steak to get a free pass. *The crime is that of a judge or politician accepting a bribe in some kind of “pay-to-play” program.*

Imagine having politicians that didn’t love money and who were not seeking personal gain while in Congress; who worked for the people and not the government corporation; who seek the welfare of the people and not private profit. We wouldn’t recognize Washington D.C.! All the corruption and pay offs and electoral process might shut down. Wouldn’t this be refreshing?

Steven Wayne Pattison has posted. Most all wars were started by the banklords.

*Joe Sobran: Why does corruption in government always surprise us?
Why do we expect anything else from it? Government is organized force.
It takes our wealth and makes war. And we think honest men would do
that work?*

As it is, money buys votes and loyalties. But, if Americans insisted on Biblical qualifications for a candidate, they would be served well, and the shadow government would die a natural death.

But, since Americans have abandoned Christianity and have so little esteem for the Word of God, we get what we deserve: lying, cheating, fornicating politicians that practice deception, payoff fraud, debt, tyranny, and much more.

A solution, of course, is to repent of our lethargy and to return to the political language of our ancestors: The Puritans faith inherited by Founding Fathers.

23. The Civil Pentecost

Numbers 11:25

“And the Lord came down in a cloud, and spake unto him, and took of the spirit that was upon him, and gave it unto the seventy elders: and it came to pass, that, when the spirit rested upon them, they prophesied, and did not cease.”

There are **two Pentecost** in the Old Testament.

It might surprise you to know that the gift of the Holy Spirit is not only for the church but for officers working in the institution of government.

The First Pentecost

The first Pentecost is in **Numbers 11:16-30** wherein the Spirit of God fell upon the seventy newly-ordained civil rulers.

The Holy Spirit came upon the seventy elders as a sign from God that He approved of civil authority, that civil authority was dependent upon Him, and accountable to Him.

Not only does the church have a duty to surrender to Christ as Head of the Church, *civil rulers have a duty to acknowledge Christ as King and surrender to His authority.*

Being filled with the Spirit is not only a duty for churchmen, *but a duty for government men serving their nation.*

The Second Pentecost

The second Pentecost happened in the days of Samuel, when the Spirit came upon King Saul. The Holy Spirit came upon the first king as symbol of God’s approval of the monarchy, and as a statement that the monarchy needed the agency of God’s Spirit to conduct their service to the nation (1 Samuel 11).

The Spirit of God came upon Saul and enabled him to raise an army, and to strike the Ammonites with the edge of the sword; that is, the Spirit of God empowered him to hack, slice, cut, chop, slay, and disembowel God's adversaries – a bloody but necessary duty of man.

Notice that the purpose of government is not to save souls or multiply mercy, but to purge evil from society and to defend the people against lawless gangs who did not respect the lives and property rights of Israelite citizens. In this case, the Spirit empowered Saul to pick up the sword and to kill the Ammonite bandits. Is this the Spirit you want ruling your soul? Your government officials? It should be.

Further, notice that when God is at work in civil rulers, they are filled with vigor and righteous indignation over injustices, and that they are bold, organized, and unified in waging war against evil men.

Likewise, if you are angry over the injustice of our time, it is because you are a righteous person.

The sword of justice is not the answer to all things, but when it is the answer, it is the only answer! God requires us to love mercy and justice (Micah 6:8); that is, a vigorous and appropriate application of law toward lawbreakers.

Government is not the solution for all things, but it is the solution for some things. It is limited in its purposes, and when the State stays within its limited purpose, justice and freedom walk in tandem.

Biblical civil authority blesses the people by zealously purging evil from society . . .but, when rules stray from that purpose to control the people or be a god to the people, institutions of justice become a curse to society.

Acts 2 – The Third Pentecost

The third Pentecost happened to the Apostles and early church as a sign that God was establishing a new Israel, a kingdom of priests, and as a statement that the gospel ministry was dependent on God's power for its success (Acts 2).

In giving His Spirit to civil rulers, the LORD declared the necessity of having Spirit-filled men in public office. Spirit-controlled leaders was necessary because "rabble was among them" that had "greedy desires" (11:4).

The mission of the church cannot be advanced by carnal-minded Christians.

Likewise, God's law order cannot be promoted by pagan, humanistic, uncircumcised hearts. God's law order can only be advanced by godly, Spirit-controlled magistrates who have not surrendered these institutions to the enemy.

Pursuing evil men and bringing them to justice takes spiritual resources. It takes energy, knowledge of God's law, love of justice, reasonableness, and physical athleticism to advance justice among thieves, liars, cheats, rioters, and murderers.

The whole idea that the Holy Spirit is for ecclesiastical authority and not civil authority is the product of more than a little evil.

When the People replace God as lord and sovereign, then the civil Pentecost gives away to Babel and to the confusion of tongues (Rushdoony).

Does pluralism, multiculturalism, and bathroom politics ring a bell?

Not only should a Christian obey God's law, *but the state has a duty to obey God's law*. Not only should Christians be filled with the Spirit to conduct gospel ministry; *Christian civil servants need the Spirit to perform the duties of public office*.

God placed His stamp of approval upon civil authority, and his mark of ownership upon it by ordaining the seventy elders of Israel in the commonwealth, and giving them His Spirit (Numbers 11:16-17). Likewise, he placed His Spirit up Saul, the representative of the monarchy (I Samuel 10:1-7).

These two O.T. Pentecost teach us the necessity of having Spirit-filled officers; that is, God created civil authority, approved of its existence, and made it accountable to Him.

So important was this truth that early Christians leaders in the church insisted their kings and queens be (A) surrendered to God's law order, and (B) use their civil power, the sword, to protect the church, promote the gospel, and defend the state against enemies hostile to God's law-order.

See the Coronation of Queen Elizabeth.

Would to God that Americans would reflect on the First Pentecost and insist their rulers be Christian men filled with the Spirit . . . instead of proud flesh!

24. When God Hides Himself from a Nation

Hosea 5:6

"He (the LORD) has withdrawn from them"

The Nation's Terrifying Reality

There was a terrible period in Israel's history (the Northern Kingdom, a.k.a. Samaria or Ephraim) when God hid himself from the nation.

Our text says,

Hosea 5:6 "The Lord has withdrawn from them . . ." and (5"15) "I will go away and return to my place until they acknowledge their guilt and seek my face."

Is there anything more terrifying than the disappearance of God in one's life — when heaven is deaf to our cries and moans — when prayer taste like chalk — when the gentle touch of God has vanished — when one is gripped by that ghastly feeling that God has abandoned him?

This was not just a feeling that God had abandoned them, He truly did hide himself. He would not hear their prayers or accept their religious ceremonies and routines.

The Nation's Terrifying Leadership

Hosea 5:1 "Hear ye this, O priests; and hearken, ye house of Israel; and give ye ear, O house of the king; for judgment is toward you, because ye have been a snare on Mizpah, and a net spread upon Tabor

Notice the Qal imperative: "Hear." It means to stop talking and to start listening!!

The command is to the priests . . . and the house of Israel . . . and to the king.

God law is for every man, every Christian, and every government! It is not only good for me, it is good for all men and all of man's institutions.

The Lord is the King of the Nations. His law is for all men and all of man's institutions. All men, all families, all nations, all political leaders and rulers and senators and congressman have a duty to listen and surrender to His law-order.

A people that believes in a separation of church and state, or desires to be ruled by a secular government, or that censors Biblical admonitions from its national debates rebels against the LORD God!

These priests are **not** the priests of the Lord, but *the priests of Baal*.

The northern kings were not in the lineage of David. Israel's king was a secular, idolater that forsook the law of the Lord and brought in alien law — the laws of the Phoenicians to Israel. The rulers were part of the new world order and they wanted nothing to do with the laws of Jehovah. Samaria's rulers were pragmatic men, business men, engineers, and farmers that wanted what worked. And, this is the problem. *It was not the people, but the rulers of the nation*

led the people into idolatry, into alien law, into the doctrines of tolerance and open mindedness. Their laws were morally liberal, but militarily punitive and restrictive.

Thus, the whole House of Israel departed from the foundation upon which the nation was formed, the Ten Commandments.

The Nation's Terrifying Sins

Hosea 5:3-4 I know Ephraim, and Israel is not hid from me: for now, O Ephraim, thou committest whoredom, and Israel is defiled. They will not frame their doings to turn unto their God: for the spirit of whoredoms is in the midst of them, and they have not known the Lord.

Harlotry

God says, "Ephraim . . . has **played the harlot.**" Here harlotry, is not so much sexual as it is political and legal. Marrying themselves to the law of nations, they committed adultery against the LORD by creating treaties and franchises with neighboring countries.

The rulers of the northern tribes abandoned the Ten Commandments, particularly the First Commandment, "Thou shall have no gods before me," and agreeing in the contracts to include laws of the surrounding nations.

All the nations practiced a form of Baalism wherein the king or government was the highest authority in the nation; wherein the king was seen as a god, the ultimate power in the land; and thus, the devotion to the State was the highest duty of mankind; dying for the nation the greatest privilege. Treason was viewed not as rebellion against God's law order, but disobedience to the State.

What is a spirit of harlotry? It is an insatiable desire for everything but God himself. It is a desire for stuff; a desire for pleasure; a desire for experiences; a desire for power; a desire for privileges.

We can see this in our society. People want to talk about the weather, about food, about relatives, about football, about politics, about government, about flowers and floors and cars — everything but God himself. Our conversations reveal our spiritual poverty; i.e., our idolatry and our lust for the things of this world (James 4:2ff).

Enslaved to Sin

Hosea 5:4 "They will not frame (give, permit, consecrate, yield) their doings (deeds) to turn unto their God: for the spirit of whoredoms (spiritual adultery) is in the midst of them, and they have not known the Lord."

The “not” negates the verb “frame” (*nathon*) which mean to give, to consecrate, to dedicate, to permit, or willingly yield; i.e., the would not or could not turn away from their idolatry to the rule of law.

The text says their spiritual condition manifested itself in evil deeds so they could not return to the Lord their God (5:4); that is, their sins were chains and shackles that bound them to the ugly monster of national idolatry. Like a mouse, Israel went after the cheese and was snared in a trap. The result was “defilement” with the nations.

Spiritual and moral compromise made the nation ugly — much like abortion and Sodomy has defiled America.

Harlotry is an act that seeks privileges and benefits which manifested it’s self in alliances with foreign nations (see v. 13). Contracts produce duties — duties that required tolerance of a nation’s most perverse acts.

Hosea 5:13 “When Ephraim saw his sickness, and Judah saw his wound, then went Ephraim to the Assyrian, and sent to king Jareb (seeking an alliance: an act of idolatry): yet could he not heal you, nor cure you of your wound.”

A choice presented itself: *the law of God* or *the law of idols*! The rulers made a decision and adopted the law of nations. Thus, the Ten Commandments was abandoned in favor of pagan practices. Thus, having gone down the road of liberalism, progressivism, and internationalism, Israel was trapped by contract and could not extricate itself from the snare.

Hosea 5:4 “They will not frame (give) their doings (deeds) to turn unto their God: for the spirit of whoredoms (spiritual adultery) is in the midst of them, and they have not known the Lord.”

The reason the nation could not return to the Lord was more than binding international contracts, but a spiritual disease that infected the whole nation; i.e., their problems were spiritual and not financial, political, or educational.

Gods are the source of law, and when Israel abandoned the LORD God, it changed its laws; that is, if you want to understand a nation’s god, look no further than its source of law.

To abandon God’s law is to abandon God. Thus, the nation did not “know the Lord” (5:4).

Notice the solution by rulers in 5:13- “Ephraim went to Assyria.” When in trouble, the rulers sought an alliance (franchise) with a foreign, pagan, imperialistic State in hopes the Assyrian alliance would secure their liberties. But, the Scripture informs us:

“It is better to trust in the Lord than to trust in man” (Psalm 118:8).

The lesson here is clear: seeking benefits through franchises with the State flows from the Poisonous Tree and is a false hope.

Pride

Hosea 5:5 "The pride of Israel testifies against him."

God brings a witness into the court to testify against Israel's abandonment of the Lord—their pride. In pride, Israel followed its own desires and its own will. Israel was caught in aggrandizing itself. Their pride testified of to their self-absorption and their neglect of the Almighty.

Treachery

"They have dealt treacherously against the Lord and born illegitimate children (bastards)" (5:6).

Israel, of course, maintained religious routines and superficial devotion to God. But, the Lord still withdrew the blessing of his presence from them.

The word "treacherously" refers to "unfaithfulness" or "transgression" against the commandments of the Lord. Using the term "treachery" is exceedingly appropriate because treachery refers to the worst kind of unfaithfulness. It is an abandonment of a devoted friend for personal gain; a befriending of a man only to reject him in a time of need. Treachery claims vigorous devotion while apathy, indifference, and hatred dwell in the heart.

God was good to the nation, and in return, the nation abandoned Him. They returned evil for good; hatred for love; contempt for His devotion to them.

Treachery has tragic results

The result of treachery against the LORD and spiritual fornication with the international community was bastard children — a generation with no devotion to God or His law.

Sins Against Citizens

Hosea 5:10 "The princes of Judah have become like those that remove a boundary."

The rulers of the nation are being addressed. In verse ten the infection reaches Judah. A particular evil is mention — a transgression against the common man:

The Spirit addresses the sins of rulers, of bankers, of merchants. Seizure of private property of the poor by the powerful is a grievous sin, a form of theft called "fraud" — a violation of the 8th and 10th Commandment. It involved trickery and deceit in order to gain a commercial advantage — in this case, a real estate contract.

Isn't this what has happened in America? Since the bankruptcy of June 5th, 1933 and the transition from a gold backed currency to fiat currency . . . and the dubious exchange of "money of account" for "money of exchange" by Jewish bankers, there is no such thing as a "loan" that is void of fraud

Violating Borders

Hosea 5:10 "The princes of Judah were like them that remove the boundary (border, marker, territory): therefore I will pour out my wrath upon them like water.

Removing a boundary is also a great transgression of the law because it defrauded people of private property.

Proverbs 22:28 Remove not the ancient landmark, which thy fathers have set.

Crossing boundaries without permission is a trespass of rights – a tort; but, moving boundaries is a form of fraud that violated the 10th Commandment.

Consider the theft taking place by illegal aliens storming our borders . . . defying our boundaries and our laws . . . slithering like rats across our borders to steal the nation's wealth.

Notice the anger of God: "On them I will pour out my wrath like water" (Ezekiel 7:8).

Water is cheap and it is easy to throw water on a crowd of people. Wrath is terrifying and who can afford to be in the floodplain when God's damn breaks forth on the transgressors.

Following Man's Commandment

Hosea 5:11 "Ephraim is crushed . . . because he was determined to follow man's commandment."

The evidence of idolatry in a nation is when it exchanges God's law for State law, or integrates man's law with God's law, a fatal violation of the First Commandment.

There is only one God, one lawgiver, and one law – God's law. If the First Commandment means anything, it means that Israel's first duty was to PROTECT ITS SOURCE OF LAW! (See Isaiah 33:22; James 4:12)

2 Kings 17:7-8 For so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, ⁸ And walked in the statutes of the heathen, whom

the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made

The ultimate reason Israel fell under the Assyrians was because they abandoned God's law and adopted the laws and statutes and codes and policies and political structures of the surrounding nations (2 Kings 17:5-12).

Israel was judged, not because they disobeyed their rulers, but because they obeyed and followed their secular rulers WHO LED THEM INTO IDOLATRY!!!

When Christians are sycophants of the government and place their hope in elected officials, they commit idolatry just like the Israel of old.

When we tolerate communism (Judaism) in government, Christians are the problem. When we do not resist bad government and bad laws, then we violate the First Commandment. We are called to be the salt of the earth, not super sugar-coated nice guys that comply with every perversion of Congress and State legislatures.

Shallow Esteem for the Lord

Hosea 5:12 "For they served idols, whereof the Lord had said unto them, Ye shall not do this thing."

The ultimate cause of all this debauchery, harlotry, and compromise is because Israel estimated God's worth as the price of a moth (5:12). Nothing that God has made is worthless, but the mosquito and moth come pretty close.

In regards to Messiah, the Scripture tells us "they esteemed Him not" (Isaiah 53:1-4).

When Christ was before Herod, the text tells us they *esteemed him as nothing* (Luke 23:11). To believers Christ is everything; to Herod and the Israelites, he was less than nothing.

Religion is either a dull habit or an acute fever. Those who are lukewarm nauseate Christ (Revelation 3:20).

The Judgment

Hosea 5:1-3 Hear ye this, O priests; and hearken, ye house of Israel; and give ye ear, O house of the king; for judgment is toward you, because ye have been a snare on Mizpah, and a net spread upon Tabor. And the revolvers are profound to make slaughter, though I have been a rebuker of them all. I know Ephraim, and Israel is not hid from me: for now, O Ephraim, thou committest whoredom, and Israel is defiled.

This passage is about judgment on the nation of Israel:

(5:1) The spirit announces chastisement.

(5:2) The main judgment in this chapter is the withdrawal of God; His abandonment to the tyranny of nations; His hiding of Himself so that even casual seekers cannot find Him

(5:6) dismantling of the nation through political upheaval; and, again, the departure of God (5:15).

Can anything be worse? Is there a greater judgment than this?

The Response Demanded

How should a nation respond when the dark clouds of judgment gather above?

Hosea 5:8 "Blow ye the cornet in Gibeah, and the trumpet in Ramah: cry aloud at Bethaven, after thee, O Benjamin."

Blow the ram's horn; man the trumpet; sound the alarm Hosea demands Shout on the rooftops; Everyman to his knees.

The kingdom of God comes violently and is taken by force. Make a violent decision! The judge is at the door! Burn your idols. Flee from Sodom. Forsake your sins. Get on your knees and plead for God to do an exorcism and cast out the spirit of harlotry!! Radical sins call for radical repentance. Deep sins call for deep cleansing.

The Great Hope

"I will go away and return to my place UNTIL . . . they acknowledge their guilt and seek my face. In their affliction, they will earnestly seek Me!" (Hosea 5:15).

The Spirit of God says there will be a day when Israelites would again seek His face . . . by face He means the warmth and light of His presence.

That day would only come after a period of affliction. Affliction is the tool God uses to detox his people. Pain causes men to let go of their idols. David said,

Psalm 119:67 Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept thy word.

Psalm 119:71 It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn thy statutes.

When all else fails, God's puts his errant people in the furnace of affliction. There is something about the fire and heat that cleanses and purifies the sinner. Affliction is hard, but pain can wean us away from the passions of the flesh to seek his face and obey His Word.

For this reason, David said, “It is good for that I have been afflicted” for it is in the oven that he learned to obey Him and Him only.

Application

A church application: “Hear this . . .”

The church is not about entertainment, but worship; i.e., coming to hear instruction from His Word. Truth be known, Christians listen more to the radio and T.V. than they do to the Holy Scriptures.

A personal application:

God gave us two ears and one mouth. He is more interested in our hearing and our study and our meditation of His Word than He is in our jibber jabber. We need to hear more and talk less.

There is nothing more terrifying to a believer than when God hides Himself. Nothing!

If you are in the furnace of affliction and you feel like God has abandoned you, take heart. God will never forsake you! Never! (Hebrews 13:4, 5).

God seeks a holy seed and therefore He purifies His people through fiery trials. His goal is a perfect heart—a devoted heart—a heart ready to obey all His commands. And, the furnace of affliction is where a person is forced to let go of idols and to seek His Maker.

A national application:

Know that civil rulers and government officers lead nations into idolatry.

Look at 1 Kings 11. King Jeroboam, in order to unite his nation, made two golden calves and placed them in Dan and Bethel. It was a king who planted idolatry in God’s Vineyard (Israel). It was government that led the nation into idolatry.

It is the United States government and its Congress and its Supreme Court justices that have created a secular, pagan, godless State; that has demanded a separation of church and state; that promote the myth that a secular state is preferred to a Christian one; that banished the Bible from the classroom; that adopted infanticide; that encourages mothers to kill their babies; that promotes multiculturalism; Islam; and, that protects porn, perverts, and queers.

If you are not resisting and protesting in some form, then you are complicit with our national idolatry. When a nation rejects Christ and adopts pagan law, resist, resist, resist. It is your Christian duty. God is not interested in dishing out nice, compliant honey-coated Captain Crunchy Cereals for passive Christians. He serves Iron-Man Wheaties to his disciples so they become the

salt of earth. Stop being so nice! Sound the alarm. Blow the trumpet. Engage the enemy. Tolerance of idolatry is not a virtue.

The answer to America's woes is not more government, more legislation, more police, or more programs because America's problems are not commercial but spiritual. Like Israel of old, Americans have forsaken the Holy Scriptures and plunged into international contracts with the nations. Spiritual problems are not fixed by more legislation and more man-made laws, but by rejecting idolatry and acknowledging the rule of Christ over the nations.

25. The Doctrine of Clean Hands

Deuteronomy 21:1-7

Break a Neck

Deuteronomy 21:1-7 "If in the land that the LORD your God is giving you to possess someone is found slain, lying in the open country, and it is not known who killed him . . . your judges shall . . . shall measure the distance to the surrounding cities . . . And the elders of that city shall bring the heifer down to a valley with running water, which is neither plowed nor sown, and shall break the heifer's neck there in the valley . . . And all the elders of that city nearest to the slain man shall wash their hands over the heifer whose neck was broken in the valley, and they shall testify, 'Our hands did not shed this blood, nor did our eyes see it shed.

The Doctrine of Clean Hands is an important principle in law—a principle that has been robbed of its power in American courts.

Our Times

We Americans are so bombarded with crime reports via radio and T.V. we are numb to atrocities committed. So much so, we hardly blink an eye when we hear of a murder. Instead of being shocked and stunned, we yawn and take another sip of coffee. Consequently, we are no longer sensitive to sin nor broken when we hear these reports.

Biblical Times

Under God's law, crime was a serious matter. So serious, communities had to break a neck to separate themselves from criminal acts or else they would participate in the guilt and punishment belonging to the criminal. Priests and

judges were called to the crime scene. They calculated the distance to the nearest village to determine the jurisdiction where the homicide occurred. An investigation ensued. If the criminal could not be identified, the elders on the city council had to exonerate themselves and separate themselves from the guilt incurred. They did this by breaking the neck of a heifer, washing their hands in its blood, and testifying under oath that they had clean hands and that they were not actively concealing a criminal.

The breaking of the neck of a heifer was not a sacrifice for sins. Rather, it was a symbolic statement that city officials were not involved in a **cover-up**, had separated themselves from the criminal act, and committed themselves to the ends of justice should the criminal be discovered; i.e., that they would follow through with the process of justice and break the neck of the murderer.

The Lesson

This law hammers an important lesson into our lives. It is a serious sin to pretend nothing has happened and to conceal a criminal. Failure to stop a crime in progress is called nonfeasance in law (failure to act). We are not talking about peccadilloes or minor disputes, but criminal acts. When it comes to crime, we are to have clean hands. If we fail to separate from criminal acts of another, we participate in the crime; that is, we unwittingly become co-conspirators in the criminal act. In order not to share in the guilt, we must “break a neck” to separate ourselves from criminal activities of other men. Failure to take drastic action means we approve of the crime.

26. Patriot Fights Bean Tax Collectors

2 Samuel 23:11-12

. . . And the Philistines were gathered together into a troop, where was a piece of ground full of lentiles: and the people fled from the Philistines. But Shammah stood in the midst of the ground, and defended it . . . and the LORD wrought a great victory (2 Samuel 23:11-12).

It was about 10:00 in the morning on a hot, cloudy day during harvest time when the External Revenue Agents arrived to collect the bean tax.

Local Israelite farmers in the valley of Beth Zur were cultivating beans under the free enterprise system when the External Revenue Agents appeared. Operating under the authority of the Bureau of External Revenue Service of

Philistine Affairs (ERS), the Agents arrived at the fields armed with lethal force to collect beans.

All of the local farmers were extremely intimidated by the badges, weapons, and authority of the Agents and decided to capitulate to the bean collectors. One can hardly blame them. They were a rather mean looking bunch looking more like pit bulls than people. Apparently, there was some argument about the word "*income*" from whatever source derived. The local farmers were reluctant to give up their beans and hated the bean collectors, but a local preacher assured them that they were to give "unto Caesar what was Caesars" and that every "soul should be subject to higher powers" (Matthew 22:21; Romans 12:1).

However, one patriot named Shammah showed up as the Agents were gathering beans. He was totally unintimidated by their legal jargon, show of force, and coercion tactics. He pointed out to the Agents that they were outside their jurisdiction and lacked any authority over a Citizen of Israel.

He argued that the Constitution only authorized two types of taxes, direct and indirect, and that the farmers were not engaged in any taxable activity. Shammah exposed the Agents as foreign powers and charged them with seeking to extort beans from sovereign Citizens in the free State of Israel. He pointed out that the Bean Collectors were forcing the farmers into involuntary servitude by illegally demanding their beans. He argued the farmers were engaged in an occupation of common right, had a moral duty to keep what they produced, and that they were not involved in a privilege with the Philistine Government.

Refusing to surrender his God-given rights, his property, or the property of his friends, Shammah rejected their request for fraud and overreaching. It was a nasty, legal, bloody affair. Heads, arms, and limbs were everywhere.

Everyone admires Shammah for his courage and convictions. But, to this day the farmers still do not understand their own Constitution or why they do not have to pay the bean tax to the External Revenue Agents.

I asked the farmers if they had ever read their Constitution. They all said, "No."

I asked if they understood the difference between direct and indirect taxes. They all said, "No."

I asked if they understood that they were endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty and the right to keep and own property. Eyes stared. They looked puzzled.

Finally, I inquired if they understood the command, "Thou shall not steal." They all assured me they did not steal. But, they seemed confused about their right to keep beans produced in their own field.

Most still do not understand that accumulation of beans is fundamental to freedom.

To this day, the farmers sign papers and volunteer to give their beans to the Philistine External Revenue Service. Some even accuse Shammah of breaking the law and fear that one day the External Revenue Agents will arrest him.

I asked Shammah about this and he muttered something to me about involuntary servitude in Egypt and then blurted out, "Israel can only remain the land of the free as long as she is the home of the brave."

27. Naked and Afraid

2 Chronicles 28:19

"For the LORD brought Judah low because of Ahaz king of Israel; for he made Judah naked, and transgressed sore against the LORD."

Before us is a nation that was naked and afraid.

The pursuit of God demands an assessment of the administration of King Ahaz (741-726 BC), one of the most wretched kings that came to power in Jerusalem.

Evaluating Biblical civil administrations sheds light and helps us to understand and evaluate current events.

The text states, King Ahaz "**made Judah naked.**"

The Difference Between Nakedness and Nudity

What is meant by the term "naked," and what does God want us to learn by this appraisal?

The former has to do with being unclothed, and the later has to do with shock, shame, and humiliation.

It is not sinful to be nude as all of us have periods during the day where being unclad is a necessity. But, nakedness has to do with unexpected, inappropriate public exposure that embarrasses and humiliates the person.

Nudity is a natural reality no one can avoid, but nakedness addresses moral degradation of the man.

There was a day when Adam and Eve were nude and not ashamed (Genesis 2:25).

Then there was the day after their rebellion against God made them **naked and afraid** (Genesis 3:7-10).

Being caught naked is embarrassing and humiliating for everyone.

Ham was condemned because he exposed the nakedness²⁷ of his father Noah (Genesis 9:22).

God forbid Israel to build steps up to the altar of God lest their nakedness be exposed (Exodus 20:26); that is, nakedness is associated with the display and exhibition of sin.

God ordered the nation to provide special clothing for Aaron and his priestly family to cover their nakedness; that is, clothing one's nakedness is a hyperbolic lesson that those who represent God or mediate man's concerns to God must be at their best, cover their nakedness, and be free of moral defilement. (Genesis 28:42).

Nakedness has to do with raw exposure, reproach, and ugliness. In Ezekiel, God compares His love for Israel to an abandoned, naked, unwashed, bloody new-born baby whom He adopted, bathed, clothed, and beautified (Ezekiel 16:7ff).

Shame is closely connected to nakedness. Shame is that painful feeling arising from the consciousness of something dishonorable, improper, ridiculous, sinful, wretched, ugly, despicable, raw, and contemptible.

Yes, there is a place for nudity in Christian art as nudity in art expresses humanity, purity, innocence, shame, or beauty. We must distinguish between nudity in art (a metaphor for some value) and porn which exists for shock, lust, and money.

It is a good thing when we are clothed, and it ugly and most disconcerting if we are caught bare-butt naked in public.

Stripping the Nation Naked (28:1-5, 19-25)

Having said this, let's look at the reign of King Ahaz.

²⁷ Possibly a homosexual act.

The statement “he made Judah naked” is supposed to shock and jolt us! An understanding of this text should disturb our minds, traumatize our spirit, and grieve our soul.

We are to understand that Ahaz’s policies shamed the nation, demoralized the people, and discredited Israel among the nations.

This is an account of how a civil ruler stripped the nation of righteousness permitting sin to demoralize and shame the people.

By way of illustration, ask yourself, “Who comes to America to look at the nation’s junkyards full of wrecked, rusted cars with broken windows, missing fenders, and flat tires”? No one! People want to see the Rocky Mountains, Glacier National Park, the Grand Canyon, Yellowstone, Yosemite, Carmel, Disneyland, the Statute of Liberty, the Empire State Building, and the other wonders of America.

Junkyards are so ugly, Ladybird Johnson persuaded Congress to pass a bill mandating junkyards be fenced and screened to hide the eye sores.

King Ahaz erected no fences around the nation’s spiritual junkyards. He turned his country into a moral, spiritual garbage lot full of ugliness and wrecked lives. He made the nation naked by doing the following:

We have here the disrobing and denuding a nation of truth and righteousness.

1. Ahaz “walked in the ways of the kings of Israel” by being proud, autonomous, and idolatrous.

Permissiveness, pluralism, and tolerance of foreign gods and alien laws marked his administration (2 Chronicles 28:2).

As the Samaritan kings followed the golden calves and constructed a man-made, false religion in the north, Ahab mimicked it in the south (see 1 Kings 12).

2. Ahaz blatantly and shamelessly “made molten images to the Baals” (28:2).

This practice is in direct violation of the Second Commandment, “You shall not make any graven images.”

Baal was a fertility god in the pantheon of deities with various avatars among the Canaanites; that is, Ahaz sought to increase his power by tapping into the sexual energies of man. Ahaz was man in search of power from the occult.

3. Ahaz “burnt incense in the valley of the son of Hinnom, . . .” (28:3).

“Burnt incense” is in the emphatic positions. Ahaz boldly engaged in ceremonies of devotion to Moloch, the god of Ammon, for whom Solomon had built a high place (1 Kings 11:5-8).

The term “Moloch” is a perversion of the Hebrew word for “king” (*meleck*) by using the vowels of shame; that is, Ahaz became a statist that believe his kingship mediator the blessings of the Creator to the people; that the State was a god . . . a mediator . . . a representative of deity. His policy evolved into a form of emperor worship instructing *the people to view the State as the highest authority in the land*.

4. He “burnt his children in the fire, after the abominations of the heathen whom the LORD had cast out before the children of Israel” (28:3).

Clarke says,

“Ahaz burnt his children in the fire; but the Word of the Lord snatched Hezekiah from among them; for it was manifest before the Lord that the three righteous men, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, were to proceed from him; who should deliver up their bodies that they might be cast into a burning fiery furnace, on account of the great and glorious Name, (יהוה) and from which they should escape.”

By returning to the practices of the Canaanites, Ahaz demoralized the nation causing the people to practice all the abominations of the Canaanites: child sacrifice, fornication, Sodomy, lesbianism, witchcraft, and the occult, and other perversions.

5. Ahaz “sacrificed also and burnt incense in the high places, and on the hills, and under every green tree” (28:4).

Ahaz was an absolute liberal with an such an open mind his brains were in danger of falling out. He had no absolutes. Not only was he tolerant and permissive, he promoted religious pluralism, idolatry, and multiculturalism. He opened Pandora’s box, and put a strait jacket on the worship of the true God. To him, all religions were equal. Not only did he develop a policy of tolerance, he became an advocate for every alternative religion (omnism) . . . except he could not tolerate the absoluteness of YHWH worship.

6. Ahaz “took away a portion out of the house of the LORD, and out of the house of the king, and of the princes, and gave it unto the king of Assyria: but he helped him not” (38:21).

Ahaz invaded the treasury of the temple in order to provide tribute to Assyria - a radical, extreme taxation program. To put it another way, Ahaz taxed the church to finance his foreign policy. His policy not only weakened true religion at the temple, but failed to achieve his international ambitions.

7. Ahaz “sacrificed unto the gods of Damascus, which smote him.

He said, “Because the gods of the kings of Syria help them, therefore will I sacrifice to them, that they may help me. But they were the ruin of him, and of all Israel” (28:23).

While at war with the Syrians, Ahaz petitioned their gods to assist him to defeat the Arameans. This is like feeding the mouth that bites you. Moreover, we know that Ahaz, in a visit to the King of Assyria in Damascus, ordered his engineers to replace the altar in the temple with an altar modeled after the Syrian complex – a model that exposed the nakedness of the priest ascending the altar in a skirt (2 Kings 16:10).

Here is a man with an open mind and a closed heart. He was the ultimate liberal open and inclusive of all religions and their idolatrous practices. He sought to appease all parties. He excluded none. He stood for nothing, accepted everything, and “lead from behind” – a failed foreign policy wherein his nation was the loser in every negotiation.

Ahaz would make a great *Congress person*.

8. Ahaz “gathered together the vessels of the house of God, and cut in pieces the vessels of the house of God, and shut up the doors of the house of the LORD, and he made him altars in every corner of Jerusalem” (28:24).

Ahaz collected all the vessels of the house of God together, and broke them in pieces. The only thing he excluded in his all-inclusive religion were symbols of “Christianity” and its absolute truth.

Not only did Ahaz promote idolatry and false religious systems with all their cultic laws and statutes, he dismantled true religion by vandalizing and wrecking temple structures and furniture. [Does this remind you of what the liberals are doing to confederate memorials in America?]

Moreover, he closed the doors of the temple to keep people from practicing their faith. He prevented people from worshiping the one, true LORD God. This man was not only hostile to God’s law-order and worship at the temple, he was totally anti-Christ, anti-Torah, antinomian, and anti-Christian.

Here is a man that believed in tolerance and religious freedom except for YAH worship at the temple complex. He preached *tolerance* toward all and practiced rash, abusive *intolerance* toward the worship of the true God.

In closing the doors of the temple, he hindered regeneration, renewal, revival, and reformation among the people.

9. Ahaz “in every city of Judah he made high places to burn incense unto other gods, and provoked to anger the LORD God of his fathers” (28:25).

Not only did Ahaz prevent true worship of the true God, he promoted false religion and false worship of false gods. Can you say “**multiculturalism**”?

Since gods are the source of law, Judah became religiously and legally pluralistic. Anarchy reigned. Apostasy prevailed. In the name of freedom and personal autonomy, the people became diverse and divided.

Summary: In all of his idolatrous policies, Ahaz **made Judah naked**, ugly, perverted, pluralistic, confused, and shamed; that is, he turned the nation into a diverse, moral, spiritual, dirty, filthy, multicultural cesspool—a hazardous spiritual waste dump.

A Nation Naked and Afraid (28:5-8, 16-20)

What did God think of all this? Shedding righteousness and embracing naked transgression called for the judgment of God.

Notice how Sovereign Lord judged Ahaz for his raw, shameful acts:

- The nation was attacked by Syria. Many of the people became captives and slaves of the Arameans (28:5).
- The nation was invaded by the northern kingdom, Israel, and vigorously defeated by them. Many lives were lost in this war (28:5).
- Judah was soundly defeated by Syria wherein 120,000 soldiers lost their lives (28:6).
- Manasseh, the king’s son was slain in the battle with Ephraim along with other officials (28:7)
- The nation was plundered, pillaged, and raped by Samaria. Had it not been for the mercy of God, suffering would have been unbearable (28:8).
- Even the Edomites and Philistines and Assyria raided the country successfully bringing further humiliation and defeat and slavery and poverty to Judah (28:16-20).

What a terrible thing it must be for a ruler to denude a nation and to plunge a county into idolatry, fornication, immorality, Sodomy, infanticide, gender-bender confusion, and all kinds of abominations. Moral nakedness shames a nation!

The whole nation trembled like scrub palms in a Florida hurricane over the fear of military invasions and the inability of Ahaz to protect the people from foreign invasions by neighbors. Because of regular reports regarding military

aggression in the north, east, west, and south, every heart shook with fear like tambourines in an Arab disco. Judah became a nation of knee knockers.

Is America is Naked and Afraid?

With wars in Iraq, Afghanistan, Syria, Ukraine; and, with hostilities brewing in China, North Korea, and in the homeland the United States has much to fear.

At one time, America was about how to properly apply morality, Christian values, nobility, and virtue. But, no more! We are living in a post Christian era. The robes of righteousness the LORD God planned for the nation through the Pilgrims has been stripped away and replaced with naked man.

How shameful it is for Congress to tolerate and promote nakedness in America: abortion, Sodomy, pornography, police brutality, lesbianism, feminism, strip clubs, orgy bars, denudes in Times Square, gambling, Islam, pluralism, secular humanism, and multiculturalism.

How shameful it is for Congress to tolerate the dismantling of the monuments, dishonoring the Ten Commandments, the cross, and confederate heroes.

Q: Has America the beautiful has now become America the ugly–naked and afraid?.

America is no longer the home of the brave, but the home of the slave.

America is no longer a nation of freedom fighters, but a masked nation of compliant sheeple to corporate policies.

We are no longer a Christian nation, noble and strong, but a nation of ugly transvestites, feminists, and Sodomites. Due to the policies of Congress and State legislatures, we have become the divided, racists, wrecked, immoral junkyard of the world.

28. Hemlock Justice

Amos 6:12

This Bible study investigates hemlock justice in the courts.

Amos 6:12 Shall horses run upon the rock? will one plow there with oxen? for ye have turned judgment into gall, and the fruit of righteousness into hemlock:

Hosea 10:4 They have spoken words, swearing falsely in making a covenant: thus judgment springeth up as hemlock in the furrows of the field.

Isaiah 5:22-23 Woe unto them that are mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink: Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!

A Look at Definitions

What is hemlock? Hemlock is a poisonous plant with an obnoxious, irritating smell that kills bacteria in the intestines, and if taken in high concentrations can kill an animal and human being. When taken in less than a lethal dose, hemlock causes delirium, vomiting, and vertigo. It has been called the “Devil’s Bread” and the “Devil’s Porridge” because it has been used as a toxin to poison enemies. In ancient Greece, governments used hemlock to poison condemned prisoners.

After Socrates was condemned to death for his criticism of the absolute, military State of Greece, he was given a potent infusion of hemlock plant. Plato described Socrates’ death in the *Phaedo*:²⁸

The man...laid his hands on him and after a while examined his feet and legs, then pinched his foot hard and asked if he felt it. He said “No”; then after that, his thighs; and passing upwards in this way he showed us that he was growing cold and rigid. And then again he touched him and said that when it reached his heart, he would be gone. The chill had now reached the region about the groin, and uncovering his face, which had been covered, he said – and these were his last words – “Crito, we owe a cock to Asclepius. Pay it and do not neglect it.” “That,” said Crito, “shall be done; but see if you have anything else to say.” To this question he made no reply, but after a little while he moved; the attendant uncovered him; his eyes were fixed. And Crito when he saw it, closed his mouth and eyes.²⁹

What is hemlock justice? Isaiah, Amos, and Hosea refer to hemlock justice. The Biblical authors are describing court decisions issued by corrupt judges that condemned the innocent and acquitted the guilty; that punished the righteous and rewarded the wicked; that stole from the poor and gave to the rich or vice versa.

Israel in its decline had the best courts money could buy.

²⁸ “Plato, *Euthyphro*, *Apology*, *Crito*, *Phaedo*.” Retrieved 2012-07-06.

²⁹ Plato, *Phaedo* 117e–118a. trans. Loeb Classical Library (1990 ed.). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. pp. 401–3.

Hemlock justice poisoned courts in such a way that men lost their confidence in the judicial system—a system executed in the city gates (5:10, 12, 15).

Judgments handed down from these corrupt judges sent upright people reeling; stunned innocent litigants; shocked the community, and made men angry and disgusted at the judicial process.

Sound familiar? I saw a bumper sticker today that read, “I love my country, but I don’t trust my government.”

A Look at Hemlock Justice in Amos 5 & 6

Amos’ entrance into the ministry is described in chapter seven.

Amos was a farmer and not a professional prophet. Growing up and working in southern Judah, God called him to minister to the corrupt and idolatrous government of Amaziah in the Northern Kingdom and the careless people he ruled. His reference to hemlock justice is part of Amos’ third sermon which begins in 5:1 and concludes in 6:14.

Amos addresses his message to “the house of Israel” (5:1; 5:4) a.k.a. “the house of Joseph” (5:6). Keep in mind that the twelve tribes were divided into the north and the south; Samaria and Jerusalem, the northern kingdom called *Israel* and the southern kingdom called *Judah*.

5:1-3 The sermon is called a dirge because of the grief it contained due to the fall and decline of Israel.

Called as a virgin devoted to the Lord God only, the tribes of Joseph deteriorated into a desperate whore offering her services to the highest bidder—called a “bribe” in 5:12.

5:4-7 Amos commanded the nation to seek the Lord three times (5:4, 5:6; 5:14).

He was not asking the nation to be more religious, but to wake up to the fact they had departed from the pure devotion to the Lord and His Law—word being seduced by idols at Bethel and Gilgal. Bethel was the cult center of the northern kingdom where Jeroboam placed a golden calf.

Jeroboam was a statist politician who introduced idolatry to Israel to (a) prevent the pilgrimages of his people to Jerusalem; and (b) to satisfy the nation’s spiritual inclinations; and, (c) to prevent money earned in the north to be spent in south from pilgrimages made to the temple; and (d) to unite the nation politically and religiously around his new government.

Gilgal, on the other hand was the location of the school of prophets—a southern seminary near Jericho—a school that was so liberalized and corrupted that its graduates no longer served the old laws of YHWH, but the law of the new world order—the laws of Bethel, the cult center of the nation.

When a nation changes its gods, it changes its laws. And, a change in law indicates a nation has changed its gods.

When Israel changed its gods, it changed the rules of justice from a judicial system designed to protect the innocent and to punish the guilty into a justice system that “called evil good and good evil” (Isaiah 5:20-23).

Amos did not just address the nation generally, but specifically; that is, he confronted the politicians in power. Amos ordered the rulers and judges who turned “justice into hemlock” (5:7) to give up their fictions and “to seek the Lord.”

This was no small demand. This order came from the Commander and Chief of the Nation—the LORD God. He wasn’t asking the judges to hold hands and sing, “Cum ba ya my Lord!” but to abandon their legal fictions which operated under color of law and color of authority and to return to the Law of the Lord. The nation had changed its religion and hemlock justice abounded.

Amos shares the remedy: “Seek the Lord.” Follow His law and His justice. Be fully devoted to Him. Protect your source of law. Eliminate commercial interest and bribery from the legal system at the city gates.

5:8-9 It appears these judges could no longer distinguish between the God of Israel and the gods of chaos.

Amos, therefore, reminds them of who the Lord is: He is the Creator that engineered the stars and the constellations; turns the earth on its axis; controls the weather and its processes: evaporation, evaporation, condensation, and rain.

Further, Amos reminds his listeners that the LORD uses weather and earthquakes with all its “natural” catastrophes to tumble man’s fortresses—a reminder that God can destroy their prosperity just by withholding rain upon the drought prone regions of Israel. Of all the seven wonders of the ancient world, only the pyramids remain . . . and the Colossus of Rhodes, the Temple of Dianna, and the rest crumbled to the ground after small earthquakes.

5:10-13 Amos describes hemlock justice in detail.

Hemlock justice is dished out by judges who have no stomach for correction and rebuke. These judges despised honest men who protested corruption at the town hall (gates); that is, those who opposed corruption in court must somehow be charged with crimes and turned into criminals (5:10).

Hemlock justice imposes heavy fines, fees, taxes, and tribute on the poor to enlarge the coffers of government officers so they can retire in large, comfortable homes (5:11).

Hemlock justice distresses the righteous and mistreats the poor (5:12).

Hemlock justice belongs to corrupt public officials who are on the lamb (5:12). The text says their sins are many (numerous) and great (deep and serious); that is, Amos is not talking about minor errors in judgment but treason to Israel's constitution and its Source of law (Exodus 20:1-4).

Hemlock justice is more than a judicial error. It is marked by institutional corruption and constructive fraud (5:13); i.e., the righteous had to shut their mouth and disappear underground to avoid the politics of personal destruction.

5:14-15 Amos challenges the judges a third time to seek the Lord and to take an oath in His name to uphold justice; but, this admonition is more practical, "Seek good."

Amos is not ordering the judges to define good in human terms, but to be committed to Biblical ethics as God defined it. Good is defined in God's law. Only God has the authority to define right and wrong. When man defines good, he comes up with abortion, same-sex marriages, and heavy taxation. Furthermore, Amos demanded the judges define evil in terms of God's law and hate bribes, injustice, oppression of the poor, rewards to the lawbreaker, and the nation's false, pseudo-religious system at Dan and Bethel.

5:16-27 In this section, we have judgment decreed:

It is a time of wailing and mourning because of the day of the Lord's judgment which will be darkness and not light; and, like a man being chased by a lion is met by a bear; like a snake bite. God searches for justice, not perfunctory exercises (5:23).

6:1-7 God addresses the nation's ruler and judges and pronounces a "Woe" on them because they are at ease.

Their opulence is identified: beds of ivory, couches, lamb chops, sirloin steak, harps, music, wine, perfumes and oils.

One vital, spiritual virtue was lacking. These rulers seemed incapable of identifying the nation's cultural decline and grieve over it. They were out of touch with the common man and his plight. They sought pleasure not pain; happiness, not grief; parties not dirges; happy people not sad people. Consequently, the nation was bound to exile.

6:8-14 Judgment was assured.

God declared an oath that the proud, arrogant, self-sufficient, self-guided, self-made, wealthy government rulers and their huge, sculptured citadels would be smashed and demolished by alien invaders. Why? Because of hemlock justice. Just assured as a horseman who drives his horse over boulders will break its

leg, judges who dish out hemlock justice and who boast in their police state will be invaded by foreign armies and broken.

Application

Hemlock justice comes to us in the misleading form of “social justice” – a handy, *code term its proponents can't define and its opponent don't dare oppose.*

“Social justice” is anything its protagonist wants it to mean: universal healthcare, child welfare, income equality, gay rights, right to housing, women's usurpation, etc.

Friederich Hayek, an economist and philosopher and Nobel Prize winner observed the term “social justice” was most employed by political opportunist and the intellectually lazy. Behind the code phrase was a philosophy: *freedom must be sacrificed in order to (re)distribute income*; free speech must be sacrificed to have more government control; that is “social justice” is about the government increasing its power to levy more taxes for the State's “good” causes.

This is a doctrine where “the Haves have too much and the Have Nots never have enough;” where the State must develop strong and coherent “compassionate (re)distribution of the fruits of economic growth;” where proponents do not demand “equal opportunity” but “equal pay” for unequal production; where “compassion” (social justice) is the State taking your money and giving it to someone else, and “greed” is when you want to keep it.

“Social justice” is a convenient term used to indict a free society; to develop another government program to address any perceived economic unfairness or inequality; that the right people (the liberals) can provide “social justice” by building a government program; that the State must and can provide a remedy for all perceived wrongs; that anyone who does not favor redistribution of wealth to remedy perceived wrongs in an enemy of mankind and must be coerced through force to accept government initiatives.

Beware of “*social justice*” because it is *hemlock justice*. It is the doctrine of the radical left, socialist, communist, Zionist, and social engineers (Source: Prager University; *What is social justice?*).

Beware of the doctrines of “*equality*” because it is *Judaism, Communism, Zionism, and Fascism* in disguise.

Are we not living in a nation that has changed its gods? A nation in the midst of a legal revolution where *good is evil and evil is good*; where marriage has been expanded to include same-sex unions; where the crime of murder has been reinvented as a “a woman's right”; where killing a child is reclassified as therapy; where national, constructive theft is permitted under the guise of

taxation, traffic fines, and licenses; where money has been delineated to include paper currency backed by the “faith and credit” of the United States, Inc.?

The solution is not in Washington D.C. or in paying down the debt or in a new president. *Washington D.C. is not the solution to America’s problems, it is the problem* (Reagan). It is not creating more BAR attorneys or passing more laws to control man. We have come to expect too much from government. The angel announced peace on earth and good will to men through the Lord Jesus Christ – not by through acts of the government.

There is only one solution and that is “Seek the Lord” and “Seek good” as God’s law defines it in the Scripture (Romans 13:8).

When psychopaths are in office, the faithful hide from the government (Proverbs 28:28), and talk one with another about how to please God during times of apostasy (Malachi 3: 16).

29. A Polluted Nation

Exodus 21:12-14

BLOOD GUILT

“In his 1978 Harvard commencement address, Solzhenitsyn listed a litany of woes facing the West: the loss of courage and will, the addiction to comfort, the abuse of freedom, the capitulation of intellectuals to fashionable ideas, the attitude of appeasement with evil.” (Charles W. Colson, “God and Government”)

We are living in an age under the influence of feminism oppression of manhood which results in a permissive society governed by feelings and compassion – so much so, that parades of women who love to kill babies show up to protest the legitimate execution of convicted murderers.

The corrective for a permissive society is for good Christian men (males) to subject themselves to the authority of God’s law-order and to quash the “La La Land” subjective nature of mankind.

God is holy and loves clean.

The doctrine of blood guiltiness requires mankind to identify and execute criminals guilty of capital crimes, and the failure to do so pollutes the land subjecting it to the judgment of Almighty God.

Exodus 21:12-14 ESV "Whoever strikes a man so that he dies shall be put to death. But if he did not lie in wait for him, but God let him fall into his hand, then I will appoint for you a place to which he may flee. But if a man willfully attacks another to kill him by cunning, you shall take him from my altar, that he may die."

Both the saving of life and the taking of life are a duty of man.

The King of the Nations published His law. Murder is a capital crime. Every man found guilty of pre-meditated murder shall be put to death after a fair jural process. Pity and compassion for a murderer exposes a human weakness that must be overcome (Deuteronomy 19:13) — a religious appeal notwithstanding.

Manslaughter is a different matter wherein the society is obligated to make a distinction between murder and an act of God. A society that makes little room for an act of God distorts justice to the harm of the innocent.

Take him from my altar, that he may die is God's refusal to mitigate justice: a jailhouse conversion may save the soul, but a claim to be "born again," even though true, is not sanctioned by God as an excuse to soften justice.

Justice delayed is justice denied.

Numbers 35:33 ESV "You shall not pollute the land in which you live, for blood pollutes the land, and no atonement can be made for the land for the blood that is shed in it, except by the blood of the one who shed it."

Notice the following facts expressed in this text:

First, you shall not pollute the land: Man has a duty to follow the rule of law as God defines it. God is sovereign. His law is absolute. Legislative enactments are statutes and not law. No man is obligated to obey a statute contrary to "the laws of nature and nature's God" (See the Declaration of Independence).

Scripture commands men not to defile the land (a jurisdiction) so that it is stained with blood and guilt. A land (jurisdiction) becomes polluted when society refuses to punish criminals appropriately (capital punishment) and in some cases too harshly (like cruel prison time).

Second, shed blood pollutes the land:

Homicide pollutes and defiles a community / nation. We hear much about air pollution, but this text informs us that a nation can be polluted with injustice by

a failure to identify murderers and to execute them. A polluted nation subjects itself to the judicature of the Judge of the Nation.

It is unlawful for the police to kill men in order to enforce a statute; that is, to shoot a man in order to prevent a low-level infraction of some legal code is murder. Police are not exempt from the common law. They are not above the law, but under the law. While there is an excuse for men not to know statutory law, there is no excuse for men not to know common law (The Ten Commandments).

Character and legal training is one way to moderate evil (self-government); conversion of the soul is another solution to overcome evil among men (the church); and, capital punishment is another way to purge evil from society (The State).

Third, there is no atonement except one: There is **only one remedy** for blood guilt and that is the death of the murderer. Killers must be killed. Failure to spill the blood of a capital criminal defiles a nation. There is no corrective for guilt or an island of safety from His judgment except through the judicial exercise of capital punishment.

Facts to Consider

Based on available state-level data, an estimated 908,000 U.S. abortions took place in 2015.

There are 1,793 abortion mills in the United States (Wikipedia).

According to the FBI there were an estimated 15,696 murders in 2015 and 17,250 murders in the U.S. in 2016.

According to CBS News there is a **murder a minute** in the United States; one person commits suicide about **every 40 seconds**; and, one person dies in armed conflict **every 100 seconds**.

According to the World Health Organization, WHO estimated that 1.6 million **people** met premature and violent deaths in 2000.

According to the Washington Post, cops shot and killed 986 people in 2015.

In 2015, twenty-eight people were executed. In 2016, there were 22 people executed for capital crimes.

These statistics ought to give Americans pause. The land is stained with blood. A nation polluted must spill the blood of the guilty or face the justice of Almighty God— thus, the reason for equitable government.

30. The Propaganda War

Psalm 31:18

“Let the lying lips be mute, which speak arrogantly against the righteous with pride and contempt” - Psalm 31:18.

“The Lord detests lying lips, but he delights in people who are trustworthy - Proverbs 12:22.

What is it like to live in America governed by the Zionist media in 2020-2021?

If you stand for your flag you have to apologize for being a nationalist.

You are not allowed to go to church, but you can burn them to the ground.

You can't open your own business without a license from the State, but you can demolish and loot businesses with impunity.

You should receive a vaccine card so you can go to work or fly on a plane, but if you demand an ID card to vote you are a right wing conspirator.

If you wear a badge, carry a 9mm Glock,, and are dressed in blue, you are racist pig. But, if you part of a mob destroying you city with brings and Molotov cocktails, you are considered a peaceful protester.

A woman can march braless on Main Street demanding rights for women, but if you walk along a country road be arrested for not wearing a face cloth.

If you promote boys and girls using the same restroom and showering together, you are a decent, broad-minded, balanced, impartial American; but, if you believe God only created two sexes, male and female, you are a narrow minded, intolerant, religious, homophobic sexist.

You are not allowed to peacefully protest at your capital, but you can express your artistic creativity by writing graffiti on marble government buildings.

You can't go to the city part and play soccer with your family, but you can go to the park and destroy it in the name of peace.

You are not allowed to protect Confederate monuments dedicated to Stonewall Jackson who tithed his military salary to his Black Sunday School Class or Robert E. Lee who freed all black slaves ten years before the Civil War, but you can pull them down their statues under the banner of protected free speech.

White people are not allowed to have an opinion on racial matters because that is racist, but if you do not have an opinion of racial issue, you are the reason people are depressed.

You can riot in the streets with BLM, but if you go to a Trump rally you are spreading Covid-19.

If you invite a Drag Queen to read to little children, you are woke; but, if you read a Bible verse to children, you are forcing your religion down their throats.

If you oppose an army of young men entering the country illegally at the southern border you are a selfish, closed-minded, bigot; but, if you approve of murderers and gang members entering this country you are a true, decent global citizen.

If you riot in the streets looting and pillaging without a mask you are a model freedom fighter, but if you walk down the street alone without a mask, you are a threat to world health . . . world peace . . . and the world economy.

If you support Planned Parenthood and their agenda to kill unwanted babies, you are a proud promoter a women's right to control their own body; but, if you refuse a mandatory, experimental jab containing aborted fetal tissue, you don't believe vaccines are God's will for humanity.

Welcome to America.

31. The Death Penalty

Genesis 9:5

Genesis 9:5 "And surely your blood of your lives will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it, and at the hand of man; at the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man."

Exodus 20:13 "You shall not murder"

ANARCHY AGAINST THE SIXTH COMMANDMENT

The Sixth Commandment makes it clear that **capital punishment** is part of the duty of mankind. It is NOT murder to execute a murderer. It is called "justice."

Both the protecting of life and the taking of a life are religious duties of men.

This means righteous men must not only avoid injury to life, but righteous men must have the moral courage to seek the death penalty for men guilty of homicide—essentially against men who take innocent life.

It is unrighteous to commit murder and it is equally unrighteous to protect a murderer either by harboring a fugitive or by legislating against the death penalty.

Modern man has turned the law upside down by using the color of law to protect murderers (baby butchers) and to punish those who seek to defend the innocent unborn. In America there is "liberty and justice for all . . . except the unborn."

Cultural Resistance to the Sixth Commandment

Men act according to their theology (faith) whether it be right or wrong. If a man's faith is humanistic, his law-order will be based on man's values, not God's law. Since men break the First Commandment, "Thou shall have no gods before me," men put their own ideas and values before God's Word.

Europe is known as a continent free of the death penalty, but Europe is also known for its apostasy from Christianity. Liberal humanists hostile to God's law-order value life above God's Word, and therefore, enact laws opposed to the death penalty.

To view death as the ultimate evil demonstrates a blindness to God's law-order. Both the protecting of life and the taking of a life are religious duties of men. Life is not to be idolized and placed before God (Deut. 32:39). Sin brought death into the world, and it is sin rather than death that man must learn to fear. God's deterrent to social anarchy and incorrigible men is capital punishment.

The essence of law is the worship and service of the living God. Devotion to Him means living life on His terms, not man's terms. Social health demands the application of the death penalty to murderous men. However, the church, society, and the State are increasing exposing their humanistic persuasions by assaulting God's law order and replacing it with man's cruel prison sentences.

If God does not exist, then man is his own god and law-maker. Amnesty International believes that "The death penalty is the ultimate denial of human rights. It is the premeditated and cold-blooded killing of a human being by the state in the name of justice. It violates the right to life...It is the ultimate cruel, inhuman and degrading punishment. There can never be any justification for torture or for cruel treatment."³⁰ Thus, capital punishment is the worse crime—a barbarous form of punishment.

Governor Bill Richardson of New Mexico joined the anarchy against God's law-order based on his faith in the impossibility of perfect justice. Lacking a

³⁰ *Pros and Cons of the Death Penalty*, retrieved 1.20.2010 from About.com.

Biblical perfective and the energy of a righteous man to enforce God's law-order, Governor Richardson justified his position stating: "The issue became more real to me because I knew the day would come when one of two things might happen: I would either have to take action on legislation to repeal the death penalty, or more daunting, I might have to sign someone's death warrant."³¹

Richardson's reason for scraping the death penalty was based on the argument of imperfect justice; that is, since imperfect justice is impossible, why even try:

"Faced with the reality that our system for imposing the death penalty **can never be perfect**, my conscience compels me to replace the death penalty with a solution that keeps society safe"

Richardson's argument is flawed. If imperfect justice is impossible, then perhaps we should scrap the entire justice system. Further, if perfection is the standard for executive action, then the Governor should resign because everything he does is imperfect. Let's not forget the Bible provided safe guards against injustice. Serious matters such as an indictment for a capital offense had to have two witnesses. Furthermore, we must not assume that imperfect justice equates to no justice at all. There is justice even in imperfect justice.

Richardson was also troubled by the fact that many inmates were "minorities." By that, I assume he meant Hispanic or black. First of all, Hispanics are not minorities in New Mexico. Secondly, I assume Richardson would feel better if he was able to execute more white people than blacks and Hispanics. Such reasoning is, of course, ridiculous. If a particular race is guilty of murder, then the only way to straighten out the community is to discharge justice and send a strong message that Hispanic gang rapes and murder will be met with fierce justice.

Richardson professes to believe in the death penalty but signed a bill opposite his confessed belief system. As with most liberals, we know what they believe by what they do, not what they say.

Such faith views those who favor the death penalty as the most vicious of all people. To the liberals, the death penalty is the unpardonable sin. Thus, the sovereignty of God has been replaced by the sovereignty of man. The struggle is

³¹ New Mexico Governor repeals death penalty in state, retrieved 1.20.2010 from CNN.com.

between God's absolute justice and His law-order and man's lawless self-assertion and autonomy.

The fact is that most criminals confess guilt (80%). Most indicted men are guilty and most plead guilty. Just because justice is in the hands of flawed men does not mean that justice cannot occur.

War, on the other hand, is nothing more than a vigorous application of the death penalty against a regime that is guilty of capital crimes. War is an executive order to kill killers.

Modes of Punishment

Required Modes of Punishment in the Torah

Capital Offenses	The death penalty
Offenses	Minor Whipping
Stealing	Restitution (100% to 400%)
Inability to pay restitution	Work off debt (Seven year max)
Manslaughter	Confinement in a City of Refuge

But, unlike capital punishment in modern society, Biblical capital punishment could not be discharged except on the basis of the testimony of two or more witnesses (Num. 35:30; Deut. 17:6; 19:15). And, even then the witnesses had the duty of participating in the duty of executing the criminal (Deuteronomy 13:6-10). Such a sobering requirement separates the chaff from the wheat.

In New England, the colonies enacted laws that a child who struck their parents were to be executed. There is no known case of capital punishment as the law kept the children in line.

Furthermore, according to Rushdoony, there is little injustice in the Biblical application of the death penalty as 80% of criminals plead guilty.

Modes of punishment in the Bible included: burning (Lev. 20:14; 21:9), stoning (Lev. 20:2, 27; 24:14; Deut. 21:21), hanging (Deut. 21:22-23), and the sword (Ex 32:27-28).

Prison is an unbiblical institution and a result of the advancement of modern day humanism. In 1771, prison was only used for those awaiting trial. Today, men are imprisoned upon for suspected misdemeanors and every offense known to man. Because prison is commercial, there is tremendous motivation to enlarge its use. The death penalty is rarely exercised. Thirty-seven people were executed in 2008 (*Facts About the Death Penalty*, online) during a year where there were over 16,000 murders in the United States (Crime Statistics, online). In the Biblical law-order, man either made restitution or died. To take a man's

work, freedom, and property and cram in a 6 x 10 cell is Draconian. The Bible is correct, *“the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel”* (Proverbs 12:10).

We hear much about God judging America in the Christian community, but how would we know if the Judge of the Universe released His wrath upon this nation?

One answer is by looking at what wrath looks like from God’s past judgments on nations. Let’s look at the effects of His judgment on Judah that occurred between 605-586 BC. Please turn to Lamentations chapter one.

You can tell when God’s hand is against a nation because it contains the following disorders:

A Nation with Many Serfs

The nation “has become a slave” (1:1^{ESV}).

God created man to be free . . . nations to be free. Responsibility leads to freedom. But, when a nation abandons its duty to God and abuses its freedom, God judges the nation with serfdom, slavery, tribute, taxes, bondage, servitude, and subjugation. In this case, Babylon subjected Israel to tribute, even complete servitude.

In regards to America, the debt of the United States is estimated at 19 trillion and counting—a honey coated statistic at best. Regular Americans work from January 1 thru April 24 as indentured servants just to pay a questionable income tax. The average American credit card debt per person is \$7,950. This does not count debt arising from car loans, housing loans, and student loans. We are a nation of indentured servants that have been conquered by our own government (fool.com; Taxfoundation.org).

A Nation with Many Enemies

“all her friends have dealt treacherously with her” (1:2).

Judah was so filled with bitter self-interest and repulsive foreign policies, she had no allies. Her former friends, conquered by Babylon, lacked the resources to help. In her destruction, none came to her rescue. Conquered by enemies, her land was seized by the Chaldeans and the survivors deported to internment camps along the Euphrates River.

Does America have true friends?

If you think the world loves fat Americans, you are greatly mistaken. Tolerated, yes! Loved, no! European market places are filled with negative comments about rude, pompous Americans. “Death to America” is a slogan found on the lips of the North Koreans, Iranians, and practically every Middle Eastern country. The nations of the world love the U.S. dollar, but not its citizens. It

only has “friends” because the United States has a big, strong military and spends lots of dollars around the world. Incredibly, even after Secretary of State John Kerry accepted all of Iran’s concessions in it nuclear treaty, the Ayatollah’s kept shouting “Death to America!” at their Anti-American hate rallies (July 2015).

A Nation Surrounded by Aliens

“She dwells among the nations” (1:3);

When Babylon conquered Israel, she deported the survivors and placed them in internment camps throughout the Babylonian empire. The Jews found themselves huddled together in small villages ringed in by foreigners and aliens.

Consider the tent cities around Paris, London, Stockholm, Hamburg, Detroit, Seattle, and Sacramento. The UN is forcing the relocation of millions of Muslims to Germany, France, Sweden, and America. Americans find their cities full of Syrians, Iranians, Iraqis, Hondurans, and Mexicans. Immigrants in the U.S. have quadrupled in the past few decades. The immigrant population of America is at a record 41.3 million. Arabic is the fastest growing language in the U.S. Kansas City Mayor Mark Holland boast that 62 languages are spoken in his district. Many of these people do not share Christian values. Spike Lee boasts that whites will be in the minority by 2043 in America. Go to a hospital emergency room or to the social security administration office, and you may be the only English speaking person in the room. Multi-racism, multiculturalism, and business polyglot is a sign of judgment, not blessing.

A Nation of Apostates

“The roads of Zion are moaning because no one comes to her sacred feasts. All her gates are desolate; Her priests are groaning; Her virgins are afflicted, and she herself is bitter” (1:4).

Religion was not only in decline in the final years of Jerusalem’s existence, she had become apostate. Temple practices were neglected; policies were modernized to reflect the progressive religious values; compromise and corruption saturated the priesthood; adoption of alien law and legal pluralism marked the final administrations (2 Kings 17).

Likewise in England, Germany, and America! In London, the churches are practically empty. Good churches have an average attendance of about 40 people. Only 9% of the people in London have concerns about church attendance. In America, many people still attend church, but few think Biblically.

Barnum reported that only 9% of Christians have a Biblical world view. In Charismatic circles, Christians can dance the Hokey Pokey in a leotard, but can't quote the Lord's Prayer. In Episcopal and Lutheran churches, apostate female pastors occupy the pulpit. UCC officers have accepted "gay members." Black churches increasingly embrace progressive Marxism, liberation theology, and the cults of power. The Presbyterian Church (USA) vowed to let its clergy perform gay weddings, and the Moravians voted to ordain gay clergy. And, this doesn't include all the weird, extreme doctrinal positions existing in the cults. The point is that a nation under judgment will see a departure from Christian faith and the adoption of secular progressivism.

A Nation Owned and Ruled by Her Enemies

"Her adversaries have become her masters" (1:5).

To Israel, this was Assyria and Babylon. To America, this involves Zionists, the Rothschilds, the Federal Reserve, and the United Nations. "Today, Jews control vast areas of wealth in America. Estimates range all the way up to 70%. Whatever the figure, it is huge and immensely out of proportion to their 2% of the population in American society (Rense.com). The city of Hamtramck near Detroit has the first majority Muslim city council. President Obama stacked the Supreme Court with liberals, the executive branch of government with Muslims, and immigrants from Islamic nations. Representative Michelle Backmann raised the following concerns:

"According to the [Investigative Project](#), "the six named people include: [Arif Alikhan](#), assistant secretary of Homeland Security for policy development; Mohammed Elbiary, a member of the Homeland Security Advisory Council; [Rashad Hussain](#), the U.S. special envoy to the Organization of the Islamic Conference; [Salam al-Marayati](#), co-founder of the Muslim Public Affairs Council (MPAC); Imam Mohamed Magid, president of the Islamic Society of North America (ISNA); and Eboo Patel, a member of President Obama's Advisory Council on Faith-Based Neighborhood Partnerships" (discoverthenetwork.org "Islamist Infiltration of the Obama Administration).

Moreover consider how China impacts American policy and how the Zionist not only control America, but England, France, and Germany. All of these are indicators that God's hand is pushing down on apostate Europe and America.

A Nation without Nobility or True Statesmen

"All her majesty has departed from the daughter of Zion . . ." (1:6).

Princes and the ruling class were deported to Babylon. Daniel and friends served the interest of Nebuchadnezzar in the Babylonian court. Lesser incompetent Jews were appointed to manage the affairs of State.

Consider America's dysfunctional politics. According to the Daily Caller, 79% percent of Americans think Congress is out of touch with the average citizen, and 52% think Congress is downright corrupt (CNS News).

The approval rating of congress is around 14-15% according to some polls. Senator Larry Craig (R-S.C.) was caught in a gay sex sting operation in a Minnesota bathroom.

Senator David Vitter (R.LA) was a client of prostitutes in Louisiana. Speaker of the House Newt Gingrich (R-GA) abandoned his first wife during an illness for a younger healthier woman and is no stranger to multiple adulterous affairs.

Hillary Clinton was charged with many criminal acts but was considered too big to prosecute.

How did Barney Frank (D-MA), a known Sodomite, get elected to the House of Representatives?

How did a pot-smoking, homosexual, drag King born a British citizen and reared in Islamic Indonesia ever get to be president of the United States?

The democrats are the party of immorality; and, the republicans are the party of hypocrisy. Lacking are moral statesmen.

A Nation of Uncleanness:

"Jerusalem sinned greatly, therefore she has become an unclean thing" (1:8).

The term "uncleanness" refers to contagious impact of immorality in the nation of Israel.

The Gallup poll reports that American values have shifted. Vulgar, violent trash flows out of Jewish controlled Hollyweird (Rense.com). 63% of Americans now accept Sodomite and Lesbian friends—a 23-point jump in 14 years. 61% of Americans are now comfortable with having children out of wedlock. 68% now see premarital sex as between men and women as morally acceptable.

Acceptance of divorce is around 71% says the Huffington Post (5/27/2015).

According to Random Facts, Americans lead the world in viewing porn.

Americans spend \$3,075.64 dollars per second on pornography. One in seven Americans is addicted to nicotine, alcohol, or other drugs (Casa Columbia Org). According to the government, twelve million families in America are headed by a single parent. In 2011, the government protected the butchering of 1.06 million innocent babies. Fornicating, adulterous women are the largest group of murders in the country. Further, Americans devour violent movies like "Blood

and Thunder," "Cannibal Holocaust" (1980), "RoboCop" (1987), and "Natural Born Killers" (1994). What is God supposed to do with a culture of violence, porn and drug addiction? He does not change. He is holy, and His hand of justice will come upon the unclean.

A Nation Plundered by Adversaries:

"She has seen the nations enter her sanctuary" (1:10).

The temple was the pride and joy of the Hebrew nation. It was so holy, only priests and Levites could serve in its structures. It was so holy, that only a God-appointed priest could enter its chambers; and that, once a year. But, in the days of judgment, Babylonian mobs entered the sanctuary and destroyed it.

All kinds of vermin perch in America's sacred institutions. America is being systematically plundered by the Federal Reserve Bankers. Atheists, secularists, humanists, antichrists, and Muslims roost in federal and state bureaucracies. The Bolshevik Jews who murdered the Czar and destroyed Russia in the 1900s, and who infiltrated Germany and destroyed that nation, are the same ones who control the media, the newspapers, and the shadow government of the United States.

Consider the Zionist Czars in the Obama Administration: Larry Summers (Director of the National Economic Council), Cass Sunstein (Office of Regulatory Affairs), Kenneth Feinberg (Pay Czar), Daniel Fried (Military Jails Czar), Steven Rattner (Director of the Auto Industry Task Force), Todd Stern (Climate Czar), and this doesn't include a list of his other appointments.

A Nation of Debtors:

"The people groan seeking bread; they have given their precious things for food" (1:11).

During the declining years, the Babylonians plundered the nation taking away its gold and silver. Businesses closed. Jobs were scarce. Unemployment set in. Hunger and starvation brought the people to their knees.

In 1910, America was the richest nation on earth. In 2015, America is the greatest debtor nation in the world (19 Trillion). America went bankrupt in 1933. Our silver and gold was plundered by the international bankers. The nation is in debt to Japan, China, and to Caribbean bankers. The U.S. dollar is backed by the "faith and credit" of the United States and not by gold and silver.

Has not the U.S. been plundered being the greatest debtor nation in the world? In 1970, a man could provide for his family and save 11 % of his income for the future. Today, it takes mom and dad and two teens to pay the family bills and nothing is saved. 93 million American are out of work. That is one-third of the

population. Inflation, deflation, unemployment, and debt are signs that the hand of God is heavy upon America.

Is it midnight in America? Is there any hope?

Yes, there is. Gray is not black, and sunset is not midnight.

“It is of the LORD’S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not . . . therefore, I have hope in Him” (3:21-24).

While God destroyed the infrastructure of the nation, He left them a remnant. Little did Jeremiah know that over the next fifty years the exiles would be purged of idolatry and become the most monotheistic people on earth; that Media-Persia would defeat Babylon in one day; that Cyrus the Great would issue an order for the Hebrews to return to their homeland, to rebuild their temple, and to construct a new nation; that centuries later this same God would send His Son Jesus “to save His people from their sins!” What grace! What mercy! What faithfulness!

The LORD God is the same, yesterday, today, and forever. He is merciful. He is faithful. He can make good come out of evil . . . even in American politics.

“Therefore, I have hope in Him” (Jeremiah 3:21-14).

32. Banned from the King’s Chapel

By State Actors working for the Secular State

Amos 7:13

But prophesy not again any more at Bethel: for it is the king’s chapel, and it is the king’s court (Amos 7:13).

The king’s Secretary of Religion created an executive order banning Biblical preaching in the King’s Chapel; that is, preaching of the Word of God was illegal in the government approved church. Most of us do not have to worry about not preaching near the State Capital because we are not effective at exposing the nation’s sins, but Amos was!

Furthermore, in America, the State has banned prophetic preaching against the government and its officers through 501-c-3 contracts with State “religious organizations.” But, it is worse than that! Pastors today appear to do

everything they can to please the State and to be in conformity to the will of the government. Amos didn't think this way!

Amos was called into the ministry during the reign of King Uzziah in Jerusalem and Jeroboam II in Samaria (circa 767-753 BC)

One hundred and sixty years early (931 BC), the northern tribes under the leadership of Jeroboam I seceded from Judah over the issue of taxation (1 Kings 12). But, Jeroboam I had a huge political challenge. Since the temple was in Jerusalem, Jeroboam faced a crisis on how to unite his newly formed government. When pious folks in the northern tribes made pilgrimages to Jerusalem, Jeroboam I felt threatened politically, religiously, and economically. Pilgrims spent money making journeys to Jerusalem . . . and wealth was flowing out of the north to the south.

Jeroboam's remedy was to establish two religious centers in the northern states, one at Dan in the north, the other at Bethel in the south. Further, he constructed two icons as a symbol of the strength known as the two golden calves, and placed them in the holy of holies in the King's chapels—not to be confused with temple on Mt. Zion. Jeroboam I also established a Department of Religion to develop a sacrificial system with priests and offerings similar to the Levitical system in Jerusalem. It worked!

Citizens of the northern tribes had a religion, icons, and a system of worship approved by the government. Pilgrimages to Jerusalem slowed down considerably, and the newly formed nation was solidified. Though united around pseudo religion, the northern tribes experienced solidarity.

But . . . this was idolatry . . . a false religion . . . a religion established by the State for the good of the government . . . and for the good of the people!

During the reign of Jeroboam II, the society became more affluent, but morals degenerated. Religion corrupted, crime increased!

In order to correct this slide into degeneracy, God called Amos to confront the religious corruption at the religious center in Bethel. When Amaziah, the corrupt Secretary of Religion, heard the report about the preaching of Amos at Bethel, the government felt threatened. Amaziah arrogantly ordered Amos to cease and desist preaching the Word of God and to vacate "the King's Chapel."

Amos 7:12-13 And Amaziah said to Amos, "O seer, go, flee away to the land of Judah, and eat bread there, and prophesy there, but prophesy not again any more at Bethel: for it is the king's chapel, and it is the king's court.

As Amos was being forcibly escorted off the premises, the Word of the LORD came to Amos:

Amos 7:17 Therefore thus saith the LORD; Thy wife shall be an harlot in the city, and thy sons and thy daughters shall fall by the sword, and thy land shall be divided by line; and thou shalt die in a polluted land: and Israel shall surely go into captivity forth of his land.

God had an answer for the proud, apostate secretary. Since Amaziah sought to unite people around a false religion, his family would experience the true and fierce judgment of Almighty God against the apostate system. The nation was going to be sacked, wealth plundered, his wife forced into prostitution, and his children would die in the siege.

Several lessons come to mind.

First, civil rulers will do anything to preserve their power in government including disobeying the Word of God.

Second, we learn that it is governments who initiate idolatry in a nation. Idolatrous ambition existed among the people, but it was King Jeroboam who institutionalized false religion in the nation. Once apostasy becomes State policy, it is impossible to correct.

Third, government competes with true religion for the affections and wealth of the people. Devotion to God and tithing are a threat to the economic well-being of any State. By establishing a State sponsored secular religion, the people could combine religious devotion with patriotism; that is, they could “feel” like they were pleasing God and the State at the same time.

Fourth, idolatrous governments must control preaching in government churches, in this case, the King’s Chapel. Preaching was allowed, but not preaching against the sins of the State. The Secretary of State banned the preaching of Amos, accused him of treason, treated him as a pariah, and ordered him to leave the country.

Fifth, what a terrible thing it must be for a nation to reject Christianity and set up its own State sponsored religion.

Application

President Johnson, a cabbalist Jew, in order to expand government power created a law that government approved churches must incorporate with the United States, Inc.

“Most churches in America have organized as ‘501c3 tax-exempt religious organizations.’ This is a fairly recent trend that has only been going on for about fifty years. Churches were only added to section 501c3 of the tax code in 1954. We can thank Senator Lyndon B. Johnson for that. Johnson was no ally of the church. As part of his political agenda, Johnson had it in mind to silence the church and

eliminate the significant influence the church had always had on shaping 'public policy.'

“Although Johnson proffered this as a ‘favor’ to churches, the favor also came with strings attached (more like shackles). One need not look far to see the devastating effects 501c3 acceptance has had to the church, and the consequent restrictions placed upon any 501c3 church. 501c3 churches are prohibited from addressing, in any tangible way, the vital issues of the day.
http://www.goodnewsaboutgod.com/studies/spiritual/the_organized_church/501c3.htm

Johnson’s order was in effect a ban on church involvement in the King’s Chapel.

“For a 501c3 church to openly speak out, or organize in opposition to, anything that the government declares ‘legal,’ even if it is immoral (e.g. abortion, homosexuality, same sex marriages, etc.), that church will jeopardize its tax exempt status. The 501c3 has had a ‘chilling effect’ upon the free speech rights of the church. LBJ was a shrewd and cunning politician who seemed to well-appreciate how easily many of the clergy would sell out.” Quoted by
http://www.goodnewsaboutgod.com/studies/spiritual/the_organized_church/501c3.htm

Amos didn’t sell out his position as a prophet nor did he surrender to the King’s order. He kept preaching the Word of God. He was not a servant of the State, but a servant of the LORD God of Israel. His goal was not to get the will of the State done in Israel, but to get the will of God done in the nation.

Within a few years the Tiglath-Pileser III (734-732) invaded the land, sacked Samaria, and made Israel a vassal to the Assyrians. In 722 BC, the Assyrians attacked in all their furry, spoiled the nation, and deported the survivors to Nineveh and neighboring cities as slaves.

Oh, that God would raise up preachers like Amos to challenge State Agents, including pastors, to repent of forcing a false, secular religion down the throats of Americans, and for surrendering churches to the authority of the United States government and its godless, brutal agency, the IRS.

Cruci Dum Spiro Fido

33. Enemy of the State

1 Kings 21:20

The Story of Elijah and King Ahab

And Ahab said to Elijah, Hast thou found me, O mine enemy? (1 Kings 21:20).

Before us is a true story that exposes evil within the State.

It is in the Bible **so Christian people can learn to recognize evil** – evil that roost in the apparatus of government . . . evil that is often camouflaged under color of law, color of process, color of authority, color of title, color of justice, the color of fairness, and the cover of neutrality.

When the state calls taxes “fees,” and theft “state interest,” murder “birth control,” Sodomy a “civil union,” and the right to earn a living and keep what a man has made “greed,” such rhetoric challenges perception of reality.

Let’s be clear: slander and murder and injustice is a crime even if the government sanctions it under state sponsored propaganda programs. We must simply stop thinking everything government legislates or permits is right and must be obeyed

Do you recognize evil when the government is the source of it? If you do, and you oppose it, you may be labeled an enemy of the state.

If you are a Christian and you are not on some government hate list, you are simply not living for Christ!

Luke 6:26 “Woe to you, when all people speak well of you, for so their fathers did to the false prophets

The Cast of Characters

His name was Ahab—the lusty, unprincipled, weak-willed weasel who coveted the vineyard of Naboth the Jezreelite. Arguably the most wicked of the nation’s rulers, his tolerant religious policies caused the nation to fall into a pit of religious vipers. Like our politicians, he coveted property belonging to the people and was willing to violate every decent principle to fulfill his lust.

Her name was Jezebel – the cunning seductress and high priestess of Baalism. This painted viper knew how to manipulate the power of the State to achieve her wicked ends. Like a cunning “attorney,” she knew how to “turn” property over to the State. She conceived the plot to slander, malign, accuse, and murder God’s innocent lamb.

His name was Naboth – a simple, pure child of God – a defenseless sheep in the paws of lions. Naboth rightly refused to sell his God-given inheritance to King Ahab.

His name was Elijah – the passionate, principled prophet of YAH responded to God’s call, and did the dirty, tasking work of confronting the wicked king for murdering Naboth and stealing his property. He became an enemy of the State . . . of the king . . . of the government.

Before us is the vulture state governed by corrupt statist who know how to use the power of government courts to viciously and violently seize the private property of the people in violation of the 10th Commandment,

“Thou shall not defraud thy neighbor of his house . . .”

The all-powerful god-state is not interested in a man’s wife. It is interested in his property!!

The Offer and the Rejection

Day after day, the vile king viewed the simple vineyard of Naboth next to his luxurious palace. The more he stared, the more he coveted the farmer’s grapevines. Approaching Naboth, he offered to purchase the man’s field. Naboth was shocked by the king’s request. Surely, he knew the land was passed down from generation to generation and that the Law of the Lord forbid him to alienate his land from his family.

With his offer rejected, King Ahab slovenly staggered back to his palace with his shoulders hunched and his head in his navel. Noticing her husband’s despondency, Jezebel queried the king about his lost appetite. He dribbled out something about not being able to purchase the peasant’s vineyard. Shocked, Jezebel blurted, “Do you now reign over Israel”? In the statist system in Phoenicia, refusal to comply with an order of the king was *lése majesté*, a crime against the State. For Naboth to assert his unalienable rights in the presence of the king was blasphemy according to this priestess of Baal.

The Evil Plot

Jezebel was not going to let some stupid real estate principle in the Torah prevent her husband from having what he wanted. “I will give you the vineyard of Naboth . . .,” Jezebel promised. Immediately, she sat down and scripted a letter to sycophant elders of Israel using the king’s seal. She knew which judges she could count on to pervert justice and administer the will of the state. Her wicked plan was simple: Proclaim a fast, indict Naboth, slander him before the mock tribunal, bias the people, manipulate the jury, bribe the judge, pronounce him guilty, execute him, and take legal title to the property.

Slander, contumelies, and false accusations are age-old political tactics that puts the accused on the defensive. Accusations almost always influence the outcome of a corrupt legal system. Put expert witnesses on the stand who are puppets of the State and the verdict is secure. State-sponsored witnesses and professional accusers (cops) have the appearance of propriety and the backing of the people. Who has knowledge and the courage to confront the power brokers in a government system? Who has the money to fight five government-paid Philadelphia lawyers?

The Execution of Naboth

Naboth did not know what hit him. The indictment, the false accusation, the slander, the quick verdict caused him to feel like he'd been kicked by a mule. Stunned, frightened, and bewildered, poor Naboth was shoved to the ground and stoned to death. Within minutes the bloody, nasty affair was over.

When the news arrived back at the palace, Jezebel with a snide smile on her face and joy bubbling from her ruby-red lips announced to Ahab, "Arise, take possession of the vineyard of Naboth, the Jezreelite, which he refused to give you for money . . ." In the wicked queen's mind, Naboth had committed high treason against the State. To resist the state is an act of domestic terrorism. The State must have what it wants even if the State has to lie, murder, and steal to get it. What's the big deal? When the State is sovereign, it can do as it pleases. The State is a god all men must learn to respect, correct? Human Rights? Well, they must yield to the will of the collective.

King Ahab snapped out of his despondency and immediately went to take possession of his new prize. He was so proud of his new acquisition. Imagine the slobber drooling down his beard as he inspected his ill-gained treasure!

But, Israel's omniscient King saw the willful, malicious, reckless sins of the State. The conduct of Ahab was *mala in se*, and he was without excuse. Summoning His servant, God ordered Elijah to drop what he was doing and to make a journey to Samaria to confront the wickedness of the king. The charge was murder, fraud, lies, and theft—a violation of the 6th, 8th, 9th, and 10th Commandment. Furthermore, the prophet was to announce God's judgment on the King. The court was in session, the evidence was in, the verdict was guilty, and Ahab was to be sentenced to death.

The Confrontation

God called a country preacher to confront a city politician. When Elijah arrived at the Naboth's vineyard, joy dissipated like the morning dew and a sickening feeling filled Ahab's soul. Immediately, he blurted out, "Have you found me, O my enemy"? It was the head of State that labeled God's prophet "my enemy." Ahab knew that the creed of YHWH was a threat to the State's power. He

understood that Elijah's religion was opposed to his statist principles. Good preachers are always enemies of statist. Maybe, this is why competent Christians are rarely requested to give an interview by the media, sit on juries, or asked advice by state officials.

Elijah had a message for Ahab and Jezebel, and it wasn't what they wanted to hear. On the very spot Naboth was unjustly condemned and murdered, they would rightfully die.

Lessons to Learn

First, there is a lesson on wickedness.

The Scripture says, "*there was no one like Ahab who sold himself to do evil in the sight of the Lord*" (21:25). Ahab was the most wicked of all the kings in Israel. Do we know what wickedness is? Our American problem is that we do not recognize evil even when it slaps us in the face. We are easily fooled by fancy titles, government sanctions, and bureaucrat lingo in high places. Murder is called "prochoice;" Sodomy is labeled a "human right" and a "civil union." Theft is called "taxation." After all, everyone has to pay their fair share, don't they?

Critical to the execution of every high crime is the careful application of propaganda. Fancy terms like "eminent domain" that grant municipalities the power to seize a "slum" for economic development. "Fees," taxes," and "liens" are terms used to soften the government's "theft" and "piracy" of poor people's homes. When the government does something, it has the stamp of legitimacy on it just because the State is behind it. How can the State be wrong?

Furthermore, when the State accuses somebody of a crime, human nature presumes the citizen must be guilty and the State must be right. When trying to prevent the government from taking your home or income or inheritance, the citizen is accused of "obstructing justice" — and, the public falls for the propaganda. How can the almighty State be wrong? Don't State officials have diplomatic immunity?

The story of Naboth is in the Bible so we might recognize wickedness when it's ugly head surfaces in our times.

The Devil does not come to us with a pitch fork in a red suit, he comes to us with a briefcase in a blue suit. Satan does his dirty work through corrupt cops, judges, and politicians who use the power of the State and its agencies like the IRS to steal people's homes, incomes, and peace of mind.

Consider the list of evils in this chapter: idolatry, covetousness, depression, sulking, arrogance, plotting evil, slander, false accusation, distortion of justice,

bearing false witness, lying, slander, acquiescence to evil, cowardice, murder, theft, and rejoicing in evil. *All these sins were committed by civil authorities!*

Slander is wickedness.

Is not the Devil called the “accuser of the brethren” (Rev. 12:10)? Slander is the most polished tool of the State. A false accusation can destroy a man, his reputation, and his occupation.

“There are . . . robberies that leave man or woman forever deprived of peace and joy, yet kept secret by the sufferer.”³²

Slander is effective because it can destroy a man’s credibility in the eyes of the public before he goes to trial. It biases the jury. It recruits votes. It is particularly effective when the accusation comes through a person in a position of power. When politicians cannot win on merit, they commit ad hominem attacks on their opponent’s character. When civil authorities want to bias the public against a righteous man fighting tyranny, they use terms like “treason” or “tax protestor” or “slum area” or “militia” or “terrorist” or “unstable man,” “libertarian,” or “Christian right” in their report to the media.

Kent Hovind, Dr. Dino, a creationist, was so effective at demolishing the outlandish claims of evolutionists, he became a threat to the scientific establishment . . . and their funding (2006). A threat to the evolutionary science community, Hovind had to be removed. So, the power brokers sent their 900 pound gorilla after him.

The DOJ charged him with 58 federal violations of tax law – All fake charges. “News reports revealed that Kent was facing 288 years in prison and his wife 225 years!” (cstnews.com) because he was a “danger to the community.” A great Christian man, a threat to the community? Hogwash! He was wrongly convicted and sentenced to ten years in prison. Like Naboth, the U.S. Mafia Kings seized his property. And, for what, paying volunteers in cash? Since when is paying people in cash a crime? It is legal tender.

The case was not about taxes, but getting Dino out of circulation. Several weeks before he was supposed to be released (February 2015), the DOJ issued false charges of “mail fraud” because they deemed his defense appeals, sent through U.S. mail, to be frivolous. What a bunch of nonsense. “The government wants him in jail the rest of his life. Ken Hovind, like Elijah, was labeled an “enemy” of the State because he exposed their lies, fraud, and theft. Like Naboth, the kangaroo court found him guilty.

³² George Eliot (pseudonym of Mary Ann Evans Cross), Felix Holt (introduction), quoted by giga-usa.com.

Vernice Kuglin was a Fed Ex airlines pilot who was charged with tax evasion. She believed there was no law requiring her to pay the alleged income tax. But, knowing this fact and defending it in court against trained DOJ attorneys is another matter. After the five-day trial, her peers found her not guilty. Wanting to find out why she was acquitted, a friend of mine talked to her lawyer. The lawyer reported that Kuglin was right in her understanding of the law, but the case was not about the law, but about overcoming government propaganda, presumption, and the stigmatism of tax evasion planted hour after hour in the minds of the jurors by DOJ lawyers. In other words, overcoming bias, prejudice, and slander was the great challenge of the defense. Fortunately, there was enough truth presented, that Kuglin won her case. She was one of the lucky ones.

Murder is wickedness.

First, the State destroyed Naboth's reputation. Then it took his life — then his land. The plan was nice and neat. Go to court, falsely charge the man, find him guilty, kill him, and then seize his property! A State serves the purpose of God when it punishes evil men, but it serves evil when it punishes innocent men.

I was in a Christian gathering where people were sharing their life experiences. One lady stood and testified to how an abortion destroyed her soul. In the same breath, she said, "I still believe in abortion under some circumstances." Though she was eaten up with guilt, she could not say with any certainty that abortion is sin. Let's be clear about this. Killing innocent people, born or unborn, is murder! When the government sanctions murder, it is a wicked government. The United States government is wicked because its leaders turn a blind eye to this nation's death camps.

Nearly half of pregnancies among American women are unintended, and four in 10 of these are terminated by abortion.³³

Theft is wickedness.

Theft is taking another man's property by coercion, fraud, and without his consent.

Ahab abused his power and stole Naboth's vineyard without his consent. Theft can be accomplished by indirect and legal means; i.e., by passing laws which steals from the rich or the middle-classes for the benefit of a particular group. The State can become the agency whereby theft is accomplished. Theft can be

³³ "Facts on Induced Abortion in the United States," (Online Resource: guttmacher.org).

camouflaged by legal enactment. How often have we heard “The rich must pay their fair share.” Such rhetoric is a disguise for fraud.

Asset confiscation is theft. It doesn’t matter if the theft is done in the name of taxation or under doctrines of eminent domain. Theft is theft whether it is done by individuals or the State. What is the difference between a thief who holds a gun to your head and takes the money in your wallet and a government that says pay us this “tax” or we will hurt you, lien your property, and put you in jail? Because we do not recognize wickedness, the leviathan State gets away with stealing every day.

Complicitness with evil is wickedness.

We live in a “get along, go along” society. We are not comfortable with confronting majors, governors, or civil rulers. It is easier “to live and let live” than it is to oppose a nine hundred pound gorilla. We like to think that we are better than the elders in Israel, but when push comes to shove, fear takes over. Do we find it easier to comply with an evil mandate than to stand against it? Our own Declaration states that men are more prone to tolerate evil than to correct it.

Did not God condemn Ahab’s generation of “observing” the “statutes of Omri” (Micah 6:16). Because citizens obeyed Omri and Ahab and their man-made statist’s laws, God promised to “give you up for destruction.” The Lord condemned trading silent submission by the people for the promise of protection by the State.

It is the duty of lower magistrates to confront higher magistrates.

The elders of Israel should have confronted Jezebel for her wicked plot. But, because the State was behind the mock trial, the elders of Israel complied without protest for this horrendous injustice to Naboth. Instead of protecting the innocent, they complied with the wicked plot. After all, the State placed its golden seal of approval on the dastardly deed.

Thomas Paine was wrong when he said “government is a necessary evil.” Yes, government is necessary, but evil is never necessary. Anytime a government fails to protect life, liberty, and property or takes innocent life, liberty, and property, it is evil. Do we recognize evil when we see it? Most do not!

Statism is wicked and must be resisted

Under God’s law, individual citizens have rights that superseded the power of the State. God gave the earth to people, not the State: “The earth is the Lord’s and the fullness thereof” (Ps. 24:1).

Naboth’s vineyard belonged to his family, not the king. Due to the religion of Jezebel, Ahab believed in the sovereignty of the government; that the State had

jurisdiction over all the people and their farms. The viperous couple believed that obedience to the State was compulsory under all circumstances; that to say “No” to a king was treason.

Naboth, on the other hand, believed it was treasonous to God to alienate his inheritance. Naboth believed he had a right to his labor and his property; that not one juicy grape belonged to the king.

For keeping his property and protecting his income, he was dragged through the mud of a mock trial, charged, and stoned.

Like cockroaches, his few friends scurried for cover under the nearest rocks.

When government is god in the minds of men, you cannot expect your Christians friends not to betray you.

His property was liened and then given to the government. When a State believes it has jurisdiction over private property, the State acts as a tyrant god. When the State jails citizens for keeping their wages and trying to protect their property, the State does wickedly. And, for acting like a god, Ahab and Jezebel were condemned to death.

“Discretionary authority on the part of the government means insecurity for legal freedom on the part of subjects.”³⁴

There is a lesson on prophetic authority

We said earlier that it is the duty of lower magistrates to confront higher magistrates. If the president needs to be corrected, his staff should confront him; if his staff won’t do it, congress should confront him; if congress won’t confront the evil, then governors and legislators of a State should do it. If no civil authority will confront the president, then those with spiritual authority should accept the task; that is, it is the duty of pastors to expose the evil in government when government officials lack the knowledge and the courage to do so. And, this is what happened in this account. Since the elders, lower magistrates, did not have the courage to confront king Ahab, God called upon the spiritual authority of Elijah to oppose the king and to announce his judgment. A similar order happened in the days of Saul when he failed to execute Agag the Amalekite. His officers, having failed to insure the king’s obedience to Samuel’s instructions, obligated Samuel, God’s spiritual authority, to charged Saul with disobedience and to perform the duties of an executioner (I Sam. 15).

There is a lesson on religion and the State.

³⁴ A.V. Dicey, “Law of the Constitution.” Indianapolis, IN: Liberty Classics, p. 184.

When Ahab and Elijah met, Ahab called Elijah **his enemy**. Ahab recognized that the State was hostile to true religion and that true religion always opposes spiritual and moral corruption in government.

The State is a competitor with religion.

Both government and the church compete for the affections of the people.

Both the church and the State need money to finance their programs.

Both the church and the State claim jurisdiction over morals and ethics. In truth, neither the State nor the church can claim authority over the other. The church has jurisdiction over ethics. The State has jurisdiction over justice. The political reality, however, is that the State uses its legislative power to increase its power to suppress kingdom truth in matters of State

There is never, nor can there be, any strengthening of State power without a corresponding depletion of church power.

Politicians do not like conservative pastors telling them they are wrong. Congress wishes to be the arbitrators of ethics. The media wants their say. They insist upon the doctrine of separation of church and State to censor Christians and in order to exercise dominion over the discipline of ethics. Politicians practice statism and statism is a religion . . . and, politicians don't mind stuffing their religion down the throats of Americans.

Bible believing pastors are enemies of the State—not because they are hostile to the State, but because the State is hostile to the church.

More pastors lose their jobs because of statist's democracy in the church than for any other reason.

This was true in Medieval Europe, and is true in Communist China, Russia, and America today. David Kuo, Deputy Director of White House Faith-based Initiative Programs, discovered, "The back-office Republican machine was able to take Evangelicals for granted—indeed, often viewed them with undisguised contempt—and still get their votes."³⁵

Take the WACO massacre (1993), for example. What threat was David Koresh to the United States government? He made no threats, and even if he did, he had no real power to overthrow the State. The Davidians had lived in their compound since 1933 and had never harmed any of their neighbors. However, Janet Reno saw the cult as a menace to the U.S. government.

³⁵ David Kuo, "Why a Christian in the White House Felt Betrayed," *Time Magazine*, October 22, 2006: 1885, p. 66.

In order to destroy the commune, she branded the Branch Davidians as enemies of the State. They had to be controlled, and if they could not be controlled, they had to be killed. In order to justify her siege on Mt. Carmel, the State accused David Koresh of adultery, child abuse, and running an illegal weapons factory. Reno had to make the Branch Davidians look like a bunch of kooks to justify her siege and murder. Do not hear what I am not saying. I am not trying to justify all that Koresh did and taught. The point to remember is that the State perceives religion as a threat to its own power. In this case, propaganda preceded murder and theft and torture.

With the help of magistrates, secularists have declared war on Christian holy days such as Christmas and Easter. By calling Christmas, "Winter Break" and Easter "Spring break," statist hope to neuter the Christian influence in the market place. Is not the attempt to remove prayer, the Bible, and the Ten Commandments from the classroom an attack by the State upon its enemy? The State's rejection of Christianity and embrace of pluralism creates the appearance of benevolence and appears to be unbiased, but in actuality, it is a strike upon the Christian foundation of our country. It is an attempt to replace Christianity with the religion of statism and humanism.

What do the following have in common? Jewish babies, Zechariah, Isaiah, John the Baptist, Jesus, Paul, Peter, and the apostles?

The answer: They were all enemies of the State!

Are you?

34. The Executive Order that Saved the World

Esther 1:20

How King Xerxes saved the world by crushing feminism in his empire.

Esther 1:20 "Then when the king's edict is proclaimed throughout all his vast realm, all the women will respect their husbands, from the least to the greatest."

Genesis 3:16 Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to rule over³⁶ thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

If you could save the world, what would you do?

If you could get a law passed in Congress to make the world better, what would it be?

There was an executive order posted by Ahasuerus (Xerxes 1), the great Persian King (486-465 BC), that saved the empire (Esther 1).

Esther 1:20 So when the decree made by the king is proclaimed throughout all his kingdom, for it is vast, all women will give honor to their husbands, high and low alike."

The Text

I am amazed at how Jewish and Christian scholars can't "see the forest for the trees" in this passage.

These commentators are so intent on presenting all there is to know about King Ahasuerus, **they miss** the main lesson **of the passage**, which is, the rebellion of Queen Vashti against her husband . . . and king.

The king's advisors understood that if this grave sin was not confronted and dealt with forcefully, it would have undermined, wrecked, destroyed, ravaged, consumed, and devoured **the nation from within and do what no foreign armies could do.**

Biblical authors were master historians notorious for their accuracy and simplicity. Nothing recorded is superfluous, and information left out of the record was not essential to achieve the purpose the writer intended; that is, trust the text . . . and, beware of reading into the text what is not there. Commentaries on this chapter are glutted with extra historical detail which is helpful, but these commentaries are also replete with speculation, suppositions, and presumptions. Beware!

King Ahasuerus

³⁶ Genesis 3:16: Rule = marshal (Hebrew) meaning "to rule over or have dominion over" her husband to repeat again and again the sins of Eve. It is the same word used in

Genesis 4:7 If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, **sin lieth at the door.** And unto thee shall be sin's desire, and thou shalt rule (marshal) *or have dominion* over it.

Let's take a look at King Ahasuerus. Biblical scholars generally identified him with Xerxes I of Persia. He is also called Artaxerxes (486-465 BC). His father was Darius the Great (521-486).

We are first introduced to his power. His empire extended from India in the east, to Egypt and Ethiopia in the south, and into Greece in the west. The text says his kingdom was divided into 127 provinces. It is estimated he ruled over 50 million people or 44% of the world's population. No man before or since has had such power.

His father was Cyrus the Great. Carved into reliefs are consistent themes that God created the world, created mankind, and created man to be happy. That God created "man to be happy" was a novel idea—the rage of the age. Moreover, he gave credit to his creator as he understood him for the grace to rule as king of kings, and leader of leaders.

His palace (Shushan) was in the capital city Susa, an ancient city of the Elamites and Parthians located about 150 miles east of the Tigris River in Khuzestan, one of three capital cities used to rule the empire. Today, it is a modern, archaeological tell in Iran.

His philosophy of life was simple: *Think good thoughts, speak good words, and do good deeds.*

His view of government was that it was in place to do good and to serve the people. However, like kings should be, he was totally intolerant of rebellion and insurrection. He squelched dissent and exercised swift, lethal judgment if need be. His early administration was spent defending his borders in Europe, modern Turkey.

Jewish and Christian historians take great delight in excoriating King Xerxes pointing out sins, flaws, and defects. The goal of which is to show what a wicked, wretched man he was. The text, however, does not!

The truth is that he had no more or less faults than the rulers of the modern era.

Moreover, as flawed as he was, he had more power, more wealth, and ruled over more people than anyone in history. The focus in this chapter is **NOT UPON THE DEPRAVITY OF KING XERXES, but upon THE DEPRAVITY OF QUEEN VASHTI and the global crisis she created.** Selah.

The Festival

In the third year of his reign, Xerxes first task was to hold a festival for his military commanders, probably an effort to unify his kingdom—an empire that contained powerful factions with political hot spots in Babylon, Egypt, and

Greece. There are many extra Biblical resources that can provide historical detail to the wars and battles fought by Xerxes.

He invited all his officials and servants of the 127 provinces to come to a six month festival—a coming together party to unite the empire, to display power, and to discuss the issues the governors faced and the legal policies best suited to rule the citizens. Six-month celebrations was not uncommon to the Persians and we should not read into this more than is written.

During the final week of the festival, the king put on a display of pageantry in the courtyard of the Susa Palace—a sample of the wealth and grandeur is described in Esther 1:6,

“There were white cotton curtains and violet hangings fastened with cords of fine linen and purple to silver rods and marble pillars, and also couches of gold and silver on a mosaic pavement of porphyry, marble.”

Moreover, the king hosted a seven day banquet where “drinks were served in golden vessels, vessels of different kinds, and the royal wine was lavished according to the bounty of the king” (1:7). But, drinking wine was not compulsory. Because of the abuse of power at such celebrations, the Persians made participation voluntary (1:8). Moreover, the king instructed his staff of butlers to remember this rule and not force wine on any man not so inclined.

At the same time the King hosted the governors, Queen Vashti threw a big bash for the ladies in another part of the palace (1:9-10).

The King’s Order to Vashti

In a jovial moment induced by wine, the king proposed to introduce the queen to his delegates to show off her beauty and to provide more evidence of his wealth and greatness(1:11). There is no indication in the text that the king had depraved intentions. Like many men, Xerxes was proud of beautiful Vashti and wanted to present her to his honored guests much like Hollywood displays movie stars on the red carpet. No man wants to be ashamed of his wife. But, what should have been a proud moment for the king, turned into a shameful disaster—a crisis which not only shattered Xerxes’ marriage, but threatened his entire empire.

[Note: the text does not condemn Xerxes for requesting Queen Vashti to appear before his guests. The king had just displayed his wealth and power to the dignitaries. He wanted to show off his wife like any good man would want to do. The Appearance of Vashti would have been the “icing on the cake.”

Whatever bad opinions his officials may have had about Xerxes, they would certainly be erased by seeing his dazzling wife. To read into this event that the

king was asking Vashti to disrobe and appear naked before his guests, shows more the warped, perverted sexual corruption of rabbis than it does the depravity of the king—a Jewish myth, Titus 1:4.

When formerly summoned by the king's staff of eunuchs, Vashti willfully refused to present herself—an act of rebellion that insulted the king and puzzled the guests (1:2). Furious, King Xerxes consulted his advisers on what to do.

Esther 1:15 "According to the law, what is to be done to Queen Vashti, because she has not performed the command of King Ahasuerus delivered by the eunuchs"?

1:17 "King Ahasuerus commanded Queen Vashti to be brought before him, and she did not come."

His counselors were not light weights. These were the most powerful rulers on earth and were so important the Scripture lists all seven of them by name (1:14). There is wisdom in the multitude of counselors (Proverbs 15:22).

Their wise reasoning and counsel is recorded as a lesson for all men and all women (1:17).

The Wickedness of Queen Vashti

First, Queen Vashti's behavior was wrong, wicked, and wretched because she disobeyed her husband and king. Is there a worse sin for wife than to despise his authority and position in the family?

Esther 1:17 For the queen's behavior will be made known to all women, causing them to look at their husbands with contempt, since they will say, 'King Ahasuerus commanded Queen Vashti to be brought before him, and she did not come.'

In defying her husband, she showed disdain for God's law-order for the home: "because she disobeyed her husband and king;" that is, she repeated the sin of Eve.

What a terrible thing it must be for a woman to rebel against her husband!

Second, the Queen's behavior was wrong because she showed contempt for the governors, officials, and the king's guest.

There is no indication in the text that Vashti was required to do anything but "appear." A simple formal command, she was under duty to Xerxes, not only because he was her husband . . . but also because he was her king—thus, she committed a double wrong. Her disobedience was one of naughty, devilish, willful wicked rebellion . . . and women would do well to understand this.

Third, her behavior was wrong because it threatened the stability of the empire.

Every woman in the kingdom admired Vashti and her privileges. All wanted to be in her place. Her bad example would hit the caravan gossip lines and everyone in the kingdom would hear about her defiance. By despising her husband, she provided a notorious, bad model for all women. The rebel feminist in the kingdom would use her example to justify contempt for their husbands.

Esther 1:17-18 For the queen's behavior will be made known to all women, causing them to look at their husbands with contempt, since they will say, 'King Ahasuerus commanded Queen Vashti to be brought before him, and she did not come.' This very day the noble women of Persia and Media who have heard of the queen's behavior will say the same to all the king's officials, and there will be contempt and wrath in plenty.

The Bible teaches us that God created three institutions: the institution of the family, the institution of government, and the institution of the church. The strength of a nation is built on the foundation stones of the family unit. If the family crumbles, the state crumbles. Policies that undermine the family are a sure path to national suicide.

God has ordained men to rule the family with wisdom, strength, and love. That women submit to their husbands and respect them is fundamental to a godly order in the home (Genesis 3; Proverbs 31; Ephesians 5:25ff; 1 Peter 3:1-7). To admire and support women who are disrespectful, competitive, confrontive, resistant, defiant, argumentative, commanding, and rebellious to their husband's leadership, is to hang the family on the gallows.

Fourth, there is no indication in Scripture these men misjudged Vashti's decision or gave bad advice to the king.

Their reasoning was sound, and their judgment accurate. Vashti became self-willed and rebelled. Xerxes had to act.

The Remedy

The first remedy: The judgment was swift. Xerxes divorced Vashti and removed her from the palace . . . that night.

Esther 1:19 If it please the king, let a royal order go out from him, and let it be written among the laws of the Persians and the Medes so that it may not be repealed, that Vashti is never again to come before King Ahasuerus. And let the king give her royal position to another who is better than she.

As evil as divorce is, it would have been a greater evil to tolerate Vashti's treason to King Xerxes.

No man is obligated to put up with a woman who defies him. Bottom line, God gave two rules to women to bring stability to the family unit: (1) “Wives, obey your husbands” (Ephesians 5:22-23), and (2) “let the wife see that she revere her husband;” that is to honor, to fear, and to respect the head of the family. Vashti did neither. Xerxes rightfully sacked her and took away her estate—a power model on what ought to happen to every rebellious wife. A marriage can’t have two wives and survive. A weak, jellyfish, pantywaist man is his own disaster.

Next, his advisers (the magi) advised him to marry another woman “better than she.” God was at work, and, in His sovereignty, the LORD God provided Xerxes I with a beautiful Jewish woman with an excellent spirit who understood God’s plan for wives (Genesis 3:16-18; Proverbs 31). And, in her respect for the king, she achieved all the honor and power Vashti only dreamed about.

The second remedy by Persians was to pass a law “that every man be master in his own household.”

It was already the law for marriage in God’s Word, but here it received Royal support—that men should provide the home with loving leadership.

Think how great this executive order became. This law literally saved the Persian Empire. And, it was right because it was totally consistent with the will of God that women respect their husbands and submit to their God-given authority in the home.

I don’t know of too many laws that have preserved empires, but this one did!

Law cannot regenerate man or society, but it can repress evil in the nation.

These “wise men” at Susa crushed domestic rebellion, saved the family, and rescued the nation from the ravages of feminism! What brilliance! What foresight! What wisdom! What courage!

And, the reader would do well to reflect on the wisdom of the sages.

Remember, their sons composed the wise men who came to worship Christ (Matthew 2).

Their counsel was wise because they protected the family unit.

Their counsel was wise because they overcame evil with good. This law was good for the nation . . . brilliant . . . and simple.

The law was wise because Xerxes modeled how men must be totally intolerant of rebellion in the home. Limited tolerance has a place in the home, but at no time should a man endure rebellion nor yield his position to a pouting wife.

- The law was wise because it warned women against repeating the sin of Eve.

- The law was wise because it preserved the social order in the Persian culture.
- The law was wise because it was narrow.

The rulers did demand women submit to men, but **only** to their own husbands. God does not call women to submit to all men; only their own husbands (Ephesians 5:23ff).

The Bible does not teach men have a right to dominate women. God forbid. Women are not less than men, but when they get married, there is authority in the home that women must recognize . . . or lose their place.

Today, our foolish politicians are dreamers wanting to save the world from global warming and a collision with Planet Nibiru. The laws they pass and taxes imposed weaken the family unit, embolden women to assert leadership over men, and create a welfare society where women are dependent on the U.S. government as their provider and protector.

Since the 1960s, immoral, sensual, bellicose, fornicating women have murdered over 60 million innocent children in America. This is a killing spree that ranks up there with Joseph Stalin. In 80 percent of the cases, women are the first to file for divorce. It is radical feminists that have brought such loud, defiant, protests in the street against everything descent in America. And there is no end in sight. The cat is out of the bag. And, once you let the wild cat get out of the bag, you're gonna have a hard time getting it back in.

If you are a woman, you would do well to grasp the main lesson in this chapter and to recognize what a terrible thing it is for a woman to rebel against God's law-order by defying her husband. Godly women must reject everything connected with viperous Vashti.

If you are a man, you would do well to revisit God's plan for you to provide loving leadership in your home, to let your wife know what the rules are, to pursue a Biblical model for the family, and, to **never** tolerate disrespect for your position as head of the home.

35. Habakkuk: the Man Frustrated with Politics

Habakkuk 1

Are you disturbed and angry over the politics and the depravity of the church? You are not alone. Habakkuk felt the same way.

Let's take a deeper look at the Book of Habakkuk to discover how the prophet went from a state of agitation about corruption in his nation to a state of personal peace and joy.

Silence is Golden

There is too much babble in the world. Everywhere we go there is noise.

We need more time alone . . . more time away from the clamor and commotion of the city, but we are afraid of silence. Take away a cell phone from an average adult, and they break out in hives and plunge into a state of manic depression.

The great tragedy of our time is connectedness to the media, to TV, to cell phones.

Christians would do well to contemplate the following Scripture and acquaint themselves with the wisdom of silence.

Habakkuk 2:20 But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him.

We have the big "but" in verse twenty. Let's see if we can understand the wonder of this statement, "the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him."

Habakkuk calls his work "a burden" (1.1). In using the term "burden," the prophet refers to the nature of his work. It is serious, weighty, and heavy. The Book of Habakkuk is for anyone who is grouchy about politics. If we are not weighed down with politicians pushing this country to the brink of destruction through the madness of open borders, anchor babies, abortion, pornography, LGBTQ school agendas, evolutionary nonsense, the lies of the press, Marxist BLM, and globalism, we are like ostriches with our heads in the sand.

Habakkuk was a prophet in Judah who wrote His work sometime before the Babylonian invasion of Israel (605-586 BC) during the reign of Josiah (640-605 BC). Like Asaph who penned Psalm 73, Habakkuk was burdened down by the prosperity of the wicked and a "do nothing" God, who from his perspective was neglecting His judicial duties to punish the lawlessness in Jerusalem led by liars, looters, and lunatics. Habakkuk is a righteous man, but his soul ached over the up side down politics of his day and the unfaithfulness of his people.

The main message of the Book is "be quiet," and listen to God -- "to trust and to obey" (2:4, 2:20).

But, God had to take Habakkuk on a journey before he gained a state of peace. Habakkuk was a man of faith (2:4), but he had "God problems:" that is, he did not understand the "delays" of God and why his Lord did not do something to stop the growth of wickedness in his country.

Likewise, many Christians don't understand why the Lord permits politicians and the press to get away with their shenanigans. If you are burdened down by the government's promotion of Planned Parenthood, LGBTQ perversions, deep state corruption in Washington D.C., and the treason of politicians against the Constitution, then this study is for you.

Habakkuk's First Problem

Habakkuk 1:2-4 O LORD, how long shall I cry, and thou wilt not hear! even cry out unto thee of violence, and thou wilt not save! Why dost thou shew me iniquity, and cause me to behold grievance? for spoiling and violence are before me: and there are that raise up strife and contention. Therefore the law is slacked, and judgment doth never go forth: for the wicked doth compass about the righteous; therefore wrong judgment proceedeth.

Habakkuk was troubled by the violence and wickedness of his day . . . He prayed . . . and prayed again . . . but his "silent" "unresponsive" God was the "elephant sitting on his chest." The word "violence" (*chamac*) is the same word used to describe the character of the pre-diluvian age that required the judgment of the world-wide flood.

Genesis 6:11 The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence (chamac).

The word "*iniquity*" (*aven*) refers to trouble, transgressions of law, and wickedness. It comes from the Latin word *iniquitas* meaning "not" "just" or "not" "equal" — one who fails to fulfill his obligations in a contract or does the opposite of what duty requires.

The word "*spoiling*" can be translated "havoc," "destruction," or "ruin." it refers to the harm that sin causes people. Sin destroys lives.

The word "*grievance*" (*amal*) refers to the hurt, pain, and grief lawbreakers cause among men for their violations of contract and destruction of private property. It is translated "toil" in Genesis 41:51; "labor" in Deuteronomy 26:7; and "misery" in Judges 10:16).

The word "*strife*" and "*contention*" refers to the range of negative emotions that arises in human conflict when people feel wronged and injured: wrath, anger, bitterness, revenge (Genesis 13:7; Proverbs 15:18).

The phrase "*law is slacked*" and "*judgment does not go forth*" refers to the dilatory application of police power by those charged with enforcing the law; that is, rulers and officials were permissive and tolerant of crime breaking out in the towns of Judah.

“for the wicked doth compass about the righteous” refers to an era where the unscrupulous politicians are in power and the righteous are forced to live under the abusive policies of insane, psychotic, perverted rulers.

“therefore wrong judgment proceedeth” refers to changes in law because the nation changed its gods. The evidence that a nation has changed its gods is changes in fundamental law. The rule of men replaces the rule of law. A vigorous application of law upon wrongdoers was replaced by acceptance of immorality, adultery, Sodomy, and destruction of property as the new normal.

Liberal policies replaced conservative policies. Society turned upside down because those in power lacked the moral energy to enforce the law. Liars, looters, and lawbreakers went “scot-free” (no prison time for criminal acts) and rulers punished the righteous for exercising their rights and for not being compliant with the new order.

When Habakkuk saw the depth of wickedness, lawlessness, and injustice in his day, he fell prostrate and prayed. Oh, how he must have prayed! But, heaven was like brass. His prayers seemed to bounce off the ceiling. God’s silence suddenly became the migraine that kept him awake at night. He wanted God to act . . . to squash the wicked . . . to bring the lying, stealing government officials to justice . . . and to “hang ‘em” high.

But, the LORD seemed dilatory in his duties. God was silent and all Habakkuk saw was more theft, more killing, more bribes, more adultery, more perversion, and more lies among the leaders of the nation. However, the LORD heard the prayers of this Godly man and was pleased to give him an answer in His time.

The Lord’s First Answer

In answering his prayer, the LORD warned the prophet His answer would appear incredible to him ; that is, it would astonish him (1:5): “wonder marvelously: for *I* will work a work in your days, *which* ye will not believe . . .”

Habakkuk 1:6 For, lo, I raise up the Chaldeans, that bitter and hasty (mahar) nation, which shall march through the breadth of the land, to possess the dwelling places that are not theirs.

The word “lo” means *to stand at attention*. The Lord commands His prophet to look, behold, understand, and know that the LORD sees the wickedness of His people, and that He would raise up a horde of young, lusty, military-age Babylonian males to invade, decimate, and plunder the nation because of its evil course.

Oh, how the sharp adjectives “bitter” (*marah*) and “hasty” (*mahar*) must have pricked Habakkuk’s soul.

The word “*marah*” is translated “angry fellows” in Judge 18:25, “discontented” in 1 Samuel 22:2, “chafed in their minds, as a bear robbed of her whelps” in 2 Samuel 17:8.

The word for haste, *mahar*, is translated “perish quickly” in Deuteronomy 28:20.

Oh, how the metaphors of the Chaldean cavalry being like swift leopards, fierce wolves, and birds of prey plucking out eyeballs and ripping off the flesh of Habakkuk’s people must have sent chills up and down his spine (1:8). God’s description of the Babylonians in verses 9-10 drove the spike deeper into the heart of the prophet.

9-10 They shall come all for violence: their faces shall sup up as the east wind, and they shall gather the captivity as the sand. And they shall scoff at the kings, and the princes shall be a scorn unto them: they shall deride every strong hold; for they shall heap dust, and take it.

Violence (*chamac*) was the sin of Judah (v. 3) and *chamac* was their punishment. The Babylonians were thugs that derived sadistic pleasure in seeing the tears, cries, and expressions of horror on their victims.

Jerome translate the metaphor “*sup up as the east wind*” this way: “As at the breath of the burning wind all green things dry up, so at sight of these all shall be wasted.”

Like the hot, dry desert wind scorches the earth while sucking moisture out of every living plant, the Chaldean armies would swallow up all that is precious in the Holy Land.

“Gathering the captive as sand” is a metaphor for the ease of victory. These were not timid and restrained soldiers. They “scoffed” at kings, scorned princess, and turned stone embankments into dust. Military campaigns were a sport where mercenaries took pleasure in the capture and torture of their victims . . . and, in the demolition of monuments, cathedrals, and other eye-catching architecture. Surely, God’s answer penetrated the prophet to the bone.

In time, after Habakkuk calmed down, God’s answer raised another problem for the man of God. Now . . . he had another elephant sitting on his chest.

Habakkuk’s Second Problem

Habakkuk 1:12-13 Art thou not from everlasting, O LORD my God, mine Holy One? we shall not die. O LORD, thou hast ordained them for judgment; and, O mighty God, thou hast established them for correction. Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he?

Habakkuk accepts God's answer and endorses the righteousness of the LORD to use the military muscle of the Chaldeans to judge evil within his nation. He knows that God is eternal, holy and just, mighty and powerful. He understands the LORD was going to use the Chaldeans to chastise his people, and believes they would not end up in the graveyard of nations.

But, he was bothered by God's instrument of chastisement. Habakkuk doesn't understand why God would use such a profane, derelict nation like the Babylonians as a rod to pummel his people. In the prophet's mind, Israel had acted badly . . . but they weren't as rotten as the idolatrous infidels from the Land of Nimrod.

Like a good soldier, the prophet serves guard duty, and waits for the LORD to answer him. He stands like a sentinel on a tower . . . in darkness . . . for the light that is sure to come. He knows his own perspective is shallow and hazy. But, he seeks instruction.

Habakkuk 2:1 I will stand upon my watch, and set me upon the tower, and will watch to see what he will say unto me, and what I shall answer when I am reproved.

Again, God was pleased to answer the legitimate objections of His prophet.

The Lord's Second Answer - (2:2-20)

First, the LORD orders Habakkuk to **write down His answer** so that it would be clear and plain to those with a mind to understand the will of God (2:2). By way of application, the goal of all preaching is to be clear! Not fancy, not loud, not cute, not fleshly indulgence in human dramatics, but to be CLEAR AND ACCURATE.

Second, the LORD assures his prophet that He will dispense justice on the Babylonians; that he will punish them in His own good time. But, the LORD does **not** tell the prophet when that will be (2:3). Thus, the prophet had to wait in trust.

Third, the LORD informs Habakkuk that he is right about the wickedness and evil of the Chaldeans (1:13). Their soul "is lifted up is not upright in him" (2:4).

Habakkuk 2:4 Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith.

This is the Lord's way of telling Habakkuk that the Babylonians were proud and arrogant; "big headed," too "big for their britches," "all strut and no stride," "all smoke and no fire." They were rich by man's yardstick, but they were bankrupt by Divine standards.

Pride is the opposite of trusting in the Lord. Personal autonomy is the enemy of theonomy. Pride is best identified when you see “every man doing what is right in his own eyes.” There is no room for arrogance or “self-law” in the Christian life. Be humble or stumble. “By faith . . . the just . . . shall live.”

The first words “swollen with pride . . .” describes the proud character of the Chaldeans. Thus, the autonomous man shuts out faith. Taking the helm, the proud seek to steer their own ship into the port of prosperity and pleasure. Their motto is “I am the Captain of my ship, the Master of my fate.” Life is a matter of choices, and I will choose my own destiny.”

The conjunction “but” contrast the way of the righteous with the way of the proud. Pride and independence of God is the bitter root that feeds the fruits of worldly evil; but, a steadfast heart cleaving to God and believing in His Word is the soil in which the righteous plant their hopes.

Fourth, the LORD instructs Habakkuk (and all good men) how to live in an age of corruption among wicked people who deserve judgment.

This is the main message of the book! “By faith . . . the just . . . shall live!” (2:4)

God informed Habakkuk that his future plans for judgment on the nation would be hard to believe (1:5). Now it was time for the man to exercise faith, and to do the work of believing the LORD (1 Thessalonians 1:3). This is God’s way of telling Habakkuk, “to trust and obey” During an age of apostasy, the Christian man is exhorted to believe God’s Word, trust God’s Word, and to obey God’s Word.

“When we walk with the Lord in the light of His Word, What a glory He sheds on our way! While we do His good will, He abides with us still, And with all who will trust and obey.

Trust and obey, for there’s no other way To be happy in Jesus, but to trust and obey.

Not a shadow can rise, not a cloud in the skies, But His smile quickly drives it away; Not a doubt or a fear, not a sigh or a tear, Can abide while we trust and obey. Not a burden we bear, not a sorrow we share, But our toil He doth richly repay; Not a grief or a loss, not a frown or a cross, **But is blessed if we trust and obey.”**

The Spirit contrasts the soul of the wicked with the soul of righteous.

The Soul of the Wicked

2:4 Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith.

In saying, “**his soul is not right with in him**” is God’s way of explaining the twisted spiritual condition of the treacherous Chaldeans.

The Spirit uses the Hebrew term “*not upright*” (*yasar*) to describe the Babylonians. It means **not level, straight, or smooth in an ethical sense**. *Caveat emptore*: Don’t expect a “square deal” from these fraudsters. Because the Babylonians did not seek the LORD nor align themselves with the law of God, they became the grim reapers of the Levant.

The second word used to describe the crookedness of the Babylonians is the term “*lifted up*.”

The Hebrew verb for “*lifted up*” (*aphal*) is a Pual verb—an intense passive form of the Piel verb stem. It can be translated, “has been puffed up!!” Because the Chaldeans exercised little restraint over their desires, sin grew in their hearts until their vessels were capsized by their own pride.

The word *autonomous* comes to mind.

The word “autonomous” comes from the Greek words *auto* which means “self” and *nomos* which means “law:” i.e., in a negative sense these Chaldeans were a law unto themselves. They recognized no authority over their own souls but their own lusts.

In contrast to the autonomous Babylonian, we have the righteous who live by faith while believing that the LORD God is the Supreme Ruler of the Universe and that His law is absolute; that all men are accountable to Him as “Judge of All the Earth” (Genesis 18:25).

The Soul of the Righteous

In Hebrew the text reads, “*By faith . . . the righteous shall live.*”

The Hebrew word for “*faith*” (*emuwnah*) means “*firmness,*” “*steadfastness,*” “*faithfulness,*” and “*reliable.*” It is translated “*steady*” in Exodus 17:12, “*truth*” in Deuteronomy 32:4; “*faithfulness*” in 1 Samuel 26:3; “*faithfully*” in 2 Kings 12:15; and “*ordain in their set office*” in 1 Chronicles 9:22.

By faith the Spirit does **not** mean faith in faith.

By faith the Spirit does **not** suggest belief in any religion will result in righteousness or that all faiths are equal. That faith in any religion or all religions lead to heaven is hereby denied. Few seem to recognize there are many roads to hell.

By faith the Spirit does **not** refer to the power of positive thinking.

By faith the Spirit does **not** imply there are other ways to be righteous without faith. Only those with faith are righteous.

By faith the Spirit does **not** suggest faith in one's own righteousness will justify the sinner. By faith the Spirit is **not** referencing one's "profession," but one's holy disposition.

By faith the Spirit is **not** directing the reader to "faith in the heart," but a faith that looks away from self to Another.

By faith the Spirit is **not** suggesting faith relies up some ritual like praying the rosary to obtain favor with God. By faith the Spirit instructs Habakkuk on the core mark of righteous men. Righteous men believe in the LORD God . . . in the Holy Scriptures . . . in His revelation to Israel . . . in His law . . . in the basics of OT gospel proclamation . . . and, righteous men display faith-conduct consistent with the holy profession.

The apostle Paul uses the principle, "The just shall live by faith," as the cornerstone of his treatise on the gospel (Romans 1:16-17). Before us is a faith that believes unto justification (4:5), and a faith that sanctifies (12:1ff) — a faith that believes God and works righteousness (Habakkuk 2:4; James 2) — a "faith unto faith" where faith leads to faithfulness — a faith that grows in time drawing a man closer to Christ — a faith that receives Old Testament and New Testament revelation regarding Christ the Savior and the progress of redemption—a faith that walks alone in the opposite direction of idolaters. The righteousness that justifies a man is entirely of faith, from faith, and by faith.

This statement leads Christians to conclude that salvation is wrapped up in Reformation theology: *sola fide, sola gratia, sola Christo, and sola Scriptura*.

God's Remedy for a Troubled Soul

We are investigating the meaning of **Habakkuk 2:20** "*But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him.*"

Let us continue to explore the **LORD'S SECOND ANSWER TO HABAKKUK**.

The LORD announces **five "woes" on Babylon** which form the basis (probable cause) of His indictment against them. Because the Babylonians were a military nation that achieved wealth by plundering their neighbors, they cast a long shadow over the Levant. The Chaldeans violated so many human rights and committed so many crimes the prosecutor raises the question if they can all be listed (2:6).

Five Woes Pronounced Against the Babylonians

These five woes function as criminal charges that justify the LORD's judgment on the Chaldeans. Here are five reasons God destroys nations. Keep in mind that the Babylonians were the first great empire, the first bankers, and the first commercial system with collateral loans, usury, and foreclosure on the

remaining balance of a loan. Babylonian merchants showed no mercy. Their policy was “Pay up or die!”

(1) “Yea also, because he transgresseth by wine, he is a proud man, neither keepeth at home, who enlargeth his desire as hell, and is as death, and cannot be satisfied, but gathereth unto him all nations, and heapeth unto him all people: Woe to him that increaseth that which is not his! how long? and to him that ladeth himself with thick clay” (2:5-6).

The FIRST WOE contains within it the criminal charge of grand theft through predatory lending — thou “increaseth that which is not his!”

This is a violation of the Eight Commandment, “Thou shall not steal” ([Exodus 20:15](#)), and the Tenth Commandment, “Thou shall not covet thy neighbor’s house” — the use of fraud to steal.

Babylon gained its wealth by offering abusive franchises to the nations and by plundering her neighbors. Lawyers call it grand larceny, the unlawful taking of property through Babylonians search and seizure missions. Before us is the rapacity, plundering, and pirating of the nations through war.

Furthermore, **the FIRST WOE contains within it the criminal charge of intentional and willful deception** — a violation of the ninth commandment, “Thou shall not lie.” The phrase “transgresseth by wine” may refer to literal drunkenness of the Babylonians (Daniel 5:23), but it is also a metaphor referring to the nation’s political treachery and psych ops-strategies to intoxicate nations in order to control them.

The use of alcohol to break down inhibitions of others is well known. Here it refers to the use of commercial agreements to subjugate nations to its authority and power; to deceptive and abusive usury; to the bitter enforcement of national loans — enforcement that involved deception, invasion, seizure of assets, plunder, and massacre of the population.

The use of “wine” refers to Babylon’s skills of luring other nations into contracts by offering them commercial benefits. These financial skills included mendacity, falsehood, duplicity, contract manipulation, abusive loans, counterintelligence, “bait and switch,” equivocation, and disinformation.

(2) “Because thou hast spoiled many nations, all the remnant of the people shall spoil thee; because of men’s blood, and for the violence of the land, of the city, and of all that dwell therein.

(9) Woe to him that coveteth an evil covetousness to his house, that he may set his nest on high, that he may be delivered from the power of evil!” (2:9).

Because Babylon raped nations of their wealth, the survivors of these devastated nations would spoil Babylon.

The charge of murder is added to the indictment which is a violation of the Sixth Commandment, “thou shall not kill.” Babylon declared war on nations without cause. They killed their neighbors under color of law (false pretenses) in order to collect the collateral of their usury laden loans. Killing and plundering was a lot easier than work and manufacturing.

The SECOND WOE contains within the criminal charge of fraud — a violation of the Tenth Commandment,

“Thou shall not covet thy neighbor’s house” or anything that belongs to him (Exodus 20:17).

Remember, Babylon was the location of the Tower of Babel that reached into the heavens.

The City of Babylon encompassed 100 square miles with walls over 100 yards high and 30 yards wide. The temple to Marduk was 600 feet high, and Babylon’s hanging gardens became one of the Seven Wonders of the World.

Nebuchadnezzar boasted, *“Is not this great Babylon that I have built for the house of the Kingdom by the might of my power and for the honor of my majesty”* (Daniel 4:30)? He had built an eagle’s nest that no man could climb. Its three hundred foot walls on which chariots patrolled the city laughed its invaders to scorn. Terms like *biting, booty, and spoil* announce Babylon’s defeat.

As amazing as Babylon was, the LORD sentenced it to doom and destruction (2:7-8).

(3) “Thou hast consulted shame to thy house by cutting off many people, and hast sinned against thy soul. (11) For the stone shall cry out of the wall, and the beam out of the timber shall answer it. (12) Woe to him that buildeth a town with blood, and stablisheth a city by iniquity!” (2:12).

Thus, **the THIRD WOE is the criminal charge of murder** — a violation of the **Sixth Commandment**.

The Devilish ambition of avarice and love of wealth added to the shame and criminal acts of Babylon’s bloodshed. Looting, plundering, and killing were not only sins against God, but sins against humanity — crimes that invited the judgment of God upon the nation.

Habakkuk 2:13-14 Behold, is it not of the LORD of hosts that the people shall labor in the very fire, and the people shall weary themselves for very vanity? For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

Judgment against Babylon is pronounced. All their labor and construction of magnificent buildings became fuel for the fire of God’s judgment; that is, these people labored in vain. Everything the Chaldeans built, God ordered

(predestined) to be burned and destroyed. When Babylon fell, the nations heard, and the whole earth was “filled with the knowledge of the glory of God” (2:13-14).

(4) “Woe unto him that giveth his neighbor drink, that putteth thy bottle to him, and makest him drunken also, that thou mayest look on their nakedness!” (2:15).

The phrase “giveth his neighbor drink” is figurative. Here it refers to fraudulent, interest-laden contracts and violations of trust between nations.

The FOURTH WOE is the criminal charge of fraud and breach of trust (treachery) — a violation of the Fifth and Tenth Commandments.

The greatest sin of all is treachery. It refers to stripping a nation of its wealth and leaving it ransacked and ravished; of deforesting the landscape; of demolishing its municipal structures — so common in ancient warfare.

The wine is a symbol of commercial enticement, fraud, chicanery, deceit, and bad faith. Babylon would offer franchises in the form of a predatory loan to her neighbors — the lending practice that imposes abusive loan terms on a debtor by a creditor. As soon as the nation failed to fulfill its obligations in the contract, creditor Babylon would foreclose on the deal and seize the nation’s wealth by an act of war.

(5) “Woe unto him that saith to the wood, Awake; to the dumb stone, Arise, it shall teach (a teacher of lies)! Behold, it is laid over with gold and silver, and there is no breath at all in the midst of it” (2:19). The fifth woe is the criminal charge of idolatry— a violation of the First Commandment.

The FIFTH WOE condemns pagan idolatry.

Like all power cults, Babylon wanted to control the future. So, they created their own polytheistic religions to insure fertility and prosperity. Marduk or Bel was the main god of the Chaldeans. This mirage was associated with thunder and storms, the Sun and the moon, the seasons and the weather — something the Babylonians wanted to control.

Christianity urges God’s people to accept responsibility for today, and leave the future to God. Men spend a tremendous amount of energy trying to manipulate the future, but all we have is the moment. A great part of our lives are in the hand of providence. Our mental telescopes only permit us to see so far. Tomorrow has too many variables. We must quiet our desire to control the future and rest our heads on the pillow of His sovereignty. In this maximum liability universe, the Christian man equips himself with a benevolent trust in the Lord . . . for the just shall live by faith.

We should not torture ourselves with manic, insistent worry on what we cannot know or control. The Lord Jesus taught us to deliberately and intentionally turn off the engines of our mind racing with concerns about the future.

I Know Who Holds Tomorrow

Alison Krauss

I don't know about tomorrow
I just live for day to day
I don't borrow from the sunshine
For its skies may turn to gray

I don't worry o'er the future
For I know what Jesus said
And today I'll walk beside Him
For He knows what lies ahead

Many things about tomorrow
I don't seem to understand
But I know who holds tomorrow
And I know who holds my hand

Rejecting the one absolute God and His absolute law-order, the Chaldeans became polytheistic, multi-cultural, and pluralistic in their approach to religion and law; that is, their law was self-originating, self-serving, and self-elevating.

The use of "teach" (*sheqer*) may point back to [Micah 3:11](#) which refers to a *teacher of lies* (*mōreh sheqer*) "that the maker of idols trusteth in him (the teacher of lies)." (K & D).

It is impossible to escape the ironic conclusion that the maker of the stone idol must be dumber than a rock. Eventually, you will become like what you worship. want.

The gods of the Babylonians promised wealth and prosperity. Therefore, their laws favored the lender (the Babylonian masters) while placing impossible usury demands and controls on the borrower-slave nations. The Chaldeans are the originators of loans "with strings attached."

What comfort Habakkuk must have felt knowing that God was going to judge corruption within Babylon! Habakkuk was wonderfully blessed by God's revelation to him. His message concludes with this thought:

Habakkuk 2:20 "But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him."

The conjunction “*but*” presents a contrast between the nothingness of the nations, and the everything of God . . . between dinky idols, and the uttermost of the Almighty . . . between gods that don’t exist, and the God Who does exist . . . between deeply flawed men, and the infinite perfections of the LORD.

Having declared the powerless of the nations and all that is not God, Habakkuk summons the nations to enter His Court and to shut their mouths before Him Who is the great “I am.”

His temple refers to Solomon’s temple which is a giant metaphor for the Presence of Sovereignty. “He reigns” is the gospel of the Old Testament (Psalm 97:1).

The Lord is in His holy temple with gavel in hand. “The temple of God” is an icon for God’s rule . . . His throne . . . His authority . . . His universal jurisdiction over mankind . . . His law-order . . . His justice . . . His courtroom chambers where He permits the ancients to study Him. Only repentant, devout men can gain a hearing before His Majesty.

This presentment is not a contrast between heaven and earth. He is not more present in heaven than on earth. Nor is He more available to angels than to men. “*God is wholly everywhere, and the whole of Him is nowhere.*” His temple could be damaged, but God’s care for His people could not be destroyed (1 Kings 8:27; Psalm 79:1).

When David declared, “*the Lord is in His holy temple, the Lord’s throne is in heaven*” he meant Court is in session 24 hours a day, seven days a week (Psalm 11:4; and, Psalm 18:6, Psalm 18:9).

His eyes see the sons of men. Not only did the LORD know about the evil among His people, He planned to use the Chaldeans as His chastening rod. Israel’s Judge would severely chastise Israel, but He would not crush them. Not only did God know all the horrific crimes the Babylonians would commit, He had already pronounced sentence upon them! Unlike Israel, they would be utterly ruined and buried in the graveyard of the nations.

The great message of the Book of Habakkuk is that the LORD reigns. Court is in session. International complaints against nations are heard in His chambers.

Parties summoned, charges are presented. Matters are serious. He knows the facts of each case. He prosecutes. He defends. He judges. He commands. He executes. Destinies of nations are in His hands. He makes judicial decisions and nations are shattered (Psalm 75:7).

Therefore, “let all the earth keep silence before Him.”

BE SILENT means “**Hush!**” The object of the interjection “Hush!” is addressed to all the *faces of men* on earth. Quiet, court is in session.

Like Habakkuk, we are often tangled in knots over the mysteries of our age. What good man has not been bewildered by the spread of lawlessness during his time (1:2-5)? In His presence, the problems regarding the mystery of our being are solved (Barnes).

Therefore, “let all the earth keep silence before Him.” Since the all-wise, all-present, all-powerful God is in Heaven beholding the deeds of His people, “let all the earth keep silence before Him.” The Spirit is telling us get into His Presence, “shut up and put our ears on.” “Shema, O Israel . . .”

Let us come into His Presence, and let Him release us from the chains and shackles that binds our souls and minds with the sins of our own heart and the contradictions of this world.

36. The Lord Controls Politics

Habakkuk 2:20

The Lord is in His Holy Temple

Disturbed by the wickedness of his people, the prophet fell to his knees to pray. God’s Answer disturbed him, so he prayed again.

In the Lord’s second answer, he learned that the LORD knew about the wickedness of his people, and about the horrific crimes of the Babylonians. He had already pronounced a sentence against the greatest city-state in the world. The LORD reigns!

GOLDEN SILENCE

Habakkuk 2:20 “But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him.”

The great message of the Book is that the LORD reigns. Court is in session. Matters are serious. Charges against defendant peoples are heard in His chambers. He knows the facts of each case. He judges. Destinies of nations are in His hands. Show respect. Be silent and learn.

The command “keep silent” is preceded by the protasis, “the LORD is in His holy temple;” that is, because the Court is in session.

Men need to enjoin the wisdom of silence. We are surrounded by shrieking sirens, roaring engines, 18 wheelers thundering down interstates, honking cars, alarm clocks beeping, cell phones invading your day, and TV enticing us with zillions of commercials. These disruptions and demands on our souls are unbearable! Connectedness is the curse of our times. The tyranny of the urgent requires our immediate attention. Fluffy stuff takes precedence over weighty matters. The need of the hour is silence in order to focus on the important things.

Silence is golden in the presence of God, Yes I believe it is true, Because in that golden silence, my thoughts are filled with You.

Habakkuk accused God of going *sub silentio* in regards to his prayer ([1:2](#)); now, the LORD commands him and “all faces” to be silent.

We need to find God, but we cannot find him in the noise of the city, or the rearranging of chairs at a school pep rally. He is in His temple as King and Judge. Court is in session. The Spirit whispers to us, “Shhhh! Hush! Silence in the gallery! These matters are serious. Listen and learn!”

The idea here for “red necks” is slow down, shut up, shush, zip the lip, chill out, cork it, and get your ears on. But, the LORD is not this crude or rude. He simply posts His rule, “Silence. Court is in session!”

A fool is known for his many words, but a man of wisdom for his silence.

Proverbs 18:2-3 Fools have no interest in understanding; they only want to air their own opinions.

When you are in the Divine Library of wisdom and knowledge the rule is “Quiet Please!” The great enemy of the Christian is the boom and buzz in the beehive of life. A broken wheel makes the most noise. A broken Christian has turned his back on silence. He is so busy running computers and punching buttons that he drowns out the voice of the Spirit. Busyness keeps him from prayer; noise deafens him to the sweet sounds of the Word of God.

Francis Bacon said, “*Silence is the sleep that nourishes wisdom.*” Listen to the sun, moon, and stars making their journey across the heavens. Without clamor, clangs, and clatter they bless man with light for his journey through life. As a well-mannered gentleman is known by the noise he doesn’t make when sipping his soup.

Likewise, a wise man is known by the lack of hullabaloo in his heart. Like a rainbow arches in the sky after the thunder claps of a storm displaying its glorious color, wisdom comes to men when silence returns to the heart.

There is too much clamor in the world.

In His Presence, the mysteries of our being are solved . . . and . . . all the miseries of humanity can be attributed to the inability of men to be alone . . . silent . . . with Bible in hand.

Silence isn't empty; it is bursting with answers for the man who "*keeps silent before Him.*" The quieter you are, the more you hear. "Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee" (Isaiah 26:3).

Moreover, the "*Holy, Holy, Holy*" LORD God is in His Holy Temple! *Selah* (Isaiah 6:1-6).

Barnes observes regarding the "repetition" of a name, or of an expression, three times, was quite common among the Jews. Thus, in Jeremiah 7:4, the Jews are represented by the prophet as saying, 'the temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, are these. Thus, Jeremiah 22:29 : 'O earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the Lord;' Ezekiel 21:27 : 'I will overturn, overturn, overturn;' see also 1 Samuel 18:23 : 'O my son Absalom! my son, my son;' see also the repetition of the form of benediction among the Jews, Numbers 6:24-26. (Isaiah 6). In light of NT revelation regarding the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, how can it be doubted that this is a reference to the Holy Trinity?

See the triple use of *hashem* in the Aaronic Benediction, the *barakh*

Numbers 6: 24-26 The LORD (YHWH) bless (barakh) thee, and keep thee: The LORD make his face shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee: The LORD lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace.

Because Israel's **Great Lawgiver, Judge, and King** is in His holy temple, silence is the order of the hour (Isaiah 33:22).

As, Habakkuk sat silently digesting the Word of God, what did He learn about the LORD as Lawgiver?

As Israel's Lawgiver, the LORD was the nation's Source of law. The LORD announced His law to the nation, and the people accepted it; that is, they consented to be governed by the law of the LORD God.

Furthermore, His law formed the basis of His judgment (Exodus 20:1ff). His law is a product of His sovereignty . . . and His love for His people. Because the LORD God loved them, He gave them His law . . . not to save them but to create a safe, orderly society. The enacting clause reads, " I *am* the LORD thy God (Sovereignty in action), which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt (love for His people), out of the house of bondage (for the love of freedom) . . . (1) Thou shall have no gods before me" (Exodus 20:1-3). His law or Torah is an indirect reflection of His character; Jesus is the Living Torah, the direct

representation of His character . Because He is eternal, His law is absolute (Psalm 105:10; 119:42; Hebrews 1:1-3).

Habakkuk knew that God's law was not only good for Israel, but good for all nations – not only good for him, but good for all men and all of man's institutions.

As, Habakkuk sat silently digesting the Word of God, what did He learn about the LORD as King? Let us consider the following texts.

As Israel's King, the LORD is the one and only Sovereign subject to none. The temple complex was not only a religious center administrated by priests, it was the center of Israel's civil government where the King's court executed justice. Not only is the LORD the King of Israel, He is the King of the Nations. As the Spirit of God summons Israel to acknowledge the LORD's authority over them, so the Spirit calls the nations to acknowledge the LORD's authority over them. We hear much about the Christians duty to obey "God-ordained authorities" (Romans 13:1), but seldom do we hear preachers calling heads of State to obey Habakkuk's God.

Consider the following texts:

Jeremiah 10:7 Who would not fear thee, O King of nations? for to thee doth it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their kingdoms, there is none like unto thee.

Deuteronomy 4:39 "Know therefore today, and take it to your heart, that the LORD, He is God in heaven above and on the earth below; there is no other.

1 Chronicles 16:31 Let the heavens be glad, and let the earth rejoice; And let them say among the nations, "The LORD reigns."

1 Chronicles 29:11 "Yours, O LORD, is the greatness and the power and the glory and the victory and the majesty, indeed everything that is in the heavens and the earth; Yours is the dominion, O LORD, and You exalt Yourself as head over all."

Psalms 29:10 The LORD sat as King at the flood; Yes, the LORD sits as King forever.

Psalms 47:2 For the LORD Most High is to be feared, A great King over all the earth.

Psalms 135:6 Whatever the LORD pleases, He does, In heaven and in earth, in the seas and in all deeps.

Daniel 4:35 "All the inhabitants of the earth are accounted as nothing,

But He does according to His will in the host of heaven And among the inhabitants of earth; And no one can ward off His hand Or say to Him, 'What have You done?'

Psalm 2:6, 9-12 Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.

That the LORD is King of Israel means He is in control. Though things seemed out of control to Habakkuk, silence taught Him that the LORD reigns. With mouth shut, and ears open, Habakkuk came to a place where he was content to know that he was not in charge of the world. The LORD reigns — a tough lesson to learn for proud, liberal, independent, self-willed, autonomous, Armenian men.

The prophet must have found rest in the following Scriptures:

Psalm 46:1 "God is our refuge and strength, an ever-present help in trouble."

Isaiah 41:10 "fear not, for I am with you; be not dismayed, for I am your God; I will strengthen you, I will help you, I will uphold you with my righteous right hand."

Proverbs 16:4 The Lord has made everything for its purpose, even the wicked for the day of trouble.

As Israel's Judge, He dispenses justice to the nations. He knows the facts; and, He judges justly. As Habakkuk waited in silence he learned that the LORD's Court is in session 24/7 and never in recess. His judgment is without bias, without prejudice, without error, and absolute. All must appear before Him. As Israel's crimes came before the LORD's Court, so did Babylon's . . . and so does the sins of the United States. And, there are no appeals. [There is a difference between God's judgment on individuals and His judgment on the nations; Individually, all men must appear before Him after death (Hebrews 9:27). But, the sins of nations as a whole are judged in time.]

Psalm 9:8 And He will judge the world in righteousness; He will execute judgment for the peoples with equity.

Psalm 9:19-20 Arise, O LORD, do not let man prevail; Let the nations be judged before You. Put them in fear, O LORD; Let the nations know that they are but men. Selah.

Psalm 110:6 He will judge among the nations, He will fill them with corpses, He will shatter the chief men over a broad country.

Joel 3:12 Let the nations be aroused And come up to the valley of Jehoshaphat, For there I will sit to judge All the surrounding nations.

Daniel 7:9-10 "I kept looking Until thrones were set up, And the Ancient of Days took His seat; His vesture was like white snow And the hair of His head like pure wool His throne was ablaze with flames, Its wheels were a burning fire. "A river of fire was flowing And coming out from before Him; Thousands upon thousands were attending Him, And myriads upon myriads were standing before Him; The court sat, And the books were opened.

Jeremiah 17:10 "I, the LORD, search the heart, I test the mind, Even to give to each man according to his ways, According to the results of his deeds.

In conclusion, the message of Habakkuk is that the LORD is on His throne as King of the Nations. Court is in session. Take off your shoes. You are on holy ground. Be silent. The Judge knows the facts, He will render a judgment, and the gavel will come down on the side of justice against the wicked. Trust the LORD to do what is right. When politics becomes burdensome, trust and obey!'

GOLDEN SILENCE

Silence is golden in the temple of God, Yes I believe it is true;
Because in that Golden Silence, my thoughts are filled with You.

Your throne is above the stars, that shimmer and shine; In this
Golden Silence, I learn that I am Thine.

You are greater than the thunder storm, that causes me to
quiver; No greater love than Calvary, that excites my heart
forever.

You are my paradise, my oceans wide, My mountain standing
tall, So in this golden silence, I understand Your call.

Silence is Golden in the temple of God, Yes I know it is true; I
have riches greater than gold, As my thoughts are filled with
You. (By Brooky Stockton)

2:20 "But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him."

Not only did the LORD know about the evil among the people, He was planning to use the Chaldeans as His chastening rod. God planned severe judgment for His people, but not destruction. Not only did He know all the horrific crimes of the Babylonians, He had already pronounced sentence upon them! They would be utterly destroyed and descend into the graveyard of the nations.

The great message of the Book is that the LORD reigns. Court is in session. Matters are serious. Charges against nations are heard in His chambers. He knows the facts of each case. He judges. Destinies are in His hands. Be silent and learn. Walk by faith.

Habakkuk practices the wisdom of silence. Knowing that the LORD reigns planted peace in his soul. Being in the LORD's Court and learning that God was going to send the fierce Babylonians to Jerusalem and to conquer it, Habakkuk composes his prayer . . . and, what a prayer it is. Let us take a look at this prayer as it applies to Habakkuk 2:20. What was the impact of entering the chambers of the temple and being silent?

37. Joy in the Soul

Habakkuk 3

Democracy is under assault around the globe, and the effects are evident not just in authoritarian states like China, Russia, and Iran, but also in countries with a long track record of upholding basic rights and freedoms. While protest movements in every region have illustrated widespread popular demand for better governance, they have yet to reverse the overall pattern of declining freedom (Freedom House, March 4, 2020).

The news is basically a report on the progress of evil in society.

Men are often grieved by the evening news . . . because they are righteous. And, a steady diet of news can make you feel like you stuck in the middle of the Pacific Ocean without a paddle.

How does one rise above the doom and gloom of nightly news? After a loooong time of silence in the temple, Habbukuk rises from his knees and graciously provides us this answer.

New Insight in the Midst of Moral Decline

1 A prayer of Habakkuk the prophet upon Shigionoth.

2 O LORD, I have heard thy speech, and was afraid: O LORD, revive thy work in the midst of the years, in the midst of the years make known; in wrath remember mercy. Awe: "O LORD, I have heard thy speech, and was afraid."

Hope of Revival

God's first answer scared the prophet; his second answer brought him peace.

"Revive, O LORD," prays the prophet. "You" is the subject of the prayer. Only the LORD can revive the soul.

The object of the verb is "work"—His great plan of redemption and the task of making a holy people. We are the ones in need of revival, not the pagan world. "We are the clay and Thou our Potter, and we are all the work of Thy Hands" Isaiah 64:8). Revive us, O Lord. Revive your church.

Reformation is renewal of Biblical doctrine; revival is a renewal of holy energies to obey the Lord. American churches need both. Begin with me.

Hope for Mercy

Committing great violations against God's law, Israel deserved judgment ("wrath"). Being in Court gave the prophet new insight, not only into the justice of God, but the mercy of God. Not only is the LORD just, His Court is rich in grace. "In wrath, remember mercy" prayed the prophet (2:2).

Insight into the Power of God

3 God came from Teman, and the Holy One from mount Paran. Selah. His glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of his praise.

Praise for the healing warmth of God's presence:

Teman is in the land of Edom. Paran is the ancient name of Mt. Sinai in Arabia. Both places are located south east of Jerusalem—the place of the rising sun. In his silence, the light shined.

The remedy for darkness is light. "Let your light shine before men."

4 And his brightness was as the light; he had horns coming out of his hand: and there was the hiding of his power.

"Horns" refer to the golden rays of God's power at work among the nations. Before Him the darkness flees ([Psalm 18:12](#)). As shadows surrender to the light, stubborn man must surrender to the light of the gospel.

The Hiding of His Power

Just as man cannot look directly at the yellow Sun rising from the ground, men cannot look directly at the amber glows of holiness radiating from the throne of God. As a furnace shields man from the scarlet-flames of a burning fire, there is a hiding of His blazing power.

“Valuable things are hidden, and hard to get” – Mohammed Ali

As the Sun hides behind the horizon, clouds, and mountains, God hides the core of His power.

2 Corinthians 12:9, “And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me;” and,

Consider the hiding of God’s power in the madness in today’s politics (Daniel 4:34-35); and,

Consider nothing is hidden from God:

Proverbs 14:3 “The eyes of the LORD are in every place, beholding the evil and the good.”

Consequently, there is a need for prayer:

Ephesians 1:18-20, “I pray that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened in order that you may know the hope to which he has called you, the riches of his glorious inheritance in his holy people, and his incomparably great power for us who believe. That power is the same as the mighty strength he exerted when he raised Christ from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly realms . . .”

5 Before him went the pestilence, and burning coals went forth at his feet. 6 He stood, and measured the earth: he beheld, and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills did bow: his ways are everlasting.

Habakkuk He switches metaphors from nature to a military motif.

The LORD reigns! As a “Man of War,” He is not passively sitting idle letting the enemy strengthens his position. He sees. He fights. He kills. He defeats. He wins. He makes the wrath of man (the insanity of politics) to praise Him, and the remainder of His wrath (idiocy) he restrains (Psalm 76:10).

As a general orders a Marine Corps ahead of the invasion of the main regiment to weaken the enemy, our LORD sends his troops of terror to scatter enemy combatants.

Pestilence refers to His use of disease, plagues, and viral pandemics to judge mankind. “Pestilence” is a metaphor for an army’s sorties to soften the enemy before the main force reaches the killing fields (Exodus 23:27; Psalm 68:1-2).

“*Burning coals*” is singular — “*burning coal*” — a reference to fever — a symbol of resolve and the heat of holiness. This Captain has intensity without anxiety. He marches to the bloody battlefield with undiminished resolve to defeat his foes and save His lambs.

“*He stood*” represents our Lord’s personal concern and investment in the outcome of the battle. Habakkuk is all about God’s intense focus on plenary reparations for national sins.

“*Measuring the earth*” is a metaphor representing surgical accuracy and measured, calculated judgment. When the LORD declares war on his enemies there is no backfire, misfire, or “friendly fire.” His ways are everlasting, inform us that the God of yesteryear is still God today. He does not change.

7 I saw the tents of Cushan in affliction: and the curtains of the land of Midian did tremble.

The prophet visits the past as if it were present, and presents the future as if it were past. His perspective is eternal rather than temporal . . . international rather than provincial. Every act of salvation in the past is a promise of future salvation for God’s people.

Cushan is a synonym for Syria and Midian was an enemy with territory south east of the Dead Sea. As God defeated Syria and Midian in the day of the judges under Gideon, He will crush all future enemies of Israel as in the “day of Midian” (Judges 3:8-10; 7:1-8:10; Isaiah 9:4).

8 Was the LORD displeased against the rivers? was thine anger against the rivers? was thy wrath against the sea, that thou didst ride upon thine horses and thy chariots of salvation?

In reflecting on the sovereignty of the LORD, Habakkuk traces the steps of Israel’s deliverance at the Red Sea during the exodus-days of Moses and Joshua. Two questions are asked. Was God angry at the Rivers (Red Sea, Jordan River)?

The answer is “No!” God does not wage war against the earth or nature, but against men. War is political. Evil is not in the environment. It is in humanity. Evil men invite war. He rides His chariots and commands His quadriga of horses, not only to sack the wicked, but to save His people.

9 Thy bow was made quite naked, according to the oaths of the tribes, even thy word. Selah. Thou didst cleave the earth with rivers.

Images of a naked bow and split rivers informs us of the extremes God will go to to save His people.

The “oath of the tribes” refers to the Messianic Promises in the Abrahamic covenant wherein God’s people “should be saved from their enemies, and from the hand of all that hate them.”

This is Habakkuk’s way of informing us that God keeps his promises.

Oh, the wonders of Calvary where God emptied his quiver to defeat Satan, sin, and death . . . to save you and me by giving His Son “to save His people from their sins.” The cross represents God’s naked vault and the pouring out of His love for humanity. There, the heavenly Father spent His entire war chest to redeem His elect. In giving His Son to be the Savior of the world, He gave us His all! Selah!

10 The mountains saw thee, and they trembled: the overflowing of the water passed by: the deep uttered his voice, and lifted up his hands on high.

Drawing upon the imagery of the Exodus from Egypt, the prophet plows through victories past to claim victories future.

Surely, since God redeemed Israel at the Red Sea, He will complete His redemptive work among His people. And, He did at Calvary.

11 The sun and moon stood still in their habitation: at the light of thine arrows they went, and at the shining of thy glittering spear.

Arrows and spears are icons of war. To save men, God declares war on His enemies. His enemies are our enemies.

Liberals, Marxists and atheists seek to conquer us. Thus, the Christian life is a military life. Like Israel, we follow the Lord Who is a “Man of War “(Exodus 15:3). Like Israel, believers must learn the art of combat (Judges 3:1-3).

Visual verbs employed by Miriam after observing the crushing defeat of the Egyptians at the Red Sea come to mind: hurled, drowned, sank, shattered, threw down, and consumed (Exodus 15).

In the work of revival, God’s judgments are always noon day for His people, and midnight for His enemies.

12 Thou didst march through the land in indignation, thou didst thresh the heathen in anger.

To Habakkuk, the LORD is everlasting (1:12). He does not change. The past is the present and the present is the past. The same powers the LORD used against His enemies in the past are in His arsenal today.

13 Thou wentest forth for the salvation of thy people, even for salvation with thine anointed; thou woundedst the head out of the house of the wicked, by discovering the foundation unto the neck. Selah.

Again, the past is used as an argument of what God should do in the present. Habakkuk reviews the LORD's wars against Israel's enemies, and how he unleashed His weapons of terror upon them in order to save His people. As He crushed the Midianites and Amalekites, the prophet liens the LORD to do it again.

14 Thou didst strike through with his staves (staff, spears) the head of his villages: they came out as a whirlwind to scatter me (us): their rejoicing was as to devour the poor secretly.

Habakkuk paints a graphic picture of the spiritual character of his enemies. As Pharaoh put Jacob's family in chains and fetters, and later pushed God's fleeing people into the Red Sea; and, as Sisera plowed over God's people with iron chariots on the Plains of Megiddo; and, as Midian descended like locusts on Israel's breadbasket to plunder Israel's wheat harvest; and, as the Persian administrators sought to put Daniel to death in the lion's den, so did God's enemies in Habakkuk's day.

As God drove a spear into the heads of these wicked nations . . . into the head of Sisera, Habakkuk wishes the LORD to do the same in his time.

15 Thou didst walk through the sea with thine horses, through the heap of great waters. This is imagery of the LORD crushing Pharaoh's cavalry at the Red Sea under a mega-tsunami of cliff high waves. Seeing His armies on the march again, troubled the Prophet.

Peace in the Midst of Moral Decline

16 When I heard, my belly trembled; my lips quivered at the voice: rottenness entered into my bones, and I trembled in myself, that I might rest in the day of trouble: when he cometh up unto the people, he will invade them with his troops.

Having reviewed the power of God and His conquest over His enemies, Habakkuk describes his response to this revelation. Butterflies in the stomach, quivering lips, weakness in the bones, and nervous tremors is Habakkuk's way of informing us that he took God's Word seriously.

Disturbed by Israel's political descent into hell, Habakkuk prayed for perspective. God answered. As he rehearsed God's saving work following the Exodus, an inexplicable peace settled in his soul.

As God intervened to save Israel from her enemies, he anticipated the LORD would again save His people identifying fully with the holiness and

sovereignty of the LORD, the prophet tapped into a resource that enabled him to find “rest in the day of trouble.” Praying and finding peace, he finishes his work with praise.

Praise to God in the Midst of Moral Decline

17 Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither shall fruit be in the vines; the labour of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and there shall be no herd in the stalls:

Figs, grapes, olives, wheat and barley, sheep and goats, cattle and oxen represent the necessities of life. Take away these essential crops, and you face destitution as a nation.

With the LORD’s announcement that He was going to send the Chaldeans as His rod of chastisement, the clouds over Israel’s future turned shades of grey.

Though the happiness of a nation depends on its golden harvest, Habakkuk found joy and security in Another.

Seeing the gathering clouds of judgment and having felt the knots twisting in his soul, Habakkuk looked above the stormy horizon. With the eye of faith, the prophet saw that the LORD that controls the forces of deprivation, and his eyes smiled.

While quietly waiting in silence for an answer from God, he contemplated the truth “the LORD is in holy temple.” As a ship lowers its anchor into the bay to keep it from drifting out to sea, Habakkuk had an anchor behind the veil that kept his soul from crashing into coastline of doubt. The prophet tapped into a source of comfort that rises above nature.

Because his soul was in tune with the LORD, his whole being hummed with joy.

18 Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation.

His security shifts from the physical to the spiritual, from the material to the eternal. There is a joy greater than a full harvest, and sense of well being independent of a vat of wine, a barrel of olive oil, or sacks of flour. Many a man has stared into an empty cupboard and discovered hidden treasures in the God of His salvation (Exodus 15:2; Psalm 18:2; 25:5).

I’d rather have Jesus than silver or gold (Songwriters: Luther Green Presley)

19 The LORD God is my strength, and he will make my feet like hinds’ feet, and he will make me to walk upon mine high places. To the chief singer on my stringed instruments.

Despite God's announcement that an abyss of black hang over Israel's future, Habakkuk doesn't color his destiny with dingy grey. The skies over the prophet remained beautiful. Rays of sunshine from the throne of God warmed his confidence. As long as the LORD ruled the universe, he had hope for a bright future.

With the eye of faith, he claims the LORD God as his strength, that the LORD would be his security on treacherous trails, that God would deliver Him from the bottoms and cause him to walk in high places under the care of his Lord.

Such a glorious prayer with such lofty lyrics deserves to be set to music so that all can hear and enter into the joy of the faith (2:4) — a joy that only comes by practicing silence before Him who is in His Holy temple (2:20).

Thus, the remedy for frustration with politics in a nation stricken with neo-pagans is to see the LORD in His holy temple, to grasp His authority over the nations (2:20), and to walk by faith (2:4). Simple to say, but difficult to apply

38. Ten Marks of a Dying Society

Jeremiah 44

The Terminus Ad Quem of a Nation

Jeremiah 44 is the last message that Jeremiah gave to the remnant who fled Jerusalem to Egypt hoping to find protection from the Babylonian invasion of the Levant.

PART I

This chapter shows us the *terminus ad quem* of a society -- the last few breaths of a dying man before he is taken to the morgue.

The Latin phrase *terminus ad quem* refers to the end of a matter or the end of an era.

Because our society appears to be in a frenzy of self-destruction, we must ask the question, what does the end of a civilization look like? What are the characteristics of a society on the way towards total collapse?

The media will always focus on the external problems of the day, but the real problems in society will never make the news.

Because God's Word is true and is given to us to gain perspective, this brief investigates the *disposition* of the remnant of God's people by looking at the marks of a dying society in Jeremiah 44.

Shortly before the destruction of Jerusalem in 589-586 BC, a core group of influential Jews escaped the Babylonian invasion by migrating to Egypt. Capturing Jeremiah the prophet, an aggregate of Jews forced Jeremiah to escape with them at "Migdol, and at Tahpanhes, and at Noph (Cairo), and in the country of Pathros (upper Egypt)" (44:1).

Jeremiah interrupted an annual religious cult ceremony to address their idolatrous practice and to warn them that they would not escape the judgment of God even in Egypt.

The people remained stiff necked and rejected the prophet's message. From this interaction, **we learn the following about the *terminus ad quem* of a society:**

The Terminus ad quem of a society is marked by the judgment of God.

Jeremiah 44:1-2 " The word that came to Jeremiah concerning all the Jews which dwell in the land of Egypt, which dwell at Migdol, and at Tahpanhes, and at Noph, and in the country of Pathros, saying, Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: You have seen all the disaster that I brought upon Jerusalem and upon all the cities of Judah. Behold, this day they are a desolation, and no one dwells in them . . .

Some catastrophes are not caused by an act of man, but an act of God.

Deuteronomy 32:39 - See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god with me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand.

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by a fanatical devotion to the principles contained in pagan religions.

Jeremiah 44:3 because of the evil that they committed, provoking me to anger, in that they went to make offerings and serve other gods that they knew not, neither they, nor you, nor your fathers.

The term "*evil*" is the opposite of "*good*" and refers to criminal behaviors that injure other human beings or their property; that is, violations of the Ten Commandments: dishonor to parents, lying, fraud, breach of contracts, murder, idolatry, and the unmooring of sexual restraint.

[News Headlines February 10, 2020 - "A new bill could finally make it legal for unmarried people to have sex in Virginia. Virginia is for lovers -- the married kind. According to state code, it's illegal for unmarried people to have consensual sex. Sure, it's not widely enforced -- but

Virginia Democrats say it's time to scratch the relic of a law for good. After potentially hundreds of years on the books, the Virginia House of Delegates repealed the "crime of fornication" last week (CNN).]

The source of values adopted by a society comes from the gods it worships. Gods are the source of law, the source of meaning, the source of purpose that energizes a nation whether that god be Allah, Shivah, Moloch, Self, or the Queen of Heaven (44:19). In this case they followed the liberal, permissive practices of other countries.

St. Paul observed decaying societies "exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images resembling mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles" (Romans 1:23). St. Stephen said the Jews were attached to **Remphan** (star god of Saturn or Moloch with hexagram star symbol) as "the star of your god whose images you made to worship" in Acts 7:43.

Our society seems to be entranced with sports stars, tattoo stars, Hollywood stars, porn stars, the science of stars, and aliens from beyond the stars. Very few seem to be attracted to the star of Bethlehem and the birth of God's Son.

In a dying society, pagan principles rebound and the elite develop a fanatical devotion to Eastern goddesses and the principles of Asherah worship.

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by antinomianism -- a rejection of God's law-order.

Jeremiah 44:5 But they did not listen or incline their ear, to turn from their evil and make no offerings to other gods.

[Note: indifference, forgetfulness, lack of concern, and insensibility to the Bible]

Jeremiah 44:6 Therefore my wrath and my anger were poured out and kindled in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem, and they became a waste and a desolation, as at this day.

Jeremiah 44:10 They have not humbled [crushed, contrite, broken] themselves even to this day, nor have they feared, nor walked in my law and my statutes that I set before you and before your fathers.

Jeremiah 3:21 A voice on the bare heights is heard, the weeping and pleading of Israel's sons because they have perverted [bend, twist, distort] their way; they have forgotten the LORD their God: [stubbornness (44:5)];

The LORD God is the Source of law, and the law is a product of His sovereignty and love. He gave them His law-order for their good to produce a virtuous people and an orderly society. The keeping of the Ten Commandments is the essence of sanity, and the breaking of them is the marrow of mental illness. To

reject His law is to reject the LORD God and to trade good for evil and virtue for vice.

Instead of walking straight and tall, these people became perverted, twisted, and bent. Acceptance of the Ten Commandments is the essence of mental health; and, the rejection of law causes the undesirable growth of stubbornness (44:5), fear and insecurity (44:8), wickedness and forgetfulness (44:9), arrogance (44:9) which leads to being "a horror, a curse, and a taunt," to other people (44:12).

And America? There was a time when plaques of the Ten Commandments hung proudly in classrooms, and we enjoyed Rockwell's America. It seems the "doctrine of the separation of church and state" was turned upside down to prevent the church from influencing the state. Now that memorials to the Ten Commandments have been banned in public places, the United States has been turn into Porn City, fornicating teens, unwed mothers, abortions, school shootings, gender-bender policies, burning of the American flag, cursing, blasphemy, and an over taxed society.

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by self-destructive behavior.

Jeremiah 44:7 And now thus says the Lord GOD of hosts, the God of Israel: Why do you commit this great evil against yourselves, to cut off from you man and woman, infant and child, from the midst of Judah, leaving you no remnant?

The self-destructive evil in this text is a reference to their idolatrous fixation on fictions and violations of law that invited the judgment of God -- acts of provocation that resulted in the destruction of Jerusalem, exile from their homeland, and the remnant's struggle for survival in Egypt . . . and Babylon.

And, what shall we say about self-destructive behaviors of Americans: tattoos, self-mutilation, fornication, homosexuality, alcoholism, drugs, pornography, divorce, total lack of sexual restraint, iconoclasm, slander, calumny against political enemies, stirring up racial division, thanklessness, endless wars, and blasphemy. What happened to "Father Knows Best," "Leave it to Beaver," and the town of "Mayberry"?

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by a blatant disregard of evil.

Jeremiah 44:9 Have you forgotten [ignored, disregarded] the evil of your fathers, the evil of the kings of Judah, the evil of their wives, your own evil, and the evil of your wives, which they committed in the land of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem?

These people had a series case of moral Alzheimer's.

Jeremiah asks a question, "Have you forgotten the evil of your fathers . . . kings . . . their wives . . . your own evil . . . the evil of your own wives . . . "?

Had these people learned anything from their history? Solomon's wives, Jezebel, Athaliah, and the cows of Bashan (Amos 4:1)?

The great tragedy of life is not that bad things happen, but that people fail to learn from their failures. But, it is worse than this! As the ashes burn out from the fires of a dying society, people call evil good, and good evil (Isaiah 5:20).

Sigmund Freud viewed religion as a human psychological distortion. "Religion is comparable to a childhood neurosis," he said. Viewing the world in terms of good and evil is a childlike quality, and the concept of evil is a childlike understanding of the world.

According to *shrinkiatrists* there is now no such thing as sin or evil. There is only bad genes, poor diets, malfunctions or malformations in the brain, and bad parenting.

According to the British Professor of Psychopathology, Simon Baron-Cohen, author of *The Science of Evil*, suggest the remedy to the problem of evil is to change its name. "My main goal," says Baron-Cohen, "is replacing the *unscientific* term 'evil' with the *scientific* term 'empathy.' "

What he means is that instead of calling someone evil we should say they have no empathy. Single-mindedness, says Baron, is the inability to "recognize and respond" to the feelings of others. A healthy empathy circuit allows us to feel others' pain and transcend single-minded focus on our own. Hummm? Isn't this the description of a liberal? The problems in the world are not due to sin or bad habits or rebellion against God's law, but dysfunctional feelings and a lack of compassion . . . of the female kind.

Wives are mentioned twice as it seems the women were the principal patrons of pagan practices going back to the time of Solomon (1 Kings 11:1-6), and who were passionately involved in offering incense to Ashtar, the Queen of Heaven (44:17).

As to America where good is evil and evil is good? In George Orwell's dystopian novel "1984," the policy of the ruling party was "war is peace," "ignorance is strength," and "slavery is freedom." Since 1949, Americans have added to the list: murder is life, pornography is art, Sodomy ain't naughty, queer is cute, profanity is piety, vice is virtue, masculinity is malignancy, feminism is favorable, gender is a choice, white is wrong, tax is terrific, and debt is duty.

Positive thinking will not make evil go away.

"The most effective way to destroy people is to deny and obliterate their own understanding of their history" (George Orwell).

"The real war will never get in the books." — Walt Whitman

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by inordinate trust in government to protect them.

Jeremiah 44:12 I will take the remnant of Judah who have set their faces to come to the land of Egypt to live, and they shall all be consumed. In the land of Egypt they shall fall; by the sword and by famine they shall be consumed. From the least to the greatest, they shall die by the sword and by famine, and they shall become a horror, a curse, and a taunt.

The remnant fled Jerusalem seeking protection under Pharaoh Hophra (*Apries*) King of Egypt. Their trust was vain. Within a few months, Babylon attacked Egypt and the many of the Jewish refugees were killed. But, the details of this invasion are fragmentary and unreliable. However, we do know that Pharaoh Hophra lost his throne in 570 BC in a military coup about a year after Jeremiah's death.

Good government is necessary, but even then, the Scripture exhorts men not to put their trust in princes (Psalm 118:8, 9).

With the rise of the welfare state, women divorce their husbands knowing the government will be a husband to take care of them. Fornicating women know that if they get pregnant, the government will pay their bills.

Even though the government will put one out seven men in jail and steals around 50 percent of a man's working wage, America's faith in the State is nothing short of spectacular. Though voters confidence in a particular administration seems to fluctuate between feverish extremes, Americans definitely believe in a big "Do More Government."

A January, 2018 NBC/WSJ poll found 58 percent of Americans agreed with the statement, "Government should do more to solve problems and help meet the needs of people." In the same poll, more than two-thirds of women said the government should "do more" along with majorities among all age groups measured, all races, ethnicities, and education levels and among independents voters." Democratic Candidate Bernie Sanders proposed the government should give jobs to every person that did not have one. The Washington Post published an article, "Hating Government Does not Solve Problems" as if loving more government solves all problems (June 28, 2017). President Ronald Reagan got it right: "Government is not the solution to our problem, it is the problem." He went on to say, ""The nine most terrifying words in the English language are: *I'm from the Government, and I'm here to help.*"

Francis Bacon observed, "We see the *government* of God over the world is hidden," which Bacon thought a good *model* for earthly rule. "Obscure and *invisible*" was how Bacon thought *government* worked best."

Thomas Jefferson believed, "That government is best which governs least . . ."

We would be better off to trust God for everything and depend on government for nothing.

At the end of this chapter we learn that the Egyptian government under which the Jews trusted was crushed by Babylon.

Jeremiah 44:30 Thus says the LORD, behold, I will give Pharaoh Hophra king of Egypt into the hand of his enemies and into the hand of those who seek his life, as I gave Zedekiah king of Judah into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, who was his enemy and sought his life.

Psalms 118:9 It is better to take refuge in the LORD than to trust in princes.

"If you trust government, you obviously failed history class" - Don Freeman.

PART II

Because God's Word is true and is given to us to gain perspective, we are investigating the *terminus ad quem* of a society by looking at Jeremiah 44.

The *terminus ad quem* of a society is marked by mobs of women marching in public demonstrations.

Jeremiah 44:8 Why do you provoke me to anger with the works of your hands, making offerings to other gods in the land of Egypt

Jeremiah 44:15 Then all the men who knew that their wives had made offerings to other gods, and all the women who stood by, a great assembly, all the people who lived in Pathros in the land of Egypt, answered Jeremiah: 'As for the word that you have spoken to us in the name of the LORD, we will not listen to you.'

Jeremiah disrupted a candle light parade in honor of the Queen of Heaven composed of pilgrims from all over Egypt, but waited to confront the assemblage until all the men were present so he could address his message to the agents of authority.

These women were not passive followers of a dead cult, but well-organized, religious activists.

Christians instinctively know something is wrong when women are out of the home and marching in the streets, away from their private duties in a parade promoting public programs.

Modern marches come to mind:

The Suffrage Movement

The 'Bra Burning' Miss America Protest

The *Ladies' Home Journal* Sit-In

The Equal Rights Amendment Marches

Take Back the Night

The Million Mom March

Ni Una Menos

Women's Equality Day

The March for Women's Lives

Defiantly Driving in Saudi Arabia

SlutWalk

The Women's Nasty March on Washington D.C., January, 2017 – "I am Ashley Judd," . . . and I am a feminist . . . our p—ies ain't for grabbing . . . they are for birthing new generations of nasty women.""

Free the Nipple Movement ([FrontPageLive](#))

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by weak, permissive men and strong assertive women.

Jeremiah 44:15-16 Then all the men who knew that their wives had made offerings to other gods, and all the women who stood by, a great assembly, all the people who lived in Pathros in the land of Egypt, answered Jeremiah: 'As for the word that you have spoken to us in the name of the LORD, we will not listen to you' . . . Ye and your wives have both spoken with your mouths, and fulfilled with your hand, saying, We will surely perform our vows that we have vowed, to burn incense to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her:

The term "women" is mentioned three times in this section, "wives" four times, and the pronoun "her" seven times. The noun "men" is mentioned four times.

The wives patronized the goddess (Inanna, Anat, Isis, Ishtar, Astarte, Astghik and possibly Asherah), and women led the worship services. Strong in vice, but weak in virtue.

Knowing their wives were involved in cultic rituals, the men did nothing to stop them. The women led the idolatrous rites while their weak, permissive

husbands complied with their sin. The opposite of courage is not cowardice, but compliance.

We hear much about permissive parenting, but here we have permissive husbands who can't or won't control their wives . . . and these women would not be controlled. Surrendering leadership of the family, the men rejected the admonition of Jeremiah: "We will not listen to you!"

The first principle of God's law order is found in Genesis 3:16 wherein men are given authority to rule their home. Eve usurped authority over Adam and God severely sanctioned her for it. *What God condemns early in history, He condemns throughout history.* A sick and dying society has women leaving the home and leading marches in the streets: "*My people — infants are their oppressors, and women rule over them*" (Isaiah 3:12).

This role reversal marked the end times of the remnant in Egypt. Thus, Jeremiah 44 leads us to conclude that a dying society is a matriarchal society.

"The feminist movement taught women to see themselves as victims of an oppressive patriarchy . . . *but a Self-imposed victimhood is not a recipe for happiness.*" — Phyllis Schlafly

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by a focus on feminine power.

Jeremiah 44:17 But we will do everything that we have vowed, make offerings to the queen of heaven and pour out drink offerings to her, as we did, both we and our fathers, our kings and our officials, in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem. For then we had plenty of food, and prospered, and saw no disaster.

Jeremiah 44:19 And the women said, "When we made offerings to the queen of heaven and poured out drink offerings to her, was it without our husbands' approval that we made cakes for her bearing her image and poured out drink offerings to her"?

The Queen of Heaven refers to a goddess titled *Inanna, Anat, Isis, Astarte, Hera,* and *Asherah*. Among Roman Catholics, Mary is honored as "the Queen of Heaven." The logo symbol on the famous Starbucks coffee cup is the goddess Ishtar.

Being the primary patrons of the goddess, it was the wives who burned incense and offered moon cakes to the female deity (See Ezekiel 8:14; Jeremiah 7:18). The offerings here are "cakes" shaped in the form of a moon or crescent in honor of the moon god, the wife of Baal or Asherah.

This was a fertility cult that worshiped the womb. Egypt was a cult center that accentuated vaginas and penises. The ankh also known as "crux ansata" (the

Latin for "cross with a handle") is Egypt's most famous fertility symbol. While looking like a circle on top of a cross," its meaning is attached to the uterus, the moon god and the shaft of Baal.

In India, the gods are often portrayed with a feminine face and a masculine body, Shiva for example. Women are seen as slightly superior to men in that they give birth to new life. Thus, the perfect person is one that acquires the characteristics of both males and females.

In America, the push to normalize transvestism, bathroom politics, and gender choice is no accident.

The nadir of Western Civilization appears to be upon us: The World Government under the auspices of the UN published their communist utopian Agenda 2030.

One of the goals includes the empowerment of women and the promotion of feminism.

"Adopt and strengthen sound policies and enforceable legislation for the promotion of gender equality and the empowerment of all women and girls at all levels."

"Realizing gender equality [radical feminism] and the empowerment of women and girls will make a crucial contribution to progress across all the goals and targets"

In this agenda statement, the term "boy" is mentioned 6 times, "girls" 13 times, "men" 18 times, and "women" is mentioned 33 times in this agenda. It is clearly pro-estrogen and anti-testosterone.

The phrase "promotion of gender equality" and "empowerment" is code for stripping men of power and financing radical feminism to take over human institutions.

Sweden boasts of having "The first feminist government in the world" (BBC News, February 2017).

In Sweden, the feminist movement conquered the country resulting in gender neutral sociology, sexual playground equipment, romper room simulated sex, transvestite training, women at work and men pushing baby buggies through the streets. The feminism of the culture has led to a soft, weak, passive estrogen-led society. Hordes of unruly Muslim male immigrants prowl through the streets looking for beautiful blonds to plunder.

In England, there are so many women getting divorces and living in apartment complexes by themselves some high rises are called "male deserts."

In America you can see little girls and big ones wearing T-shirts with the words,

Girls can do anything boys can do.

50% of America. 100% nasty.

A woman's place is in the house and in the senate.

What boys can do, girls can do better.

I'm a feminist. What's your superpower?

Hear me roar!

Fight like a girl!

Women are here to #slay.

Thus, Jeremiah 44 leads us to conclude that a dying society is led by women that roar and men that are as meek as a mouse.

The terminus ad quem of a society is marked by deception led by women who have fallen into the sin of Eve.

Jeremiah 44:18 But since we left off making offerings to the queen of heaven and pouring out drink offerings to her, we have lacked everything and have been consumed by the sword and by famine."

While men are prone to neglect their duty to God, women are prone to deception and the usurpation of leadership. St. Paul states a truth, "and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor" (1 Timothy 2:14). His commands to men and women were designed to prevent the repeat of the sin of Eve in the church. No, this is not a misogynistic statement. It is an inspired text energized by the Spirit of God for our edification (2 Timothy 3:16). The headcovering symbol (1 Corinthians) designed to preserve God's law-order, has been strongly rejected by feminists and feminized men.

In the garden, it was Eve who was deceived, not Adam. And, the wretched thing about deception is that the deceived does not know they are deceived. And, "No!" Women do not have a monopoly on deceit. Men can be deceived also. But, in order to prevent a repeat of Eve's sin in the new creation, a high probability, the apostle forbid women to lead public prayers or to teach men in the church (1 Timothy 2:8-15). (See author's commentary on Male and Female Roles in the Church, <https://nikeinsights.fanguardian.org/forums/topic/the-danger-of-female-pastors/>)

Here in Jeremiah 44, the sin of Eve is repeated. Women rebelled against God's law order, and the men approved.

The women speak, and they offer a reason for their cultic practices stating some facts but arriving at the wrong conclusion -- that their suffering in exile was due to a failure of devotion to the moon goddess. Nothing could be further from the truth.

Jeremiah confronted them!

Jeremiah 44:21 "As for the offerings that you offered in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem, you and your fathers, your kings and your officials, and the people of the land, did not the LORD remember them? Did it not come into his mind?"

Jeremiah 44:22 The LORD could no longer bear your evil deeds and the abominations that you committed. Therefore, your land has become a desolation and a waste and a curse, without inhabitant, as it is this day.

Jeremiah 44:23 It is because you made offerings and because you sinned against the LORD and did not obey the voice of the LORD or walk in his law and in his statutes and in his testimonies that this disaster has happened to you, as at this day."

The women committed a logical fallacy assuming that Ashtar really existed and had power to bless and curse. The truth is that the LORD IS and He alone IS God with the power to bless or curse. It was not a lack of devotion to the moon goddess that caused their pain, but transgression against the laws of the LORD God that was the cause of their suffering.

The Remedy

Jeremiah 44:24 Jeremiah said to all the people and all the women, "Hear the word of the LORD, all you of Judah who are in the land of Egypt."

The message is addressed to all the people and to "all the women." But, these people, especially the women, were all mouth and no ears.

Deep sins call for deep repentance. Having their ears plugged from the Word of God, these people acted like jellyfish going with the flow in the current of the fertility cult.

Jeremiah called the people to shut up and to put "their ears on;" to reverse their course; to change channels; to leave their liberal "think tank;" and, to listen anew to the Word of God.

If they did not heed His Word, judgment would come up on them like a storm . . . and it did (44:27).

Pride goes before destruction and indifference to truth before a fall (See: Proverbs 16:18).

On August 31, 2015, Rush Limbaugh interviewed former Vice President Dick Cheney and his lesbian daughter Mary to promote their new book "Exceptional."

In the course of conversation, Rush asked the authors possibly the most important question ever asked on his show.

"What is the moral authority of the United States . . . and why is it exceptional"?

Dick Cheney delivered an answer referencing the "Constitution," WWI, and America's victory in WWII. He sought to communicate America's superiority comes from its military victories around the world. There was no mention of God, the Bible, or the Ten Commandments.

Apparently, Dick Cheney and his lesbo daughter Mary believe that might is right; that moral authority comes from America's military strength; that is, because America is big and strong, it has moral authority.

With all due respect Mr. Cheney, moral authority does not come from military might and huge armies. Wasn't this the exact thinking of Genghis Khan, Julius Caesar, Pol Pot, Mao Tse Tung, Lenin, and Joseph Stalin?

Moral authority is not germane to a democracy or even the U.S. amoral Constitution. The Greeks had a democracy and a powerful military with all the decadence of modern societies.

Moral authority comes from the Lord Jesus Christ, His Law-word (the Bible), and a nation's adherence to the Ten Commandments.

Romans 13:1 . . . For there is no legitimate authority except from God, and those legitimate authorities that exist have been instituted by God.

Psalms 19:7 The law of the LORD is perfect, reviving the soul; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple;

Isaiah 8:20 To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

Matthew 5:19 Therefore whoever relaxes one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever does them and teaches them will be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

Matthew 28:18 And Jesus came and said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me."

Colossians 2:10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all rule and authority.

With all due respect, Mr. Cheney, America has lost its moral authority because it has forsaken Christ as King and His Law-word. Because the United States has declared war on the Ten Commandments, approves the murders babies, promotes the dissolution of the family through Planned Parenthood and the ACLU, sanctions Sodomite marriages, taxes the nation into debt, approves the Zionist genocide of Palestinians, and is actively purging U.S. agencies of a Christian voice, the United States has lost its moral authority and therefore its exceptionalism.

With all due respect Mr. Cheney, America is no longer “exceptional.” It has taken on many of the characteristics of pagan, secular Rome and is destined for the graveyard of nations. Only deep repentance and a return to “No king, but King Jesus” and His Law-order can America ever regain its moral authority.

With all due respect, Mr. Cheney and Mary the Lesbo, listening to you two talk about “moral authority” is like listening to Al Sharpton talk about White Lives Matter.

If you don’t know the difference between male and female, and God’s natural law for marriage, you aren’t qualified to address “morals” on any subject.

And, with all due respect, Rush Limbaugh, shame on you for holding up two moral midgets as role models we should listen to on the “moral authority” of the Godless corporation running this country. And, shame on you for accepting their answer that might is right.

With all due respect, Mr. Cheney and Mary the Lesbo, you two need to repent of your rebellion against God’s law-order and surrender to the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ who alone is the Savior of mankind.

Acts 20:21 testifying both to Jews and to Greeks of repentance toward God and of faith in our Lord Jesus Christ.

***“No king is saved by the multitude of an army;
A mighty man is not delivered by great strength.
A horse [or a modern tank] is a vain hope for safety;
Neither shall it deliver any by its great strength.***

*Behold, the eye of the LORD is on those who fear Him,
On those who hope in His mercy,
To deliver their soul from death,
And to keep them alive in famine.*

***Our soul waits for the LORD;
He is our help and our shield. [and our ONLY “protector”]
For our heart shall rejoice in Him,
Because we have trusted in His holy name.***

*Let Your mercy, O LORD, be upon us,
Just as we hope in You."
[Psalm 33:16-22, Bible, NKJV]*

39. Stop Praying for Politicians

Jeremiah 17:16

"Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me (for their welfare): for I will not hear thee" (Jeremiah 7:16).

Should Christians pray for their country?

Preachers usually say "Yes" and then quote 2 Chronicles 7:14 or 2 Timothy 2:1-4. (See Lifetime Theology); Franklyn Graham, Robert Jeffress)

But, the book of Jeremiah says, "No." There is a time to stop praying.

With the accession of Jehoiakim (609-508 BC) to the throne all hope of averting the ruin of the country had passed away.

Jeremiah preached to pilgrims coming to Jerusalem on fast day (probably Rosh Hashanah or another fast day).

There comes a time in the course of politics when government becomes so iniquitous that politicians forfeit the right to honor and respect, the blessing of the prayers of God's people, and the support of the people through taxation.

There was a day in the history of Israel that God commanded Jeremiah to **STOP PRAYING FOR POLITICIANS and to CONFRONT THE REBELS.**

POLITICIANS NEED CONFRONTATION WHEN THEY . . .

(1) Practice deception (7:8): "Behold, ye trust in lying words, that cannot profit."

Consider how modern politicians practice deception which include lies, slander, defamation, sophistication, utopianism, betrayal, falsehood, and fraud.

John Whitehead called the United States and "Empire of Lies."

"Who needs direct repression," asked philosopher Slavoj Zizek, "when one can convince the chicken to walk freely into the slaughterhouse"?

How can God bless a nation with a Congress (a session of baboons, apes, and primates) and their sycophant media that mass-produce an assembly line of lies, distortion, deceit, propaganda, slander, falsehood, fiction, myths, fraud, defamation, spin, and fake news?

(2) Practice theft (7:9): .” . . you steal . . .”

Consider how modern politicians steal, take bribes, and lay on the people a burdensome system of taxation for sordid gain that transfers wealth from the people to the State.

[Q: How did Hillary Clinton, a senator and later Secretary of State, become worth \$240,000,000? (2017)]

How can God bless a nation with a lusty, covetous government that defrauds, deprives, and dupes the people of their wealth in the form of taxation: food taxes, fuel taxes, income taxes, capital gains taxes, Medicare taxes, health care taxes, phone taxes, shoe taxes, court fines, disposal fees, dog licenses, fishing licenses, driving licenses, environmental fees, camping fees, estate taxes, food and beverages licenses, franchise business taxes, garbage taxes, gift taxes, gun ownership permits, ammunition taxes, inspection fees, property taxes, car license taxes, interest taxes, capital gains taxes, cigarette taxes, beer and wine taxes, corporate taxes, school taxes, unemployment taxes, parking meter taxes, passport fees, professional license fees, building fees, sales taxes, toll booth taxes, self-employment taxes, social security taxes, state park entrance fees, telephone taxes, traffic fines, utility taxes, waste management taxes, water rights fees, water usage fees, zoning permits, and park on the side of the road fees.

(3) Practice murder (7:9): .” . . murder . . .”

Politicians often practice the politics of destruction. The weapon of choice among them is slander and defamation . . . and majority can't resist empowering pregnant women to kill baby boys and girls.

Consider how modern politicians are involved in murder, abortion, infanticide, assassinations, legislation for "assisted suicide," and slander of opponents with the intent of destroying their opponents reputation, business, and even their life.

[Example: Consider how the media and other congressmen continued to slander President Trump even after investigator Robert Mueller and 18 professional prosecutors reported there was no evidence of collusion (2016-2019)]

How can God bless America when politicians and its elected leaders are professional accusers, slanderers, and spinsters?

How can God bless imperialist United States that has offensively attacked seven countries to shed blood and cause mayhem? Don't Christians believe in "blessed are the peacemakers"?

(4) Practice sexual immorality(7:9): " . . . and commit adultery."

Consider how politicians engage in fornication, adultery, sexual promiscuity, Sodomy, lesbianism, and other forms of sexual immorality. Many of America's presidents support the promotion of LGBTQ perversions and the demoralization of America: Bill Clinton, George Bush, Barack Obama, and Donald Trump.

Since the 1990's, Congress has paid out \$17 million to settle sexual assault claims against 260 member of congress according to CNN.

All this irresponsible sexual behavior increases social decay: STD, teen pregnancy, Abortion, divorce, high taxes, and the destruction of the family.

How can God bless a president or nation that applauds abominations that carried ancient civilizations into graveyard of nations (Romans 1:32)?

(5) Practice oath breaking (7:10): " . . . and swear falsely . . ."

Consider how modern politicians can no longer be trusted to keep their word, promises, or oaths of office. Many seem more devoted to illegal aliens, foreigners, and internationalists than to America and its limited constitutional powers.

How can the LORD bless America when its politicians are famous for justifying the breaking of their oaths, treaties, covenants, contracts, and bonds?

(6) Practice of idolatry (7:10): " . . . and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other gods whom ye know not."

Having rejected distinctive principles of the theocracy, and Jehoikim being personally a secular man, the maintenance of the YHWH worship was no longer a public priority. Multiculturalism swamped the country like a flood. All religions became equal (Jeremiah 8:4-9:24).

Idolatry involves the adoption an alien law order; to have another Source of law rather than the LORD God; that is, the adoption of permissive statutes of pagan nations that pulls society down into the gutters of hell.

Consider how modern politicians practice idolatry, paganism, nature-based spirituality, polytheism, multiculturalism, statist-Baalism, utopianism, Satanism, and the practices of mother-goddess worship, Islam, and eastern mysticism opposed to law of the LORD God. People no longer speak of the Creator; rather, school teachers affectionately refer to "Mother Nature" with cultic devotion.

How can God bless a nation where people practice idolatry, tattooing, "fornication (*porneia*), uncleanness (dirty deeds), inordinate affection (lustful passion), evil concupiscence (desire for the forbidden), and covetousness (greed, fraud), which is idolatry" (Colossians 3:5)?

(7) Practice of fraud (7:11): ". . . a den of robbers."

Consider how modern politician rob the people through taxation, wealth redistribution, inflation, printing of paper money, and usury. Many become rich practicing bribocracy and taking hush money, reimbursements, graft, gratuities, kickbacks, and perks, in some "pay to play" scheme.

How can God bless a nation that has the best politicians money can buy?

(8) Practicing usurpation feminism (7:18): "The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger."

Consider how women have moved out of the home into the work place and politics; how feminazis play the victim; how the nations have exalted women to the status of deity.

There is an on-going feminist takeover of society. Politicians everywhere are bowing to feminine weaknesses, emotionalism, and deception. Society has shifted the epicenter of concern to Mother Nature, Queen of Heaven, Mother Earth, fanny studies, gender-bender choices, and riot grrrls.

Kara King: "Our weapon is sex. Our vaginas, breasts, hips, legs, and our asses are to men what emotions are to us. Sex is their greatest weakness.

"I'm tough, I'm ambitious, and I know exactly what I want. If that makes me a bitch, okay." — Madonna

"The thing women have yet to learn is nobody gives you power. You just take it." — Roseanne Barr

"I love to see a young girl go out and grab the world by the lapels. Life's a bitch. You've got to go out and kick ass." — Maya Angelou

What a contrast to the quiet Proverbs 31 woman who is more valuable than a stash of rubies.

How can God bless a nation that rebels against His law-order?

(9) These proud, self-reliant political practices arouse the ire of the Lord God (7:19): ". . . they provoke me to anger"?

We started this study by asking *should Christians pray for their country?*

We noted that preachers usually say "Yes" and then quote 2 Chronicles 7:14.

But, this promise was given early in the history of Israel during the reign of Solomon following the completion of the temple. It is a general promise applicable to a nation building its foundation on obedience to God's law.

But, a lot of history happened between Solomon and Jeremiah.

In Solomon's time, the nation was young and eager to obey; in Jeremiah's time the nation was cemented in its rebellion.

In Solomon's time it was perfectly appropriate to pray for the general welfare of the young nation; in Jeremiah's time, it was completely inappropriate to pray for welfare of the morally bankrupt nation.

There comes a time in the course of politics when government becomes so iniquitous that politicians forfeit the right to honor and respect, the blessing of the prayers of God's people, and the support of the people through taxation.

Moreover, life in America has become a gut-wrenching, soul-sucking, virtue-vanishing, vice-flourishing existence with joy robbers in Congress seeking the total subjugation of the total man to total government.

When society degenerates into a pagan hellhole because of the maddening policies of liberal politicians, the God of the Bible says, **STOP PRAYING for the welfare of politicians** (7:16):

*"Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me (for their welfare):
for I will not hear thee"*

NO MORE PRAYER BREAKFASTS FOR POLITICAL LEADERS!!

Why would any Christian go to a prayer breakfast with Muslims, liberals, Jews, Hindus, Mormons, Satanists, statist, and liberals who deny the Word of God to pray for the president and the country?

Christianity is a bloody religion that believes blood is the currency of the spirit world. It is not part of the approved religions by the New World Order.

Hebrews 9:22 "In fact, according to the Torah, almost everything is purified with blood; indeed, without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of sins." CSB

That Christ came to bring peace to the world is stinkin' thinkin'.

Matthew 10:34 "'Do not supposed (think) that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I did not come to bring peace, but a sword."

There is no "power of prayer," but Christians can lay hold of the Power of the living and true God by praying together!

Pray for repentance, confess sins, intercede for Christian people, pray for courage to stand up and confront the psychopaths, but stop being an undiscerning Christian parroting the meaningless pledges.

One of the luck charms quoted by the people in Jeremiah's day was, "The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD" (7:4) chanted to charm and placate the people. America's mesmerizing chant is "God bless America." But, is God somehow obligated to dump magic pixie dust from heaven on America when Christians carol this statist mantra?

STOP SAYING, "GOD BLESS AMERICA!" How can a holy God bless a nation given to war, lies, abortion, feminism, Sodomy, lesbianism, transvestitism, asset forfeiture, justice for the rich, gotcha journalism, deep state corruption, voter fraud, redacted history, mandatory masking, theft through foreclosures and oppressive taxation of the People?

"This is a nation that obeyeth not the voice of the LORD their God, nor receiveth correction: truth is perished, and is cut off from their mouth . . . for the LORD hath rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath" - Jeremiah 7:28, 29.

Should we ask God to bless America if the nation turns Marxist? Communist? Homosexual? Tyrannical? Imperialistic? A nation of warmongers? A band of robbers?

How can God bless a nation when a Congressmen says, "God is of 'No Concern of This Congress'" (Rep. Ralph Nadler, 2021)?

Is it God's will that a proud, Christ-rejecting, Sodomy-promoting nation succeed?

Doesn't the "D" in American Democracy stands for "Dictatorship"? Attorney John Whitehead thinks so.

"The American people have been treated like enemy combatants, to be spied on, tracked, scanned, frisked, searched, subjected to all manner of intrusions, intimidated, invaded, raided, manhandled, censored, silenced, shot at, locked up, and denied due process."

No, I haven't given up on America, and neither should you. Rather, change your tactics. Stop praying for blessing and start praying for courage to put your boot on the necks of America's real enemies.

You may **CONFRONT THEM, REBUKE THEM, AND CALL UPON GOD TO CURSE THEM**, but you, dear Christian, are **not permitted to pray for God's blessing upon them** (7:2):

"Stand in the gate of the LORD'S house, and proclaim there this word, and say, Hear the word of the LORD . . . "

." . . If anyone has no love for the Lord, let him be accursed. Our Lord, come!" (1 Corinthians 16:22) . . .

"If anyone is preaching to you a gospel contrary to the one you received, let him be accursed" (Galatians 1:9).

"Imprecations are appeals to the Judge of the earth to play the part of Judge" (Peter Leithart)

Moreover, in America, the Founding Fathers knew the nation would have difficulties being a virtuous republic and declared the People have a **DUTY** to overthrow nefarious political leaders by **ANY MEANS NECESSARY**:

" all experience hath shewn, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security." (Declaration of Independence).

After Jehoiakim heard Jeremiah's preaching, he was so enraged at this sermon that he would have executed Jeremiah had it not been for the influence of Ahikam (Jeremiah 26).

In 605-586 B.C., the Babylonians invaded Israel, killed a third of the people, and deported the surviving remnant (33%) to Babylon. At the end of their judgment, God healed the nation and never again did they plunge into idolatry. Given a second chance, they returned to rebuild a new nation 70 years later (535 B.C.).

In America, God's judgment looks more like an invasion of millions of unarmed, uneducated Mexicans and Latinos into the country not to deport us, but to deplete and deprive America of its resources.

Addendum on the duty to stop paying taxes to a corrupt government that promotes pagan law and liberal French Utopianism:

George Washington, James Madison, Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Franklin and John Adams – had this to say about taxes and government.

Consider the following:

Thomas Jefferson:

The democracy will cease to exist when you take away from those who are willing to work and give to those who would not.

To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical.

Posted on by_Mark Biernat

Thomas Jefferson on taxes:

Did you know for the first 140 years of the America (1776-1916) there was virtually no direct taxation on American citizens? In 1802 when Thomas Jefferson took office he eliminated all direct taxation on US citizens. Tax free America. This was Jefferson's vision and I have quotes from him to back it up.

There were times in US history, like war, when it came back temporarily but the federal government was established to protect citizens against the burden of government. There were some excise taxes and duties on foreign imports but government was kept to a minimum and each person was free and responsible for their own life. This was the vision on the founding fathers for establishing the United States of America.

During the tax free time in America, citizens rich, poor and middle class of the United States grew richer and there was no social state, which was seen by the founding fathers as the road to serfdom. The whole world envied the US and tried to immigrate. If you want to read even more on the history of taxation in the United States including Jefferson's views on taxation the US Treasury has an article.

Jefferson was the founding fathers whose vision of the United States was one of freedom for people to live their lives without the excess burden of government.

And the fore-horse of this frightful team is public debt. Taxation follows that, and in its train wretchedness and oppression.

Thomas Jefferson in his state of the Union Address wrote about the "the freedom of labor from taxation." He believed government should protect its citizens from internal taxation.

"I cannot but hope that Congress in reviewing their resources will find means to meet the intermediate interest of this additional debt without recurring to new taxes, and applying to this object only the ordinary progression of our revenue. Its extraordinary increase in times of foreign

war will be the proper and sufficient fund for any measures of safety or precaution which that state of things may render necessary in our neutral position."

Jefferson continued:

"Direct taxation was to be avoided, this could be done by avoiding expense that are not necessary. when merely by avoiding false objects of expense we are able, without a direct tax, without internal taxes, and without borrowing to make large and effectual payments toward the discharge of our public debt and the emancipation of our posterity from that mortal canker, it is an encouragement, fellow citizens, of the highest order to proceed as we have begun in substituting economy for taxation, and in pursuing what is useful for a nation placed as we are, rather than what is practiced by others under different circumstances.

...but sound principles will not justify our taxing the industry of our fellow citizens to accumulate treasure for wars to happen we know not when, and which might not, perhaps, happen but from the temptations offered by that treasure."

Alexander Hamilton:

"If Congress can employ money indefinitely to the general welfare... The powers of Congress would subvert the very foundation, the very nature of the limited government established by the people of America."

John Adams:

"The moment the idea is admitted into society that property is not as sacred as the laws of God, and that there is not a force of law and public justice to protect it, anarchy and tyranny commence."

James Madison:

"As a man is said to have a right to his property, he may be equally said to have a property in his rights. Where an excess of power prevails, property of no sort is duly respected. No man is safe in his opinions, his person, his faculties, or his possessions."

"If Congress can do whatever in their discretion can be done by money, and will promote the General Welfare, the Government is no longer a limited one, possessing enumerated powers, but an indefinite one, subject to particular exceptions."

"It is sufficiently obvious, that persons and property are the two great subjects on which Governments are to act; and that the rights of persons, and the rights of property, are the objects, for the protection of which

Government was instituted. These rights cannot well be separated."

"There are more instances of the abridgment of the freedom of the people by gradual and silent encroachments of those in power than by violent and sudden usurpations."

George Washington:

"No taxes can be devised which are not more or less inconvenient and unpleasant."

"The basis of our political systems is the right of the people to make and to alter their Constitutions of Government. But the Constitution which at any time exists, 'till changed by an explicit and authentic act of the whole People is sacredly obligatory upon all."

"[W]e ought to deprecate the hazard attending ardent and susceptible minds, from being too strongly, and too early prepossessed in favor of other political systems, before they are capable of appreciating their own."

Benjamin Franklin:

"I am for doing good to the poor, but I differ in opinion of the means. I think the best way of doing good to the poor, is not making them easy in poverty, but leading or driving them out of it. In my youth I traveled much, and I observed in different countries, that the more public provisions were made for the poor, the less they provided for themselves, and of course became poorer. And, on the contrary, the less was done for them, the more they did for themselves, and became richer."

"No nation was ever ruined by trade, even seemingly the most disadvantageous."

Did you know for the first 140 years of the America (1776-1916) there was virtually no direct taxation on American citizens?

Why are we paying taxes now to support feminism, Sodomy, abortion, and the promotion of Islam?

40. God's Judgment on a Nation

Isaiah 19

Is God judging America?

While judgment is His “strange work,” He has judged nations in the past (Isaiah 28:21).

Let's take a look at Isaiah 19 and see how God Judges the nations so we can discern if God is weighing us in His balances (Isaiah 19).

How the Lord Judged Egypt

1. The Spread of Fear: “The heart of Egypt shall melt in the midst of it.”

Circa 725, Egypt became a nation with dilated pupils. Rumor mills sounded the alarm about an Assyrian military invasions and the collapse of the political structure. Hearts melted like butter and knees a knockin' could be heard all the way to Luxor.

Consider any recent headlines and look at how the media spreads fear:

“Fear steers Wall Street in rough week” (UPI, Sept. 18, 08).

Credit crisis, recession fear sink Wall Street (Reuters, Oct. 7, 2008).

“Fear has tightened its grip on investors worldwide even as the United States” (WPIX News, Oct. 9).

Recession fear plunders Wall Street, Dow dives 678.91 (NY Reuters: Oct. 9, 2008).

AOC: Millennials fear the world will end in 12 years due to climate change. In fact, there have been over 41 predictions . . . and none of them have come true according to Breitbart (September 2019).

2. Social Division and Class Warfare: “So I will incite Egyptians against Egyptians” Is. 19:2).

Egyptians were divided politically on a strategy to survive Assyrian imperialism. Egyptian hawks wanted to strengthen the military, the pacifists preferred surrender.

Consider how this country is clearly divided between liberals and conservatives, socialists and communists, Democrats and Republicans, gun owners and those who want to ban all guns, LGBTQ community and Christians . . . and there is no middle ground. Only a dictator or conversion can unite this nation.

3. Environmental Disasters: “And the waters shall fail from the sea, and the river shall be wasted and dried up” (Is. 19:5).

Metaphorically speaking, the Nile is the life blood of Egypt. It is the longest river in the world and only drops about a foot in a thousand miles. Yet, Isaiah predicted this great river would dry up for a season; that is, God speaks to men through environmental disasters.

Ever heard of Hurricane Katrina, Valdez oil spill, Hurricane Gustav, the Midwest floods of 2008, or the Super Tuesday Tornado outbreak, or the California fires of 2007? California has four seasons: rainy season, mud season, drought season, and fire season. All these disasters drain the nation’s resources.

Some clerics see natural disasters as a climate question and not a theological one. The Bible, however, explicitly traces natural disasters back to the hand of God. He sent the rain during the time of Noah's time. He sent the darkness, the locust, and the plagues during the Egyptian judgment. He ordered the earthquake that swallowed the rebellious sons of Korah. He commanded the storm that created the story of Jonah. And, our Lord stilled the fierce wind on Galilee.

4. Economic Woes: “Those who cast a line in the Nile will mourn.”

The Nile was to Egypt what the credit-based banking system is to America. Are not the bank closings, the crash on Wall Street, the bankruptcies of AIG and Freddie Mac and Fanny Mae, and Congress having to expand the money supply and indebtedness of the United States by trillions dollars evidence that God is displeased with our nation?

Americans can't go a week without some economist predicting a world-wide recession. Just a burp in the Middle East impacts oil prices. When gasoline prices peaked over four dollars a gallon, the media began to talk about the “greatest transfer of wealth” in world history (2008) — wealth going to our adversaries: Islamic oil rich nations. When Israel paid tribute to their enemies, they knew they were being judged by God (See the Book of Judges).

Consider all the disasters that have hit this nation in the Midwest, California, Florida, and Gulf Coast since the writing of this article.

Why can't Americans perceive God's judgment during the greatest economic crisis of her history? Trillions in debt? *Maybe, it is because we have forsaken our Source of understanding, the Word of God.*

5. Political Stupidity: “The princes of Zoan are mere fools . . . the advice of Pharaoh’s wisest advisors has become stupid.”

When God is displeased with a nation, he gives them fools for leaders - -fools with child-like personalities (Is. 3:12).

Is it an accident that political commentators have said about President Bush that he is too stupid to be president? Comments about his ineptness abound. What about other presidential candidates? Obama was freshman senator who has never run a business and possibly the least qualified candidate for president in American history. Even Senator McCain said that he lacked knowledge about economic issues and his lack-luster campaign has brought his qualifications into question. Even the mental acumen of billionaire Donald Trump has been vigorously challenged.

That America can absorb millions of illegal immigrants without socio-economic impact seems naive and childish.

It seems like some politicians got into the gene pool when no lifeguard was on duty.

Democrats are now talking about taxing the rich into poverty, free healthcare, free college education, and a guaranteed income for everyone. The wonderful thing about free is you get someone else to pay for it.

Mark Twain refused to use the words "fool" and "politician" in the same sentence lest he be redundant.

According to Fox News, only 13% of the people approve of work of senators and legislators in Congress. But, almost nothing compares to the stupidity of Americans about politics and the deep corruption within our government. Rick Shenkman, an associate professor of history at George Mason University, the editor and founder of the school's History News Network, blistered the keys on his computer writing his new book, "Just How Stupid Are We"?

Rush Limbaugh said because stupidity and lying through your teeth isn't a crime, idiots get elected to Congress.

There is a limit to intelligence, but there seems to be no limit on stupidity. When a nation rejects God's law order, idiots get elected to State legislatures and to Congress.

6. Feminization of a Nation

Isaiah 19:16 In that day shall Egypt be like unto women: and it shall be afraid and fear because of the shaking of the hand of the LORD of hosts, which he shaketh over it.

When a nation's leaders are feminized, the nation loses the strength to defend itself. The character of the nation becomes irrational and emotional, soft and pitiful, loud and verbose – a nation of nasty, angry women (Judd).

Today's feminists promote baby killing, open borders, internationalism, global warming taxes, vegetarianism, fairness and equality of poverty, communism, universal health care, gender neutrality, hate for men, elimination of red meat, promotion of women to leadership positions, toleration of Sodomy and lesbianism, banning of the Second Amendment, abortion in Africa, giving the wealth of the nation to poor countries, people, and ethnic groups.

Woe to the man, home, or nation that is led by women!

The one reason for God's judgment on a nation is because the leaders and the people reject the law of the LORD, transgress His commandments, and forsake Him (2 Chronicles 12:1-5).

In Summary, is God judging America? It is God's will that every humanistic, Christ-rejecting government fail. Can there be any doubt in your mind that the Creator is very displeased with our sin-loving, rebellious nation? New gods have arisen in America. We tolerate the killing of the unborn, minds sizzling on the griddle of pornography, feasting on the shame produced by Hollywood, high crimes by corrupt judges, unethical economic practices by Bankers, unconstitutional taxation on the incomes of working Americans, and the unrestrained, undisciplined, pork bills of Congress. Yes, God is at work!

Psalm 110:6 He shall judge among the nations. . .

A Christian Perspective

7. God will judge His enemies; therefore, do not fret (Psalm 37:1-3).

He is already judging his enemies. Not only will there be a catastrophic judgment in the future, wrath is already leaking from the throne- Romans 1:18ff

Make sure you are not on His hit list; and make sure your enemies are His enemies.

Psalm 139:19-23 Surely thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men .For they speak against thee wickedly, and thine enemies take thy name in vain. Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

These are wonderful times to be a Christian. There are so many opportunities to speak out for Christ. Be prepared to go to war when evil comes knockin' on your door. God will use you to rebuke and confront His enemies.

Fret Not! God Judges Evildoers

Psalm 37:1 A Psalm of David. Fret not thyself because of evildoers, neither be thou envious against the workers of iniquity. For they shall soon be cut down like the grass, and wither as the green herb. Trust in the LORD, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed.

8-10 Cease from anger, and forsake wrath: fret not thyself in any wise to do evil. For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the LORD, they shall inherit the earth. For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be.

Psalm 37:4 Delight thyself also in the LORD; and he shall give thee the desires of thine heart. The Problem of Fretting About Government

Psalm 37:1 Fret not thyself because of evildoers, neither be thou envious against the workers of iniquity.

We live in disturbing times. Because we are bombarded by news from the media, and because the news is nearly all negative, it is only natural for a righteous man to be angry over the fools in government, Congressional spending, government tyranny, and statutes passed by Congress to control our lives and rob us of freedom. There is not a day that goes by that some politician doesn't want to take away your guns, your cars, your plastic straws, your 16 ounce cola, your steak. Add to this the daily criminal reports from our local T.V. station and it is more than a good man can absorb and assimilate. It seems to be the whole goal of the media is to keep us angry and upset.

The word “not” negates the word “fret.” The command “Fret not” is a Hithpael verb, reflexive in action, meaning do not allow yourself to be angry and upset by lawbreakers and those doing injury to others; that is, do not give them the power to control your attitude . . . or joy . . . or positive hope in God. He is not saying be a passive spectator or not to do something. He is addressing our emotional response to wrongdoers we cannot confront or control—like civil rulers.

41. The Politics of Division

I Kings 12

2 Kings 12:16 So when all Israel saw that the king hearkened not unto them, the people answered the king, saying, What portion have we in David? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse: to your tents, O Israel: now see to thine own house, David. So Israel departed unto their tents.

“If the 2016 election cycle taught us anything, it may be that our country is more deeply divided than many of us ever imagined. And the distance between us — between the wealthy and the barely-making-it, the urban and the rural, white people and people of color, the more educated and the less educated — is often so vast that we can find almost nothing of consequence that we agree on, from a vision for the future to our core values to the very facts that underlie our most critical convictions. In this series of conversations, we’ll probe the roots of these divisions, explore as many “Americas” as we can through the authentic voices of a diverse group of Americans, and, we hope, create some empathy and new understanding in the process.” (Aspen Ideas)

Division is not pretty. An arm severed from the body, a foot from a leg, or the head of a goat lying in the street is not under anyone’s definition of good.

America is divided. The great secular American experiment has proven to be a disaster. With a departure from the Christian faith, it just isn’t possible to take people from many nations, cultures, and religions and unite them under a banner of freedom controlled by a totalitarian secular democratic police state.

Division is good when men revolt against apostates and the rule of tyrants.

There was a day in Israel when the nation was divided, and studying it can help us get to the root problems of division in our time.

1 Kings 12:16 “So when all Israel saw that the king hearkened not unto them, the people answered the king, saying, What portion have we in David? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse: to your tents, O Israel: now see to thine own house, David. So Israel departed unto their tents.”

“to your tents, O Israel,” is vernacular referring to lawful secession of the ten tribes from the nation. Let’s take a look at why the nation was divided.

First, government oppressed the people with taxation.

When Rehoboam, the son of Solomon, ascended the throne, he traveled north to Shechem to be confirmed as king. While Rehoboam was the rightful heir to the throne, he still needed the consent of the governed to rule over them. Thus, the trek north was to meet with the representatives of the ten tribes in order to renegotiate a government service contract, and to obtain authority to govern.

The one and only issue raised at the political summit was the issue of taxes:

1 Kings 12:4 Thy father made our yoke grievous: now therefore make thou the grievous service of thy father, and his heavy yoke which he put upon us, lighter, and we will serve thee.

Solomon produced an era of unprecedented peace and prosperity (for his administration), but at the cost of lowering the standard of living for his citizens. The people needed relief, and pleaded with Rehoboam to reduce the tax burden—a wise, reasonable, just request.

Second, a tyrant came to power.

Solomon had a thousand wives, but only one son (Rehoboam) . . . and, he was a fool.

When the representatives presented their petition to lower the tax burden as a requisite for their support of Rehoboam’s administration, Rehoboam consulted the older advisors as well as his peers.

The seasoned advisors recommended that Rehoboam listen to the people, speak kindly to the citizens, and to serve them; that is, the older, grey-headed men understood the purpose of government is to serve the people. A servant government with “Public Servants” is Biblical to the core . . . and American! Oh, the wisdom of the Founding Fathers that built a servant-government under the Constitution!!

Rehoboam, however, listened to his peers who advised Him to adopt a “get-tough” strategy, “saying,

Thy father made our yoke heavy, but make thou *it* lighter unto us; thus shalt thou say unto them, My little *finger* shall be thicker than my father’s loins.” (12:10).

That is, the young men advised Rehoboam to be a tyrant and to suck the people dry in order to increase the power of the State.

The ten tribes resisted. The KJV uses the phrase, “they rebelled.” But, it is not possible to rebel against a tyrant. It is only possible to rebel against legitimate authority. The ten tribes chose to exercise their lawful option of secession. They refused the contract offer by Rehoboam. Because the king did not obtain the consent of the people to rule, he had no authority to ask them to do or to give anything to support his administration.

When Rehoboam sent his internal revenue officer (Adoram) to collect taxes in the north, the people stoned him to death (12:18). Thus, the passage informs us that not only is taxation without representation tyranny, taxation absent a contract is tyrannical.

Third, the former administration promoted religious pluralism.

While the ten tribes focused on taxation, they were not at all concerned about the introduction of idolatry into the nation by Solomon (1 Kings 11). Solomon, in building temples to the gods of his foreign wives in order to please them, displeased the LORD. His tolerance of idolatry, multiculturalism, and religious pluralism was a willful, malicious violation of the First Commandment, "thou shall have no gods before me."

In order to satisfy the spiritual desires of his wives, Solomon adopted guidelines around religious diversity. But, his liberal policies and tolerance of pluralism was idolatrous. God judged him for it. Because his heart was divided from the LORD, the LORD split the nation. God was the force behind secession, not man. With idolatry powering hearts, unity proves to be an impossibility.

What a terrible thing religious pluralism must be.

Diversity is not a strength; it is a weakness to overcome.

Multiculturalism divides a nation and no government is strong enough to unite a polytheistic, secular-religious people. At the root of national division was idolatry. Suffrage of a false religions, alien law orders, and unfettered religious tolerance of heresy by state actors is nothing more than apostasy from Biblical truth and the Biblical God.

At the root of division in American is apostasy from Christianity and the adoption of the religion of equality by progressives, neocon republicans, and liberal democrats. Democracy is not strong enough to unite Christians and Muslims, blacks and whites, abortionists and right-to-lifers, manly men and feminists, transvestites and sane people.

Only a powerful police state can keep law and order when neo-paganism dominates the population.

But, when the police state seeks to be an omniscient, omnipresent, omnipotent god, it competes for the devotion of the people in the form of tax tithes to the State. When a government taxes 50% of people's income, Christian people have few resources left to serve God or to strengthen the family unit. Resistance becomes a moral imperative.

When government is god in the minds of the people, you cannot expect them not to hate you.

What a terrible thing it is for a nation to have a self-serving tyrannical administration that oppresses the people and makes them debt slaves to support their totalitarian agenda.

Tyranny is its own disaster. Governments are in place to serve the people, not to steal private property and convert it to public use.

“One thing is clear: The Founding Fathers never intended a nation where citizens would pay nearly half of everything they earn to the government.” – Ron Paul

“We contend that for a nation to try to tax itself into prosperity is like a man standing in a bucket and trying to lift himself up by the handle.” — Winston S. Churchill

“To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical.” — Thomas Jefferson

What a righteous thing it is to resist tyranny.

When Rehoboam sent his revenue officer to collect taxes, the people stoned the government agent. And, rightly so! People always have a right to kill thieves who steal under the “guise of a tax.” The stoning sent a granite-like message to the king that the people will not tolerate unlawful tax collection—collection not based on the law of contract. A king that rules without the people’s consent has NO LEGITIMATE AUTHORITY. Until there are some revenue officers under piles of stone, Washington will not release its grip on the earnings of the people.

It is good when people are dedicated to the true God and obey His commandments.

It is good when wise rulers serve the people; and, it is bad when foolish rulers use the people to serve their passions.

It is good to resist the misapplication of the tax code by the IRS and their plunder of the American people under the color of authority, color of law, and color of due process.

It is good when God’s people resist tyranny. Resistance to tyranny is service to God, and tolerance of tax tyranny is service to the Devil.

It is good when citizens are concerned about a 50% tax burden on them, but it is better when citizens are concerned about idolatrous policies and totalitarian agendas of State officials manufacturing statutes to control the people and rob them of their wealth.

Division is good when God’s people practice righteousness, and pagans show contempt for Christians because they will not submit to evil and oppression.

Matthew 10:34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

42. Christians Must Learn the Art of War

Judges 3:2

ESV Judges 3:2 It was only in order that the generations of the people of Israel might know war, to teach war to those who had not known it before.

WAR IS GOD'S WILL

Psalm 143:10 Teach me to do thy will; for thou art my God: thy spirit is good; lead me into the land of uprightness.

Psalm 144:1 Blessed be the LORD my strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight:

Jeremiah 51:20 Thou art my battle axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms;

1 Timothy 6:12 Fight the good fight of faith,

The psalmist prays, "Teach me to do your will."

Have you ever thought that it is God's will that you learn to fight; that the reason you are having so many conflicts in life is to teach you to stand up for what is right and to resist what is wrong?

We are involved in a spiritual, mental, physical, psychological war for the soul. Daily we are being propagandized to give up our rights and submit to Congress.

Notice that David declared that it was God who taught his hands to war. It was God who taught him how to use a sling, weld a sword, and shoot a bow. God taught him to be a killer of rebels. And, it is God's will that all of us would know how to fight against the powers of darkness.

God had a purpose for saving Israel out of Egypt and that purpose was to be a tool of His justice. He didn't call them to be a breakfast factory to produce mango passion peach honey roasted frosted flake breakfast cereals. He called Israel His "battle ax."

Think of it— God's people a Battle Ax!

He redeemed them from Egypt to Mount Sinai to learn His law. He organized them into a redemptive community. Called up all men twenty-years of age and older and arranged them into military units as His Battle Ax against the Canaanites.

The Spirit declared that the knowledge of the Lord will cover the earth as the waters cover the sea (Isaiah 11:9). Our Warrior-King claims earth as His dominion. He redeems men by His grace and He executes others by His justice. Consequently, the church must learn war, His methods of war, to fight the good fight of faith (1 Timothy 6:12), and to be a good soldier of Jesus Christ (2 Timothy 2:3).

WAR IS NOT ALWAYS EVIL.

Exodus 15:3 The LORD is a man of war: the LORD is his name . . . Pharaoh's chariots and his host hath he cast into the sea: his chosen captains also are drowned in the Red sea.

Immediately following Israel's deliverance at the Red Sea, Miriam burst with excitement and wrote a song commemorating the destruction of the Egyptians. But, before we look at the text, imagine with me what it would be like to be on the eastern shores of the Red Sea. The nation had traveled through two walls of water pursued by the most powerful army in the world. When God collapsed the water barricade, the entire Egyptian army drown under the thrashing waves. Bodies of men and horses floated on the sea shore to the wonder of the sons of Jacob. Stunned by the power of Almighty God, Miriam penned her song.

They learned something about the LORD they had never known before. Our God is a Man of War; i.e., a killer—a terrifying adversary—a fierce Fighter—a military Assassin—a vicious, ruthless Killing Machine; that He was greater than the taskmasters, greater than Egypt's generals, greater than Pharaoh. He is sovereign.

We aren't following a docile, frilly-nilly, sugar-coated, honey-lipped namby-pamby cream puff but a terrifying Warlord.

If God wages war against evil men, then war is not evil. It is an instrument of cleansing society and of subduing rebels. His wars are not just defensive, but offensive. He ordered the destruction of the Canaanites even though the Canaanites had done Israel no harm to Jacob. He ordered the priests to wage war against Midian in an offensive maneuver to decimate that idolatrous nation (Numbers 33).

The last time the word "war" is mentioned in Scripture is in relation to Jesus Christ coming on a white horse to make war against the beast and rebel nations that reject his authority (Revelation 19:19). Sweet Jesus is a Warlord and He's meaner than a pair of scissors in a tailor shop. He destroys armies, humbles kings, and executes rebels. Without sounding trite, Miriam learned, *the LORD is His name and war is His game.*

GOD'S PEOPLE MUST LEARN THE ART OF WAR

Judges 3:1-2 Now these are the nations that the LORD left, to test Israel by them, that is, all in Israel who had not experienced all the wars in Canaan.

It was only in order that the generations of the people of Israel might know war, to teach war to those who had not known it before.

The events in the Book of Judges occurred during the Late Bronze Age (1500-1200 B.C.) after the second generation of Israelites entered Canaan and gained their conquest over the territory. As that generation passed, the Lord announced that He was not going to drive out all the Canaanites all at once but leave part of them in the land of Canaan so the following generations might learn war.

Without war, wickedness takes root downward and mushrooms upward poisoning civilizations.

Without war, Christian folk become effeminate, cowardly, servile, and spiritually sluggish.

The Lord left enemy nations in the land like a bad virus testing Israel's health; that is, testing their obedience to Him. War was the means of building a nation useful to the LORD God.

We do not have two Bibles: an Old Testament Bible and a New Testament Bible. There is one Bible, and the Bible teaches us to be good soldiers of Jesus Christ and to learn the art of war.

It is the duty of Christians to learn to obey, to use His tools of war, to fight holy battles, to know their enemy, to gain legal and military skills, to know the rules of war, to engage the enemy . . . and to know "the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." Notice this text, "the gates of hell." Before us is the church militant takin' it to the rebels of law and order.

SOME THINGS ARE WORSE THAN WAR

War is an ugly thing, but not the ugliest of things.

The decayed and degraded state of moral and patriotic feeling which thinks that nothing is worth war is much worse. The person who has nothing for which he is willing to fight, nothing which is more important than his own personal safety, is a miserable creature and has no chance of being free unless made and kept so by the exertions of better men than himself.

John Stuart Mill: English economist & philosopher (1806 – 1873)

John Mill's observation is absolutely correct. There is nothing more pathetic that a man who does not recognize evil in the world, who thinks all men are

born good, who believes in peace at any price, and who will not stand up and fight when his family and friends are being devoured by wolves.

Unwillingness to Fight is a Weakness to Overcome.

Exodus 13:17 And it came to pass, when Pharaoh had let the people go, that God led them not through the way of the land of the Philistines, although that was near; for God said, Lest peradventure the people repent when they see war, and they return to Egypt:

A WARRIOR MINDSET IS SOMETHING ONE HAS TO LEARN.

It was eleven days journey along the sea coast from the Nile of Egypt to southern boundaries of Canaan. God did not lead them directly into Canaan to face hostile forces. He saw a weakness in the young nation and that was the fear of war.

The sons of Jacob had served Pharaoh as slaves for hundreds of years. They were ignorant, obsequious, fawning cowards. All they had ever known was servitude and obnoxious compliance to kings and taskmasters. In taking them to Canaan the short route, there was a danger the nation would buckle and return to Egypt if they had to fight. Surrender was not in the plan of God.

Therefore, God led them toward the Red Sea and out of Egypt. He enrolled them in basic training to prepare a holy army.

Even after a year of basic training in God's law and war courses, the nation held a war protest. When the spies brought back a report on the strength and weakness of the enemy, the nation cowered and rebelled against their Commander. They refused to fight. God deployed that generation and executed them in the desert over the next forty years. It was fight or die, and they chose to die in the wilderness.

Finally, however, after 40 years of discipline, the second generation was ready to obey and willing to fight. They crossed the Jordan, marched on Jericho, erected a monument to declare the new law of the land, and the rest is history.

WAR IS NECESSARY

Psalms 110:1 The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.

Psalms 139:19-24 Surely thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men. For they speak against thee wickedly, and thine enemies take thy name in vain. Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there

be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

Psalm 21:8-13 Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee. Thou shalt make them as a fiery oven in the time of thine anger: the LORD shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them. Their fruit shalt thou destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men. For they intended evil against thee: they imagined a mischievous device, which they are not able to perform. Therefore shalt thou make them turn their back, when thou shalt make ready thine arrows upon thy strings against the face of them. Be thou exalted, LORD, in thine own strength: so will we sing and praise thy power.

God has ordained death and destruction upon His enemies (Psalm 37:28).

David was not a liberal idealist who believed men were born good. He did not bifurcate sin from the man, to love the sinner and to hate the sin. He knew there was evil in the world; that evil was not in the environment, but in men. He understood that wicked men existed, rose to power, and used their positions to crush God's people. He calls them the "wicked" in this verse; i.e., rebels against God's law order; sinners eating the fruit of the poisonous tree. Because David had aligned himself with God's law order, God's enemies became his enemies. He hated them. Hate is a virtue when your enemies are also God's enemies.

WAR IS THE BUSINESS OF A HOLY PEOPLE.

Both the saving of life and the taking of life is a duty of man.

While love is an answer to some things, it is not the answer to all things. While grace can save the sinner, the death penalty can rid society of evil men. God did not permit a class of delinquents to develop in the nation. He order lawbreakers to be killed. In this way society was cleansed of evil men.

War is nothing more than the mass application of capital punishment upon a nation of evildoers. Kill enough of 'em and the rest will submit. War, therefore, is necessary because it purges society of lawbreakers. War is necessary because men do not appreciate that which they do not have to sweat, work, and bleed for.

GRAPES OF WRATH

Isaiah 5:3-5; 5:8-6:5 Judge between me and my vineyard . . . I expected grapes but it produced worthless ones . . . now let me tell you what I am going to do to my vineyard. I will remove its hedge . . . and it will be crushed . . . trampled to the ground . . . Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe, Woe.

Luke 19:27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

Isaiah described judgment as the grapes of wrath—a day of justice, a day of darkness and death.

Jesus told a parable about rebels that refused His authority. **Notice His remedy:** “Bring them hither and slay them before me.”

King Jesus ordered the execution of autonomous rebellious men. That order will be carried out now in time or later in eternity. Sweet Jesus is the Hangman that executes His adversaries.

Good governments, therefore, must acknowledge their duties under King Jesus to be a terror to evildoers.

In conclusion, evil exist in this world and war is a means of restraining evildoers. Until His kingdom arrives in its fullness, the church militant must learn the art of war, develop a warrior mindset, and engage rebels against God’s law-order. This involves winning souls, fighting for the faith once delivered to the saints, exposing propaganda, resisting civil rulers who do mischief through law. It may even mean having to defend family and friends from a physical assault.

Fear of war and unwilling to fight is disobedience and must be repented of. Our God is a Warlord. It is His will that we learn to be His Battle Ax against His enemies. Let us be God’s Attack Lambs and show some teeth.

43. Nice Christian Soldiers

1 Samuel 16

“Do you come in peace”? (1 Sam. 16:4).

1 Corinthians 16:13 “Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men.”

Christians are way too nice!

When the government growls Christians develop more phobias than jackrabbits.

When the Big Bad Wolf of Government focuses its attention on sheeple, they get that “deer in the headlights” look.”

Like a spiritual weather vane, many pastors test the winds of political opinion and bend before the prevailing power.

Church leaders, using Roman 13, indoctrinate their flock into believing that “total compliance” with government is an absolute duty of Christians. It is much easier for pastors to teach their congregations to always obey the government, than when they should resist and disobey the State.

I have some questions:

Is godliness having more sugar than the fairy godmother?

Is godliness always leaping with laughter?

Does God always wants Christians to let the government sink its talons into our flesh?

Do Christians need the permission of the State before they enacts a program to help the homeless?

Does Christ expect believers to help the gloated State increase its power over its citizens?

Would a church have the guts to say “No” to an IRS audit? To an administrative order? To a federal judge?

Where are the Samuels and Isaiahs and Jeremiahs of our day? Where are the gladiator Christians?

A LOOK AT 1 SAMUEL 16

Scared spittleless, men in Judah asked the prophet, “Do you come in peace”? What? People afraid of a pastor? Unheard of! (I Samuel 16:4).

Imagine what it was like when the men of Judah heard Samuel the rigid, inflexible prophet was a comin’ to Bethlehem! When the village received the report, the elders shivered like naked Eskimos in the North Sea.

When was the last time you heard of civil rulers trembling because Pastor Rambo was coming to town?

Samuel was a true O.T. “Rambo.” He had the distinct privilege of being a “lone wolf” prophet, priest, and judge. He was Israel’s last judge, and the instrument of anointing two kings, Saul and David. God planned to use him to help childish Israel transition from a pure theocracy to a theocratic monarchy.

Shortly after Samuel anointed Saul as Israel’s first king, the hope of a powerful monarchy fizzled like a wet firecracker. Saul was rash, tyrannical, and presumptuous. On one occasion, he extended the power of his kingship into the jurisdiction of the priesthood by offering a sacrifice (1 Sam. 13:1-14). Saul simply could not accept the limits of his civil authority.

To provide evidence to the nation of Saul's hostility toward Divine Law, Israel's King issued an executive order to Saul through Samuel to execute every man, woman, and beast in the terrorist camp of the Agag, the wicked king of the Amalekites, and bitter enemies of Israel (1 Samuel 15).

Saul marshaled his forces and initiated a preemptive strike against the tribe. However, his soldiers pleaded with him to spare the best of the sheep, goats, and cattle. Saul, the ultimate pragmatist, granted the pleading even though it violated the divine imperative. Being a nice king, he spared the life of Agag the desert terrorist.

When Samuel received the news about the victory and the disobedience of Saul, Samuel was deeply "distressed" (15:11). All night long his anger burned like coals in a campfire against Israel disobedient, nice king.

With unquenchable grief, Samuel moaned out prayers to the Lord.

In the morning, Samuel began his journey to confront Saul. Saul, in the meantime, was gloating and building monuments to himself for his military conquest.

When the priest and king met, Saul boasted about how he had obeyed the commandment of the Lord (15:13). Rather than listen to the blabbering king, Samuel pointed to the evidence of disobedience

1 Samuel 15:1 And Samuel said, What meaneth then this bleating of the sheep in mine ears, and the lowing of the oxen which I hear?

Resolute, Samuel confronted the people pleaser for his wicked disobedience to the Word of the Lord. The tension was so thick between the two you could cut it with a knife.

King Saul had an Achilles heel. *He feared the people more than he feared God* – the hemlock poisoning most politicians. Saul's public opinion poll revealed the people did not approve of him slaughtering the livestock. Saul, putting his finger to the wind, issued his executive order to spare the animals. Even though his popularity went up among his countrymen, his act was clearly one of treason against God (15:23). Offending Israel's true King, the Lord renounced Saul as "king over Israel" and called for his removal from office (15:26).

The aged preacher picked up a sword and executed King Agag on the spot. It was a bloody nasty affair. Samuel hacked the man into pieces as an example of how true Israelites must deal with wicked, cruel politicians.

Priest and king, Samuel and Saul, did not meet again.

Samuel knew the nation was headed toward political chaos and wanted nothing to do with this nice, unprincipled, man-pleasing politician.

From this story we discover the **Law of Intervention**.

When a civil authority disobeys God's Law-order, religious authorities must intervene and confront civil rulers. Since none of Saul's officials had the moral fortitude to rebuke their King, God's spiritual authority had to be an intervener and discharge God's executive order. If civil rulers will not perform their duty (misfeasance) or over reach their authority (malfeasance), **then pastors must exercise their sacred duty and confront the disobedience of civil rulers . . .** and in some cases pastors must execute God's will as a private attorney general.

So, when Samuel went to Bethlehem on a secret mission from God to anoint a new king, David the Son of Jesse, you can see why the civil rulers in Bethlehem were shaking like rabbits.

Samuel was not a nice, sugar-coated, honey-glazed, "God loves everybody" kind of preacher. There was an inflexible holiness about the man. His moral compass was anchored into the Ten Commandments, particularly, the First Command, "Thou shall have no gods before me."

To Samuel, civil government was not god. It was a servant of God. And, *he wasn't about to proclaim the death of God in the arena of politics*. The nation's errant king had to be rebuked. God's law had to be executed. The desert terrorist had to die.

In this instance, disobedience of the people to King Saul would have been totally and completely justified. *Disobedience to civil authority is sometimes obedience to God*. The silent, submissive, and compliant Israelites were derelict in the duty to confront the turpitude of their commander.

Why is it that so many Christians today associate godliness with being passive and submissive to civil authorities hell-bent on banishing Christianity from public life?

When is the last time you heard of a politician rejecting a particular piece of legislation because it violated God's Word? When is the last time you have heard of a pastor confronting the city council for initiating bad policy or tolerating corruption in government?

The problem today is that the government no longer fears pastors. Pastors and their deacons fear the government.

During the War of Northern Aggression, many Southern Baptists, Methodists, and Presbyterians joined the confederate army to war against unconstitutional, tyrannical invasion of Union Armies into Virginia and other southern States. Confederate chaplains joined the cause and ministered to the soldiers. They preached sermons on the

*righteous cause of the South, and they picked up arms to fight against the unconstitutional actions of President Lincoln.*³⁷

Today, we are fighting a war against atheistic humanism. Phil Brennan reports,

*“All across America, Christianity is under attack. The battlegrounds in this war are the nation’s courtrooms, schools, the media and within federal and State governments.”*³⁸

Legislatures are dealing with bills seeking to sanction gay marriage, abortions, banning “religious speech” in public debate, adopting gender-bender legislation, and policies to permit the Koran to be used as an oath document.

In his best-selling book, *Persecution – How Liberals Are Waging War Against Christianity*, David Limbaugh exposes the radical bias and discrimination against Christians. He sees the enemy as a collection of latter-day Neros who want nothing less than to throw Christians to the lions of secularism.

If we are going to win this war, the South must rise again; that is, the Southern Baptist and all those Christians that believe the Bible is the sure Word of God must rise up and confront the secularization of America.

If the people of the Sacred Book will not do it, who will?

The departure from Biblical values and Constitutional law by our civil rulers is at crisis proportions. American has placed itself on the auction block of globalism – the selling-out of American national sovereignty to international agencies and interests; radical egalitarianism; feminism; sodomite agendas; abortion; Third-World immigration takeover of America; gun control; hate crime legislation (a war against whites); judicial tyranny; burdensome taxation; multiculturalism and diversity (code words for anti-white and Christophobia; and other manifestations of a new brand of politically-correct totalitarianism.

America doesn’t need more sweet, lollypop-Christians that trade passive compliance for the promise of protection from civil government. I will protect myself. Thank you very much.

We don’t need more toothless sheep; or more nice Christian Soldiers; or more spineless pastors that melt like Bill Clinton did in front of a plump brunette with D cups.

³⁷ William Jones. *Christ in the Camp*, (Grace and Truth Books).

³⁸ Phil Brennan, “Limbaugh Shows How Intolerant ‘Liberals’ Wage War on Christianity,” (Online Resource: Newsmax.com. Tuesday, September 30, 2003).

We don't need nice-Christian soldiers that see it as their business to take the bones out of the Christian fish symbol and turn Jesus into a jellyfish to be devoured by those with a humanist agenda.

We don't need separatist Christians that live in some religious biosphere like Tweety Bird to avoid the tests of life and spiritual battle.

We need warriors like Samuel who know the Scriptures and who are meaner than the Terminator.

Do not hear what I am not saying. I am not saying Christians should not be polite and courteous. I am saying that Christians need to toughen up and straighten up for the cause of righteousness (Psalm 45:1-5).

Jesus accused the Pharisees of building the tombs of the prophets while totally disassociated with the spirit of the prophets (Matthew 23:29).

What would Jesus say today about Americans who hail the courage of the Revolutionaries, but possess the spirit of the Tories?

44. Government Shall Not Steal

Exodus 20:17

The Eighth Commandment - Exodus 20:15 "Thou shalt not steal."

The Tenth Commandment - Exodus 20:17 "You shall not covet (defraud or devise a scheme) your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, or his male servant, or his female servant, or his ox, or his donkey, or anything that is your neighbor's."

NOTES ON THE TENTH COMMANDMENT

The Ten Commandments are not just for Christians, but for all men and ALL OF MAN'S INSTITUTIONS (Rushdoony).

As it is a sin for individuals to steal, it is also a sin for governments to steal from the people.

When Presidents become the "Commander and Thief," the people are in big trouble.

"We're going to take money from those who have too much and give it to those who need it so much" (Lyndon B. Johnson).

*"Let the people have property and they will have power (Noah Webster)."*³⁹

Theft is the general term and larceny the legal term for the unlawful or felonious taking away of another's property without his or her consent and with the intention of depriving the person of it; robbery in its strict legal sense implies the felonious taking of another's property from that person or in his or her immediate presence by the use of violence or intimidation (Webster's New World Dictionary).

It is impossible to introduce into society a greater change and a greater evil than this: the conversion of the law into an instrument of plunder (Frederic Bastiat).

Not only can individuals sin against God, Government can sin against God. The difference being that when individual sin they only influence a handful of people. When government sins, millions of people are affected by their officials' disobedience to God's Law.

Noah Webster said that American clergy had for one hundred years prior to the American Revolution preached on the subject of property. To Webster, the right to own and keep one's wealth was the foundation of a republican form of government:

*"The great and chief end . . . of men uniting into Commonwealth, and putting themselves under Government, is the Preservation of their Property."*⁴⁰

To Webster, the State was a greater threat to the accumulation of wealth than standing armies.

The Commandment, "Thou shall not steal" is for everyone. "

*"God did not reserve His commandments for just the nation Israel and the church."*⁴¹

If the citizen has no moral right to steal, neither does the State. If the individual cannot enter a man's home and steal his neighbor's property, neither can the State.

All men, their institutions, corporations, firms, businesses, and forms of government are responsible to the Law of God. The pietistic abatement of the Ten Commandments to the status of a personal moral code moral code for Christians and Jews only wrecks the universal application of God's absolute

³⁹ Noah Webster, 1828, p. 14.

⁴⁰ Noah Webster, 1828, p. 15.

⁴¹ Gary Demar, God and Government, Vol. 3., p. 69

Law. The failure to extend this commandment to government officials, bureaucrats, and agents of the IRS is the product of more than a little evil in our society.

A fatal element of error inheres in this position, if it is thought the Christian revelation, the Bible, does not come to the civil authority with a demand for obedience to its direction and precept as stringent and inescapable as it does to the individual, to the family and to the church (John Murray).⁴²

Governments must submit to the 10th Commandment

Exodus 22:1 If a man shall steal an ox, or a sheep, and kill it, or sell it; he shall restore five oxen for an ox, and four sheep for a sheep.

Theft can be as simple as taking property that does not belong to you. This is what most people think of when they think of stealing. Theft, however, is much deeper than filching some one's watch.

Theft by Misfeasance

Deuteronomy 22:1 Thou shalt not see thy brother's ox or his sheep go astray, and hide thyself from them: thou shalt in any case bring them again unto thy brother.

We steal when we fail to render aid to a person in need. Failure to help a neighbor in distress, report a crime, or return his property is a serious offense in the Bible. Laws against failure to stop and render aid in an automobile or boating accident were at one time very common.

In common law, posse comitatus (Latin, "county force," meaning a sort of local militia) referred to the authority wielded by the county sheriff to conscript any able-bodied male over the age of fifteen to assist him in keeping the peace or to pursue and arrest a felon. When America was under the influence of the Bible, strong laws were in place for failing to render aid; but, with the advancement of humanism in this country, we have seen a slackening in human responsibility. Today, no one will be prosecuted for failing to report a fire in a neighbor's house (Wiki).

Theft by Non Reparation

Exodus 22:1 If a man shall steal an ox, or a sheep, and kill it, or sell it; he shall restore five oxen for an ox, and four sheep for a sheep.

Exodus 21:28 If an ox gore a man or a woman, that they die: then the ox shall be surely stoned.

⁴² Ibid, p. 164.

It is also theft when a person steals property and fails to make restitution. Forgiveness always requires repentance and restitution. Forgiveness is not gained by confession alone. To steal a sheep is to steal the present and future value of a man's property. Restitution must calculate not only the present and future value of a thing stolen, but also the specialized skills and materials involved in its replacement. Destitution is no excuse (Ex. 22:2, 3, 5, 6). It is theft when a person damages borrowed property and fails to voluntarily restore property to its original condition. The court engages in a form thievery when judges fail to give adequate compensation for pain and suffering.

Theft Through Imprisonment

The modern prison system is unbiblical. In God's law, the goal is *not punishment of the offender, but restoration* of the victim. Where criminals were unable to make restitution, voluntary enslavement was mandatory in order to work out the required restitution. Today, however, our country is **not** controlled by men in submission to the Word of God; It is controlled by humanists who are hostile to God's Law. Humanists blame society or poverty or the environment for criminal acts. They force the rest of us to pay for a man's crimes by making restitution to the criminal for his actions. Humanistic rehabilitation programs are anti-Biblical. Rehabilitation of the criminal instead of restitution to the victim is fundamentally hostile to any concept of absolute law. Humanists have replaced the rule of law with the rule of men. The lawyer-society with its own laws and esoteric language replaces a law-society with a law-person. Rule by law instead of the rule of law is the New World Order.

An example of how humanist are antagonistic toward Biblical values is Judge Edward Cashman (Vermont, January, 2006). Mark Hulett was convicted of repeatedly raping a young girl. The prosecutors wanted an eight to twenty year sentence, but Judge Cashman only gave Hulett 60 days in jail. His reason according to World Net Daily is that the Judge ". . . no longer believes in punishment and is more concerned now about rehabilitation." Cashman is quoted as saying, "Cashman said: "The one message I want to get through is that anger doesn't solve anything. It just corrodes your soul."⁴³

In Christian law order, "ignorance of the law is no excuse" because the Bible is open to all. In humanistic, outlaw-societies, *ignorance of the law is unavoidable*, because it is impossible to know the thousands of statutory schemes that have no basis in any ultimate moral order. Multiplication of man-made laws makes criminals out of everyone. When crime is blamed on poverty or society or the environment, humanists believe society must pay for "rehabilitate" the criminal

⁴³ "New Sentence Possible for '60-day Child Rapist,"
http://www.wnd.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=48303.

through taxation. This results in robbery. It impoverishes not only the victim but also all taxpayers. Without God's moral absolutes, society becomes eventually unable to cope with evil growing within it.

Theft by Manipulation of the Money System

Deuteronomy 25:13 Thou shalt not have in thy bag divers weights, a great and a small.

Differing weights and measures is essentially fraudulent money. Paper money unbacked by real assets is a fraud. Electronic money is the easiest to confiscate and manipulate. Dishonest merchandising is a serious matter as dishonest judges in the courts. *Caveat emptor, let the buyer beware*, is not a Biblical concept. God places the seller under the duty to market his wares with integrity. The law cannot encourage irresponsibility on the part of either buyer or seller. Honest goods are necessary, but also honest installments. The government has a duty to maintain justice in the market-place, but it cannot confuse justice with charity and the redistribution of wealth. Fractional reserve banking, paper money unbacked by gold and silver, and inflation of money by debt and credit, is thus a violation of this law (Micah 6:11).

Theft by Charging Interest on Loans

NAS Exodus 22:25 "If you lend money to My people, to the poor among you, you are not to act as a creditor to him; you shall not charge him interest.

We can rob people by charging interest on loans (usury). This text, however, does not condemn lawful commercial loans. The Lord Jesus chastised a servant because he failed to commercially lend his money with interest (Lk. 19). However, the modern credit card system that charges interest on nothing and that creates money out of thin air by extending credit is as hokey pokey as the town clown.

The point of this passage has to do with neighbor-to-neighbor loans. It has to do with a private employee advancing pay toward his poor, private employee. In cases like this, the employer was called to be generous toward his fellow Israelite. If he gives his employee an advance payment on his wages, he must not charge interest. Charity is in mind for Israelite "brethren." Not charging interest on the loan was an act of grace. The loan had to be repaid, but the interest was cancelled. God is not asking the employer to help everybody, but he is asking the employer to help his employee by not charging interest; that is, interest free loans had to be made available by employers to employees. Charging interest had the power to destroy. For this reason, Nehemiah condemned the bankers for charging interest on the loans upon their poor brothers (Neh. 5).

Theft by Fraud

Leviticus 19:13 Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbor, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning.

This law deals with the *abuses of power by those in positions of power*, the “conversion of might into right,” particularly the undue retention of “wages of him that is hired.” It is possible for wealthy legislators to confiscate the wealth of citizens under the color of law to enrich themselves by impoverishing the workingman. Taking taxes out of a man’s paycheck before he receives a penny is as corrupt mafia extortion schemes.

Biblical law requires the just treatment of a worker. It prohibited fraud in goods, measures, money, drugs, patents, property, and intellectual property like copyright laws. This law forbids the various forms of legislation that legislators use to rob the public by using **rule by law** to control the working class and to confiscate their wealth through fees, licenses, and taxation: “Rob, not the poor, because he is poor: neither oppress the afflicted in the gate [reference to civil administrators]” (Prov. 22:22).

Theft by Property Tax

“that thou may knowest the earth is the Lord’s” (Exodus 9:29).

“Behold, to the LORD your God belong heaven and the highest heavens, the earth and all that is in it.” (Deuteronomy 10:14).

God gave property to families, not governments:

“God said unto them, ‘Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it’.”

The purpose of government is to protect the life and property of its citizens.

Abuse of power by State officials arise under doctrines of **eminent domain**. This doctrine grants governments the power to take property away from an individual landowner and sell it to a private developer for a shopping center, office development, or virtually any other private purpose.

Contrary to the modern false belief, the State does not own the land within a nation. Eminent domain is dog dung—the[arrogant] claim to sovereignty by the State over all the property within the State. It is the assertion of the right to appropriate any or all slum property to any public use deemed necessary by State officials. Government officials can steal tenement property by the power of a single legislative act. Eminent domain is a presumption of sovereignty. In Scripture sovereignty belongs to God alone (Isaiah 46:10; Ephesians 1:11; James 4:12; Psalm 146:6).

Because of Pharaoh's claim to have eminent domain over Egypt, God brought judgment upon Pharaoh.

"that thou may knowest the earth is the Lord's" (Exodus. 9:29).

"Behold, to the LORD your God belong heaven and the highest heavens, the earth and all that is in it." (Deuteronomy 10:14).

Theft by Taxation

"My little finger shall be thicker than my father's loins . . . And now whereas my father did lade you with a heavy yoke, I will add to your yoke: my father hath chastised you with whips, but I will chastise you with scorpions." (1 Kings 12:10)

These are the words of a foolish tyrant – King Jeroboam (931 BC).

Refusing to relieve the people of the burden of taxation, Jeroboam decided to raise taxes upon a people that were already collapsing under the taxing system of Solomon. The result was a divided kingdom. It is theft when a gluttonous government seeks to enrich itself by taxing people into poverty.

Theft in the name of taxation is nonetheless theft. Just because some ungodly, wicked politicians decide to pass a tax bill to raise taxes does not mean it is lawful—or even American. It is robbery when a thief holds a gun to your head and takes the money out of your wallet without your consent. It is extortion when government threatens to come to your house, arrest you, and seize your property if you don't pay what they say you owe.

The tax code according to President Reagan was beyond comprehension.

"Our federal tax system is, in short, utterly impossible, utterly unjust and completely counter-productive {it} reeks with injustice and is fundamentally unAmerican . . . It has earned a rebellion and it's time we rebelled"⁴⁴

"The government has the nerve to tell the people of the country, 'you figure out how much you owe us—and we can't help you because our people don't understand it either—and if you make a mistake, we'll make you pay a penalty for making the mistake'"⁴⁵

⁴⁴ President Ronald Reagan, May 1983, Williamsburg, V.A.

⁴⁵ President Ronald Reagan, 1984, Associated Press Release, quoted by Curtis & Curtis Law Firm, 1996.

When the government will not answer your questions about what law makes the average American subject to an income tax, it commits fraud and theft by its silence.

“Silence is a species of conduct, and constitutes an implied representation of the existence of facts in question. When silence is of such character and under such circumstances that it would become a fraud, it will operate estoppel” Carmine v. Bowen, 64 U.S. 932 (Emphasis added.); and, “Silence can only be equated with fraud where there is a legal or moral duty to speak or where an inquiry left unanswered would be intentionally misleading . . . We cannot condone this shocking conduct by the IRS. Our revenue system is based upon the good faith of the taxpayers and the taxpayer should be able to expect the same from government in its enforcement and collection activities . . . This sort of deception will not be tolerated and if this is the ‘routine’ it should be corrected immediately,” U.S. v. Tweet, 550 F 2d 297, 299 (1997) [quoting U.S. v. Prudden, 424 F.2d 1021, 1032 (1970)] (Emphasis added.).

It is not just direct and hidden taxes that are upsetting, but the cavalier attitude of the government about private property which is so disturbing. The federal income tax legislation calls what the taxpayer is allowed to keep as an “exemption” by the government; that is, an act of grace. The government is claiming that all that you make belongs to the government, and by their grace, you are allowed to keep a portion of your income.

If “*The earth is the LORD’S, and the fullness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein*” (Ps. 24:1), **then what does the government really own?**

It certainly doesn’t own you and I nor the property we manage as stewards of God’s gifts. The death tax is also greatly disturbing because the government is claiming wealth that does not belong to them. A man’s heirs are forced into the work force and often left without capital to develop their own business.

The moment the idea is admitted into society that property is not as sacred as the Law of God, and that there is not a force of law and public justice to protect it, anarchy and tyranny commence. (John Adams).

Slavery is forbidden by the 13th Amendment. According to the Tax Foundation, the average American was a tax slave to the government for 123 working days during 1992. The average person had to work from January 1 through May 3 to pay their taxes.⁴⁶ For 150 years no American paid income tax, but with the rise

⁴⁶ Tax Foundation, “Tax Freedom Day Release,” Tax Notes Today, April 16, 1993.

of the secular State, wicked politicians connived a way to deceive, defraud, and steal the working man's wage and his property.⁴⁷

The government has power to tax citizens into poverty and destroy millions of lives, marriages, and job security. If an individual resists, it has the power through malicious prosecution to indict, to lock him in jail, and to throw away the key. Amazingly, however, the government has no duty to spend tax dollars wisely.

*"To lay with one hand the power of the government on the property of the citizen and with the other to bestow it upon favored individuals to aid private enterprises and build up private fortunes is none the less a robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation"*⁴⁸

Theft by Unlawful Seizures

Micah 3:1-4 And I said, Hear, I pray you, O heads of Jacob, and ye princes of the house of Israel; Is it not for you to know judgment? Who hate the good, and love the evil; who pluck off their skin from off them, and their flesh from off their bones; Who also eat the flesh of my people, and flay their skin from off them; and they break their bones, and chop them in pieces, as for the pot, and as flesh within the caldron. Then shall they cry unto the LORD, but he will not hear them: he will even hide his face from them at that time, as they have behaved themselves ill in their doings.

We have a description in metaphorical terms the unlawful seizure of property by the government. The "heads of Jacob" refer to Israel's civil rulers. The governing officials hated good and loved evil; that is, instead of punishing the wicked and protecting the righteous, they were punishing the righteous and rewarding the wicked. Terms like "pluck off their skin" and "their flesh from

47 1920: *Eisner v. Macomber*, 252 U.S. 189. Defined income within the meaning of the 16th Amendment as "profit." Prohibited direct, unapportioned taxation of income of a stockholder. The Sixteenth Amendment must be construed in connection with the taxing clauses of the original Constitution and the effect attributed to them before the amendment was adopted. In *Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co.*, 158 U.S. 601, 15 Sup. Ct. 912, under the Act of August 27, 1894 (28 Stat. 509, 553, c. 349, 27), it was held that taxes upon rents and profits of real estate and upon returns from investments of personal property were in effect direct taxes upon the property from which such income arose, imposed by reason of ownership; and that Congress could not impose such taxes without apportioning them among the states according to population, as required by article 1, 2, cl. 3, and section 9, cl. 4, of the original Constitution.

48 *Savings and Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655, (1875).

their bones” describe the wicked, oppressive, tyrannical rule of the nation’s civil magistrates. The calling in of loans, heavy taxation, the seizure of personal property, and corruption in the market place reduced a man and his family to rags and peonage.

The IRS makes over 10,000 seizures a year.⁴⁹ **A government investigation revealed that 94% of the tax due notices they send out are incorrect.**⁵⁰ Most of these victims do not owe the government a single penny. The IRS rewards its agents for the property they collect through coercion and intimidation. One San Francisco office posted a notice that read, “Seizure fever. Catch it.”⁵¹ The IRS incentive program is not based on lawful seizures of property already belonging to the government, but the unlawful extension of federal power into the private sector for the purpose of stealing the property of private citizens. The only authority for levy in Title 26 is found at §6331:

“Levy may be made upon the accrued salary or wages of any officer, employee, or elected official, of the United States, the District of Columbia, or any agency or instrumentality of the United States or the District of Columbia, by serving a notice of levy on the employer (as defined in section 3401(d)) of such officer, employee, or elected official.”

Once the IRS seizes bank accounts and property, the helpless victims cannot afford an attorney to defend them. No wonder the IRS boasts of a near 100 percent victory in court. When a government wickedly acts outside its authority to unlawfully seize the property of private citizens, it “plucks off the skin” of its people (Mic. 3:2). The following report is typical of how our own government tyrannizes, intimidates, threatens, lies, and flays people alive.

I had a certified federal enrolled tax agent complete my taxes for 3 years. This agency is governed by the IRS themselves. Well, it comes to pass after the tax agent’s death (due to cancer) I find out that he did not do what I paid him to do. He did not file my State or federal taxes for 3 years. I called the IRS, telling them of this. They instantly liened my house, seized all my bank accounts and are bleeding me to death. They forced me to sell an income property. Which net profit will be \$8,000 due to capital gains. Each month, I get calls from my collections agent, he randomly gives me an amount he wants from \$2,500 to \$5000 to be given to him that month. Living on edge every second. I, my life, dreams, hard work are all gone. Due to trusting in the IRS and there organization of

49 Denise Topolnicki, “Presumed Guilty by the IRS,” (Online Resource: CNNMoney.com., October 1, 1990).

⁵⁰ (Internet source, [http://home.kc.rr.com/stopirs/.](http://home.kc.rr.com/stopirs/)).

⁵¹ Oversight Committee, Tax Notes Today, June 23, 1987.

*federal enrolled tax agents.*⁵²

The sad thing about the seizure fever of the IRS is that you can hardly find a preacher in the nation who will expose the wicked corruption of the IRS—at least not among mainstream denominations. Worse yet, ordinary citizens assume the government has a right to steal anything it wants. Where are the watchmen when you need them (Ezek. 3:17)?

The IRS is an extraordinary example of the end justifying the means. The means of this agency is growth. It is interesting that the revenue officers within the IRS refer to taxpayers as ‘inventory’. The IRS embodies the political realities of the selfish human desire to dominate others. Thus the end of this gigantic pretense of officialdom is power, pure and simple. The meek may inherit the earth, but they will never receive a promotion in an agency where efficiency is measured by the number of seizures of taxpayers’ property and by the number of citizens and businesses driven into bankruptcy,⁵³ (Congressman George Hansen).

Theft by Enslavement

Kidnapping is theft (Exodus 21:16; Deuteronomy 5:19). “*Thou shall not steal another man’s freedom by forcibly enslaving his person or his property.*” To kidnap a man and enslave him is to rob him of his freedom. A believer is not to be a slave nor is a master to enslave men (1 Cor. 7:23; Col. 4:1).

The institution of slavery in Israel was voluntary. Kidnapping or man stealing was punished by death (Ex. 22:3; Deut. 24:7). No discretion was allowed in court. Clearly, Joseph’s brethren were guilty of robbing Joseph of his freedom and deserved death. Furthermore, mistreatment of men as “chattel” or “merchandise” or “captive” robbed them of their dignity. Enslaving a man without his consent is a form of robbery.

Property is basic to a man’s freedom. A tyrannical State always limits a man’s use of his property, taxes it, or confiscates that property as an effective means of enslaving a man without necessarily touching his person. When the State enslaves a man and makes him an indentured servant through its taxation system, the State robs the man not only of his property, but his freedom. Theft is more than stealing property, *it is at the same time an assault on a man’s*

⁵² IRS Abuse Report # 30, (Online Resource: <http://www.neo-tech.com/irs-class-action/2.html>., Nov. 13, 1995).

⁵³ Oversight Committee, Tax Notes Today, June 23, 1987.

freedom. Neither the State nor an individual has any right to transgress this law (Rushdoony).⁵⁴

Theft by Violation of Labor Laws

“You shall not oppress your neighbor, nor rob him. The wages of a hired man are not to remain with you all night until morning” (Lev. 19:13). See also Deut. 24:14, 15; Jam. 5:4.

These laws forbid fraud and oppression with respect to the working class. *Failure to pay, short-changing on wages, or delay in payment of wages was a form of theft.* The intent of the law is to promote the godly use of power. Wages⁵⁵ are not credited as a favor, but as an obligation—a debt of the employer to the employee. A man’s labor is his property, and when exchanged for money, it is not a salary or income in the legal sense. In a legal sense, income is gain severed from capital due to corporate activities. When a man is deprived of wages, he must appeal to God’s court for relief (James 5:4).

Theft Through Discrimination

Thou shalt neither vex a stranger, nor oppress him: for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt. Ye shall not afflict any widow, or fatherless child. If thou afflict them in any wise, and they cry at all unto me, I will surely hear their cry; And my wrath shall wax hot, and I will kill you with the sword; and your wives shall be widows, and your children fatherless” (Exodus 22:21-24).

Prejudice and racism and age discrimination is the consequence of sin. When sin is at work, men grant preferences to the wealthy above the poor and the citizen above the alien. For this reason, God commanded His people not to oppress the widow or resident alien.

If legislators discriminate against the weak because they are weak, and favor the strong because they are strong, then legislative acts become instruments of

⁵⁴ Reference: The influence of John Rushdoony’s excellent work on the “Eight Commandment,” Chapter VIII, *The Institutes of Biblical Law*, (1973), pp. 448-541 is appreciated and should be duly noted in this chapter. I wholeheartedly recommend everyone read and meditate on Rushdoony’s important work on the Ten Commandments].

⁵⁵ Wages: The term “Wages,” as most terms in the Internal Revenue Code, has a very specific legal definition within the Code and is found in 26 U.S.C. §3401(a). Because this term is defined in the code, you can assume by the rules of statutory construction that the commonly understood definition (Webster’s) does not apply. “Wages” is not a term to be taken lightly. Listing any amount for “Wages” in Block 1 of the W-2 implies that you are an elected or appointed officer of the United States government. Consult the IRC to research this concept.

tyranny. When legislation discriminates against people based on ethnicity or economic status, WE THE PEOPLE are robbed of justice.

While God called the nation to treat aliens fairly, he did not condone a “favored nation status” to them or require the nation to give them favored treatment. Welfare to aliens robs the American people. This injustice opens the doors to tyranny. Furthermore, both the citizen and the alien were subject to the Law of God in Biblical Law.

Theft Through Court Fines

Exodus 23:8 “And thou [a judge] shalt take no gift: for the gift blindeth the wise, and perverteth the words of the righteous.” See also Leviticus 19:15; Deuteronomy 16: 18-20.

Based on Obadiah 15; Judges 1:27; Psalm 137:8; Ezekiel 35:15; Joel 3:7,8 as reported by Josephus.

“If any judge takes bribes, his punishment is death; he that overlooks one that offers him a petition, and this when he is able to relieve him, he is a guilty person.”

Judges who took a bribe or a promise favored decision committed an unforgivable crime. The **punishment was death!**

Why the death penalty for a judge who takes a small bribe?

Failure to provide fair and impartial justice was the worst kind of offense because it deprived justice for the man whose life, liberty, and property the courts are obligated to protect. The offense is not as much in offering a bribe as it is in accepting a bribe by the judge. The Hebrew word for bribery is *kopher*, the term for “redemption.”

The judge who accepts a bribe is granting undeserved redemption to the real criminal who ought to be punished. By taking a bribe, the judge thereby corrupts himself and his office. He makes a thief of himself and THIEVES usurp control of his office. *The most deadly and dangerous thieves are those who operate under color of law as the officers of the law.*

Corruption of the court is not always with money. Judge Napolitano says a bribe can “be anything of value to any person.”⁵⁶ Thieves can buy a testimony. Thieves can intimidate a judge with legal tyranny. Every federal judge is aware that the IRS keeps copious records on judges and that if they do not give the DOJ the decision they demand in tax cases, they are in danger of being audited by the IRS. Every corrupt official of the State, and especially the judge, is guilty

⁵⁶ Ibid, Napolitano, *Constitutional Chaos*, p. 94.

of using his office to destroy the foundation of social order, to kill a godly society, and to replace it with a society of polite and legal thieves and murderers . . . and this requires the death of the judge.

The first and major form of treason to any civil order is to destroy it as a representative of justice (Rushdoony).

Theft by Robbing God

Every crime is an offense against God's law order, but certain acts are in particular singled out as especially offensive. One of these is the failure to tithe.

Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In tithes and offerings. Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it (Malachi 3:8-10).

In Israel, the tithe was ten percent of one's income (Deut. 14:28; Amos 4:4). The poor tithe every other year (Deut. 14:28), alternated with a rejoicing tithe (Deut. 14:22-26) on each six-year cycle out of seven. Thus, the combined poor tithe and religious tithe, averaged out to about 15 percent per year; some say 18 percent.

Why is failure to tithe such a gross sin? The answer is very clear: The State competes with the church for its affection and for the support of its citizens. When the State covets not only its lawful taxes, but also the tithe that belongs to God, it becomes wickedly tyrannical and oppressive.

The present taxation system was designed by wicked, humanistic politicians to empower the humanistic State and to weaken the influence of the church and the family. This was no accident

When the State gets its money first and it takes more than ten percent, the State is not only saying it is more important than God, but that it deserves more than God.

When the State gets its money first, very few Christians are capable of tithing ten percent of their gross income.

When Christians pay their taxes, but fail to tithe to God, they are saying the State is more important than God!

When a Christian pays taxes to Caesar, but do not tithe to God, they are saying I would rather be in trouble with God than trouble with the State. When Christians fail to tithe, the State usurps power over society through its compulsory tax system.

Rushdoony stated that *without the tithe, the totalitarian State progressively develops to play god over society. With the tithe, the rule of society is restored to God through His ordained tax.*

Failure of the church to teach the importance of tithing as a means of supporting the church and its ministers constitutes a form of robbing God. It subjects the Christian and society to more and more State control and extension of humanism through the legislative powers of Congress.

Solution to Theft

Then Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, and Joshua the son of Josedech, the high priest, with all the remnant of the people, obeyed the voice of the LORD their God, and the words of Haggai the prophet, as the LORD their God had sent him, and the people did fear before the LORD (Haggai 1:12).

Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth (Ephesians 4:28)

The solution requires Christians to fear the Lord more than they fear the State.

Something is wrong when a man fears the State more than he fears God.

The people following Zerubbabel and Joshua reinstated the construction of the temple in obedience to God but in disobedience to the king because they feared God more than the king.

The solution for theft is the gospel, regenerated living and giving—a cheerful heart that tithes to God, makes restitution, pays adequate wages, and shares with the poor. Only by giving, can a victim of sin realign himself with the Law of God (Eph. 4:28).

[Reference: The influence of John Rushdoony’s excellent work on the “Eight Commandment,” Chapter VIII, The Institutes of Biblical Law, (1973), pp. 448-541 is appreciated and should be duly noted in this chapter. I wholeheartedly recommend everyone read and meditate on Rushdoony’s important work on the Ten Commandments].

45. How God’s People Are Easily Enslaved

Exodus 1:8

1 Corinthians 7: 23 “ Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants

of men."

Today, we are going to take a look at how God's people are so easily enslaved by examining Exodus one.

Exodus 1:8 Now there arose a new king over Egypt, who did not know Joseph.

9 And he said to his people, "Behold, the people of Israel are too many and too mighty for us.

10 Come, let us deal shrewdly with them, lest they multiply, and, if war breaks out, they join our enemies and fight against us and escape from the land."

11 Therefore they set taskmasters over them to afflict them with heavy burdens. They built for Pharaoh store cities, Pithom and Raamses.

12 But the more they were oppressed, the more they multiplied and the more they spread abroad. And the Egyptians were in dread of the people of Israel.

13 So they ruthlessly made the people of Israel work as slaves

14 and made their lives bitter with hard service, in mortar and brick, and in all kinds of work in the field. In all their work they ruthlessly made them work as slaves.

15 Then the king of Egypt said to the Hebrew midwives, one of whom was named Shiphrah and the other Puah,

16 "When you serve as midwife to the Hebrew women and see them on the birthstool, if it is a son, you shall kill him, but if it is a daughter, she shall live."

Before us is the story that few people really understand—the enslavement of the Hebrews in the Land of Egypt.

We know that at the time of the Exodus (1446 BC) that Israel was two million strong.

The first great question is, "How could two million people be so easily enslaved"? Why didn't they resist, fight back, or revolt?

The second great question is, "How were they enslaved"? This is an important question because the average American wouldn't recognize slavery if he was whipped with chains and leg irons.

BACKGROUND

The LORD God announced to Abraham that his seed would be slaves in the land under foreign control (Genesis 15:13-14). But, he did not tell them how they would be enslaved. He did not inform Abraham that powerful Assyrians would bring them into bitter bondage.

We are told in Exodus one that a “new king who did not know Joseph” came to power in Egypt. How could anyone familiar with Egyptian history forget Joseph . . . unless that ruler was a foreigner?

Scholars would love to know who the Egyptian Pharaoh was that Joseph served (Genesis 42ff) . . . the Pharaoh that enslaved Israel (Exodus 1) . . . and the Pharaoh of the Exodus (Exodus 5). Brilliant men have spent their whole lives studying the Egyptian king list to answer these searching questions.

The Bible informs us that the Pharaoh that knew not Joseph was an Assyrian (Isaiah 52:4), and not an Egyptian (Acts 7:17-18). The word “another” is “heteros” meaning another of a different kind. We know that Babylonians and Persian kings were called Assyrians because they ruled over Assyrian territory (2 Kings 23:29, Ezra 6:22); that is, the Pharaoh that enslaved Israel in Exodus one was Asiatic.

Historically, scholars usually associate “the king that knew not Joseph” as part of the Hyksos Rulers (1720-1560 BC–60 kings of the 13th Dynasty) known to Egyptians as “hega-khase” which meant “rulers of foreign lands.” The Greeks called them “Hyksos.” Because there were kings and puppet kings in Upper and Lower Egypt, the king’s list in the 13th Dynasty is convoluted; and, because Egyptians sought to erase Hyksos history after Egyptian nationalists regained power over Upper and Lower Egypt, the “king that knew not Joseph” is buried in the obscurity and complexity of history. (See Dr. Steven Collins work, *Let My People Go!*: Using historical synchronisms to identify the Pharaoh of the Exodus)

Moreover, scholars identify Avaris (Tell-el Dab’a) as the capital of the Hyksos rulers along the northeastern section of the Nile Delta (15th-16th century). The Egyptians called it “Dja’an;” the Hebrews called it “Zo’an;” and, the Greeks called it “Tanis.” Later, after the Hyksos rulers were expelled, the names of the cities that the enslaved Israelites built were changed to “Pithom” and “Raamses” (12th century).

We learn from the text that the Asiatic rulers were threatened by the large number of Hebrews in the land. Fearing an invasion or an internal military coup, the Asiatic rulers came up with a plan to prevent the numerical growth and to limit the political power of Israel.

9 And he said to his people, “Behold, the people of Israel are too many and too mighty for us.

10 Come, let us deal shrewdly with them, lest they multiply, and, if war breaks out, they join our enemies and fight against us and escape from the land.”

What was this plan to limit the power of the Israelites in Egypt?

THE PLAN TO ENSLAVE

First, the Asiatic rulers made the Hebrews ultimate tax slaves to the State.

11 Therefore they set taskmasters (mas) over them to afflict them with heavy burdens (in the 16th century). They built for Pharaoh store cities, Pithom and Raamses (so named in the 12th century).

This plan was not a conspiracy theory, but a cold, calculated plot to enslave God's people. Nothing in politics is by accident!!!

We said earlier that this is the story that few Christians know and understand because American Christians do not understand the term "taskmasters." Their perspective on the Exodus comes from movies like the "Ten Commandments," rather than the words contained in the Biblical account.

When Americans think of a "taskmaster," they think of a bald-headed brute with a whip in hand beating exhausted workers in a chain gang. But, this is not what the word "taskmaster" means.

The Hebrew term "taskmaster" (*mas*, *mic*, or *mac*) would be better translated "tax collectors."

It is translated "servant unto tribute" in Genesis 49:15; "tributaries" in Deuteronomy 20:11); and "tribute" in Joshua 16:10; 17:13; Judges 1:28; 1:30; 1:33; 1:35; 2 Samuel 20:24; 1 Kings 4:6; 5:27-28; 9:15, 9:21; 12:18; 2 Chronicles 8:8; 10:18; Ester 10:1; Lamentations 1:1. In fact, the Hebrew term *mas* refers to tribute or tax except in this verse where it is innocently translated "taskmasters."

When describing the actual *corvée* system under Solomon, the Scripture does not make use of the same tyrannical tone as we see in Exodus, though both texts use same term, *mas* (מַס). Solomon demanded a levy (*mas*) upon his own people to build the temple, and conscripted 30,000 men for construction projects in Hazor, Megiddo, and Gezer (1 Kings 5:27-30). The men served one month in Lebanon for the state and two months at home.

Later, however, we are informed that Solomon levied only Canaanites for construction work and assigned the Israelites for service in the army (1 Kings 9:20-22). The Scripture severely warned its kings against conscripting Canaanites into the service for commercial gain; however, other nations could be subject to tribute (Deuteronomy 7:1-2; 20:16-18).

Moreover, Israel's government existed to serve the people and not to enslave them. When Rehoboam sought to subjugate the people with whips made of scorpion tails, the people revolted (1 Kings 12). Sane people do.

The Asiatic Pharaoh abused the levy system by exchanging normal forms of tribute to aggravated forms of tax indebtedness. The Spirit's accusation against Pharaoh is more serious and far exceeds anything connected to Solomon's forced labor. Pharaoh enslaved a whole nation and turned them into tax vassals as to a feudal lord by unpaid labor.

In other words, the Asiatic Pharaohs set up a system of tribute to make the Israelites debt sureties for the state.

We are told in Exodus 5:10, they set up tax assessors, state auditors, and revenue officers to collect taxes from the Hebrews. Once their money was exhausted, the government provided a means to service the forced tribute by working for the state as an uncompensated slave. Soon, it took working 12 hours a day for the state to discharge their tax debt. As fate would have it, father, mother, son and daughter worked all day long just to pay their taxes.

The plan was simple: empty their wallet, exhaust their strength, and oppress their spirit so they didn't have time and energy to think, pray, or procreate. Thus, the Asiatic rulers drained God's people financially, physically, and emotionally.

Think of the United States for a minute.

Americans are taxed on everything from water to soup and nuts. In Seattle the city taxes bicycles. In most states there are gasoline taxes, property taxes, environmental taxes, utility taxes, dog taxes, fishing license taxes, garbage taxes, soda taxes, import taxes, inheritance taxes, hotel taxes, inspection fees, IRA early withdrawal penalty taxes, parking taxes, license plate fees, luxury taxes, taxes to get married, septic taxes, unemployment taxes, state park fees, hiking trail taxes, tanning taxes, tire recycling fees, well permit fees, and zoning permit fees to mention a few.

"The power to tax is the power to destroy."

ATTRIBUTION: This quotation comes from the words of DANIEL WEBSTER and those of JOHN MARSHALL in the Supreme Court case, McCulloch v. Maryland. Webster, in arguing the case, said: "An unlimited power to tax involves, necessarily, a power to destroy," 17 U.S. 327 (1819). [Bartleby.com]

In the past, your grandmother and your mother stayed home to care for children and family. Today, dads and mothers and teenagers have to work just to provide for the needs of the family. Americans work from January through July to pay federal and state income taxes with little relief.

The average American has no money, is up to his ears in debt, and works six months out of the year as a debt surety for the United States, Inc. To make

matters worse, over-taxed Americans think they live in the freest, wealthiest country in the world and that all this taxation is normal. Can you say “brainwashed”? And, Americans love it this way.

Second, the Asiatics enacted an executive order to promote infanticide.

Despite extreme taxation, the Hebrews continued to multiply.

Because the plan of total subjugation of the total man to total government did not disable their capacity to grow families, the Asiatic Pharaohs developed a barbaric order to murder male newborns.

“ . . . if it is a son, you shall kill him, but if it is a daughter, she shall live.”

Call it “abortion,” “murder,” or “infanticide,” this was a malicious State sanctioned law to murder innocent babies in order to limit population growth.

Oh, that Americans might learn the difference between *legal* and *lawful*!

Today in America, depopulation is promoted through birth control, sterilization drugs, abortion, fluoride in water, modified foods, vaccines, chemtrails, and the promotion of homosexuality as an alternative life style. Many powerful people are interested in mass population reduction:

“Depopulation should be the highest priority of U.S. foreign policy towards the Third World.” Henry Kissinger

“A total world population of 250-300 million people, a 95% decline from present levels, would be ideal.” Ted Turner, in an interview with Audubon magazine

“If I were reincarnated, I would wish to be returned to Earth as a killer virus to lower human population levels.” Prince Phillip, Duke of Edinburgh

LESSONS GOOD MEN SHOULD OBSERVE

First, slavery is not a racial issue.

Slavery has been around from the beginning. Africans have enslaved Africans, whites have enslaved whites, and Asians have captured, chained, and sold their own to the highest bidder. People are **not** enslaved because of their race, but because the strong gain control over the weak, the unsuspecting, and the naïve.

That slavery is limited to black people and Africans is nothing but propaganda designed to create a victim mentality among blacks and guilty among whites.

Two-thirds of whites that came to America from Europe were in debt and considered slaves on both sides of the Atlantic.

That black slavery is worse or more traumatic than white slavery also stands out like a wart on the nose.

Moreover, slavery comes in many forms: child labor, sex trafficking, conscription, debt, peonage, bride buying, prostitution, prison penal labor, fines and fees for violating some statute, license fees, taxes, and human trafficking through the prison system.

[Note that it was white Christian Protestants in England that dealt a death blow to the institution of slavery in the 19th century that eventually ended kidnapping and human trafficking in Africa.]

Second, it is governments that sanction, contrive, scheme, develop, promote, sponsor, plan and plot how to enslave people and make them debtors to the State.

A tax on income and land is a tax on a man's labor—a tax that makes a man a surety to the ambitions of a lusty State.

Further, governments develop fiat currencies, inflate money, devalue the currency, utilize digital currency, and permit corporations to make debt slaves of Americans to purchase commodities.

The average American is \$172,806 in debt. Student loan debts average \$39,042. The average credit card debt is \$16,061 according to the Bloomberg Report (2016).

Third, there are many ways to reduce populations.

It costs the state for people to live longer than their working years particularly with such benefits as social security and Medicare. In order to reduce the population the State encourages birth control, vaccines, chemtrails, abortion, drugs, modified foods, war, health care rationing, and endorsement of electronic cancer causing devices to mention a few.

Moreover, the state utilizes propaganda that shames certain populations into submission like "white supremacy," "white privilege," and "toxic masculinity." Propaganda like "diversity is a strength," and "war on women" and "taxes on the rich" are government propaganda idioms designed to shift power away from citizens to the State.

Fourth, slavery is seldom immediate and often incrementally executed.

Tyrants do not utilize sweeping reforms because they know the public will not accept outright bondage. But, like the frog in the water, the State has learned it can gradually turn up the heat on tyranny and take away rights without much

complaint from the people. Thus, every politician practices the principle, “Never let a good crisis go to waste” (Rahm Emanuel).

The State creates debt slaves by claiming to own a portion of a man’s income; then, they develop policies favoring the presumption that they own the man and his property. The federal government has mastered the tactic of making Americans feel like they have a patriotic duty to pay taxes. But, there is no law placing a tax on the income of the average working American. None! Zero. Zilch. All “income” taxes apply only to corporations and employees of the government which are called “individuals,” – thus, the “individual income tax.”

Propaganda precedes major losses of freedoms.

Israel was not enslaved overnight. Taxes started small and gradually increased until the State realized the total subjection of the total man to total government.

Edwards Bernays, the godfather of American propaganda, said the modern term for propaganda is “public relations.” He said the job of the invisible government (deep state) is to manipulate the mind so the public will voluntarily conform to the will of the State. Joseph Goebbels, the Minister of Propaganda in WWII Germany, read Bernays books on commercial propaganda, and applied it to promote loyalty to the Nazi Party. Likewise, every government utilizes psychological strategies to gain the devotion of the people.

At this very moment politicians and legislators are contriving new laws to separate you from your wealth and to track what you do. Big Brother is watching you: camera surveillance, the Real ID Act, voter registration, Birth registration, Social Security Registration, NSA data collection stored off shore to avoid constitutional restrictions, and the like.

Deep state propagandists are inventing new slogans to disarm your resistance to enslavement and to leverage control of your mind.

Consider the slogans passed around for a half a century: “Women’s Rights;” “Women’s Health Care;” “Black Lives Matter;” “Blue Lives Matter;” “For God and COUNTRY;” “I WANT YOU FOR U.S. ARMY;” “It’s our flag: fight for it; work for it;” “Everybody pays taxes;” “Reach Out and Touch Someone;” “Buy War Bonds;” “Gun control;” “It’s of vital interest to national security;” “We can do it;” “Yes, we can;” “You didn’t build that;” “Affordable Care Act;” “Women’s Right to Vote;” “Gay Rights;” “Marines: A Few Good Men;” “America is made up of immigrants;” “Global Warming;” “Honor a Veteran;” “Safe spaces;” “Iraq has nuclear weapons;” “It’s a tax on the rich;” “Pay your fair share;” “Anti-Semitism;” “Defense of Democracy;” and more.

Fifth, eternal vigilance is the price of freedom.

Proverbs 12:24 The hand of the diligent will rule, while the slothful will be put to forced labor.

"The price of freedom is eternal vigilance" (attributed to many).

Often times the pathway to slavery is through the door of prosperity. Prosperity has its own snares.

Jeremiah 22:21 I spoke to you in your prosperity, but you said, 'I will not listen.' This has been your way from your youth, that you have not obeyed my voice.

Under Joseph, his family was given the fertile land of Goshen. At first, it seemed like prosperity in the river delta would never end. Possibly, under the Asiatic rulers, the Hebrews became lax and careless. Like David, the twelve tribes may have naively thought,

"As for me, I said in my prosperity, "I shall never be moved" (Psalm 30:6).

But, David was moved and so was Israel under this Pharaoh.

If there is a final lesson here, it is that believers must be alert, watchful, and ready to fight the State's effort to chain and enslave its citizens. Christians must cherish a fighting spirit and despise tribute (Judges 3:1-3; Ephesians 6:10ff). For this reason the Founding Fathers wanted to adopt the maxim, "*Resistance to tyranny is service to God*" as the national motto.

Christians are easily enslaved when they falsely believe they must comply with every law passed by the legislature and refuse to resist the chains the State lays upon its people.

46. WHAT IS TREASON

2 Chronicles 23:13

"She looked, and behold, the king was standing by his pillar at the entrance, and the captains and the trumpeters were beside the king. And all the people of the land rejoiced and blew trumpets, the singers with their musical instruments leading the praise. Then Athaliah tore her clothes and said, "Treason! Treason!"

In our text, Athaliah was the de facto queen who accused Jehoiada the Priest of treason, but in truth it was Athaliah who committed treason against God's law-order.

Because many bureaucrats view resistance of State policies and programs as "treason" to the United States government, we must investigate the meaning of treason.

Treason is an ugly word associated with treachery, espionage, and disloyalty. Treason is associated with such names as Judas and Benedict Arnold. It is the one crime mentioned in the U.S. Constitution.

Treason according to Webster

Webster defines treason as: "betray of a trust" or "violation of the allegiance owed to one's sovereign or State: betrayal of one's country, specif., in the U.S. (as declared in the Constitution), consisting only in levying war against the U.S. or in giving aid and comfort to its enemies."

Treason according to the U.S. Constitution

In Article III, Section 3, treason is defined as follows:

Clause 1: Treason against the United States, shall consist only in levying War against them, or in adhering to their Enemies, giving them Aid and Comfort. No Person shall be convicted of Treason unless on the Testimony of two Witnesses to the same overt Act, or on Confession in open Court.

Clause 2: The Congress shall have Power to declare the Punishment of Treason, but no Attainder of Treason shall work Corruption of Blood, or Forfeiture except during the Life of the Person attained.

In order to be convicted of treason there must be an overt act substantiated with the testimony of two witnesses.

Notice the term "them." The "them" refers to the individual states organized to form the "united" States." Treason is not an act against the federal government so much as an act against one of the confederated united States who form the federal government. The federal government did not create the states. Rather, the states created the federal government in 1789; that is, the master was the states and the federal government was the servant. *Treason, therefore, is an act against the Constitution of the United States . . . a willful act by a public that betrays the principle of the rule of law.*

Many names come to mind. Abraham Lincoln, for example, destroyed the union in order to preserve the union.

Lincoln himself confessed to six violation of the Constitution in order to preserve the power of the federal government. What?

For example: With Congress not in session, Lincoln assumed all powers not delegated in the Constitution, including the power to suspend habeas corpus (a writ to release a party from unlawful restraint). The people were seized and arrested on the suspicion of loyalty to the South. Without trial or with minimal hearings before a military tribunal, as many as 13,000 civilians were detained as political prisoners. The Chief Justice of the Supreme Court ruled that the suspension of habeas corpus was unconstitutional, but Lincoln overruled the decision.

Notice the term "*attainder of treason.*" In Europe, not only could a man be convicted of being a traitor, his whole family could be punished and killed for the treacherous acts of the father. This practice was totally contrary to the Word of God which forbid punishing the children for a father's sins (Ezek. 18:17-20): "The soul that sinneth shall die."

In 2 Kings 14, we have an example of King Amaziah executing the assassins of his father without harming the families of the men involved. Our Constitution forbids attainders of treason whereby the family would be punished for the crimes of the father.

Treason According to Black's Law Dictionary

According to Black's Law Dictionary, treason is defined as follows:

"As a breach of allegiance to one's government, usually committed through levying war against such government or by giving aid or comfort to the enemy.

"The offense of attempting by over acts to overthrow the government of the State to which the offender owes allegiance; or betraying the State into the hands of a foreign power.

Treason is defined as "levying war" against the government or a state. This is very difficult to do because the ordinary citizen simply does not have the capacity to levy war against this Leviathan government.

Who can "betray the same into the hands of a foreign power"? **Certainly, no private citizen has the ability to commit treason.**

Only a politician, legislator, or government employee has the power and opportunity to place authority or power or knowledge into the hands of a foreign power. Any act by congress or the administration or judicial branch of the government that gives power to foreign entities over the united States is treason.

Black's Law Dictionary continues to define various types of treason such as "constructive treason" (acts that could be regarded as treason though not actually treason), "high treason" (treason against a king), and "petit treason" (the act of killing a husband by a wife).

Treason According to the Bible

The word "*treason*" is used five times in Scripture (1Kgs. 16:20; 2 Kgs. 11:14; and, 2 Chron. 23:13). The Hebrew word for "treason" is "*qesher*" which refers to a conspiracy or rebellion against a God-sanctioned authority. It is translated "treason" five times, "conspiracy" nine times, "confederacy" two times.

The Treason of Zimri

1 Kings 16:20 Now the rest of the acts of Zimri, and his treason that he wrought, are they not written in the book of the chronicles of the kings of Israel?

Zimri was a commander or general in the army of Elah, son of Baasha. Notice that the Bible calls his dastardly deed an act of treason. Thus, we have here a true act of treason.

Elah, son of Baasha, was king in Israel. Zimri was a general in charge of half of the chariots in Elah's army. In a moment of weakness, while Elah was drunk in Tirzah, Zimri rose up and stabbed his king to death. As soon as he seized control of the nation, he executed the rest of the family of Elah. Treason was written all over the crime scene. Zimri had a moral duty to protect Elah his king. Though Elah was a wicked man, he had not provoked Zimri into a fight. Apparently, there was trust between the king and his general. Zimri's act was pure, unbridled lust for power – wretched treachery – an act of seizing the throne in Israel. Zimri's attitude was exactly the opposite of King David in his troubles with King Saul (1 Sam. 24, 26).

When the Israelites heard what Zimri had done to their king, they appointed Omri, Commander of the Armies of Israel, to be their king. Knowing that such treachery had to be punished, Omri marched his armies to Tirzah and surrounded the city in an attempt to arrest Zimri. When Zimri saw there was no hope of victory, he went into his palace, set the place on fire, and committed suicide.

The background to this incident should be noted. Baasha came to power by killing Ahijah, son of Jeroboam. Interestingly, Baasha's act of killing Ahijah was not called "treason." Since God had already pronounced judgment on Jeroboam family, including Ahijah (1 Kgs. 14:10-13), Baasha's assassination of Ahijah seems to be a fulfillment of God's promise to destroy this family.

The difference between the act of Zimri and Omri should be noted. *Zimri's act of murdering his king lacked heavenly authority.*

Though not anointed of God, *Omri was chosen by the people.* Omri was the logical choice to punish Zimri's wicked deed. In besieging the city of Tirzah, Omri was seeking justice for his slain king, king Elah. Omri was perfectly justified in overthrowing Zimri, the self-appointed king of the nation. *What Zimri did was treason. What Omri did was justice.*

Treason and Athaliah

"Athaliah rent her clothes, and cried, 'Treason, Treason'" (2 Kgs. 11:14).

Athaliah was the viperous daughter of venomous Jezebel and Ahab. This wicked woman was married to Jehoram, a grandson of Solomon, and she is introduced to us as the mother of Ahaziah, the wicked king slain by General Jehu in his assignment to destroy the house of Ahab (1 Kgs. 11:1ff).

In a non-grandmotherly act, Athaliah gave orders to have all her grandsons executed, and then unlawfully seized the throne of David. Thus, she began her seven year wicked rule over Judah. *She had no authority from God or man to rule the southern kingdom.* As de facto queen, Athaliah ruled by the power of the sword.

During the bloody insurrection, Johasheba, sister of Ahaziah raced to the king's nursery and rescued Joash, one of Ahaziah's sons. Before the assassins entered the chamber she took him to Jehoiada, the high priest. Jehoiada secretly raised the boy in the temple during the seven years of darkness in defiance of Queen Athaliah.

In the seventh year, Jehoiada developed a secret plan to overthrow wicked Athaliah and to have the boy king installed as the monarch of the nation. In a stealth operation, Jehoiada gave orders to assassinate Athaliah and to enthrone Joash.

During the confusion and disorder of the revolution, Athaliah, the de facto queen, screamed, "Treason, Treason" as the executioners approach her with swords in hand. But, was it treason to execute this woman and overthrow her government in a military coup? Absolutely not!

Athaliah assumed power by assassination and unlawful seizure of the throne of David. She had no de jure authority to be ruler of Judah. God did not appoint her and the people did not consent to her rule. Since no politician had the will power to resist Athaliah, it was up to Jehoiada the priest, God's spiritual authority to be an intervener. Disobeying Athaliah and deposing her from the Davidic government was the correct Biblical response to this electrically charged political crisis.

In conclusion, it was not treason for Baasha to destroy the house of Jeroboam. This assassination was of God because the LORD had already pronounced judgment on Jehu's family (1 Kings 14:5-14). It was treason for General Zimri to murder King Elah not only because he had a moral duty to protect his king, but because Zimri was not chosen by God or the people to be ruler in Israel. He was a covetous, ambitious thief and murderer. Though Athaliah screamed "treason" when the insurrection reached her palace, it was not treason for Jehoiada the priest to depose and kill Queen Athaliah. In fact, it was the right thing to do!

Lessons

First, it is not treason to resist unlawful, unauthorized, ungodly civil rulers even though they may occupy a God-appointed office.

Treason can only occur when an ungodly politician seeks to overthrow lawful power. Though Athaliah considered Jehoiada's act as high crime, it was actually high devotion to God by Jehoiada; that is, a weak, effeminate, fearful acquiescence to Athaliah's unlawful, illegitimate, unbiblical rule would have been a wicked response to the nation's crisis. Submission to unlawful authority would be treason against the law of YHWH. Jehoiada owed no allegiance to Athaliah or her administration. He owed allegiance to God and His people. Resistance to Athaliah was obedience to God. Even if he had failed in his mission, Jehoiada would have done his sacred duty.

Second, resistance to tyranny is service to God.

To resist Athaliah and to depose this queen was a righteous, holy, godly thing to do. Athaliah was the real traitor. She was a murderer and a thief. Yet she was the most vociferous in crying "Treason, treason." Unscrupulous government officials often accuse their opponents of committing crimes of which they themselves are most guilty. Jehoiada did not resist a God-ordained government or ruler. He resisted a murderess and her wicked grab for power. He acted justly.

Third, we see here the law of intervention at work.

When there is no competent civil, political power able to correct error or depose unjust rulers, it is the duty of lesser magistrates to step in and to correct the errors in the government. In this case, the Jehoiada the priest orders the assassination of the de facto queen and the restoration of the civil order.

Finally, we must ask the question: "To what kind of government do we owe allegiance"?

Do we owe allegiance to the United Nations? Do we owe allegiance to North America? Do we owe allegiance to a United States bureaucracy, or agency? Do

we owe allegiance to this democracy and the for-profit United States, Inc. Do we owe allegiance to the New World Order and the United Nations? Furthermore, to whom do our civil leaders owe their allegiance? Do they owe their allegiance to the Federal Reserve, the IMF, the Zionist law, or some Arabic oil cartel?

First, we owe allegiance to Jesus Christ and His Kingdom?

Secondly, we owe allegiance to the American people and the Constitutional republic (See Article VI, Clause 2 and 3).

One definition of treason in Black's Law Dictionary is that treason is betraying the State into hands of a foreign power. Who has the power to do this effectively? The answer of course, is its civil rulers and elected officials. Was it not the kings of Israel that led the nation into idolatry (2 Kings 17:6-23, 23:5). **Is it not elected officials that have turned America over to international bankers and made a debtor nation to the Chinese?**

When we see presidents and congressman seeking to turn America's power over to a world government or a North American Consort, we are seeing treason in action.

In 1765, Patrick Henry was elected to the House of Burgesses and furthered his radical reputation in the debate over the Stamp Act. He compared George III with tyrants of the past, infuriating the more conservative elements who accused him of treason. Henry responded, "If this be treason, make the most of it." Henry simply said it is not treason to speak the truth. The highest treason is not disobedience to man's law, or resistance to government expansion, but disobedience to God's law. We simply must know that it is not treason to expose wickedness in government and to resist unlawful authority (u-s-history.com).

"Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God" (Revolutionary slogan).

47. When Government Turn Bad

Jeremiah 22:4-5

To what kind of government do you owe your allegiance?

The context of this verse is about submission to God-ordained governments; and, God-ordained governments are not a "terror to good conduct, but to bad" conduct. Thus, this verse applies to good government, not to a bad government.

Christians are called upon to recognize the purpose of the State which is an agency of God to restrain evil. While the gospel converts sinners, the State exists to punish lawbreakers; that is, a God-ordained governments have a duty to purge evil from society. Its purpose is limited in that it acts as God's hangman. Education and charity and world leadership is not the purpose of the State.

What is a man supposed to do when the government he is supposed to honor is a terror to good conduct and a comfort to bad conduct—when the State overreaches **its authority and seeks to be the Great Benefactor to all?**

What is a man supposed to do when the State protects murderers (abortionists), adulterers (politicians), and thieves (politicians).

What is a man supposed to do a government punishes those who refuse to contract with Sodomites seeking a same-sex marriage or sends out its police force to harass innocent citizens?

What is a man supposed to do when the State protects baby killers and punishes those who protest these murders?

While a good government that punishes evildoers deserves our limited allegiance, a bad government is no longer a "terror to bad conduct," and becomes a terror to those who do what is right and good?

The founding fathers of this nation found themselves in this very predicament.

From the Declaration of Independence we read,

"But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such government, and to provide new guards for their future security."

Do you see the phrase, "long train of abuses" A government does not turn bad overnight. Like the proverbial frog in the water, states turn ugly slowly over time.

King George was not installed as a tyrant. When he began to see America as a source of wealth for his administration, he initiated a series of taxes on Americans to shift wealth from the colonies to England. Because King George broke faith with the states, the colonies had no other choice than to break from England and to start a new nation, under God.

We Americans find ourselves in the same predicament as the founding fathers, but this time the "long train of abuses" are acts by our own government.

Americans have been let down, slowed down, taken down, beat down, stripped down, dumbed down, locked down, broken down, thrown down, held down,

clamped down, cracked down, shut down, and taxed down through a “long train of abuses” by Washington D.C.!

If God expected men to obey rulers that “are not a terror to good conduct, but too bad,” then He must expect us to resist, and disobey rulers that are a terror to good conduct, and a comfort to bad.

Resistance to tyranny is service to God.

A good government obeys the LORD God; and, a nation commits suicide when it departs from the true God.

God expects us to cooperate with a good government with good laws; but, when a government punishes good and rewards evil, isn't it time to start resisting the State for its usurpations, police force, taxation, murders, Sodomite perversions, and radical dismantling of the Christian west?

The founding fathers charted a course for us:

“That whenever any form of government becomes destructive to these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to affect their safety and happiness” (The Declaration of Independence).

The crisis of the West is about the survival of the West.

Has America lost its will to live? It permits fornicating mothers to murder their children. It permits Sodomy, and no longer protects the ideals of marriage. Worse yet, it no longer recognizes the differences of male and female. It is allowing hordes of diabolical immigrants into the country that hate American values. It is slothful in protecting borders and American lives. The sons of these immigrants will rise to power to subvert the nation. With the help of the international elite they will work to nullify American sovereignty and make it a puppet of the NWO.

We can have the largest economy and the most powerful military anywhere on Earth, but if we do not have strong families and strong Christian values, then we will be spineless and we will not survive.

The great question is this: “Is there enough health in the Christian body politic to resist social revolution now occurring”?

48. A Government of Wolves

Ezekiel 34:8

“As I live, declares the Lord GOD, surely because my sheep have become a prey, and my sheep have become food for all the wild beasts, since there was no shepherd, and because my shepherds have not searched for my sheep, but the shepherds have fed themselves, and have not fed my sheep”

“Our nation of sheep has, as was foretold, given rise to a government of wolves,” says John Whitehead.

You can always hear the lobos howling at night, “Tax ‘em, fine ‘em, chase ‘em, arrest ‘em, eat ‘em!”

The latest ravaging scheme of asset forfeiture by the wolf pack is only an example.

It doesn’t matter if we are talking about the government’s “your money or your life” tax program or Hillary Clinton’s Uranium One kick back, the government wants your wool and your mutton.

John Whitehead says it better than most,

“The facts speak for themselves.

We’re being robbed blind by a government of thieves. Americans no longer have any real protection against government agents empowered to seize private property at will. For instance, police agencies under the guise of asset forfeiture laws are taking Americans’ personal property based on little more than a suspicion of criminal activity and keeping it for their own profit and gain. In one case, police seized \$53,000 from the manager of a Christian rock band that was touring and raising money for an orphanage in Thailand. Despite finding no evidence of wrongdoing, police kept the money. Homeowners are losing their homes over nonpayment of taxes (for as little as \$400 owed) and municipal bills such as water or sewer fees that amount to a fraction of what they have invested in their homes. And then there’s the Drug Enforcement Agency, which has been searching train and airline passengers and pocketing their cash, without ever charging them with a crime.

We’re being taken advantage of by a government of scoundrels, idiots and cowards (River Cities Reader).

We’re being locked up by a government of greedy jailers. We have become a carceral state, spending three times more on our prisons than on our schools and imprisoning close to a quarter of the world’s

prisoners, despite the fact that crime is at an all-time low and the U.S. makes up only 5% of the world's population. The rise of over criminalization and profit-driven private prisons provides even greater incentives for locking up American citizens for such non-violent "crimes" as having an overgrown lawn. (River Cities Reader, John Whitehead)

As the *Boston Review* points out,

"America's contemporary system of policing, courts, imprisonment, and parole ... makes money through asset forfeiture, lucrative public contracts from private service providers, and by directly extracting revenue and unpaid labor from populations of color and the poor. In states and municipalities throughout the country, the criminal justice system defrays costs by forcing prisoners and their families to pay for punishment. It also allows private service providers to charge outrageous fees for everyday needs such as telephone calls. As a result people facing even minor criminal charges can easily find themselves trapped in a self-perpetuating cycle of debt, criminalization, and incarceration." (August 1, 2016)

We're being spied on by a government of Peeping Toms.

The government is watching everything you do, reading everything you write, listening to everything you say, and monitoring everything you spend.

We're being ravaged by a government of ruffians, rapists and killers.

It's not just the police shootings of unarmed citizens that are worrisome. It's the SWAT team raids gone wrong—more than 80,000 raids a year—that are leaving innocent citizens wounded, children terrorized and family pets killed. (The Week –Bonnie Kristian).

We're being forced to surrender our freedoms—and those of our children—to a government of extortionists, money launderers and professional pirates.

The American people have repeatedly been sold a bill of goods about how the government needs more money, more expansive powers, and more secrecy (secret courts, secret budgets, secret military campaigns, secret surveillance) in order to keep us safe. Under the guise of fighting its wars on terror, drugs and now domestic extremism, the government has spent billions in taxpayer dollars on endless wars (River Cities Reader).

We're being held at gunpoint by a government of soldiers: a standing army of mercenaries.

As if it weren't enough that the American military empire stretches around the globe (and continues to leech much-needed resources from the American

economy), the U.S. government is creating its own standing army of militarized police and teams of weaponized bureaucrats (John Whitehead).

There are now reportedly more bureaucratic (non-military) government civilians armed with high-tech, deadly weapons than U.S. Marines. That doesn't even begin to touch on the government's arsenal, the transformation of local police into extensions of the military, and the speed with which the nation could be locked down under martial law depending on the circumstances (River Cities Reader – John Whitehead).

Whatever else it may be—a danger, a menace, a threat—the U.S. government is certainly no friend to freedom.

“So, what’s for lunch”? asked Randolph the young pup. “Mutton! Always, mutton” answered Adalwofa.

Shankbone, God’s Attack Lamb.

For the full article by John Whitehead. “The Greatest Threat to Our Freedoms: A Government of Scoundrels, Spies, Thieves, Ruffians, Rapists, and Killers” (River Cities Reader: <https://www.rcreader.com/commentary/greatest-threat-our-freedoms-government-scoundrels-spies-thieves-ruffians-rapists-and/>)

49. The Reason for the Rise and Fall of Empires

2 Chronicles 12

THE GREAT GOLD HEIST

A SPIRITUAL REASON BEHIND A NATION’S FINANCIAL LOSSES (DEBT)

Shishak king of Egypt was the original Goldfinger with the Midas touch (the first king of the twenty-second dynasty (927 BC)).

With his gang of 3,000 charioteers and 60,000 warriors mounted on horses, he wreaked havoc by invading Jerusalem to plunder the gold in the temple complex and in the king’s treasury. He even confiscated Solomon’s gold-tinted shields (2 Chronicles 12).

2 Chronicles 12:9 So Shishak king of Egypt came up against Jerusalem, and took away the treasures of the house of the LORD, and the treasures of the king’s house; he took all: he carried away also the shields of gold which Solomon had made.

If you have ever had your house broken into and your precious treasures stolen, you understand the horrible sense of being violated. Anger, fear, and the horrors of loss storm the heart.

We are not told the political reason for the raid, **but Scripture informs us of the spiritual reason** for the gold seizure.

2 Chronicles 12:1 And it came to pass, when Rehoboam had established the kingdom, and had strengthened himself, he forsook the law of the LORD, and all Israel with him.

2 Chronicles 12:2 And it came to pass, that in the fifth year of king Rehoboam Shishak king of Egypt came up against Jerusalem, because they had transgressed against the LORD.

2 Chronicles 12:5 Then came Shemaiah the prophet to Rehoboam, and to the princes of Judah, that were gathered together to Jerusalem because of Shishak, and said unto them, Thus saith the LORD, Ye have forsaken me, and therefore have I also left you in the hand of Shishak.

Shishak's gold heist and ripping off the nation's treasures was a judgment of God upon the people for abandoning "the law of the Lord." It is also expressed in verse five as "forsaking the Lord."

There are lessons for Christians in this chapter. Every word from God is "profitable for doctrine, reproof, correction, and instruction in righteousness . . . that the man of God may be perfect" (2 Timothy 3:16).

Let us examine the spiritual reason for economic decline in the nation: they forsook the law of the LORD God.

What a terrible thing it must be to forsake the law of the Lord God (12:1).

Let's take a look at what it means "to forsake the law of the Lord"?

COMPONENTS OF LEGAL APOSTASY

First, to forsake the law of the Lord means to depreciate the Ten Commandments

The stones on which the Ten Commandments were written were placed into the "Tabernacle of Testimony," inside the "Ark of Testimony" and the stones were called "The Testimony" (Exodus 25:16; 25:21; 40:20; Numbers 9:15)

That is, the Ten Commandments (The Testimony) were a "witness" to the character of God and were the central, cardinal focus of the nation. When an Israelite went to worship God, he went to ponder, consider, and ruminate on the words of Ten Commandments and how they reflected the character of God.

Because God is eternal, His law is absolute. One absolute, unchanging God means one absolute, unchanging law (Psalm 119:137, 138, 142, 144).

During this period of history the nation abdicated their duty to God's law, and relinquished the paramount importance of devotion to His written Word.

The story of Judge Roy Moore and his Ten Commandments battle in Montgomery, Alabama is instructive.

The Chief Justice said at trial, the Ten Commandment Monument

"is a granite reminder to Alabama judges and justices and all other state citizens of the ultimate sovereignty of the Judeo-Christian God over both the state and the church, and of how all men and women should, therefore, look to God as the ultimate source of the moral foundation of all the laws of this country; for, it was God, and not man or the state, that gave us the Ten Commandments."

The Chief Justice also quotes James Madison's "Memorial and Remonstrance":

"It is the duty of every man to render to the Creator such homage, and such only, as he believes to be acceptable to him. This duty is precedent both in order of time and degree of obligation, to the claims of Civil Society. Before any man can be considered as a member of Civil Society, he must be considered as a subject of the Governor of the Universe ..."

The federal judge disagreed saying, the First Amendment itself does not actually incorporate the notion of a Christian God as the sovereign head of this nation:

"The First Amendment does not elevate one religion above all others, but rather it places all religions on par with one another, and even recognizes the equality of religion and non-religion . . . Perhaps in the early days of the Republic these words were understood to protect only the diversity within Christianity, but today they are recognized as guaranteeing religious liberty and equality to `the infidel, the atheist, or the adherent of a non-Christian faith such as Islam or Judaism."

If federal judge is correct, then the Constitution, from a Christian perspective, is a deeply flawed document!! America is doomed to be the victim of pluralism, multiculturalism, Islamism, feminism, atheism, and every other ism protected by the Federal Government.

Second, to forsake the law of the Lord means to practice idolatry.

When devotion to God's law-order cooled down, the nation became enraptured with trendy, liberal idolatrous practices of the international community.

In a parallel passage, I Kings 14:22-24, the holy text informs us that “Judah did evil in the sight of the LORD, and they provoked him to jealousy with their sins which they had committed.”

Solomon introduced idolatry to the nation by erecting shrines to the gods of his foreign wives. The people tolerated the idolatrous practices introduced in the preceding reign, and Rehoboam was unable to repress its growth. It was his misfortune to have to reap the bitter fruits of his father’s unfaithfulness.”

In Rehoboam’s time, the kingdom was split. The northern ten tribes erected golden calves at Dan and Bethel, and the spirit of idolatry infected the capital city of Jerusalem provoking the Lord to anger.

The people were swept up in a resurgence of Baalism and Ashtoreth worship. The text calls it doing “evil” –a departure from the Ten Commandments to do what is perverted, and immoral. Good became evil, and evil was promoted as good.

The phrase “provoked him to jealousy” infers a shift in devotion from the one true God and His absolute law to different gods with different laws.

Modern man does not think in terms of idolatry. He thinks in terms of “a new outlook on life,” “an attitude adjustment,” “new horizons,” “total change,” “expanding one’s perspective,” “undergoing a transformation,” and the like.

Anything but a Christ-centered focus is idolatry in the making.

Moreover, modern man does not see idolatry as serious. Pluralism, multiculturalism, diversity, and tolerance of diversity is pounded into youth during their public school training. We would do well, therefore, to consider the seriousness of God’s charge of forsaking His law in this account to pursue multiculturalism which is idolatry.

Third, the nation forsook the law of the Lord by tolerating the growth of cultic religions in the nation,

“For they also built them high places, and images, and groves, on every high hill, and under every green tree.”

The Canaanites erected pillars, which were also statues or images, to their god, Baal. We read of the “image” (תַּצִּטִּים) of Baal (2 Kings 3:2; 2 Kings 10:26, 27; cf. 18:4; 23. 14). Further, we find such images frequently mentioned side by side with the so-called “groves,” i.e., the “Asherahs”

It is a modern error to think that all religions are the same or that all religions deserve the same protection as Christianity. In cannibalistic religions, people eat their enemies; in Christianity, one is taught to love their enemies. In Islam,

they kill the infidel; in Christianity preachers seek to persuade the infidel. Enough of this nonsense that all religions are good . . . or equal!

A change in gods infers a change in laws. When a nation changes its gods, it changes its laws. A change in law indicates a nation has changed religion. In this account, the nations shifted away from the dogmatic ethics of the Ten Commandments to adopt the permissive values of false religions – values that embraced sexual perversions, fraud, and theft in the name of imminent domain. Americans call it “diversity training.”

Fourth, the nation forsook the law of the Lord by tolerating homosexuality,

“And there were also sodomites in the land: and they did according to all the abominations of the nations which the LORD cast out before the children of Israel.”

It is clear from Deuteronomy 23:18 that male prostitutes are here spoken of (*kadeshi*), the name of the female being (*kadesha*, קַדְשָׁה). The *kadeshi* (male pimps) are described in verse 19 as a dog, the latter (*kadesha*) as a whore in the land [1 Kings 15:12]; i.e., unlike female prostitutes, the Sodomites weren’t even considered members of the human race. In God’s eye, they behaved more like beasts than humans. It is highly probable that these infamous persons were of Canaanite or Phoenician origin as Israel did according to all the abominations of the nations which the Lord cast out before the children of Israel (Leviticus 18:20; Deuteronomy 18:9-12).

“Here we see a reason for God’s command, requiring the extirpation of the Canaanites” (Wordsworth).

Leviticus 20:13 presented a rule to civil authorities that homosexuals “are to be put to death.” Some sexual acts are not to be tolerated because they threaten the physical and mental health of society.

Before Europe plunged into WWII, Berlin was called the “Red Whore of Babylon” “where teenagers turned tricks and papa was a pimp.” (See “Where was God in All the Suffering of WWII.”⁵⁷)

Modern American Christianity is antinomian and therefore tolerant of homosexual-lesbian perversions. Modern Evangelicals are hostile to God’s law order because they tend to pit law against grace. That God’s law is absolute and the rule for a civil society is missing in Evangelicalism. Judge Moore got it correct:

⁵⁷ <https://nikeinsights.famguardian.org/forums/topic/where-was-god-during-all-the-suffering-in-wwii/>

For example, in answering the question, “**Does the Bible require the death penalty for homosexuality**”? GotQuestions.org gives this antinomian answer.

It is crucial to understand that Jesus fulfilled the Law (Matthew 5:17–18). Romans 10:4 says that Christ is the end of the Law. Ephesians 2:15 says that Jesus set aside the Law with its commands and regulations. Galatians 3:25 says, now that faith has come, we are no longer under the guardianship of the Law. The civil and ceremonial aspects of the Old Testament Law were for an earlier time. The Law’s purpose was completed with the perfect and complete sacrifice of Jesus Christ. So, no, the Bible does not command that homosexuals should be put to death in this day and age.

My brother errors! This is like saying because faith has come we are no longer under the guardianship of the law which says “Thou shall not kill,” and “Thou shall not steal”? Following this reasoning, it must be O.K. to practice adultery, murder, and theft.

The modern belief that God’s law was only for Israel is an error of modern Evangelicalism. While Jesus is the embodiment of the law and the subjective representation of the law, the Ten Commandment is the objective representation of God’s character. Because God’s character is eternal, God’s law is absolute

Psalm 119:142 Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth.

James Madison got it correct:

“It is the duty of every man to render to the Creator such homage, and such only, as he believes to be acceptable to him. This duty is precedent both in order of time and degree of obligation, to the claims of Civil Society. Before any man can be considered as a member of Civil Society, he must be considered as a subject of the Governor of the Universe ...”

Furthermore, the opposite of law is not grace but lawlessness. Grace confirms the validity of God’s law. It does not nullify it. One absolute God means one absolute law-order. Because He is eternal, His moral law is absolute and binding on all men. His law was not only good for Israel, but for all men and all of man’s institutions. In fact, one cannot love without the law because love is a fulfillment of the law (1 John 5:1-3; Romans 13:8).

If God’s law is not the standard for the civil order in Western Civilization, then what is? Humanism? Feminism? Islam? A democratic, majority vote? The law of “the infidel, the atheist, or the adherent of a non-Christian faith such as

Islam or Judaism.'" (quoting *Wallace v. Jaffree*, [472 U.S. 38](#), 52, 105 S. Ct. 2479, 2487, 86 L. Ed. 2d 29 (1985))?

The promotion and protection of Sodomy and transvestitism indicates a nation has committed apostasy and rebelled against God's law-order . . . and this failure must be laid at the feet of American antinomian churches.

Fifth, to forsake the law of the Lord is closely related to forsaking God.

2 Chronicles 12:5 . . . Thus saith the LORD, Ye have forsaken me, and therefore have I also left you in the hand of Shishak.

Ellicott : "Literally, Ye have forsaken me, and I also have forsaken you, in (into) the hand of Shishak. The phrase "to leave into the hand" of a foe occurs Nehemiah 9:28."

You can't genuinely claim to know God and not obey His law, or claim to know God and be given over to lawlessness, anarchy, and the Western doctrines of absolute freedom.

Thus, forsaking the law of the LORD and adopting policies of pluralism is no small matter. **It is the cause of the rise and fall of empires** (Deuteronomy 31:17; Joshua 24:20; 1 Chronicles 28:9; 2 Chronicles 7:19; 2 Chronicles 15:2; Isaiah 65:11-12; Jeremiah 23:33)

Ezra 8:22 . . . but his power and his wrath is against all them that forsake him."

Isaiah 1:28 But rebels and sinners shall be broken together, and those who forsake the LORD shall be consumed.

The good news is that God is slow to anger and merciful: He is more prone to correct and discipline than to forsake and destroy.

Nehemiah 9:31 Nevertheless, in your great mercies you did not make an end of them or forsake them, for you are a gracious and merciful God.

Consequences of Forsaking the Law of the Lord

One result of rebellion against God's law-order is economic deprivation: debt, inflation, depression, recession, natural disasters, and war.

Because the nation rebelled against the LORD, he brought Shishak, King of Egypt, to plunder the nation's wealth. Though Rehoboam had fortified the nation, Shishak seems to move toward the capital city with relative ease—even plundering the gold from the temple and the king's treasury without resistance.

When a nation plunges into idolatry, God has many weapons in His arsenal to discipline His rebellious people: war, recession, depression, inflation, 28%

taxation on income, bankruptcy, a debt-based economy, a twenty-trillion + dollar national debt, and the like.

Shishak (Goldfinger) even looted Solomon's gold shields—shields used for pageantry and not war. What a sight it must have been to see the king on the throne with 300 soldiers marching in step in a military formation with beams of sunlight flashing off the gold tinted shields!

Because Rehoboam refused to give God his praise, God took away the praises (gold shields) of the king.

Because the nation refused to honor God's law, God took away their emblems of honor.

What a terrible thing it must be to forsake the law of the LORD God!

It ought to give Americans pause to consider President Roosevelt's confiscation of America's gold in 1933 . . . and, the fact that the FRN is simply a worthless piece of paper backed only by the "full *faith and credit*" of the U.S. Government . . . whatever that means. Selah!

There is a positive in this chapter. Good came out of evil. Rehoboam and the civil rulers humbled themselves and repented saying, "The Lord is righteous" (2 Chronicles 12:6).

With Jerusalem plundered, the nation realized that God had judged them for their sin of abandoning His law. Their repentance was simple. No excuses! They simply acknowledged that the LORD was right, and that his justice was fair. God honored their repentance, and **restrained Shishak** from doing further damage (12:7).

*Psalm 76:10 Surely the **wrath** of man shall praise thee: the remainder of **wrath** shalt thou restrain.*

50. Shall I Not Punish A Nation Such as This?

Jeremiah 5:29

"Shall I not punish . . . such a nation as this"?

Jeremiah 5: 26 For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men. 27 As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich. 28 They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of

the wicked (politicians): they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge. 29 Shall I not I punish them⁵⁸ for these things? saith the LORD: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? 30 A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; 31 The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof?

Jeremiah has been called the weeping prophet because he was distressed over the sins of his people and the impending judgment of God upon his nation. He ministered at the nadir of his society, and was alive when the waves of God's judgment crashed upon his people.

In many ways America is going down the same slippery slope. There is not a godly, Biblical preacher that does hear the thunder of judgment rumbling in heaven against the United States.

Let us compare Jeremiah's days with our time from this passage.

Just as Jeremiah found wicked men doing their dirty deeds in his country, America contains wicked men in high places – particularly in the citadels of government.

Every age has its wickedness, but what is unique about our time is that deceit, robbery, bribery, deception, lies and stealth have been institutionalized. Whole government agencies are busy violating the rights of man. The IRS, FEMA, CIA, FBI, DHS, and other three letter gangs come to mind.

Just as the wicked in Jeremiah's day set up "snares" to "trap" and "catch men," the United States has set up its legal traps to ensnare men.

The phrase "lying in wait" refers to violations of the Tenth Commandment; that, "**lying in wait**" implies the development of sophisticated schemes, planned robbery, planned extortion, planned intimidation, and planned commercial entrapment.

Notice the phrase "**set a trap.**" Speed traps come to mind where cops lie in wait to pounce on a "driver" to present the lamb with an invitation to go to court to be fleeced by a government paid judge. But, entrapment is much deeper.

Consider the birth-certificate trap and the theft of your name without your consent; the social security Ponzi scheme trap; the income tax trap wherein the

⁵⁸ NASB 1977 'Shall I not punish these *people*?' declares the LORD, 'On a nation such as this Shall I not avenge Myself?' ESV: "Should I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this"?

government steals 30-40% of a man's wages before it reaches his hands; the student loan trap when people spend the next twenty years paying of the interest; the mortgage trap where families are forced to be a debt slave for thirty years. The average American worker will spend his entire life paying off debt because the United States Government Mafia has created a debt-based economy and made American citizens debt sureties for the gluttonous, covetous State.

Jeremiah presents us with imagery of deceit in terms of "caged birds;" that is, deceit fluttered around in society like a cage full of birds.

Think of how Congress twists language and spins news in order to trap men and deceive the public.

Secretary Hillary Clinton called the FBI criminal investigation of her breach of emails a routine security check. DOJ Loretta Lynch requested the FBI investigation into security breaches be relabeled a "matter" rather than an "investigation." President Obama said about health care "If you like your plan, you can keep your plan." As soon as Lois Learner's targeting of conservatives were discovered, her computer crashed and thousands of emails disappeared. The Muslim invasion of America and Europe occurred because officials in high places branded the occupation as "compassion for refugees." In Europe, the "refugees" are 80 % single males. Now this is not immigration, but a militant invasion of Europe by military-age men. Towards the end of his administration Obama minimized the crimes of rapists, armed robbers, drug dealers to "justice-involved individuals." Deceit is so common in American politics we have a joke that goes something like this: How do you tell if a politician is lying"? The answer is "If he has his mouth open."

Just as the deceivers in Jeremiah's day "became rich," and waxed "fat," Congress is known for lining their own pockets, doubling and tripling their net worth, and funding their re-election campaigns.

During the Obama administration, the net worth of some Congressmen increased tenfold. Congress is now known as the "Millionaire's Club." "Despite the fact that polls show how dissatisfied Americans are with Congress overall, there's been no change in our appetite to elect affluent politicians to represent our concerns in Washington," said Sheila Krumholz, (Center for Responsive Politics; Open Secrets).

Consider what Congressman X wrote in his sixty page booklet.

'Screw the next generation': Anonymous congressman writes tell-all and slams 'nation of naive, self-absorbed sheep' as he admits he never reads bills he votes on

'My main job is to keep my job, to get reelected. It takes precedence over everything,' an anonymous member of Congress writes in a new book

'Voters are incredibly ignorant and know little about our form of government and how it works,' he writes

'It's far easier than you think to manipulate a nation of naive, self-absorbed sheep who crave instant gratification'

One liberal news blogger claims the author is a Democrat

'The Confessions of Congressman X' will be released May 24 by a small Minnesota-based 'vanity press' publisher

Just as the judges in Jeremiah's time "overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless" so the justice in America has been turned upside down.

There is simply not enough space in this work to list all the corruption in American politics, but consider the following:

Think of the Clinton scandals: Travelgate, Chinagate, Filegate, Pardongate, Emailgate, Bengazigate, obstruction of justice, destruction of evidence, et al.

Signs and T-shirts post, "Hillary for Prison 2016." Pundits ask, "Is Hillary too big to prosecute"?

Charles Krauthammer said that the Clinton Foundation was nothing but an "international money laundering scheme."

Bill Clinton's non-profit organization doled out a hefty donation to Julie McMahon, Clinton's on-again, off-again girlfriend.

If you and I had done this, we'd be locked up for a thousand years in prison, but the government can "overpass the deeds of the wicked" just like in Jeremiah's Time. Except, we call it legal immunity.

Christian Americans suffer from Clinton fatigue and quite frankly from government corruption fatigue.

Just as public officials did not judge the cause of the fatherless in Jeremiah's day, the whole of Congress is willing to stand up for those who cannot defend themselves.

Consider the plight of unborn; that is, Congress permits the execution of the innocent babies; permits the prosecution of Christian bakers who won't decorate a cake for a lesbian wedding; permits open Sodomy and same-sex marriages; permits the proliferation of obscenity; permits the prosecution of

non-taxpayers; permits the prosecution of whistleblowers; and, won't prosecute congressmen who accept bribes.

Corruption of the Constitutional common law system by BAR attorneys is nothing short of spectacular. In Texas, a corrupt prosecutor in Williamson County, Texas, was sentenced to only 10 days in jail after knowingly, and intentionally sending an innocent man to prison for 25 years.

Amazon sells a book title, "License to Lie."

One article says of DOJ Attorney General Eric Holder that "Holder will leave the Department of Justice littered with corrupted prosecutions and prosecutors, his own contempt of Congress, numerous Supreme Court reversals, and scathing rebukes from federal judges" (Observer).

Just as the "prophets swear falsely" and the "priest bear rule by their own means (ways)" so America has become haunt for religious charlatans:

Liberal pastors who deny the authenticity of Scripture, prosperity preachers, crazy Charismatics, LDS deceivers, "good ole' boy Baptist preachers," Catholic homosexual priests, holy-laughter fruitcakes, and TV evangelists begging for money come to mind.

The 501 c 3 government religious organizations are haunts for men of greed, avarice, corruption, and apostasy. Noting speaks to this more than women pastors, and clergymen that promote homosexuality, abortion, and feminism. Many a good pastor has been fired for nothing more than being faithful to God's Word and his resistance to the liberalization of the church by apostates.

The Lord asked Jeremiah the following question, "shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this"?

The answer is "Yes!" He did! In 586, the Babylonians invaded Israel to kill the men, rape the women, and to make slaves of the survivors.

Likewise, God has permitted a Muslim invasion of apostate Europe and Apostate America to humble them – except, we don't call it an invasion. We call it compassionate immigration.

London has its first Muslim Mayor, and Barak Hussein Obama is America's first Gaylord, Muslim president.

He promised "change," and He has brought Muslims from all over the Middle East and Guatemalans from Central America to change the united State . . . or is that to divide, separate, and conquer America?

And the sad thing is that just like in Jeremiah's day, the American people "**love it so!**" (5:31).

51. Praying Against Politicians

2 Kings 19:20

Proverbs 28:28 When the wicked rise, people hide themselves, but when they perish, the righteous increase.

We must learn to pray against American politicians WHEN they are hostile to God's law-order and the Christian faith.

When corrupt politicians rise to power, Christians have to hide. But, when wicked rulers fall from power, righteous men increase and the land is at peace.

Since the righteous go into hiding during the tenure of evil rulers, and good men increase during righteous administrations, it behooves Christian to pray against self-serving presidents and congressmen. We pray they will be exposed and removed from office.

God's people error when they pray for blessing when ungodly rulers are in power. When Hillary Clinton or Barack Obama shout, "God Bless America," they are asking God to pour out his riches on a nation led by a totalitarian, queer, militarized police State that is in rebellion against His law-order. This is blasphemy. It is like praying, "God, please bless my adulterous affairs with Sally Sue," or "God please bless my plan to murder the cashier at Pedro's Supermarket."

Christians should not be praying for the blessing of the wicked or shout, "God bless America" when it is run by Sodomites, abortionists, and antichrists. *The only way God can bless America is to have the wicked removed from office . . . to purge the deep state!*

1 Timothy 2:1-2 First of all, then, I urge that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings be made for all people, for kings and all who are in high positions, that we may lead a peaceful and quiet life, godly and dignified in every way.

Notice the "we" in the text.

The text does not say we should pray for kings for their benefit, blessing, and success, but for Christians that we might live out our life purpose for the Lord unmolested, undisturbed, and unhampered.

We pray for rulers so that believers can conduct their ministry without being ridiculed, oppressed, plagued, and badgered by encumbering government regulations, codes, taxes, and politically correct new age policies.

We shouldn't even be praying for the salvation of these rulers because these powerful pagans are not permitted by God to rule over God's people to begin with (Deuteronomy 17).

John Jay said it well:

Almost all nations have peace or war at the will and pleasure of rulers whom they do not elect, and who are not always wise or virtuous. Providence has given to our people the choice of their rulers, and it is the duty, as well as the privilege and interest, of our Christian nation to select and prefer Christians for their rulers (Justice John Jay, letter to John Murray, 1816).

Everyone but criminals are better off with a Christian ruler. No matter what pagan politician wins an election, voters are bound to be losers.

2 Kings 19:20 Then Isaiah the son of Amoz sent to Hezekiah, saying, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel, That which thou hast prayed to me against Sennacherib king of Assyria I have heard.

God heard Hezekiah's prayer because he recognized the activity of this wicked king and prayed against the success of this international tyrant. So powerful and so righteous was Hezekiah, the story is recorded three times in the Bible.

Romans 11:2 . . . Do you not know what the Scripture says of Elijah, how he appeals to God against Israel? "Lord, they have killed your prophets, they have demolished your altars, and I alone am left, and they seek my life."

Elijah prayed against Israel because its leaders, Ahab and Jezebel, persecuted Israelites that believed in YHWH and opposed the promotion of Baalism by the same.

Notice he stated the facts: the government killed the prophets, and demolished the practice and symbols of true religion.

When a government targets Christians for prosecution and enacts laws to expunge, terminate, dissolve, suspend, extinguish, disparage, censor, banish, and separate expressions of Christianity like the posting of the Ten Commandments "in public," then it has joined the rebellion against God's law-order and must be resisted through prayer and other means.

When a government passes legislation forcing churches to register with the State and organize under 501 c 3 rules, it must be resisted through prayer and any other means.

When a government promotes wickedness like Sodomy, transsexuality, cults like Islam, wholesale abortion, and oppressive taxation, then it must be resisted through prayer or any other means.

When a government acts as a Peeping Tom on its people, collects infinite data on them, and seeks ultimate, unlimited control of people, their property, their wealth, their bank accounts, and biological data, then it must be resisted through prayer or any other means.

Praying that God would bless every American president just because they are in a position of power is treason against God.

Praying that God would bless LGBT, Sodomite, Feminist, Abortionist, Zionist, liberal, international, fascist Presidents is blasphemy!

Praying that God would bless lying politicians and depraved, womanizing, degenerate presidents shows the world that Christians are a safe distance from intelligence.

Therefore, it behooves Christians to pray that the dark deeds of these nefarious rulers will be exposed to the light; that the traitorous criminals might be removed from office.

Thus, when it comes to America's pagan politician(s), we pray, "May his days be few; may another take his office!" (Psalm 109:8).

52. Preachers that Don't Bark

Isaiah 56:10

Isaiah 56:10 "His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber."

Jeremiah 23:15 . . . because from the prophets of Jerusalem ungodliness has spread throughout the land because from the prophets of Jerusalem ungodliness has spread throughout the land."

1 Peter 4:17 For it is time for judgment to begin with the family of God; and if it begins with us, what will the outcome be for those who do not obey the gospel of God?

You have heard of the saying, "strain at a gnat and swallow a camel." Many people spend their time swatting gnats in their lives while the smelly-humped beasts run loose in society.

It would be easy to discuss the challenges America faces economically, or ethically, or philosophically. We have a whole generation that has forsaken God's Law-word and plunged into sexual immorality, hedonism, and blatant materialism. Wickedness, ungodliness, and evil abound. Many of our National leaders are lesbians and homosexuals and atheists.

At the root of the problem, however, is not the ACLU or humanists, *but the preachers in our churches.*

America's biggest problem is not with the government or its schools, but with the foolish and ignorant men who occupy our pulpits. Most of the men who preach on Sundays are not Bible scholars, or exegetes, or expositors of the Word of God. The majority are trained in business or psychology or engineering. They have adopted the principles of pop psychology as their basis of counseling. The "power of positive thinking," collective consciousness, and the "think and grow rich" ideologies of our day are at the core of their ministry. They know little of history or law or reformed theology. Their theme is, "You're O.K.; I'm O.K." They would rather grow numerically than spiritually. Many have the gift of "gab" and can talk for hours in infinite detail about bagatelle without ever having to pick up the Bible.

UNDESTAND THE TERM "CONSENT"

Silence is a form of speech. It is an element in a dialogue.

Silence is a means of consent. It means they approve by saying nothing.

*Isaiah 56:10 His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, **they cannot bark**; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber.*

Webster's New World Dictionary defines "consent" as the act of a recognized authority confirming or ratifying an action; authorized approval or permission. The legal word for "consent" is the term "*sanction.*" When a court sanctions a thing it either approves or it disapproves of an action. The preachers in this country are guilty of consenting to immorality, theft, homosexuality, adultery, murder, and fornication when they fail to identify the sins of the congregation and the sins of our nation and call both to repentance.

When preachers are silent on abortion, on murdering innocent unborn babies, on the unlawful seizures of private property, *they are like dumb dogs that do not bark when danger appears.* When was the last time you heard a preacher give a war whoop against the idolatry of statism, or fraud in the tax system, or theft initiated by government agencies? When it comes to sin, we need preachers who are meaner than the Bone Crusher of the WWF.

Silence is also a form of fraud.

Silence can only be equated with fraud when there is a legal and moral duty to speak or when an inquiry left unanswered would be intentionally misleading. We cannot condone this shocking conduct... If that is the case we hope our message is clear. This sort of deception will not be tolerated and if this is routine it should be corrected immediately (U.S. v. Prudden, 424 F.2d. 1021; U.S. v. Tweel, 550 F. 2d. 297, 299, 300 (1977)).

PERSPECTIVE OF JEREMIAH

Reading this chapter is like reading an obituary. It is hard to hear the doom and gloom, yet this is a part of God's Word that needs to be preached.

Notice Jeremiah's reaction to these viperous *false teachers*.⁵⁹

Jeremiah 23:9-10 "My heart is broken . . . all my bones tremble, I am like a drunken man overcome by wine."

As Jeremiah looked at these false prophets and their immoral lives, their wickedness, and smooth words, he was shaken to the core. Like a man plastered with wine, Jeremiah teeter-tottered down the street in a daze because of the Lord's "holy words." Swerving back and forth, he could not make sense of the prophets in his day. Jeremiah had the Word of the Lord and understood that God's hammer of justice was about to fall on the nation and the preachers. Because these false prophets were in dreamland and preaching fictions, they were enemies of God's kingdom.

Are you troubled by all the flim-flam coming from preachers?

Are you grieved that men ignore and abuse God's Word?

Are you upset that preachers are silent on the removal of the Ten Commandments from the public square? Is your guard rattled when preachers are totally submissive to every law passed by pagan legislators?

Do you stagger like a drunken man when you hear the preachers begging for money while promising you riches and wealth? Is your heart broken that true preachers are ignored, attacked, maligned, and shunned not only by the public, but by other Christians?

⁵⁹ Jeremiah reacts to three deportments (23:9-12): (a) the deportment of the prophets, (b) the deportment of the holy God and the announcement of His judgment which was already causing a drought in the land, and (c) the deportment of wickedness among the people of his day, especially the wickedness of the priests and prophets.

Does it make you angry whenever a preacher is portrayed on T.V. as a hypocritical, angry, abusive adulterer that doesn't have the enough sense to know when to come in out of the rain?

When is the last time you have been accused of being intoxicated with grief over the sins of our nation?

*Proverbs 29:2 When the righteous are in authority, the people rejoice: but when the wicked beareth rule, **the people mourn.***

The result of false preaching was "the land was full of adultery" – the final stage before the nation was judged (2 Peter 2:14).

*Jeremiah 23:10 For **the land is full of adulterers**; for because of swearing the land mourneth; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their force is not right.*

When preachers fail to clearly uphold the Law of God and the call to purity, citizens and priests alike plunge into sensuality.

According to the National Campaign Against Pornography,

*"As many as 20 million adults visit cybersex sites each month, according to a study published last year in the Journal Sexual Addiction and Compulsivity."*⁶⁰

*"Of those who have visited sexually explicit websites, just over half of the clergy (53 percent) say they have visited the sites in the past year, compared to 44 percent of lay readers. A total of 18 percent of clergy said they visit sexually explicit websites between a couple of times a month and more than once a week."*⁶¹

When preachers fail to fear the Lord and shun evil even the land cries out against it

"The pastures in the desert are wasted" cried Jeremiah (Jer. 23:10).

Sin impacts the land. Have you noticed the inordinate amount of hurricanes and tornadoes and floods that have hit this country?

Munich-Re, the world's largest re-insurance agency, reports that disaster-related economic losses topped US \$145 billion in 2004, up from \$65 billion in

⁶⁰ See *Christianity Today*, "Tangled in the Worst Web," March 5, 2001

⁶¹ Internet Resource: <http://www.thencsp.com/pornfacts.htm>.

2003, for about the same number (650) of natural disasters in each year, making 2004 the most expensive year to date.⁶²

THE PROFANITY OF THE FALSE PREACHERS

Jeremiah 23:11 For both prophet and priest are profane; yea, in my house have I found their wickedness, saith the LORD.

The word “*profane*” means “defiled,” “polluted,” or “corrupt.” Not only did they not expose the wickedness of the nation, they participated in the sins of the people. They did not preach the Word of God or call men to repentance. Preaching their own positive visions and dreams (23:16), they not only profaned His Word but their work and their office. Suffering from terminal moral decay, their hearts were like coffins full of dead bones. Vance Havner use to say,

“When the Lord’s white sheep become dirty gray, the white sheep feel more comfortable.”

Isaiah 8:20 To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

Even in this country, many of the great preachers who represent themselves as men of God do not denounce the sins of our age or the corruption in our government. They have all the hocus pocus of a Reno Magician. They give their opinions on issues, but which one of them quotes from the Bible when being interviewed?

We have sired a whole generation of preachers who are sweet, congenial, effeminate men who desire to be church administrators with big churches and big budgets. They have more sweetness than Mother Hubbard. They are giants at building organizations, but pigmies at building the church. They spend countless hours preparing sermons that do not offend people, ruffle feathers, or cause divisions in the organization – sermons that are exclusively prepared to make the congregation laugh and feel good. Jesus had something to say about these preachers in His day.

John 12:43 For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

PROLIFERATION OF EVIL BY THE PREACHERS

NIV Jeremiah 23:13 “Among the prophets of Samaria I saw this repulsive thing: They prophesied by Baal and led my people Israel astray.

⁶² NASA: Earth’s Observatory: “Government study on Rising cost of Natural disasters,” (earthobservatory.nasa.gov).

Jeremiah 23:15 Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land.

Notice how profanity started in the pulpits and spread like the Asian flu among the people. The cultural deterioration began with macabre mischief among the preachers. There is no greater sin that God is judging a nation than when he allows pulpits to be filled with sensual, lewd, self-serving clergy.

*Are you disturbed by the unending reports of Christian leaders that have compromised the faith? "4,392 priests, or 4 percent of the total number of members of the Catholic clergy between 1950 and 2002, have had allegations [of homosexuality] made against them."*⁶³

*CNN reported the Rev. Ted Haggard of Colorado Springs "agreed Saturday to resign as leader of the mega church he started in his basement more than 20 years ago after its independent investigative board said he was guilty of 'sexually immoral conduct.'"*⁶⁴

*Charles Stanley, well-known Southern Baptist pastor and former president of the SBC went through a divorce. "When the news was announced to the First Baptist Church of Atlanta in May, the newly divorced pastor received a standing ovation from the congregation."*⁶⁵

*"The wife of Ned Graham, son of Billy Graham, divorced him on the basis of "infidelity, domestic violence, and drug and alcohol abuse."*⁶⁶

*"Divorce among Contemporary "Christian" artists is rampant. Just a few of the divorced or separated CCM musicians are Sandi Patty, Deniece Williams, Sheila Walsh, John Talbot, Randy Stonehill, Larry Norman, Tom Howard, Ralph Carmichael, Steve Archer, Amy Grant and Gary Chapman."*⁶⁷

A 1988 survey of nearly 1000 Protestant clergy by Leadership Magazine found that 12 percent admitted to sexual intercourse outside of marriage, and that 23 percent had done something sexually inappropriate with

⁶³ The National Catholic Weekly, (American Magazine.org; and, Kevin Cullen, Boston Globe Staff) 2/28/2004.

⁶⁴ "Church Forces out Haggard for 'sexually immoral conduct'," (Online Resource: CNN.Com., November 4, 2006).

⁶⁵ *Fundamental Baptists Information Service*, "Divorce is Rampant Among Christians Leaders," (Online Resource: Way of Life.org. 2001).

⁶⁶ Ibid.

⁶⁷ Ibid

someone other than their spouse. The researchers also interviewed nearly 1000 subscribers to Christianity Today who were not pastors. They found the numbers were nearly double: 45 percent indicated having done something sexually inappropriate, and 23 percent having extramarital intercourse.”⁶⁸

PROSECUTION

Jeremiah 23:14 I have seen also in the prophets of Jerusalem an horrible thing: they commit adultery, and walk in lies: they strengthen also the hands of evildoers, that none doth return from his wickedness: they are all of them unto me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah.

Like a District Attorney, God lays out his indictment against the false prophets: They “prophesied by Baal,” “led my people astray,” and “committed adultery.” In verse twelve, God prosecutes the false prophets promising to them three judgments: Instability, banishment, and disaster. Their deeds are “repulsive” (23:13) and they lead God’s people “astray” (23:13). Because of their tolerance of evil, the “hands of the evildoers” were empowered to commit more wickedness. The false prophets had stirred a potage of toenails, frog legs, and spider webs, and God was going to sprinkle them with the dust of death.

THE PROCLAMATION

Jeremiah 23:16 Thus saith the LORD of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the LORD.

God commands his people to “*hearken not to these prophets.*” God don’t like ugly and He ain’t crazy about pretty. You would think that the people of God would stomp out of the crowd and refuse to listen to fantasies. Not only were the false prophets a thorn to the nation, but also the people in the crowd loved their thistles.

Like Dead Sea Christians, they tolerated any craziness that floated down the Jordan River. Jeremiah’s preaching was too negative, too accusatory, and too intolerant of the people’s behavior. The people did not want to hear about judgment; they wanted to hear about acceptance. They did not want to hear that they were sinners; they wanted to hear that they were normal. They did not want to hear that God was angry at their country; they wanted to hear how God loved their nation. They did not want to hear about God’s wrath; they

⁶⁸ Kerby Anderson, “Adultery,” Leadership, (Online Resource: leaderu.com/orgs/probe/docs/adultery.html., 2001).

wanted to hear about God's love. They did not want to hear about repentance; they wanted to hear about forgiveness. And, the prophets were happy to tell the people what they wanted to hear.

I am amazed at what people will believe. Have you ever noticed how gullible people are and how they love to listen to lies? Tabloids with titles like, "I was Abducted by an Alien," or "900 Pound Woman Gives Birth to a 600 Pound Baby," or "Walking Mummy Kills 56 Men" or "What Car Would Jesus Buy" are bought and read every day.

Congregations are a part of the problem in that they are not careful to pick godly, Christ-honoring men to lead them.

Last year a talented pastor divorced his wife — a wife who was totally committed to the marriage. He resigned his church, but three months later was hired by another Baptist church as the interim pastor. Pastors ought to be above reproach by living and preaching the true Word of God.

Their lives ought to match the message. This does not mean they are sinless, but they should sin less than other people. It does not mean they are free of conflict or trials. Peter and Paul and all the apostles were embroiled in controversy and had been arrested, indicted, and jailed by civil authorities. Though misunderstood and criticized, they were men of integrity. Would Peter or Paul qualify to be pastors in today's American church? I doubt it.

Among Bible believing churches, there is the opposite problem in that churches are looking for pastors with lots of tinsel and gloss. Being above reproach does not mean that a pastor should have more sugar than the fairy godmother.

During a boring football game, *John Madden* asked the cameraman to turn the camera on a football player sitting on a bench. Focusing on the unsoiled field goal kicker, Madden would say,

"What is he doing there? Look at his white uniform! He's not a football player. Real football players are dirty from head to toe; their uniforms are full of grass and mud and bloodstains. He's too clean to be a real football player."

While churches should be looking for men of integrity, churches are often searching for unsoiled, unstained, unscarred, uncriticized, unexamined pastors with white gloves and a white suit. What they need are pastors that have been to the front lines where they have been grabbed, squeezed, and slammed to the mat in the fury of the competition; pastors that have faced the King Kong of conflict and the snarls of a Canadian wolf. In John Madden terms, if the pastor ain't got no mud on his uniform, he ain't no real pastor. The only pastors who

have white uniforms are those who have learned the razzle-dazzle and the art of doing the jitterbug behind the pulpit.

"No Scar"? by Amy Charmichael

"Hast thou no scar?

No hidden scar on foot, or side, or hand?

I hear thee sung as mighty in the land;

I hear them hail thy bright, ascendant star.

Hast thou no scar?

Hast thou no wound?

Yet I was wounded by the archers; spent,

Leaned Me against a tree to die; and rent

By ravening beasts that compassed Me, I swooned.

*Hast **thou** no wound?*

No wound? No scar?

Yet, as the Master shall the servant be,

And pierced are the feet that follow Me.

But thine are whole; can he have followed far

Who has no wound nor scar"?

A Prayer:

Lord Jesus, thank you for my scars . . . which remind me of your scars. Mine are so small, yet they hurt so. Yours are so incomprehensible to me. Let no one hail me as mighty or bright, since it is only by your power that I do anything well. Lord, I want you only as my Master; remind me of this when I face a new trial, that I might embrace the wound and treasure the scar. Thank you that I am whole for now. Thank you that my wholeness will not remain so as I travel through life, being conformed into your image (Author unknown).

Churches should stop looking for pastors that have the wisdom of Solomon, the good looks of Carry Grant, the humor of Bob Hope, the singing skills of Frank Sinatra, the genius of Albert Einstein, and the oratory skills of Demosthenes. But they do!

Churches are looking for caretakers, not pew shakers.

They prefer pastors that play patty cake instead of those that wrestle, tassel, and tussle with demons and devils on the wrestling mat of life. Preaching a smooth cross is easier to handle than preaching the old rugged cross. Teaching Christians to always obey the government is easier than teaching them when to disobey civil rulers.

The Apostle Paul would not qualify for any pastorate in America because he spent time in jail and was chased out of many cities for being too controversial. He wasn't pretty. He wasn't a great orator. His reputation was not spotless. He did not dress in a white robe. He was dirty and soiled from wrestling with necrophiliacs near the gates of hell. What kind of resume could Paul write that would satisfy a church today? This is not to say that there are no Biblical standards for pastors. Paul met all the standards of a pastor, but his Christian uniform was not white. It was stained with blood and mud from proclaiming the gospel to hostile crowds.

In conclusion, just as the problems in Jeremiah's day were the result of corrupt prophets, the problems in our day are the result of weak, impotent, lewd pastors in the pulpit. Too many pastors live a false life and preach a false gospel—a sweet gospel with no cross to carry. Even those who do preach the true gospel have been weak in extending it into jurisdictions outside the church walls. They are fiery in the pulpit but frozen in the public square. When opposed, their legs turn to jelly, their fingers turn to paste, and their tongue turns thick with fear.

So, what are the solutions? First, if pastors are the number one problem in America, they also have the potential to be the number one solution in America. Pastors must determine to be God's man and to preach His Word truthfully. Repentance may be in order. Pastors must be delivered from the fear of men and trust God to protect their ministry and their message. The fear of being fired or making people angry keeps so many from teaching the truth. Second, Churches must free pastors to preach the truth and encourage them to advance the non-politically correct gospel to the front lines where the world is launching its attack against truth. "Sermonettes for Christianettes" is not going to "turn the world upside down" (Acts 17:1-3).

53. The Man Who Disobeyed the Government

2 Kings 1

2 Kings 1:2 And Ahaziah fell down through a lattice in his upper chamber that was in Samaria, and was sick: and he sent messengers, and said unto them, Go, enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron whether I shall recover of this disease.

2 Kings 1:16 And he said unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Forasmuch as thou hast sent messengers to enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron, is it not because there is no God in Israel to enquire of his word? therefore thou shalt not come down off that bed on which thou art gone up, but shalt surely die.

First let's take a look at the story; and, second let's look at two valuable lessons from this account.

THE STORY OF AHAZIAH AND ELIJAH THE PROPHET

The Chronicle of 2 Kings opens up with the account of King Ahaziah, son of Ahab, sending messengers to inquire of Beelzebub, the god of Ekron, to discover if he would recover from the injury he received from having fallen through the lattice of a roof.

Because he wasn't healing, Ahaziah became anxious about his health. Thus, he sent a delegation to priests serving in a temple dedicated to the "lord of the flies," possibly a reference to some winged god of the Philistines.

On the way, Elijah met the embassy and confronted them about the king's idolatrous inquisition informing them that because of the king's confidence in a false god, he would die.

When the delegation informed the king what the prophet said, Ahaziah became enraged and sent a paramilitary SWAT team of 50 to arrest the man of God. When they met Elijah on a hill, the commander ordered him in the name of the king to "come down." Elijah refused, and to prove to Ahaziah that he meant business, a fire from heaven came down out of the sky and burned the special forces to a crisp—kind of like God's judgment on Sodom and Gomorrah.

The king sent another squadron of Special Forces with the same crispy results.

A third company was ordered to go seize the prophet, but this time, the commander begged Elijah for mercy. The LORD spoke to the prophet and instructed him to go with him. When he arrived in presence of King Ahaziah, he repeated his original message. Because he consulted the god of Ekron, he was going to die.

King Ahaziah died shortly thereafter.

There are at least *two valuable lessons* for us in this passage of Holy Scripture:

First, there is a lesson on idolatry.

What a terrible thing it must be to consult false gods!

Ahaziah's pursuit of information from a pseudo religion was a clear case of idolatry. He died because he sought counsel in a false religion.

The double negative is intensive and implies that the king's inquiry of Beelzebub, god of Ekron, was a complete, total denial of the authority YHWH.

What man would go to a known medical quack for healing? Spiritually, people seek out religious quacks all the time. They are absolutely enchanted with the power religions and their strange practices.

There is only one God and one true religion in the world today, and that is the faith that belongs to Jesus Christ. Because He died for man's sins and rose from the dead, He is Lord, Master, and King.

All other religions are false, untrue, mistaken, fake, fictitious, specious, and beguiling. Those who follow the false religions of Mormonism, Islam, Buddhism, Hinduism and the like will die in their sins and meet the same fate as King Ahaziah.

Those who play with ouija boards, consult palm readers, read tarot cards, seek insight into the future via horoscopes, or pursue wisdom through pop-psychology engage a form of idolatry.

Proverbs 9:10 The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding.

Second, there is a lesson on resistance to de facto authority.

When the commanders of Ahaziah's special forces ordered Elijah to "Come down," he refused to obey the idolatrous king and his band of commandos.

We have here a contest of authority : the king v. the LORD, the State v. the Church, an idolater v. a man of God, the military power of a police government v. the spiritual power of God's prophet.

Christians have no duty to obey idolatrous officials, officers, judges, municipal cops, or federal agents. Prophets are not slaves of the state.

Americans have no duty to obey authoritative, bullying, commanding cops . . . unless there is a life-threatening emergency, and it is the reasonable thing to do.

"Since when have we Americans been expected to bow submissively to authority and speak with awe and reverence to those who represent us? The constitutional theory is that we the people are the sovereigns, the state and federal officials only our agents. We who have the final word can speak softly or angrily. We can seek to challenge and annoy, as we need not stay docile and quiet."

—Justice William O. Douglas, dissenting, *Colten v. Kentucky*, 407 U.S. 104 (1972)

The lesson here is stop being compliant, passive, wishy-washy, docile, and submissive to America's brute, para-military, tyrannical police forces who think they own you. Show some backbone. Growl, snarl, and show some teeth.

The rationale of the men in blue goes something like this:

Give up your rights. "Do exactly what I say, and we'll get along fine. Do not question me or talk back in any way. You do not have the right to object to anything I may say or ask you to do, or ask for clarification if my demands are unclear or contradictory. You must obey me under all circumstances without hesitation, no matter how arbitrary, unreasonable, discriminatory, or blatantly racist my commands may be. Anything other than immediate perfect servile compliance will be labeled as resisting arrest, and expose you to the possibility of a violent reaction from me. That reaction could cause you severe injury or even death. And I will suffer no consequences. It's your choice: Comply, or die." (John Whitehead)

What arrogance! Doesn't this remind you of King George?

Such authoritarianism in a police state like America deserves resistance, not compliance. Who gave cops authority over you and me who are simply minding our own business? No contract, no contact!

Christians must do what Elijah did and refuse to obey orders from idolatrous tyrants using a show of force to compel obedience from us.

Brainwashed people addicted to TV and drugs can do little to resist governmental oppressors.

What a terrible thing it must be to consult the gods of this age and to ignore the wisdom that comes from the Lord Jesus Christ!

What a terrible thing it must be for a Christian to obey an idolatrous, rebellious government.

What a terrible thing it is for God's people to be so sheepishly compliant with de facto authorities who seek the total subjugation of the total man to total government.

What a terrible thing it must be for Christians to listen to psychologists instead of the Word of God – to bow to any authority outside the Scriptures.

The gospel that turned the world upside down preached obedience to another king, King Jesus – (Acts 17:6-7).

EXAMPLES OF DISOBEDIENCE

A law may be superseded by another, under certain conditions. We cannot be obligated to tell the truth and risk innocent people dying as the result of our telling the truth. Lying is sometimes right. I know the Bible does tell us not to bear false witness and to not lie, but it comes down to the motive behind it.

The Bible does give examples of the spiritual law taking precedent over the law of the land, as it is the greater good.

In Ex.1:15-22, the midwives disobeyed Pharaoh's order to kill all the Hebrew baby boys (which was genocide) But **the Hebrew midwives Shiprah and Puah** "*feared God and did not do what the king of Egypt had told them to do and they let the boys live.*"

Consequently, "God was kind to the midwives and the people increased and became even more numerous. And because the midwives feared God, he gave them families of their own" (vs. 20-21).

If they had obeyed Pharaoh's death wish the deliverer of Israel would have been killed. Preserving life takes priority over indiscriminate murder, even if it is by the king of the land.

In I Kings 18:4, wicked queen Jezebel "was killing off the LORD'S prophets." In defiance of her orders the prophet Obadiah

"had taken a hundred prophets and hid them in two caves ... and had supplied them with food and water" (v. 4).

Although Scripture does not explicitly commend Obadiah's act, the context and manner of the Bible's presentation implies that God approved of Obadiah's deeds because the text says *he feared the Lord*, in other words he obeyed God instead of being a sycophant to his king (vs. 13-15). The law of preservation of life admonishes us to do what is right, this overshadows any law of the land that would do harm.

In Joshua 2:1-14, we see **the example of Rahab** saving the lives of two Hebrew spies by hiding them from soldiers who were searching for them. She risked her life in lying to protect their lives and lying to the soldiers. The spies had no legal right to be in Jericho, the soldiers had every legal right to apprehend them. The preservation of innocent life always takes priority. God honored Rahab calling it faith, and God promised,

*"Now the city shall be doomed by the LORD to destruction, it and all who are in it. Only Rahab the harlot shall live, she and all who are with her in the house, because she hid the messengers that we sent."
(Josh 6:17)*

And the spies went and rescued all her family and belongings from destruction. We later find her included in the line of the Messiah “Salmon begot Boaz by Rahab, Boaz begot Obed by Ruth, Obed begot Jesse, and Jesse begot David the king” (Matthew 1:5-6).

This is attributed to faith, she trusted the spies sent by God and in so doing was trusting God. “By faith the harlot Rahab did not perish with those who did not believe” (Hebrews 11:31) “Likewise, was not Rahab the harlot also justified by works when she received the messengers and sent them out another way” (James 2:25).

54. How to Respond to God’s Judgment on a Nation

Zephaniah 1:7, 2:3

Zephaniah 1:7, 2:3 Be silent before the Lord GOD! For the day of the LORD is near; the LORD has prepared a sacrifice and consecrated his guests . . . and, perhaps you will be hidden.”

This passage is instructive to the Christ-seeking heart because it answers the question, “How should a person respond when he hears the thunderclaps of God’s judgment rumbling through the land”?

Our text was penned by Zephaniah who ministered to apostate Israel during the days of Josiah, the revival king (640-609 BC). Josiah’s grandfather, Hezekiah was a godly man, but his father, Manasseh was perhaps the most vile and wicked man to ever sit upon the throne of David.

So dark were those days that only one copy of the Torah survived (2 Kings 22:1-12). When Josiah heard the words of the Book, he torn his clothes, repented, and launched the greatest civil reform in the history of mankind. The only problem was the reforms came from top down instead of from the bottom up; that is, the reforms were forced on an unrepentant people and failed to take root in the nation. Shortly after Josiah’s death, the Chaldeans invaded Judah and the nation became a vassal of the Babylonians.

Zephaniah ministered to the people sometime during the reign of Josiah circa 635-625 BC. From the tone of his book, there is no hint about the reform of Josiah. Thus, we conclude Zephaniah ministered before Josiah’s civil, top-down revival.

Zephaniah's message is one of impending judgment. Seven times in verses 2-9, God announces the ominous, dark punishment to come upon the apostate nation:

"I will remove all things . . . remove man and beast . . . remove the birds of the sky . . . cut off man from the earth . . . stretch out my hand against Judah . . . and the idolatrous priests, et al. . . . cut off those devoted to Baal . . . punish the princes et al.

Since the judgment is described in absolute, terminal terms, we would do well to heed the commands—commands that instruct us on how to respond to God's judgment.

"BE SILENT BEFORE THE LORD" (1:7)

Zephaniah 1:7 Hold thy peace at the presence of the Lord GOD: for the day of the LORD is at hand: for the LORD hath prepared a sacrifice, he hath bid his guests.

The text informs us "the day of the Lord is near." It is compared to a feast where Israel would be the fatted calf, the slaughtered sacrifice on the altar of justice. Kings of royal blood who dressed in luxury from fabric imports⁶⁹from foreign countries, and priests⁷⁰ that callously violated God law would be on the menu. The guests who were invited to the feast was the Babylonians.

When a judge walks in a courtroom, "all rise" . . . and every mouth is sealed shut. Serious things are happening. In the Supreme Court of Heaven, the judge is all holy, all knowing, and all powerful. Such a solemn, terrifying judgment required "silence;" i.e., shut up and be quiet. Hold your peace. Tremble! Be humble! Take time to read His Word and to consider your sins in light of His law-order. Listen with the intent to obey!

MOURN AND GRIEVE (1:11)

⁶⁹ Clarke thinks those "who clothe themselves with foreign garments" does not refer to royal clothing, but to the adoption of politically correct alien law and statist policies of the international community. He has a point! In 2 Kings, God listed the reason Israel went into captivity and at the top of the list was adopting "the customs of the nations" (17:8). Benson and others think that the clothing refers to garments worn by the priests of Baal and women's clothing. It is difficult to say. Possibly, the metaphor includes all these deviations.

⁷⁰ The priests "jumping over the threshold" is also difficult to interpret. Benson thinks it refers to the adoption of Philistine laws; that is, assimilating heathen practices into the worship at the Lord's temple. Newsome seems to think it refers to the covetous artifices' of deceit and oppression, as well as open violence. Violence can refer to physical harm and injury (Jeremiah 22:17). It may also refer to violation of God's law.

Zephaniah 1:11 Howl, ye inhabitants of Maktesh, for all the merchant people are cut down; all they that bear silver are cut off.

The word “howl” can be translated “wail.” Judgment demands grief, weeping, and even bawling.

It is addressed to “Mortar,” a wealthy district in Jerusalem – a people “sitting on their lees,” – an expression for stagnancy, apathy, dullness, disinterest, and lethargy (1:12).

The reasons for the call to grieve are listed in verse 15-18: inevitable, irreversible wrath, trouble, distress, destruction, desolation, darkness, gloom, clouds, thick darkness, battle cry, distress on men, staggering trauma because men have “sinned against the Lord.”

Personal sin is always a reason to wail. Oh, that we feared sin more!

ASSEMBLE YOURSELVES (2:1)

“Zephaniah 2:1 Gather yourselves together, yea, gather together, O nation not desired;”⁷¹

The word “gather” means “to assemble” and come together for national repentance; to repent, pray, and plead with God to avert the disaster (2:2). God called Judah “a nation not desired” or “not lovely” or “hated because of its sin.” A nation governed by humanists, statist, abortionists, internationalists, homosexuals, feminists, and perverts is like ugly on an ape. Such a state in the eyes of the court demands one’s best pleadings. Honesty, humility, confession, and prayers to the court were the order of the hour.

This text reminds us of 2 Chronicles 7:14 which tally four traits of effective prayer: (1) humility, (2) pleas to the Court, (3) seeking the true God, and (4) turning from their wicked, unbiblical, lawless, malignant, sensual, callous, God-neglecting, lawless, tolerant, unholy, cream puff, cowardly, cowering, fainthearted, gutless, effeminate, pusillanimous, timid, sugar- sweet, candy-cane, totally-compliant-to-government ways.

SEEK THE LORD

Zephaniah 2:3 Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD’S anger.

⁷¹ “Gather.” Clarke sees this as a command to separate the chaff from the wheat. Jamieson-Gausset-Brown see this as a call to prayer.

When the Israelites heard the rumblings of God's judgment, they were told to seek the LORD.

The word "seek" means "to pursue, to require, to request, to demand."

The command was given to "the meek of the earth;" that is, to the poor and humble who were obedient to the LORD God. It was not issued to the proud, self-reliant, autonomous, lawless man.

The call to "seek ye the LORD" was in juxtaposition to those who sought the Baals (1:4; statism). He was not calling the people to seek religion or to perform sanctimonious rituals or to follow the god of their own creations. He was not calling them to vote or prey to their secular, statist kings. This is a call to pray to the living God Who created heaven and earth.

To seek God is to surrender to the rule of God and His purpose for men. It is equivalent to the NT concept of "*Seek first the kingdom of God*" in Matthew 6:33. Seek to live under His law-order, His values, His ethics, His commands. It is the opposite of being malleable to the world with its lust of the flesh, lust of the eyes, and the pride of life (1 John 2:15-17).

"Judgment must begin at the House of God" (1 Peter 4:17), and discerning, imprecatory prayers are in order. Don't ask God to bless wicked rulers. Pray, *"May his days be few; may another take his office!"* (Psalm 109:8).

The application is straight as an arrow. The remedy for judgment is seeking the Lord Jesus Christ and not America's many gods and many religions.

SEEK RIGHTEOUSNESS

Zephaniah 2:3 Seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger.

The fifth way to respond to the thunderclaps of God's judgment is to seek righteousness.

Only God has the right to define righteousness. When man defines righteousness, he comes up with same-sex marriages, baby killing, franchises for statists, and transgender equality. Righteousness is an attribute of the LORD (Psalm 119:137), and that righteousness is expressed (a) objectively in His law (the Ten Commandments, and its relevant case law), and (b) subjectively in the Living Torah, the Lord Jesus Christ.

The command to seek righteousness is a call to not only obey God's law, but a plea to call neighbors and friends to restructure their lives under the authority of God's law-order. No man is safe when neighbors are not committed to the Ten Commandments. God's law is not only good for me, it is good for all men

and all of man's institutions. Humility and simple obedience would reach the heart of God, and avert judgment where "perhaps you will be hidden" (2:3).

In summary, Zephaniah announced the terrifying storm of God's judgment that was about to pummel the nation. It was not too late. Judgment could be averted if the humble would (1) be silent, (2) weep and mourn over their own sins and the sins of the nation, (3) gather together for prayer, (4) seek the LORD and not the Baals and their statist regimes, (5) and restructure their lives under the authority of God's law.

We hear the rumbles of thunder. America is before the bar of Heaven. Disaster can be averted, but God's people will need to be silent with Bible in hand, to mourn and weep over their personal sin, to come together to pray and seek the LORD, and to re-order their beliefs and habits under the authority of God's law-order. Then, perhaps, maybe, possibly, hopefully America will be great again (Zephaniah 3:14-17).

55. Israel's Holy War

Numbers 31

The Niqmat Yahweh Bemidyan

INTRODUCTION

We are going to take a look at Israel's holy war called *the Niqmat Yahweh Bemidyan, the vengeance of the Lord against Midian*.

Since the 1980s we've heard much about the Islamic holy jihad against the West, but people may be unaware of holy wars in the Bible.

There is nothing holy about jihad, but the war against Midian was a holy war.

During the hippie movement it was common to see protest signs that read, "Make love, not war." Because many Americans see love as the answer to all social ills, a spirit of permissiveness entered the culture. The anti-God forces in the West encouraged youth to experiment with "free love" and now promiscuity is accepted as normal behavior . . . even in the church.

The demoralization of the West resulted in cultural disintegration. In the name of freedom, immorality enjoys the state's protection. Consequently America

became infected with pornography, fornication, adultery, homosexuality, and the transgender identification movement.

There was a day in the nation of Israel when “free love” in the form of fertility worship demoralized God’s people (Numbers 25). This would have resulted in the disintegration of the Israel had it not been for the judicial intervention of the LORD God.

Let’s take a look at Satan’s attempt to demoralize God’s people and to disqualify them for holy service.

Israel Infected with Immorality in the Land of Midian

When the 40 years of desert wandering came to an end, the Lord directed His people towards the Promise Land. One of their purposes as a nation was to execute God’s wrath on the Canaanites—a corrupt, morally perverted civilization given over to every abomination known to man.

On their journey, they had to pass through the rolling hills of Midian. When the King of Midian saw the numbers in in Israel’s encampment, he became distressed even though Israel had a policy to pay water and grazing fees. Consequently, the king hired Balaam, a mysterious prophet, to magically curse the nation (22-25). When Balaam was prevented from casting a spell on Israel, he counseled the king to seduce the people to participate in Midian’s fertility cults in order to entice the young men to fornicate with their temple prostitutes (25:1).

Unable to unilaterally place a hex on the nation, the prophet’s scheme provoked the LORD God to place curse on His own people: “Israel joined himself unto Baal Peor (sexual cult icon): and the anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel” (25:1-3). Idolatry and fornication always provoke God to jealousy.

A plague broke out among the people. The epidemic, some kind of STD superbug, caused the congregation to panic as thousands of people became suddenly ill and died.

But, with the Divine judgment, God also provided a Divine remedy.

He directed Moses to organize an emergency meeting of the heads / judges of Israel, and to order the leaders of the nation to identify and kill all those who participated in the fertility feasts: “*Slay ye everyone his men that were joined unto Baal Peor*” (25:1-4); and, to hang their dead bodies in full view of the people as an object lesson of what will happen to those who participate in the fertility cult and commit whoredom with the daughters of Midian.

During this emergency meeting at the entrance of the Tabernacle, Phinehaz the priest saw a young Israelite escorting a Midianite priestess into his private quarters. Jealous of God’s holiness and outraged by such a reckless act,

Phinehaz grabbed a spear, ran into the man's tent, and thrust the javelin through both the man and woman. This one act of holy courage halted the spread of the plague in the camp – a contagion that caused the death of 24,000 people.

But, judging sin in the camp of Israel was not enough. God ordered the nation to declare war on the Midianites and to wipe out the source of immorality that infected the people; that is, God ordered Israel to destroy the "love nest" of this fertility cult.

Let's take a look at *the Niqmat Yahweh Bemidyan*.

THE WAR AGAINST MIDIAN (NUMBERS 31)

The LORD God directed Moses to organize the military for an offensive war against Midian. Assessing the carnage can be a corrective to the permissive character of modern Christianity.

Because the LORD God ordered the massacre, it behooves us to understand this holy war and to esteem the One who sanctioned the *Niqmat Yahweh Bemidyan*.

After Israel's exodus from Egypt and the destruction of Egypt's charioteers at the Red Sea, the people learned a new truth about their Redeemer God. Miriam's song declared *Yahweh ish milchamah*, "the Lord is a man of war." And, this God of War declared war on Midian.

He never makes peace with sinners habituated to their lawless acts: "The LORD hath sworn that the LORD will have war with Amalek (an icon of the lawless man) from generation to generation" (Exodus 17:16).

This was a holy war – a God-ordained, God-sanctioned war; an offensive war led by priests armed with swords, spears, and sacred instruments. In Israel, if you needed a special operations unit, you recruited Levitical priests. The Levites not only serviced the duties of worship at the tabernacle, they also served as a temple commando unit tasked with the operation to neutralize rogues who defiled the tabernacle (Numbers 3:10); that is the Levitical priests were not only servants of religion, they were God's Delta Force assigned to death squads (Psalm 149:6;; 2 Chronicles 20).

The war against Midian was a nasty, bloody affair. War is hell. War is a form of capital punishment wherein arms and heads are ruthlessly severed from bodies in the callousness of combat. But, the blood and gore of war is nothing compared to the wounds and shame inflicted upon souls seduced into sinful acts. A holy war is necessary in order to purge evil men from society. A state that doesn't have the moral fortitude to execute the death penalty in order to prevent the spread of evil commits social suicide.

Israel's army slew all the men of Midian, assassinated the five kings of Midian, executed Balaam the false prophet, . . . and, if this wasn't enough, Moses ordered them to kill all the surviving male children and adult women (31:17ff).

This was holy genocide, the killing of a particular ethnic group or nation that is so morally depraved it cannot be redeemed. The hybrid term "*genocide*" is a combination of the Greek word *génos* ("race, people") and the Latin suffix *cide* ("*act of killing*").

We learn several valuable lessons from this account:

We learn a lesson on the seriousness of sin.

We can only imagine what the seedy world of cult prostitution was like — the humiliation, disease, abuse, unwanted pregnancies, the birth of bastards, and early death. What a terrible thing sin (fornication) must be to cause the death of 24,000 people! Fornication murders could-be heroes. It is the plague that destroys the Christian power of youth. We would do well to fear sin more and to grasp the travesty of transgressing the laws of the LORD God.

"We are [God's] by creation, and again by redemption. He has every right to tell me what to do with my mind and body. I have. I right to do whatever I want with my body."

— Randy Alcorn, *The Purity Principle*

We learn a lesson about judgment.

This outbreak of disease was the direct result of God's judgment on the people for their acts of immorality. Not all suffering is the result of some personal sin, but much of human suffering is caused because men violate His law-order.

Judgment must begin at the house of God (1 Peter 4:17).

In order to have peace and power, it is necessary to judge sin quickly, thoroughly, and severely. God disciplined his own people before He sent them to punish Midian. Deep sins call for deep repentance. While conversion is one means of preserving a society, cracking down on evil doers is another.

The church could use men like Phinehas who have the courage and strength to thrust javelins into shameless sinners. Every Christian community needs to have procedures in place to discipline the unrepentant (1 Corinthians 5:1ff).

Sin must be dealt with at the source.

Because the whole nation was infected with immorality percolating from Midian's feral religion, God ordered the killing of all males and adult females in order to cut off the source immorality. Conversion, rehabilitation, and counseling were not an option! This was forced sterilization of the nation by death. There was no other way. A vigorous application of the death penalty

solves many societal problems. A society that refuses to decree punishment for pornography, fornication, adultery, and homosexuality commits suicide.

These people were unredeemable and their culture not worth saving. They deserved to die. The genocide of the Midianites and the Canaanites saved the Levant. Likewise, Christians must learn to deal with sins severely and ruthlessly at the root.

Purity produces power.

We often sing, “God bless America,” but how can God bless a country that protects and promotes the evils of abortion and homosexuality? All this killing and blood shedding was designed to produce purity among the people – a commonwealth devoted to God with the power God resting on them – a holy nation that could be used to redeem humanity and to fight against evil.

Every age demands Christians wage war against the anti-god forces of history.

In the last fifty years, we have witnessed the demoralization of America through Jewish Hollywood, the porn industry, and the hellions of Planned Parenthood. The United States cannot be America the Beautiful until it pulls up these poisonous weeds by the root.

Since America’s leaders do not have the moral acuity of Phinehas or the zeal of Puritans who founded this country, it may take the judgment of God to cleanse the nation. Until then Christians confront, resist, and fight the monopolies of evil.

Finally, this passage should cause us to praise God.

We ought to bow and worship the LORD who is holy and faithful to discipline His people. He loves us so much He will not tolerate sin to ruin our lives. In His grace He sent His Son to “save His people from their sins.” Let us adore Him who is perfect in holiness.

56. The Biblical Doctrine of Self Defense

Exodus 20:13

“Thou shalt not kill.”

Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, And a two-edged sword in

their hand – Psalm 149:6.

Historical Background

George Henry Boughton's (1833-1905) painting *Pilgrims Going to Church* in 1867 was originally called *The Early Puritans of New England Going to Church*. Boughton was known as the "painter of New England Puritanism" and here portrayed the Pilgrim Church of men, women and children walking to the meetinghouse on *guard* in defense of their liberty. Notice the two men on the right, with one alerting the other, and some looking in the direction of a sound or disturbance coming from the woods (Plymouth Rock Foundation).

Several interesting facts need to be stated:

- Pilgrim men took their muskets and swords to church. Men sat on the outside of the pew in case they had to rise, grab their guns, and shoot Indians attacking them. Better a lawless savage be killed than a Christian man and his family!
- Pastors would preach with a musket next to the pulpit. After the message, the pastor would grab his gun and head to the back of the church – not to shake hands, but to peep out the door to see if there were any wolves or Indians present; that is, the pastor saw himself as not only pastor, but a manly-defender-shepherd of the flock.

The Need for Self-Defense

The two places we need to feel safe is the home and the church. But, in recent times antichrist criminals seek to disturb that peace in the church. The AP Press list these recent violent events in churches:

Aug. 13, 2016: Imam Maulana Alauddin Akonjee and his friend Thara Uddin were fatally shot as they left a New York City mosque. Oscar Morel, 35, was charged with second-degree murder.

Aug. 9, 2016: A shooting during a party at a Jersey City, New Jersey, church left 17-year-old Leander Williams dead and two teenage girls wounded. Daequan Jackson, 18, was charged with murder.

April 24, 2016: Mark Storms fatally shot 27-year-old Robert Braxton III during Sunday services in a suburban Philadelphia church. Storms, 46, argued self-defense, but was sentenced to 10 to 20 years in prison for voluntary manslaughter.

Feb. 28, 2016: Rev. William B. Schooler, 70, was fatally shot by his 68-year-old brother inside an office at St. Peter's Missionary Baptist Church in Dayton, Ohio, as Sunday services were winding down. Daniel Schooler was found guilty of murder and sentenced to 31 years to life in prison.

June 17, 2015: Nine black worshippers including a pastor were killed by Dylann Roof, a 21-year-old white supremacist, after he prayed with them for nearly an hour. The shooting happened at historic Emanuel African Methodist Episcopal Church in downtown Charleston, South Carolina. Roof was convicted of federal hate-crime and obstruction-of-religion charges and sentenced to death.

April 13, 2014: Neo-Nazi and former Ku Klux Klan leader Frazier Miller Jr. fatally shot Dr. William Corporon and his 14-year-old grandson Beat Underwood outside an Overland Park, Kansas, Jewish center as they arrived for a community event. He then drove to a Jewish retirement community where he fatally shot Terry LaManno, who was visiting her mother.

March 31, 2013: A 28-year-old man fatally shot his father during Easter services at the Hiawatha Church of God in Christ in Ashtabula, Ohio. Reshad Riddle then made a rambling statement at the pulpit while yelling about God and Allah, still holding his handgun as panicked worshippers fled the church.

Dec. 2, 2012: Elementary school music teacher Gregory Eldred, 52, shot his ex-wife, Darlene Sitler, while she played the organ during a church service at the First United Presbyterian Church in Coudersport, Pennsylvania.

Oct. 24, 2012: A former facilities maintenance employee at World Changers Church International in College Park, Georgia, opened fire, killing church volunteer Greg McDowell, 39, while he was leading a prayer. Police arrested Floyd Palmer, 51, who was found guilty but mentally ill and sentenced to life in prison.

Aug. 5, 2012: Six members of the Sikh Temple of Wisconsin, in Oak Creek, were fatally shot by a white supremacist, Wade Michael Page. Page was shot by a responding officer and later killed himself.

May 9, 2012: Joseph Lewis Jr., 84, was fatally shot while sitting in a car guarding Victory Way Assembly Church of God in Christ in Detroit, Michigan. Two teenagers, 15-year-old Anthony Williams and 18-year-old Alandre Boone, attacked him while a Bible study took place inside. Police suspected robbery was the motive. Both teenagers were tried and convicted as adults for second-degree murder.

May 3, 2012: A homeless man killed himself after fatally shooting a priest and a church secretary at St. Peter's Episcopal Church in Ellicott City, Maryland. Police said Douglas Franklin Jones had been turned away from the church food bank about two weeks earlier for visiting every day instead of weekly.

What does the Sixth Commandment mean?

Self-defense and defending the innocent is a duty of man.

All of God's commandments are stated in the negative, "Thou shall not . . . ", or has a negative element attached. Moreover, each commandment has an opposite, positive application. For example, the Seventh Commandment states, "Thou shall not commit adultery." The opposite of adultery is the unwavering commitment of the married couple to one another and their family.

The fundamental meaning of the Sixth Commandment is thou shall not murder or take a life unjustly.

The opposite of the Sixth Commandment is *thou shall save life . . .* the life of the innocent, your family and neighbors, and YOUR OWN LIFE! Killing another who is trying to take your life unjustly is a just application of this Commandment.

Both the saving of life and the taking of life (justly) is a duty of man. A man may take the life of another without violating the law of murder. There are 18 instances where God ordered men to take life. See Deuteronomy to determine the lawful means of taking a life through self-defense or capital punishment.

This is not Jewish law. It is God's law or Christian law. Jewish law is found in the Talmud – a kind of law that nullified the Commandments of God (Matthew 15).

Death penalty in the Old Testament

Exodus 21:12 He that smiteth a man, so that he die, shall be surely put to death.

Numbers 35:16-17 "But if someone strikes and kills another person with a piece of iron, it is murder, and the murderer must be executed. Or if someone with a stone in his hand strikes and kills another person, it is murder, and the murderer must be put to death.

Deuteronomy 19:11-12 But if out of hate someone lies in wait, assaults and kills a neighbor, and then flees to one of these cities, the killer shall be sent for by the town elders, be brought back from the city, and be handed over to the avenger of blood to die.

Exodus 21:14-17 But if a man come presumptuously upon his neighbor, to slay him with guile; thou shalt take him from mine altar, that he may die. And he that smiteth his father, or his mother, shall be surely put to death. And he that stealeth a man, and selleth him, or if he be found in his hand, he shall surely be put to death. And he that curseth his father, or his mother, shall surely be put to death.

Deuteronomy 27:24 "Cursed is anyone who kills their neighbor secretly." Then all the people shall say, "Amen!"

Numbers 35:30-32 *“Anyone who kills a person is to be put to death as a murderer only on [the testimony](#) of witnesses. But no one is to be put to death on the testimony of only one witness. “Do not accept a ransom for the life of a murderer, who deserves to die. They are to be put to death. “Do not accept a ransom for anyone who has fled to a city of refuge and so allow them to go back and live on their own land before the death of the high priest.*

Genesis 9:6 *If anyone takes a human life, that person’s life will also be taken by human hands. For God made human beings in his own image.*

Exodus 22:19 *“Whoever lies with an animal shall be put to death.”*

Acts 25:9-11 *But Festus wanted to do the Jews a favor. So he asked Paul, “Are you willing to go to Jerusalem to be tried there on these charges with me as your judge?” Paul said, “I am standing in the emperor’s court where I must be tried. I haven’t done anything wrong to the Jews, as you know very well. If I am guilty and have done something wrong for which I deserve the death penalty, I don’t reject the idea of dying. But if their accusations are untrue, no one can hand me over to them as a favor. I appeal my case to the emperor!*

Romans 13:1-4 *Everyone must submit to governing authorities. For all legitimate authority comes from God, and those in positions of authority have been placed there by God. So anyone who rebels against authority is rebelling against what God has instituted, and they will be punished. For the authorities do not strike fear in people who are doing right, but in those who are doing wrong. Would you like to live without fear of the authorities? Do what is right, and they will honor you. The authorities are God’s servants, sent for your good. But if you are doing wrong, of course you should be afraid, for they have the power to punish you. They are God’s servants, sent for the very purpose of punishing those who do what is wrong. So you must submit to them, not only to avoid punishment, but also to keep a clear conscience.*

1 Peter 2:13 *Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord’s sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme;*

2 Thessalonians 1:8-9 *in flaming fire, inflicting vengeance on those who do not know God and on those who do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will suffer the punishment of eternal destruction, away from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of his might.*

John 3:36 *Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God’s wrath remains on them.*

Revelation 21:8 But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars—they will be consigned to the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.”

Revelation 21:27 But nothing unclean will ever enter it, nor anyone who does what is detestable or false, but only those who are written in the Lamb’s book of life. (List provided by “biblereasons.com/death-penalty).

Self-Defense is a duty of man.

Military Code Article III – *If I am captured I will continue to resist by all means available. I will make every effort to escape and to aid others to escape. I will accept neither parole nor special favors from the enemy.*

Explanation: The misfortune of capture does not lessen the duty of a member of the Armed Forces to continue resisting enemy exploitation by all means available. Contrary to the Geneva Conventions, enemies whom U.S. forces have engaged since 1949 have mistreated prisoners while in captivity.

What does the Bible say about self-defense?

If self-defense is wrong then why does God defend His people?

Self Defense is righteous because God defends His people . . . and, we are to be like our Heavenly Father who is perfect.

2 Kings 19:34 – For I will defend this city, to save it, for mine own sake, and for my servant David’s sake.

2 Kings 20:6 – And I will add unto thy days fifteen years; and I will deliver thee and this city out of the hand of the king of Assyria; and I will defend this city for mine own sake, and for my servant David’s sake.

Psalms 20:1 – (To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David.) The LORD hear thee in the day of trouble; the name of the God of Jacob defend thee;

Psalms 59:1 – (To the chief Musician, Altaschith, Michtam of David; when Saul sent, and they watched the house to kill him.) Deliver me from mine enemies, O my God: defend me from them that rise up against me.

Psalms 82:3 – Defend the poor and fatherless: do justice to the afflicted and needy.

Psalms 149:6-7 Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand; To execute vengeance [self-defense] upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people;

Isaiah 31:5 – As birds flying, so will the LORD of hosts defend Jerusalem; defending also he will deliver it; and passing over he will

preserve it.

Isaiah 37:35 *For I will defend this city to save it for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake.*

Isaiah 38:6 – *And I will deliver thee and this city out of the hand of the king of Assyria: and I will defend this city.*

Zechariah 9:15 – *The LORD of hosts shall defend them; and they shall devour, and subdue with sling stones; and they shall drink, and make a noise as through wine; and they shall be filled like bowls, and as the corners of the altar.*

Zechariah 12:8 – *In that day shall the LORD defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the LORD before them.*

Judges 10:1 – *And after Abimelech there arose to defend Israel Tola the son of Puah, the son of Dodo, a man of Issachar; and he dwelt in Shamir in mount Ephraim.*

God not only expects men to defend neighbors and friends, but helps those who risk their life to save others.

See Abraham's rescue of Lot from five plundering kings in Genesis 14.

See David's Mighty Men and their bloody accomplishments (2 Samuel 23:8ff).

See God's blessing on David and his rise to fame based on defending his nation against a belligerent, aggressive Goliath.

1 Samuel 17:45-47 Then said David to the Philistine, Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a spear, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the LORD of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, whom thou hast defied. This day will the LORD deliver thee into mine hand; and I will smite thee, and take thine head from thee; and I will give the carcasses of the host of the Philistines this day unto the fowls of the air, and to the wild beasts of the earth; that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel. And all this assembly shall know that the LORD saveth not with sword and spear: for the battle is the LORD'S, and he will give you into our hands.

God enabled David to kill and behead David. This was self-defense. It was not murder! God approved and gave David the ability to kill the man. This was war. It was his life or the life of Goliath. Better for Goliath to die for his country than David die for his country.

What is war? It is the right to defend your country. It is the power of a nation to execute the death penalty upon those seeking to kill and steal.

Self-defense is a duty of man! It is obligatory and encumbent upon each man to defend not only his life, but the life of his family.

*Exodus 22:1 If a man shall steal an ox, or a sheep, and kill it, or sell it; he shall restore five oxen for an ox, and four sheep for a sheep. 2 If a **thief** be found breaking up, and be smitten that he die, there shall no blood be shed for him. 3 If the sun be risen upon him, there shall be blood shed for him; for he should make full restitution; if he have nothing, then he shall be sold for his theft.*

This man is not only stealing, he is on private property and stealing private property. The owner can't see the man's intent or whether he is or is not armed. If he kills the thief, God does not accuse the defender of his property (at night) a murderer.

During the day time, the owner can see the man, identify him, and know whether or not he is armed. He can capture the man, accuse him, and let the authorities indict and try the man. He has no authority to kill a thief unless he is armed having an intent to kill.

What if it is daytime and the man is armed? You can kill the man in act of self-defense . . . if necessary and fiercely and with a clear conscience. This is not a carte blanche power, but limited, lawful power to defend life and property with lethal force.

Deuteronomy 22:23-27 If a damsel that is a virgin be betrothed unto an husband, and a man find her in the city, and lie with her;

24 Then ye shall bring them both out unto the gate of that city, and ye shall stone them with stones that they die; the damsel, because she cried not, being in the city; and the man, because he hath humbled his neighbor's wife: so thou shalt put away evil from among you.

*25 But if a man find a betrothed damsel **in the field**, and the man force her, and lie with her: then **the man only that lay with her shall die:***

*26 But unto the damsel **thou shalt do nothing; there is in the damsel no sin worthy of death:** for as when a man riseth against his neighbor, and slayeth him, even so is this matter:*

*27 For he found her in the field, and the betrothed damsel cried, **and there was none to save her.***

Note the principle: the woman has a responsibility to defend her virtue in the city against an attacker; the man has a responsibility to defend a woman and

her honor in the country. Men have a duty to defend the weak in the city and in the country. If she is molested in the city, authorities are to execute both the woman and the man; if she is molested in the field, only the man is to be put to death . . . either for molesting the woman; and, or failing to defend her. In the city, people have authority to presume the woman consented; in the field, the people have authority to presume the man is guilty of rape.

There is no such thing as “absolute evidence” to remove all doubt. For this reason, western nations have adopted the principle “beyond reasonable doubt” to convict the accused in a criminal case. In a civil case we use the principle “preponderance of evidence” which is not the same as “beyond reasonable doubt.”

Note: Men must act responsibly and not allow themselves to be placed in a circumstance that may give rise to reasonable accusation; women must be ready, willing, and able to defend themselves against an attacker. If there is no evidence of a struggle-crying out, biting, scratching, etc, then a jury can assume consent.

Story 1: On March 27, 1964, Catherine (Kitty) Genovese returned home from her work managing a Queens bar. It was around 3:20 a.m. when she parked her car and walked toward her apartment in the Kew Gardens neighborhood of Queens, New York. She screamed. 38 people heard her, but no one can to rescue her. Were the 38 witnesses actual accomplices to her murder. I believe so.

Story 2: October 23, 2008 - The rape happened Wednesday night in a fifth floor apartment of the Clinton Court Apartments. The suspect remained in the apartment for nearly an hour and a half and brutally raped the woman at knifepoint. “All of sudden I hear a woman screaming and she was screaming help, please help us, call 911,” the woman said. No one called for help. She walked and stumbled a mile to report the attack.

On another occasion, in the 1100 block of Lombard, says the article, a knife-wielding man followed a 22-year-old woman in the foyer of her apartment building, but fled when she screamed, alerting neighbors.
(<https://6abc.com/archive/6467573/>)

Story 3: Woman Gang Raped – Neighbors Hear Screams Don’t Bother to call 911. A neighbor, Benite Sangare, told Action News, “She got in the hallway, slammed her door shut and screamed. I didn’t pay any attention to it. I thought she fell over something, and that was it. I went to bed.

Why wasn’t Benite Sangare alert man and conscious of his duty to rescue a screaming woman? Why didn’t he fulfill his duty as a man? Should he have been charged with criminal negligence?

(https://www.democraticunderground.com/discuss/duboard.php?az=view_all&address=389x3530530).

Story 4: “Teens Beat Homeless Ohio Man To Death” and no one stops to help (<https://www.cbsnews.com/news/teens-beat-homeless-ohio-man-to-death/>).

Story 5: HORROR ATTACK Woman ‘attacked by rapist Fiston Ngoy for 40 minutes on train as passengers filmed attack and didn’t call 911’ (<https://www.the-sun.com/news/3893794/woman-raped-fiston-ngoy-train-passengers-filmed/>).

God wants all people to be punctilious in defending life and property.

Deuteronomy 22:4 – Thou shalt not see thy brother’s ass or his ox fall down by the way, and **hide thyself** from them: thou shalt surely help him to lift *them* up again.

There is no excuse to bypass an animal (cow, sheep, dog) who’s life is in danger! **God law does not permit a man to hide, ignore, avoid, or blink at trouble!!**

Exodus 23:4 – *If thou meet thine enemy’s ox or his ass going astray, thou shalt surely bring it back to him again.*

Positive commands require spiritual energy. God orders men to dutifully care for their neighbors life and his property.

If we apply the argument from the less to the greater, then we should apply this to self-defense; that is, if God holds us responsible to protect our neighbor’s troubled animal, then He expects us to protect not only our neighbor’s life, but our own life.

Source: John Weaver’s sermon:

<https://www.sermonaudio.com/saplayer/playpopup.asp?SID=912081524365>

PART TWO

The fundamental meaning of the Sixth Commandment is thou shall not murder or take a life unjustly.

The positive side of the Commandment is thou shall protect *innocent* life.

Defending life from lawless criminals is the duty of men.

The model Scripture holds out to Christians is “to be perfect even as your heavenly Father is perfect. God is called the “Lord of Hosts”; that is, He is the Lord of armies and armies are used to protect people.

First, since God defends His own house, we have a duty to protect our house and our families.

When Uzziah, the proud presumptuous king, trespassed on temple grounds, the Lord struck king with leprosy.

Second, since God defends Jerusalem., we have a duty to defend the church.

Isaiah 31:5 As birds flying, so will the LORD of hosts defend Jerusalem.

Isaiah 37:35 For I will defend this city to save it for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake.

Third, since God defended the people of Israel, we have a duty to defend our neighbors.

Zechariah 9:15 The LORD of hosts shall defend them; and they shall devour, and subdue with sling stones; and they shall drink, and make a noise as through wine; and they shall be filled like bowls, and as the corners of the altar.

Fourth, since God ordered the people to protect land marks, men have a right to defend a nation and its borders.

Proverbs 22:28 Do not move the ancient boundary Which your fathers have set.

Deuteronomy 19:14 “You shall not move your neighbor's boundary mark, which the ancestors have set, in your inheritance which you will inherit in the land that the Lord your God gives you to possess.

Deuteronomy 27:17 ‘Cursed is he who moves his neighbor's boundary mark.’ And all the people shall say, ‘Amen.’

Fifth, God ordered men to defend the life of their neighbor's ox. Using an argument of lesser to greater we reason as follows: If men are to protect their neighbor's animals, how much more should men defend the lives of their friends and neighbors.

Sixth, since God ordered the Levites to be armed to defend the holy ground of the temple, we have a duty to defend the church and holy doctrines. Since God ordered the Levites, (priests, singers, poets and student of Holy Writ, and soldiers), to be armed, men have a right even a duty to be armed.

Psalms 149:6 Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two

edged sword in their hand;

Lesson from Samson (Judges 13-15):

God ordained Samson to be a Nazarite from birth; that is, to be a holy man dedicated to the will of God. As a Nazarite, he had a duty to protect his sanctity. When he failed to protect his sanctity, Delilah robbed him of power. Thus, from Samson's failure we learn that all men have a duty to defend not only their life but their integrity.

57. The Revival King

2 Kings 23

2 Kings 23:25 And like unto him was there no king before him, that turned to the LORD with all his heart, and with all his soul, and with all his might, according to all the law of Moses; neither after him arose there any like him.

The Scripture tells us there was no king before and aft that turned to the LORD with all his heart like Josiah. A true gladiator, he stands out like white on black.

Reading about this Revival King causes my spiritual taste buds to water like a dripping faucet.

Because the Scripture commands us to love the Lord with all our strength, we want to know what it means to love the Lord.

Josiah was the King of Israel and he is God's example to civil magistrates on how to turn back to Christ.

What does it mean to turn to the Lord? How does one turn a nation back to God?

The King Responded to God

Born a prince, Josiah ascended the throne when he was just eight years old. He reigned thirty-one years in Jerusalem (641-610 B.C.).

Though Josiah was born with privilege, there was a fly in his buttermilk.

His father was so wicked, his court staff assassinated him (2 Kgs. 21:23).

Josiah's grandfather Manasseh was the most evil king that ever reigned in Judah.

His countrymen were no better. The palace where he ruled was infested with rats.

Like carrions, his countrymen fed on the maggots of sensuality. His nation stood neck high in butchered babies, animal cults, and sleazy prostitutes. The temple complex deteriorated into a ghost town covered with cobwebs. Male leadership was so weak in understanding law that if the priests wanted to know the will of God they consulted a prophetess (22:14).

When you are born on twelve acres of moral garbage, it is not easy to grow a garden. You can't fall into a sewer and come out smillin' like a rose. As the twig is bent, so goes the vine. But, not so with Josiah! And, that's what makes his story so amazing. The nation descended into depravity, so he mandated a nationwide clean up.

When Josiah was twenty-six years old, he ordered Hilkiah, the high priest, to repair the temple of the Lord (1Kgs. 22:3-7). This was no easy job, as years of neglect had taken its toll. In the process of repairs, Hilkiah found the Book of the Lord. Bible reading vanished. Scribes were out of work. The priest had never seen the Torah. He gave it to Shaphan, Secretary of Internal Affairs, who took the old Scroll and read it to Josiah. Josiah knew politics, law, and rules of the court, but he had never read God's Book as his primary source of authority. What a concept! What a scene!

When Josiah heard the *ha sepher torah*, light shined in the darkness. At this time, he awoke to the fact that his nation was drinking from the septic tank of idolatry.

Trembling at the reading of God's Word, he tore his royal robe. Sadness trickled down his cheeks. His hair turned gray. Lips trembled. Hands shook. Knees wobbled. But, his heart tenderly received the reading of God's Word. He didn't criticize the Book. He let the Book criticize him! Selah!

Thunder struck by the smoking canons of God's wrath aimed at Israel, Josiah ordered his administration to inquire of the Lord about the state of the nation. His greatest fears were confirmed. His people had plunged into a state of depravity and offended the thrice Holy God. The storm of His wrath "waited in the shadows like an army in the night." Cold winds whistled through the trees announcing a blizzard of anger upon the nation. But, because Josiah responded well to the reading of the Holy Scriptures, God restrained His fury until after his death.

If all the Bibles in the world were dusted off at the same time, America would experience the worst dust storm in its history.

We know we are suffering a famine of God's Word when the Bible of Christian women is *Cosmopolitan Magazine* and the bible of Christian men is *Sports Illustrated*. Vance Havner use to say, "Too many of us are shaky about what we believe and not shaken by what we believe."⁷² When is the last time you shredded your clothes and mourned over your own neglect of God's Word?

The king purposed to reclaim the land

The nation looked like a flickering flame in a kerosene lamp. One man stood between the nation and suffocation. In a position of power, Josiah flexed the muscle of his administration and summoned the nation's leaders together. Prophets, priests, and people assembled in the temple complex to hear a mandatory reading of God's Word.

The nation not only needed a revival; it needed a reformation. Revival is God's work in a man's life restoring his devotion to God; Reformation is God's work of changing a man's thinking with the truth of Scripture.

When the reading of the Torah was complete, Josiah committed himself to obey God's Law with all his heart. Josiah's commitment was not like Jell O nailed to the wall, nor did His sincerity turn to soggy mush. He was not a Cream of Wheat Ruler. God's Law welded to his soul. With steel strength, he ordered his administration to rid the nation of idols and to renew their commitment to Mosaic Covenant.

The king led the nation to repentance

Because judgment must begin with the house of God, the king ordered the priest to cleanse the temple of its cultic articles, idolatrous images, and Zodiac symbols. This was a radical altar bustin', wood burnin', stone crushin', idol smashin', habit washin' internal flush of the nation's digestive tract.

Josiah ripped out the Ashera poles and ground them into sawdust. He demolished the shrines, desecrated the high places, and dismantled the temples of Moloch, Baal, and Astoreth. He even exhumed their sacred coffins and burned them. With the images cauterized, he carted the ashes away from Jerusalem into the garbage dump.

He not only launched a vigorous assault on the source of cult worship in the nation, he executed the sorcerers, ejected their understudies, and garroted the priestly pimps. With deadly fury in his eyes, he personally led many of these iconoclastic campaigns. He did not depend on some effeminate bureaucrat as

⁷² Vance Havner, *Salt and Pepper*, Westwood, New Jersey: Fleming H. Revell Company, p. 40.

weak as brewed tea to dilute his campaign to identify molting vultures devouring the people.

If our nation is going to be healed, judgment must begin with the house of God (1 Pet. 4:17). The house of God is not a building of brick and stone, but the assembly of God's people gathered in His Name:

"Know ye not that ye [plural] are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you"? (1 Cor. 3:16).

When preachers talk attic but live in the cellar, revival evades the church. When pastors purchase their ideas from humanist hawkers instead of the Holy Scripture, Reformation eludes God's people. When Christians are sizzling on the griddle of pornography, they are marred for Christian service.

When God's people are marinated in the juices of secular education, they have nothing to offer the unchurched.

When more Christians graduate from seminary with degrees in psychology rather than theology, apostasy multiplies.

But, if God's people will humble themselves, smash their idols, and seek God with all their heart, the Holy Spirit will come upon them like a warm breeze on a snowy day.

I visited a church that was experiencing genuine revival, and talked to one of the student leaders in the church. A vivacious and spirited young lady, I asked her to tell me how she came to know Christ. She said, "The pastor came over. We prayed for two hours, and then I gave my heart to Christ." Surprised by her answer, I inquired further. She shared with me that she lived with her mother who was a witch and deep into the occult. Her library was a book morgue filled with publications on voodoo spells, necrophilia, and gravestones.

On the evening the pastor visited, he detected the blood sucking, brain eaters sucking the life out of this woman. He shared the simple gospel with her, and she was eager to receive Christ as her Savior. But, the pastor would not let her pray the sinner's prayer until she renounced the occult and destroyed her library. For two hours the two of them emptied her bookshelves, tore her books in pieces, renounced her occult bibles, and prayed that God would graciously deliver her from the macabre influences of that literature.

No wonder they had such a strong youth ministry. The pastor was not a parakeet, but a *paraclete*. The believers were not just clean on the outside, but pure on the inside. This pastor knew what it meant to repent, take up the cross, and follow Christ.

The king revived sacred practices

Some traditions are worth saving. Dogmatic habits are necessary. The Passover was a God-ordained family feast designed to provoke reflection on His saving work in delivering Israel out from under the tyranny of Pharaoh and drawing them to God's loving arms at Mt. Sinai. Not since the days of the judges (1400-1000 BC) had any king celebrated the Passover with such fervent zeal.

Things die. As soon as we are born, death releases its toxins into our blood stream. Likewise, with nations! As soon as kingdoms are born, political necrophiliacs come out of their coffins and worm their way into power. It is no small challenge for a Christian ruler to cleanse a nation of Elviras and Godzillas. Evolutionists and Sodomites are busy planning ways to stuff the forbidden fruit of explicit sex down the throats of grade school children.

With this crisis, we do not need effeminate, milquetoast politicians that eat their Wheaties and go to church at Easter and Christmas. Needed are men with bone-crushing convictions about the truth of the gospel; men with knowledge of the Scripture; men with the strength of Samson and the purity of Mary; men who will declare a holy jihad against unrighteousness. Duty must take priority over personal agendas.

Do your duty in all things. You cannot do more, you should never wish to do less. Robert E. Lee

Josiah returned to the Lord with all his heart. He modeled for the world what it means to turn to God and to lead a nation to repentance.

Jeremiah 24:7 And I will give them an heart to know me, that I am the LORD: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto me with their whole heart.

If there is a fault to be noted, it is simply this: Josiah's heart was perfect, but the heart of the people was not. He commanded reform, but the people resisted. His reform was legal and forensic. It lacked the willing, eager, voluntary consent of the people. The people complied with the king because he had the power of a 900 pound gorilla. They were like the boy who said to his father: "I'm sittin' down on the outside, but standin' up on the inside."

Josiah's reforms were external and barely touched the hearts of the populace. No king can legislate revival! Only God can revive His people and reform a nation. We win people, not by legislating morality and employing police powers, but by gentle persuasion and a persistent use of the Word of God.

Sweet reasonableness and gentle persistence must characterize our efforts to revive our brethren.

Nevertheless, a legal revision corrects a nation, and Josiah's legal reforms saved his generation. God was pleased and judgment was delayed for another twenty years.

Applications

First, the tragedy today is that the situation is desperate, but the Christians are not.

Many Christians have lost their snap, crackle, and pop. Joe six pack is sitting in his living room drinking his beer, snacking on pretzels, and going ape every time his team makes a first down. People seem to be unaware of the storm brewing over America because of its wicked politicians and compromising preachers.

Someday, Americans are going to have to pay the fiddler for dancing with the dead. When will Christians turn from their worldly ways and seek the Lord?

Psalm 138:7 Though I walk in the midst of trouble, Thou wilt revive me;

Second, Revival is needed among God's people.

The subject of the above prayer is "God," not "me." It is God who revives, not man. Revival is a work of God, not the evangelist. The verb "revive" means "to live" and it is a Hebrew Piel verb. Piel verbs emphasize the intense energy needed to restore the psalmist's soul. It is not the secular, atheistic world that needs revival, but God's people that need vitamins in their veins. You can't revive a cold rock. Only the branches in God's vine can be rejuvenated because only believers have the life of God in their soul. Revival begins with the "me" in whatever frail state we find ourselves.

Oswald Smith described the Welch Revival this way:

There was trembling, weeping, sobbing, and loud crying for mercy, sometimes too loud for the preacher to be heard; and in hundreds of cases his hearers fell in a swoon. Some would cry out, "The two edged sword is cutting me to pieces." The wicked scoffer who came to make sport dropped like a dog, and cried, "God has struck me !" Once while preaching in the open field to 2,000 people, a man cried out, "What must I do to be saved"? and prayed the publican's prayer, and the entire congregation took up the cry for mercy. For half an hour Mr. Coan could get no chance to speak, but had to stand still and see God work.

Quarrels were made up, drunkards reclaimed, adulterers converted, and murderers revealed and pardoned. Thieves returned stolen property. And sins of a lifetime were renounced. In one year 5,244 joined the Church. There were

1,705 baptized on one Sunday. And 2,400 sat down at the Lord's table, once sinners of the blackest type, now saints of God. And when Mr. Coan left he had himself received and baptized 11,960 persons.⁷³

Third, the greatest need in our nation is not revival, but reformation.

Reformation involves reforming one's beliefs to insure they are in conformity to the Word of God; that is, to steer clear of apostasy and dilution of one's beliefs by current philosophical movement. Unless believers are accurate, they cannot transform the Christian community.

All Scripture is breathed out by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, and for training in righteousness, that the man of God may be complete, equipped for every good work. — 2 Timothy 3:16 (ESV)

Fourth, reformation begins with a Back to the Bible Movement.

We have bad ideas running through our head. We think lies, half-truths, and carnal beliefs. Because we perform according to our theology whether it is right or wrong, we are in need of reformation. Jesus said the truth would set us free (Jn. 8:32). And that truth is the Word of God. The entrance of His words gives light (Ps. 119:130).

Oh, that Christian teachers would stop reading Freud and Betty Friedan and return to the Bible.

The Bible is a book that has been read more and examined less than any book that ever existed. —Thomas Paine

I am much afraid that schools will prove to be the great gates of hell unless they diligently labor in explaining the Holy Scriptures, engraving them in the hearts of youth. I advise no one to place his child where the scriptures do not reign paramount. —Martin Luther

An early president of Princeton, Rev. John Witherspoon, said,

“Cursed be all learning that is contrary to the cross of Christ!”

Charles Haddon Spurgeon put it this way:

“Some people like to read so many [Bible] chapters every day. I would not dissuade them from the practice, but I would rather lay my soul asoak in half a dozen verses all day than rinse my hand in several chapters. Oh, to be bathed in a text of Scripture, and to let it be sucked

⁷³ Oswald J. Smith, *The Gospel Truth: The Revival We Need*, New York: The Christian Alliance Publishing Company, 1925; Online Source, gospeltruth.net.

up in your very soul, till it saturates your heart!"

A,W. Tozer shared this perspective:

"The Word of God well understood and religiously obeyed is the shortest route to spiritual perfection. And we must not select a few favorite passages to the exclusion of others. Nothing less than a whole Bible can make a whole Christian."

Fifth, like Josiah, we may have ancestors that were ringmasters of some two-bit circus. But, by the grace of God, we can overcome a bad background.

If you were born on the wrong side of the blanket or have a bur under your saddle, there is hope. A bad past does not determine your destiny; your faith about the future sets your course. It is not your past that binds you to failure, but your beliefs about the past that cripple your progress.

No matter where you are in life, do all you can to hear His Word and believe it!!

Sixth, we need to pray that God will raise up civil rulers like Josiah who are responsive to the Word of God.

We do not need more lawmakers that talk pretty and live ugly. We do not need more legislators whose rhetoric is slicker than Pennzoil. We need leaders who will respond to the Word of God and lead our community to obey the Savior King.

Seventh, Josiah's life is about how to return to the Lord.

Josiah returned to YHWH by responding to the written Word and by zealously demolishing everything under his control that was contrary to Torah. And, God rewarded him for it. Repentance means "to turn," "to do an about face."

Do you need to return to the Lord in some area of your life? What worthless idols do you have stuffed away in the closet of your life? Be a gladiator Christian and smash those idols into powder!! Then and only then can the sweet waters of revival refresh our family, our church, and our nation.

58. Cleaning Up the Deep State

2 Kings 10:30

“And the LORD said unto Jehu, Because thou hast done well in executing that which is right in mine eyes, and hast done unto the house of Ahab according to all that was in mine heart, thy children of the fourth generation shall sit on the throne of Israel.”

Before us is a man who cleaned up the deep state.

The spirit testifies that Jehu executed his commission perfectly doing ALL that was in God's heart.

Oh, that it might be said of you and me that we have done all that is in the heart of God?

Let's see how God used this military general to clean up Israel's deep state.

Background: These events happened during the period called the Divided Kingdom (931-841 BC). King Ahaziah, the impish son of David, married to Athaliah daughter of Jezebel, rules in Jerusalem over the Southern Kingdom. Joram, the Hebrew and devilish son of Ahab, rules the northern ten tribes from its two main cities: Samaria and Jezreel.

The marriage of Ahab and Jezebel the Phoenician was a political union. As minister of religion, Jezebel brought in the prophets of Baal and their castrated, transvestite priests to eradicate the Hebrew religion and to demoralize the nation. Baalism oppressed religious dissenters; seized private property for the State; executed God's ministers; and divided the nation with their politics of personal destruction.

After Ahab's death, his sons, friends, and political appointments ran the government. Satan had his people in power.

In short, religious apostates and traitors to Israel's constitution (Torah) composed Israel's deep state. This was authoritarianism on steroids. Psychopaths ran the government. Jezebel smeared the opposition. Slander was the weapon of choice. It is conform or die. Either you are in or you are out. Her son, Jehoram was king. Wounded at a battle east of the Jordan River, he was recovering in Jezreel, west of the Jordan River.

HIS RANK IN SOCIETY

Jehu rose up in the military ranks of Israel to become a general in King Joram's army. However, he was not a traitor. Jehu was a loyal military man who understood his duty to his superior. He did not nor would not participate in a military coup.

HIS PROMINENCE

Jehu is mention 60 times in the Old Testament.

HIS APPOINTMENT

God appointed Jehu as the king of Israel through the prophet Elisha and his representative. There was nothing de facto about Jehu. He became the duly anointed king of the Northern Kingdom by an Order of the LORD God.

And the young prophet, "arose, and went into the house; and he poured the oil on his head, and said unto him, **Thus saith the LORD God of Israel**, I have anointed thee king over the people of the LORD, *even* over Israel." (2 Kings 10:30).

As commander of the army, Jehu was perfectly situated and prepared for his Divine commission.

HIS COMMISSION

God anointed Jehu, a general in the army, to use his military power to execute justice on the House of Ahab; that is, to be God's hangman against the de facto king and the apostates. In this hour of darkness, Jehu became God's messiah to lead a revolt against treasonous Joram, the wicked son of Ahab and Jezebel.

7 And thou shalt smite the house of Ahab thy master, that I may avenge the blood of my servants the prophets, and the blood of all the servants of the LORD, at the hand of Jezebel.

8 For the whole house of Ahab shall perish: and I will cut off from Ahab him that pisseth against the wall, and him that is shut up and left in Israel:

Note: The LORD appointed Jehu to be king and to overthrow Ahab's government by military force. It is important to understand that Jehu was not a rebel nor did he lead a rebellion against Joram. Rather, he led an army to obey the living God commissioned to depose a rebellious king -- a man in rebellion against God's law-order. Jehu carried out iron justice towards the imposters by the authority of the LORD God.

HIS ACCOMPLISHMENTS

- *He executed king Joram with an arrow from his own quiver - 2 Kings 9:14*
- *He dispatched Ahaziah, Judah's wicked king and son-in-law of Jezebel - 2 Kings 9:27*
- *He ordered attendants to throw Queen Jezebel, the painted viper of Israel, over the balcony to be eaten by dogs - 2 Kings 9:30*
- *He commanded the officers in the civil government at Samaria to execute the 70 sons & grandsons of Ahab by decapitation - 2 Kings 10:1.*
- *He organized and presided over the mass execution of city official,*

friends, and relatives of Ahab at Jezreel - 2 Kings 10:11.

- Jehu gave the orders to execute political collaborators from Jerusalem traveling to Jezreel to patronize Joram not knowing that he was dead - 2 Kings 10:14.

- He slaughter the castrated, transvestite priests of Baal under a ploy of allegiance to Baal giving the order for them to be executed by the sword - 2 Kings 10:18ff.

In this way, Jehu zealously performed all that was in the heart of God for Ahab's family and the false religion of Baal.

Think of it! God's heart was filled with hatred for the House of Ahab. The gavel came down, and God ordered the executioner's sword to eradicate Ahab's family and his political party. King Jehu found that hate, and used his skills and position in the military to exterminate the apostates and to crush the deep state that robbed the people of righteousness, decency, and truth in government.

However, this was not a revival. It was not reformation. No souls were saved. Though this movement was endorsed by the LORD, it was not a grass roots movement! It did not change the people. No one climbed the mountain of truth. The northern religious cult founded by Jeroboam remained unchanged (1 Kings 12). Jehu's political revolution was pure power in action. It was the power of government purging evil within the government . . . and, that is all.

"Government Is Like Fire, a Dangerous Servant and a Fearful Master" - George Washington?

HIS COMMENDATION

2 Kings 10:30 "And the LORD said unto Jehu, Because thou hast done well in executing that which is right in mine eyes, and hast done unto the house of Ahab according to all that was in mine heart . . ."

Jehu performed his assignment with diligence and overthrew the treacherous regime by force without a civil war. This was a government clean-up by government officials upon corrupt government officials . . . a cleansing of the swamp . . . a shattering of the hornet's nest. No civilians were involved. Not one innocent life was lost in this bloody revolution and change of administrations.

HIS REWARD

2 Kings 10:30 ." . . thy children of the fourth generation shall sit on the throne of Israel."

HIS POLITICAL DEFICIENCY

While Jehu deserved a Gold Star for executing the justice of God, He failed to vigorously uphold God's law-order -- the great failure of all kings, politicians, presidents, senators, parliamentarians, ambassadors, and congressmen.

2 Kings 10:31 But Jehu took no heed to walk in the law of the LORD God of Israel with all his heart: for he departed not from the sins of Jeroboam, which made Israel to sin.

Jehu was a man of power, but not a man of truth. He was zealous for justice in his nation, but apathetic about re-instituting God's law among the people. He understood much about politics, but knew little about prayer. He knew much about vindication, but nothing about reformation. He knew how to rule men by force, but did not know how to call men to be ruled by faith. He promoted the role of government in the nation, but did not value the role of true religion among the people.

What is it about military men that know how to create an orderly society with force and power, but know so little about the love of God, the law of God, and faith? Why is it that kings see themselves as sovereign, but seem blind to the sovereignty of God? Why do they expect citizens to obey them, but they cannot submit their administrations to the King of kings, and Lord of lords?

What is it about Christians that seem to promote the grace of God, but demote the law of God and its place in society?

Oh, that it might be said of you and me that we have done all that is in the heart of God?

Psalm 40:8 I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart.

Oh, that God would raise up a man who will clean out the riff raff in Washington D.C. and rid the government of liars, slanderers, thieves, deceivers, and psychopaths in the deep state.

But, more than this! May God raise up men who can articulate the gospel in a way that will bring reformation and revival to the church of Jesus Christ.

Our hope is not in a better government, or a better congress, or a better presidency. Purging Washington without purifying the people of their sins will only produce more parasites in power.

59. A Biblical Model of Succession

1 Kings 12

IN REFERENCE TO THE SOUTH

Rev. B. M. Palmer: "It is not only from the impulse of a lofty patriotism, grand as that sentiment may be, but out of loyalty to God against whose rightful supremacy a wicked infidelity has lifted its rebellious arms."

This explanation of secession as holy war against the presumptions of modern thought recalls to our attention that the Confederate Constitution acknowledged the sovereignty of God over the political order.

INTRODUCTION

The spirit of secession is in the air. 52 % of the Brits voted to leave the EU. Five more countries are demanding referendums to tally votes in favor of secession.

In America, 1 in 4 people are sick and tired of the demagoguery of Washington D.C. and are in favor of leaving the union. In the east, only 1 in 5 favor of secession. In the West, more than 1 in 3 view secession favorably. This number would be higher if it weren't for the fact that about 20% of Americans work for the government; that is, because they receive a benefit from the State, they see secession negatively.

In Britain, the electorate voted to secede because they saw the English culture crumbling under the weight of Muslim immigration. 1 in 5 people are foreigners, many of whom are dedicated to transforming England into an Islamic state. The Brits are financially exhausted because of the taxation placed on them by their own liberal government and the tyrants in Brussels. Other Europeans, after seeing what the Islamic invasion has done to their country, are drifting away from globalism to nationalism; that is, they want their country back! Good for them!!

In America, the graybeards remember the freedom of their youth, and have had it up to their eyeballs with Washington forcing the religion of Sodomy, abortion, Islam, and taxation down their throats. The youth in America don't know what freedom is and have come to accept multiculturalism and oppressive taxation as normal.

Thus, secession is favored by monogamous grey heads that don't work for the government, but it is not favored by the ignorant, know-nothing, morally-confused, government-dependent youth.

With secession in the air, panic has seized the international cartel. Expect them to pay trillions to demoralize and demonize the secessionists. Expect fear mongering and propaganda to funnel through Zionist's global media networks

to recapture their one-world government agenda . . . an agenda, by the way, that has been in place since the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11).

Secession is not all that bad, and in many cases the wisest course of action. There is even a model of secession in the Bible. Let's take a look at the good, bad, and ugly of secession from 1 Kings 12.

THE GOOD ABOUT SECESSION

Our text shows us the northern tribes of Israel under the leadership of Jeroboam seceded from the ruling tribe of Judah and the foolish leadership of King Rehoboam, son of Solomon. You will need to familiarize yourself with the political subtleties in the background of this passage necessary to understanding the reasons for secession.

Let's take a look at the good aspects of this model of secession.

First, this secession was non-violent.

It was accomplished without war, howbeit, through divine intervention. Secession is not the same thing as revolution. Secession can be peaceful even though a nation experiences a monsoon of political differences (1 Kings 12:16).

Second, it was of God.

The text says, "*This thing (of secession) is of me*" (1 Kings 12:24).

Third, secession was necessary to correct spiritual apostasy.

Because Solomon had introduced polytheism into the country, he divided the nation spiritually. Kings are always the source of idolatry in a nation. Secession sent a message to Judah that they had sinned and departed from the living God by tolerating Solomon's multicultural, polytheistic altar building in the nation because of his pagan wives (1 Kings 11-1-13).

Fourth, secession corrected political slavery that developed in the nation due to oppressive taxation.

Plunged into poverty with chains about their neck, the northern tribes had had enough of Judah's IRS tax collectors and forced labor. When Rehoboam sent his income tax gorilla up into the northern hillbilly country of Ephraim to demand forced labor, the people stoned him to death (1 King 12:18).

Fifth, secession was God's tool to correct the oppressive taxation.

Oppressive taxation developed in the nation under Solomon and it would have crippled the people had not the northern tribes seceded (1 King 12:1-15).

Refusing to give taxes to the State is one way to force them to govern within the constraints of constitutions. See <http://famguardian.org/taxfreedom/Instructions/0.1HowKillBeast.htm>.

Sixth, secession humbled the arrogant, young government in Judah.

Jeroboam was the proud tyrant who wanted to be a tough-guy despot over the northern tribes. He learned one of life's great lessons, a leader is appointed by God to serve His people, not to plunder their wealth; to lead by the consent of the people, not by his own despotic ambitions.

THE BAD ABOUT SECESSION

Secession left both the southern and northern kingdoms in a state of spiritual confusion, the northern kingdom more so. Having gained their political freedom, the northern tribes were tasked with the responsibility of forming a new government. Thus, Jeroboam came to power.

But, the problem was not just political. Secession deprived the northern tribes of the benefit of their temple traditions; that is, the new nation experienced a spiritual void. Doubt, uncertainty, confusion, fear, bewilderment, disorientation, distraction, turbulence, and commotion rocked the northern tribes. The lack of a Biblical foundation created a climate of "change" and "progressivism." Convinced they needed to "go forward," and not "backward," liberalism rooted out conservatism wherein Israel voted to install a new kind of tyrant to rule over them.

THE UGLY OF SECESSION

In a cloud of uncertainty and a whirlwind of befuddlement, the northern tribes immediately acted to elect Jeroboam as the king of the northern ten tribes (1 Kings 12:20). But then, things turned ugly.

First, the new king was tasked with bringing order out of chaos.

The northern tribes had no centralized government, no constitution, no system of taxation, and no police force. Jeroboam had to build his nation from the ground up. It was a herculean task with plenty of room for disgruntlement among the rank and file of the tribes.

Second, the new king had the task of uniting his nation.

Anger, complaining, and dissatisfaction with government was in every conversation. What could unify a divided people? What could keep them together during this early crisis and greater ones to come? These were the questions that rattled around in the mind of the new prince.

Third, the new government failed to unite the people around the LORD God.

High on the list of priorities were forming a new government, uniting the nation, proving leadership, raising an army, building fortifications, instilling confidence, and securing his power to lead the rebel nation. Jeroboam made all the wrong choices. There was no prayer; no reading of the Scripture; no consideration of principles that might make the nation strong and free. Lacking Bible knowledge and a spiritual foundation in the LORD God, he plunged the nation into pluralism and religious idolatry by erecting a religious system around the two golden calves at Dan and Bethel.

Kings are always the source of idolatry, and building a nation other than on the Rock of Jesus Christ and His law-word is recipe for disaster.

*1 Corinthians 3:11 For no one can lay a **foundation** other than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ.*

Fourth, Jeroboam created a false religious system to maintain his own power.

Fear and uncertainty seized the heart of Jeroboam (1 Kings 12:26). Like most politicians, he was totally occupied with how to retain his power. Progress was slow. The pain of leaving Judah and all the rigors of nation building felt like an elephant on the chest.

Feeling the spiritual impact of separating from the temple in Judah grieved the people. Jeroboam knew that if the electorate could vote him into office, they could vote him out of office. He had one thing on his mind: how to conserve his place in the new political system. Notice, the man was not concerned with how to benefit the people, but how to secure his power. Sound familiar? Politicians don't act for the good of the voters; they act to preserve their own place in the system.

Fifth, fearing revolt and assassination, Rehoboam introduced an idolatrous system of religion to pacify the people and to unite the northern tribes.

Manufacturing two golden calves at Dan and Bethel, he established a new creed in the nation. With their own brand of religion in place, there was no need for the people to make pilgrimages to Jerusalem . . . and, to spend their shekels there! The new system guaranteed that money would stay in Israel and not be spent in Judah. Though clearly idolatrous, the new cult center became the hub in the middle of the wheel to power the engine of government—spiritually and economically!

Every nation has to an ultimate value to unite the nation. The question is, “What will unite Britain? America? France? Germany? Norway? Neither the Roman gods nor the reason of the enlightenment in France is strong enough to keep a nation together.

Sixth, the icons of religion became a sin to the people.

The entire foundation of this new nation was built on sin . . . on fraud . . . on sand . . . and when the wind and rains and floods came, the nation crumbled for want of truth, of equity, of justice, of goodness; that is, the fatally flawed, polytheistic religion was not strong enough to unite the people. The two golden calves were not a sufficient foundation upon which to build a nation. Eventually, the whole society plunged into idolatry, immorality, theft, lying, hemlock justice, and all kind of injustices. Eventually, the northern tribes were invaded by foreigners and were defeated by the military might of the Assyrians.

SEVENTH, REMEMBER THE SOUTH

Confederate Southerners stood ready to face death seeing themselves as part of a struggle between “powers and principalities,” and not a people caught between two competing schemes for gathering political power.

The ordinary Southerner of 1860 did not approach the world as did those who had voted for Mr. Lincoln.

Anne C. Loveland observes in her *Southern Evangelicals and the Social Order, 1800-1860*,

“as dubious of human ability in social and political matters as in the matter of salvation. The belief in the sovereignty of God and dependence of man was the whole of their thinking.”

Richard Weaver has described the Old South as “the last non-materialist civilization in the Western world” — a culture still immune to the ontologically aggressive spirit against which Semmes, Hall, and Palmer wrote.

Writing in the same vein, the Virginia theologian William H. Hall, in his *The Historic Significance of the Southern Revolution* (1864), writes of his comrades in the Confederate army,

“We are permitted to vindicate the supremacy of Jehovah’s word and the purity of His government.”

(Source: Excerpts from the *Theology of Secessions*, by M.E. Bradford, June 14, 2016) “<https://www.abbevilleinstitute.org/review/the-theology-of-secession/>)

In conclusion, secession is good . . . **if** it is for the right reasons. Secession can correct spiritual apostasy and state tyranny, but if it is not for the glory of God and righteousness, it will find the bad and ugly in graveyard of nations (2 Kings 17).

60. How to Deal with a Tyrant

Genesis 12:12-13

PART I

12 Therefore it shall come to pass, when the Egyptians shall see thee, that they shall say, This is his wife: and they will kill me, but they will save thee alive.

13 Say, I pray thee, thou art my sister: that it may be well with me for thy sake; and my soul shall live because of thee.

Every age has its tyrants in the apparatus of government whether they be an employee of the State, a judge, or an officer in law enforcement.

Whether they have the title of Sergeant, or Judge, or Federal Prosecutor, we need to know how to deal with a tyrant and the abusive agencies they represent.

This brief operates on the premise the man of God does not owe the truth to tyrants . . . to men of power who abuse the truth . . . to criminals, cops, and government officials who can and will use what you say against you!

You have the right to remain silent. Anything you say can and will be used against you in a court of law. You have the right to an attorney. If you cannot afford an attorney, one will be appointed for you (Miranda Rights).

What does the Bible say? What does it teach about how to deal with tyrants?

Genesis 12: Because Pharaoh was absolute and took what he wanted, Abraham instructed Sarah, a beautiful woman, to deceived the monarch and say, "He is my brother." It would have been death to Abraham to say, "He is my husband" or for Abraham to say, "She is my wife." Notice that God did not rebuke Abraham for deceiving this despot.

Genesis 20: Because Abimelech, King of Gerar, was a tyrant like Pharaoh, Abraham said of his good-looking wife, "She is my sister;" that is, he answered him with a half-truth. Notice that God confront the king for his unlawful taking of Sarah and did not have one word of condemnation for Abraham. In fact, God heard the prayers of Abraham because it was Abimelech who was in need of healing.

Genesis 26: Likewise, when Isaac was asked about the status of Rebeka, he told the tyrant of Gerar, "She is my sister" because, "the men of the place might kill me on account of Rebekah, for she is beautiful." He was, of course, correct.

Genesis 47: When Joseph brought his brethren into Egypt, he needed to provide a good place for them to live. Knowing Pharaoh hated shepherds, Joseph instructed his brethren, when asked their occupation, to say, "We are keepers of livestock" which included cattle. If they had said we are "shepherds of sheep" they would have raised the ire of this despot.

Exodus 1: When Pharaoh's depraved heart came up with a plan to cull the children of Israel by ordering the Hebrew midwives to commit infanticide, the midwives refused (quietly). When confronted, they lied to Pharaoh telling him the Hebrew women are quick to give birth . . . and, the children were being born before they arrived. Notice that God rewarded these woman for their courage and faith.

Joshua 2: When the illegal immigrant spies sent by God came to spy out Jericho, Rahab hid them in her house. When the brutal soldiers arrived inquiring about the whereabouts of the spies, Rahab gave them disinformation in order to protect the Hebrews. Note that God rewarded Rahab, saved her family, and she was given citizenship among the Hebrews.

Judges 3: Ehud, a left handed man, intentionally cloaked a dagger on his right hip, deceived Eglon the King of Moab about his true intentions, and then assassinated the glutton in his own chambers.

Judges 6: Gideon hid his assets and grain from the alien predatory agrarian tax collectors from Midian.

Judges 12-15: Samson hid his true intention to liberate Israel from Philistine tax assessors, created contracts, and inflicted revenge on the Philistines for contract violations; that is, he used deception to free Israel from Philistine vassalage.

I Samuel 16: God instructed Samuel to go to Bethlehem under the pretense of worship in order to cloak his true intentions to anoint David as king, the successor of King Saul. Deception was necessary because Saul had his secret agents spying the activities of Samuel.

I Samuel 20: Jonathan acted deceitfully with his father, Saul, in order to protect innocent David from the depraved plans of Saul to have David killed.

1 Samuel 21: David lied about his mission to Ahimelech the priest saying, "The king hath commanded me a business, and hath said unto me, Let no man know anything of the business whereabouts I send thee, and what I have commanded thee: and I have appointed my servants to such and such a place."

1 Samuel 21: David even acted like a mad man to save his life when he came to the King of Achish.

From studying the verse above we learn five principles.

PRINCIPLES FOR DEALING WITH TYRANTS

- Government officers are sinners who sin and will use their power to harm you. Testimonies abound.
- Government is so corrupt, you must hide . . . be silent . . . and even lie to protect yourself.
- The point of all the lies, deception, and an award winning Oscar moment before de facto authorities acting under color of law is the principle: *You don't owe the truth to men who will abuse the truth.*

You don't owe the truth to men of power who scheme to steal your money, seizure property, or to destroy you politically.

- The Biblical principle: The way you deal with lying, murdering tyrants is through the art of deception.

In the lying, power-hungry world of politics, most politicians cannot be trusted (Psalm 118: 8,9). When psychopaths, madmen, and tyrants are in power, you have to act surreptitiously in order to preserve your life and your assets.

Proverbs 28:28 When the wicked rise, men hide themselves: but when they perish, the righteous increase.

While you owe the truth to your family, your neighbors, and to trustworthy people, you don't owe the truth to men who will abuse their power to enrich themselves by impoverishing you.

You don't owe the truth to men who will step up by stomping you down.

You do owe the truth when under oath . . . but, you don't owe any man "the whole truth and nothing but the truth." That's entrapment. Why would you promise to tell the whole truth when the judge, prosecutor, and defense attorney have sworn no duty to the truth?

- When the government is god in the mind of men, they cannot be trusted not to betray you (Judges 15:11-20).

God's people should be trustworthy . . . but most are not. Nominal Christians want to please State agencies and be in good standing with the powers that be. Therefore, you don't owe the truth to men who practically, by their actions,

have made a god out of government; that is, you don't owe the truth to idolaters.

Please don't hear what is not being said. Christian men are men of truth and honesty . . . and generally owe the truth to others . . . BUT in an evil world under the rule of the Prince of Lies, you have to deal deceptively with tyrants in order to survive and to achieve your mission in life. It takes devotion to Christ, and moral courage to intentionally, willfully deceive an abusive officer of the absolute State in order to preserve that which is good, honorable, and precious.

"Physical courage seems to be quite common, but moral courage seems to be quite rare." — Mark Twain

May the Lord give you wisdom from above.

PART II

Question one: What about telling the whole truth and nothing but the truth?

First, let's review the Biblical principle, "You don't owe the truth to those who will abuse the truth."

Second, when you go to court, there are all kinds of double standards. You are dealing with judges who have not taken an oath to "tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth."

You are dealing with skilled prosecutors who have not taken an oath to "tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth."

But, you are being put under oath under pains and penalties to "tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth."

Why the double standard? Why do we tolerate this? Do we not recognize that we are being a sheep in a wolf court, with a wolf judge and under cross-examined by a wolf prosecutor? These men are charlatans, criminals, despots, and tyrants.

And, some even ask you to tell "tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth . . . so help you God." To which God are they referring? I'll guarantee you they will not define "Him" or is it a "Her"?

Christian, wake up! Realize you are being manipulated, framed, coerced, deceived, duped, and trapped! Why do you tolerate it?

Christians are commanded to take oaths name than the Name of the LORD God, (Deuteronomy 6:13). This means Christians are not allowed to take state oaths rooted in secularism. Isn't this correct?

Why would you as a sheep promise to tell “the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth” in a cage full of wolves?

Tell “part of the truth,” a “truth,” but the whole truth? I don’t think so. If Abraham told the tyrant Pharaoh that Sarah was his sister, then he would have been a dead man!! Committing suicide with a knife wound in the back comes to mind.

“The essence of Government is power; and power, lodged as it must be in human hands, will ever be liable to abuse.” - James Madison

Question two: What about telling the whole truth on a tax form?

Again, why would you do this . . . under “penalties of perjury?” Isn’t there a 5th Amendment that comes into play here Why would you sign anything under penalty of perjury when these agents will not “tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth” about the true nature of the income tax? When they won’t sign anything under penalties of perjury? When they won’t even sign anything under notary attestation? Why do we put up with this double standard?

“Be not slaves of men” (1 Corinthians 7:23).

Why do we put up with one law for the poor, sap-citizen and another law for the high and mighty who work for three-letter agencies? Doesn’t the First and Fifth Amendment protect your right “to be silent” and to not be “compelled to testify against yourself”?

It is certainly easy to be intimidated and coerced into giving up rights.

When the Bible says “Be strong” it is in the context of Joshua having to confront thirty-one (31) government tyrants (Joshua 1:8).

PART III

Question: What do you do when a tyrant working in the apparatus of government begins to ask you questions?

Mark 11: 28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men; they feared the people: for all men

counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

Victims (like you) of an overreaching agency must use the art of deception; that is, every prey uses “escape and evasion” strategies when fleeing from a predator (Proverbs 28:28). Rabbits and sheep know how to hide. God even ordered Mary and Joseph to flee into Egypt because of the tyrant Herod.

Citizens are often the target of state predators who want to control them, to mask and jab them, to take their property, and to seize their assets. Tickets, fines, fees, and arraignments come to mind.

America is no longer the land of the free and home of the brave. It is the land of the tyrant and home of the slave. One in seven men in the America will end up in prison in their life time. We are living in a militarized police state where state agencies are preying upon the people. We must have a Biblical strategy to deal with tyranny.

Now, we come to **another principle** in dealing with tyrants:

- You have unalienable rights which cannot lawfully be taken an act of the legislature or stroke of a pen.

The Declaration – “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.--That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed”

- “You don’t owe information to officials who will not provide you with information.”

Notice, the lawyers above asked Jesus a question about the source of His authority. Like a good Jewish attorney, **Jesus answered the question with a question**, “The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men”?

The state opposition refused to answer. Therefore, Jesus refused to answer the questions of these state spies.

“You don’t owe information to officials who will not provide you with information.”

The application is simple but hard!

A FLURRY OF DO'S AND DON'TS

When asked a question, answer with a question. Ask questions, do not answer questions.

You are not an answering machine, you are a question machine!

When given an order, shut up! Ask, "By what authority are you commanding me to do this or that? "Excuse me, do I have a contract with you"? or politely say, "No thank you." Or, just remain silent.

Never, No, Never, Never, Never talk to a cop or federal agent. You have **NO** duty to the government (Hale v. Henkle: 201 U.S. 43 (1906)).

Do not trust a state official (Psalm 118:8-9).

"It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man."

Remember, you have a right to remain silent. Exercise it!

"What you say, can, and will be used against you" by government officials 100% of the time.

You do not give information, you seek information.

God gave you one mouth and two ears. Listen more, talk less.

Don't give into nervous chatter.

You don't have to testify against yourself, confess guilt, or help them put you behind bars (5th Amendment).

Don't enter into verbal or written contracts under duress.

When "forced" to sign something, appendage the phrase, "Non assumpsit" or "all rights reserved" or "I do not consent" or signed under "duress, threat, and coercion." All non-consensual contracts are null and void.

No, you are not smarter than a BAR attorney.

You have an unalienable, God-given right to be left alone!

"Justice [the RIGHT to be LEFT ALONE by EVERYONE, INCLUDING THE GOVERNMENT] is the end of government. It is the end of civil society. It ever has been, and ever will be pursued, until it be obtained, or until liberty be lost in the pursuit." [The Federalist No. 51 (1788), James Madison] (SEDM: <https://sedm.org/Membership/MemberAgreement.htm>)

In a crisis, and under commanding orders by a cop, your brain shuts down. So, be still! Shut up! Zip the lip! Hold your tongue! Say no more! My lips are sealed! Cork it!

You don't owe information to three letter agencies that won't answer your questions with particularity and specificity.

When "sinners (government officer, officials, and employees) entice thee, Consent Thou Not" (Proverbs 1:10).

May the Lord give you wisdom.

"Be as wise as serpents, but harmless as doves" – Jesus.

Addendum

Solzhenitsyn: "Best Defense Against Government Tyranny"

Oh, that men would resist tyranny!

"And how we burned in the camps later, thinking: What would things have been like if every Security operative, when he went out at night to make an arrest, had been uncertain whether he would return alive and had to say good-bye to his family?"

Or if,

during periods of mass arrests, as for example in Leningrad, when they arrested a quarter of the entire city, people had not simply sat there in their lairs, PAILING WITH TERROR AT EVERY BANG OF THE DOWNSTAIRS DOOR and at every step on the staircase,

. . . but had understood they had nothing left to lose and had boldly set up in the downstairs hall an ambush of half a dozen people with axes, hammers, pokers, or whatever else was at hand?

. . . The Organs would very quickly have suffered a shortage of officers and transport and, notwithstanding all of Stalin's thirst, the cursed machine would have ground to a halt!

If . . . if . . .

We didn't love freedom enough.

And even more – we had no awareness of the real situation . . . We purely and simply deserved everything that happened afterward." — Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

Americans would do well to remember the words in **the Declaration of Independence**:

“Prudence, indeed, will dictate that Governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shewn that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security.”

61. Samson: God’s Freedom Fighter

Hebrews 11:32-38

“And what more shall I say? For time would fail me to tell of Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, of David and Samuel and the prophets—who through faith conquered kingdoms, enforced justice, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the power of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, were made strong out of weakness, became mighty in war, put foreign armies to flight. Women received back their dead by resurrection. Some were tortured, refusing to accept release, so that they might rise again to a better life. Others suffered mocking and flogging, and even chains and imprisonment. They were stoned, they were sawn in two, they were killed with the sword. They went about in skins of sheep and goats, destitute, afflicted, mistreated of whom the world was not worthy—wandering about in deserts and mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

LIFE AND TIMES OF SAMSON

What a scene—terrified foxes fleeing for their lives through burning wheat fields with torches tied to their tails. Surrounded by pillars of black smoke rising into the western sky, the smolder could be seen in any direction for a hundred miles.

The damage was in the thousands of shekels.

A rugged, Hebrew patriot sought to deliver his nation from political oppression. Yet, butter-cup Israelites were ready to hand over their champion to their adversaries for execution.

Judges 14:12 And they said to him, "We have come down to bind you, that we may give you into the hands of the Philistines."

His name means "sunny"-- possibly because he possessed a happy-go-lucky, effervescent personality that blistered his peers. He was the Hebrew equivalent of the "Italian Stallion of the Battalion." He was a cross between **Rambo, the Terminator, and Bugs bunny**. A prankster with a creative mind, Samson has captured the imagination of Jews and Christians alike. He was a **martial arts** expert that could turn a jawbone into a killing machine. We assume he had massive bulging muscles that rippled like hills and valleys on his abs, but the text says nothing about his physical size.

His long hair was a sacred symbol that he was a Nazarite from birth. Dedicated to God, he was not allowed to drink wine or touch dead bodies. It was his pure devotion to God, not his long hair that gave him such strength. **If God could do such amazing feats through one Nazarite, what could he do through a whole family of Nazarites . . . a nation of Nazarites?**

EXPOSING THE POLITICAL PROBLEM

Judges 14: 4 . . . At that time the Philistines ruled over Israel.

Government is a divine institution and it was designed to be his tool for maintaining the civil order. Because it is a divine institution, it was designed to be administrated by godly men. In Israel's case, God promised the nation they would be the head and not the tail; creditors and not debtors; rulers and not slaves.

But, Israel became enslaved to the Philistines; that is, they were governed by foreign agents, ruled by foreign laws, and taxed for the wealth creation of a foreign nation.

Samson lived during the Late Bronze Period while the Sea Peoples occupied western Palestine. The Greeks from the Aegean Sea settled along the Mediterranean Coast around 1350 B.C. Late in the Period of the Judges, the Philistines "ruled over Israel" (Jud. 15:4). What—a foreign nation ruling over God's people placing them under tribute and taxing their harvest? This was not the way it was supposed to be! Israel was a privileged people, a holy nation, servants of the Most High with the promise "you will chase your enemies" (Ex. 19; Lev. 26:7). But, Israel had sinned and God permitted their enslavement to the Sea Peoples.

There is a political expression called **the "third rail."** It refers to a politician who attempts to address an issue that could end his political career. Samson rode the third rail and found himself on the **Most Wanted List** of the Philistine DOJ and blacklisted by his own brethren. He was a man of faith and God's man.

His political enemies labeled him an international terrorist; and, his country saw him as misguided, homeschooled, rightwing extremist and militia bogeyman.

He did not seek to reduce taxes, he wanted to eliminate taxes altogether.

He did not want to fix the Philistines, he wanted to eliminate their rule over his people.

He did not want to make the government better, he wanted to right Israel by abolishing the Forms to which they were accustomed because the Philistine's design reduced them under absolute Despotism.

Samson felt it was their Right, it was their Duty, to throw off this Philistine Government, and to provide new Guards for Israel's future security (See the Declaration of Independence).

"-That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to affect their Safety and Happiness."

How does a nation regain its freedom and independence once it has lost its sovereignty? How do you wake up a country that talks attic but lives in the cellar; that talks freedom, but lives in chains and slavery?

At **White Sands Missile Range near Alamogordo**, New Mexico, the Air Force has a chimpanzee population where scientists do experimental research. The monkeys spend their lives in a cage never seeing the light of day or the beauty of a lush green of forest. *All they have known is captivity.* The animals are so discouraged and defeated, you can open a door of a cage and they will not attempt to escape. It is possible to think that captivity is normal.

"We'll know our disinformation program is complete when everything the American public believes is false." -- William Casey, CIA Director (first staff meeting, 1981)

And, this is what happened in Israel. Israel accepted their enslavement, abandoned the fight for freedom, and docilely paid **their tariffs to the Philistines**. The public policy of the Philistines was the supreme law of the land. The wind in Israel's sail was gone All the fight in the tiger was tame. Exertion for rugged independence lay buried in the dust. As long as the nation was could **eat bagels and lamp chops at the chariot races on Sunday**, they could have cared less about Philistine occupation over them. Israelite males sat in Philistine stadium with "Go Gath" or "Ashkelon kicks A___ , well, you know what I mean.

And this is where we are in America. Freedoms are eroding faster than the gritty particles in a sand castle at high tide. We talk champagne, but drink suds.

The state not only wants half of our income, but lustily government agencies gathers information about our businesses, investments, saving accounts, cars, vehicles, houses, and health. With the click of a button, agencies can seize lands, bank accounts, and property with Nazi-like efficiency.

The intervention of government into our lives is in the red zone – and Americans have accepted the radical control of the federal government as normal. They do not see government as the problem, but the solution. Government is god – a savior to be revered. **As long as Americans can drink beer and eat hot dogs at the ballpark on Sunday, most could care less about the shackles and chains around their ankles. Thus, the need for a Samson!**

EXPOSING THE EVIL OF CIVIL RULERS

Judges 14:-2 And Samson went down to Timnath, and saw a woman in Timnath of the daughters of the Philistines. And he came up, and told his father and his mother, and said, I have seen a woman in Timnath of the daughters of the Philistines: now therefore get her for me to wife.

Judges 14: 4 His father and mother did not know that it was from the LORD, for he was seeking an opportunity against the Philistines. At that time the Philistines ruled over Israel.

Samson was one of those rare, independent individuals with **20-20 political vision**. He was Israel's true patriot with a love of freedom and fun. Seeing more clearly than any other, he understood the nation needed to be freed from bondage to the Philistines. How telling are the words,

"Now at that time the Philistines were ruling over Israel" (14:4).

Samson did not attempt to be a good little statist or a nice, little Jewish boy who was content to eat his daily **Matzah Ball Soup**.

He did not sit around and eat chocolate bonbons and Sugar Slap Cereals for breakfast.

His objective was not to be a compliant Philistine citizen, to pay his tribute, and to live out his days in peace and slavery.

He loved freedom too much to accept the chains and anchors of the Sea Peoples. He knew the Philistines had to be exposed and their yoke broken. But how?

When Samson went to search for a wife from the Philistines, it was not solely for the purpose of marital happiness, but also **a covert attempt to expose the evil character of those ruling over Israel.**

The wickedness of the Philistine despots along with the impish tolerance of Israel had to be exposed

Judges 14:10-12 So his father went down unto the woman: and Samson made there a feast; for so used the young men to do And it came to pass, when they saw him, that they brought thirty companions to be with him. And Samson said unto them, I will now put forth a riddle unto you . . . Out of the eater came forth meat, and out of the strong came forth sweetness.

Shimmering like the noonday Sun, Samson smiled and laughed his way into the heart of a Philistine woman. During the marriage feast he entertained his guests with riddles. Always the prankster and as smart as a tree full of owls, Samson made a **betting man's wager** (a contract) with the bridal party that they could not figure out his riddle. Unable to resolve the puzzle and fearful of having to pay off the bet with a new wardrobe, the Philistines resorted to threats and intimidation to **squeeze the answer out of Samson's young bride; that is, they broke the contract.** Thus, the treachery of the Philistines was exposed. Suddenly, the marriage party turned dark and as smelly as a pile of dead skunks.

15 And it came to pass on the seventh day, that they said unto Samson's wife, Entice thy husband, that he may declare unto us the riddle, lest we burn thee and thy father's house with fire:

17-20 And she wept before him the seven days, while their feast lasted: and it came to pass on the seventh day, that he told her, because she lay sore upon him: and she told the riddle to the children of her people . . . f ye had not plowed with my heifer, ye had not found out my riddle. And the Spirit of the LORD came upon him, and he went down to Ashkelon, and slew thirty men of them, and took their spoil, and gave change of garments unto them which expounded the riddle. But Samson's wife was given to his companion, whom he had used as his friend.

With an occasion for revenge, Samson descended upon the Philistines, **sank his talons** into their flesh, and ripped off their clothes and gave them to the wedding guests. Disgusted with the foul weather in Timnah and Askelon, Samson returned to his nest.

After Samson cooled down, his whole **body hummed to be near his new bride**, but somebody threw a dead cat down the well. The father, fearful of being assaulted by his countrymen, gave his daughter to another man. This **breach of promise** only infuriated Samson.

15:4, 8 And Samson went and caught three hundred foxes, and took firebrands, and turned tail to tail, and put a firebrand in the midst between two tails . .

.and the Philistines came up and burned her and her father . . . and Samson struck them with a great slaughter.

Knowing the cause of the sore was not with the father, but with the Philistine ruffians who launched the threat, Samson — **always the prankster** — took revenge on the farmers by setting their fields on fire. Vindictive, the Philistines threw a firebomb in the family's home burning the woman and her father. With a sense of justice stronger than horseradish, this army of one declared war on the Philistines. Using his bone-crushing strength, Samson beat, clubbed, and slammed dozens of them to death (15:8).

The bitter feuds between Samson and the Philistines exposed the true nature of Israel's rulers. They were more crooked than a box of fishhooks. These ruthless, unprincipled men who behaved more like gangsters and neighborhood ruffians could not be trusted to lead a nation like Israel.

Behind the custom of Philistine docility was a coiled snake ready to sink its treacherous fangs into the ankles of Israel. Samson, on the other hand, was all wool and a yard wide. Though his revenge was **vigilante justice**, it was nevertheless true justice. The Philistines deserved every punishment Israel's judge inflicted on them.

EXPOSING COMPLACENCY AMONG GOD'S PEOPLE

15:9-10 Then the Philistines went up, and pitched in Judah, and spread themselves in Lehi. And the men of Judah said, Why are ye come up against us? And they answered, To bind Samson are we come up, to do to him as he hath done to us.

15:11 Then three thousand men of Judah went to the top of the rock Etam, and said to Samson, Knowest thou not that the Philistines are rulers over us? what is this that thou hast done unto us? And he said unto them, As they did unto me, so have I done unto them.

After Samson's firefight with the Philistines, the political situation heated up like a pair of jumper cables in a Mexican barrio. Sparks flew, and Samson was in a heap of trouble. Having notified the **Philistine Department of Justice**, the agency rounded up a **Philistine S.W.A.T team to hunt** down their bitter enemy. Samson did not fit into the Philistine system. Declared **an enemy of the state**, he had to be tried and executed for treason against the Philistines government.

When government agents from Timnah entered the land of Israel in search of Sampson, rumors of war rippled from city to city like the waves on a pond. People panicked. As restless as a mules in a burning barn, the men of **Judah sent negotiators** to the Philistine camp. Not wanting to offend the Philistine

officers, they organized their own **3,000-member search party** to track down the **southern rebel who was resisting western aggression.**

Samson's disrespect for Philistine authority could not be tolerated. Didn't Samson know he was supposed to be in subjection to civil rulers as pastors teach regarding Romans 13? Didn't he know that he was supposed to obey the government? Didn't he know that he would be accused of being an extreme, right-wing, conservative, home-schooled Christian terrorist? Didn't he understand the Philistines might subject Israel to an audit or levy their wages or seize their crops? **Why couldn't Samson be a good Philistine slave like the rest of his Hebrew brethren?** Instead of standing with Sampson and declaring independence from the Sea Peoples, their garlic breath turned foul. His brethren arrested their champion pastor, handcuffed him, and delivered him over to the civil authorities for execution in the corrupt courts of the Sea Peoples.

When government is god in the minds of God's people, you cannot trust them not to betray you.

Jeremiah 9:4 Take ye heed every one of his neighbor, and trust ye not in any brother: for every brother will utterly supplant, and every neighbor will walk with slanders.

Samson was the one man in the nation who understood better than any other the political truth and the need for the nation to throw off the Philistine yoke and return to YHWH. But, to those in Judah, peace was more important than principle; peace was more important than political freedom; peace with compromise was better than war with uncertainty. What is about Christians that they feel they are required to obey government regardless of the character of an administration? They arrested Samson and probably felt they were serving God by turning over their Nazarite to the Philistines for execution. Samson, however created another contract and obtained a promise from them that they would not kill him. Unlike the Philistines, the Hebrews kept their promise to Samson.

Agreeing to terms, Samson's Jewish brothers handed him over to the federal marshals of the Philistines. Because of the cowardice of his brethren, Samson was fired as the nation's pastor for his radical views on freedom.

When Samson was extradited to the Philistines, the Spirit of the Lord came upon him. Snapping the ropes like wet noodles, Samson grasped the jawbone of an ass and turned it into an instrument of death. Dust flew, bones crushed, skulls cracked, blood spewing, shrieks pressing, Samson managed to hack and smash his way to victory against the Philistine Riot Control Squad. In the end, a thousand corpses littered the landscape. For twenty years, Samson rode the

third rail and championed freedom for Israel. So great was Samson, his name is forever etched in God's Hall of Fame (Hebrews 11).

Lessons

First, we need to recognize when a nation is under bondage.

When the families in a nation are under tribute and the wealth of the nation is flowing out of the country to foreign powers, the nation is under tribute. Tribute is one means of judging a nation for having forsaken His law.

Proverbs 22:7 The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.

Joshua 17:13 Yet it came to pass, when the children of Israel were waxen strong, that they put the Canaanites to tribute; but did not utterly drive them out.

*1 Kings 9:21 Their children that were left after them in the land, whom the children of Israel also were not able utterly to destroy, upon those did Solomon levy a **tribute** of bondservice unto this day.*

*Ezra 4:20 There have been mighty kings also over Jerusalem, which have ruled over all countries beyond the river; and toll, **tribute**, and custom, was paid unto them.*

Tribute is another word for taxation.

Taxation is a form of enslavement. When you are taxed to pay foreign debts, you are no longer free, but a slave. Does a 14 trillion dollar debt and a 60% tax on income tell us anything about slavery? If you fill out a 1040 form, are you really a free man?

Slavery calls for war when the State seeks to enslave its people . . . when the government is the master and the people are slaves . . . when the people are more afraid of government than the government is afraid of the people.

"for he was seeking an opportunity against the Philistines. At that time the Philistines ruled over Israel."

The men of Judah asked Samson, "Do you not realize the Philistines rule over us"? Yes, but did Samson's brethren realize the Philistines ruled over them?

Samson answered with a *quid pro quo*. His brethren, however, were **bent on assisting the Philistine cops to arrest their one and only Patriot**. Jewish authorities adopted the position that it was Israel's duty to obey their government occupiers. Thus, Israel's government lackeys were willing to bind (enslave) a man and turn him in to de facto rulers.

The Declaration of Independence declared it is a right to abolish a government with a long train of abuses . . . but more than that, the Fathers declared it was "their **duty**, to throw off such Government."

We could ask Americans, "**Do you not know the federal government is fornicating with the Federal Reserve**"? "**Do you not realize foreign bankers rule over us**"? **That we do not have sound currency?**

Accepting the illusion of freedom and liberty, Americans continue to believe that they are the most free country in the world. Johann Wolfgang von **Goethe** put it this way, "*None are so hopelessly enslaved as those who falsely believe they are free.*"

Americans sing about freedom and shoot off fireworks not realizing how our own government has made slaves out of us all. Americans are as deceived as the audiences in a magician's sideshow. We confess soprano, but sing bass.

Have you heard about a psychologist that did a study on **the power of suggestion**. He mixed chocolate syrup in yogurt. Placing it in a plastic strawberry ice cream container, he asked the subjects of the study to describe the "strawberry" flavor of the "ice cream." All described the strawberry taste and not one even hinted at the fact it was yogurt mixed with chocolate. Americans brag about strawberry freedom, but eat the deceiver's chocolate.

The complacent retires to his pleasures, shuts out the cares of mankind, and abandons himself to his own fantasy. **Americans love their soda pops, Wal-Mart specials, and county fairs.** Dead Sea Christians are addicted to comfortable pews and potluck dinners. We love to sing, "American the Beautiful," but appear to be oblivious to storm clouds of disaster upon us. *The demise of America's innocence will not be the result of an ambush, but slow extinction from indifference.* Plato said it best:

"The price of apathy towards public affairs is to be ruled by evil men."

The preacher that tells the truth about the loss of sovereignty in America is **riddin' the third rail** and his **little red choo choo** may jump the track. Most pastors avoid these subjects because these kinds of sermons do not increase attendance on Sunday mornings. After all, he has to increase attendance so he can retire comfortably. Right? The brave patriotic soul that dares to sound the trumpet may find himself between two red-headed Irish women. "We are come down to bind thee" announced Samson's brethren (Jud. 15:12).

Samuel Adams warned,

"If ye love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of servitude better than the animating contest of freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or your arms. Crouch down and lick the hands, which

feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you, and may posterity forget that ye were our countrymen."

When God works, he raises up a man.

God is not looking for better programs or better organizations, but better men — men totally yielded to Him.

And, He seldom uses the majority. It took 20 plus years to make the man. In our story, there was only one man who understood the crisis and had the courage to confront the riotous tenure of his day.

Christ used a handful of apostles to turn the world upside down. In Jewish history, it was Gideon's 300, David's 300, Nehemiah's remnant, and small bands of men here and there that God used to defeat mighty enemies and raise the banner of victory. In our own history, the men who fought against the powerful British army never comprised a number larger than 3% of the whole. The brave men whom we refer to as America's Founding Fathers numbered less than 200. In fact, in most instances (if not all), the majority has either contributed little to the cause of liberty or has even been tools of opposition and hindrance to the principles of liberty. It has always been a relatively small number of people who have turned the tide of history. Chuck Baldwin Newsletter, May 2011.

God uses Nazarites.

God prepared a Nazarite to lead them and he was twenty years some years in the making. The Spirit of God came on this rebel who resisted pagan rule and inflicted vigilante justice on covenant breakers. We need to realize that when God wants to deliver a country from bondage he prepares Nazarites to lead them: pure men, holy men, careful men.

We need Samsons who will join the Black Regiment and dare to ride the "third rail." We need holy men who will start eating Iron Man Wheaties and take a **bite out of impossible pie**. We need godly women who can make the transition **from pig-tails to nylons**. Those feeding at the government trough need not apply. Statists will turn "**Cream of Wheat**" **preachers** into a bowl of mush. Only cross-carrying pastors with a fierce love for truth will have the power to **pluck the plumes from cadaverous vultures** that have built their nest in Washington, D.C. *He that desires nothing but the continuance of ease is unfit to lead God's flock.* He whose life has passed without a contest, and who can boast neither of success or failure, should count his life as nothing but useless existence. Jesus said, "*Follow me, and I will make you . . . a Nazarite to lead them*"

Be prepared for resistance from the Christian community.

If one thinks he can expose evil in government and still retain the favor

of fellow Christians, he needs to think again. Chuck Baldwin stated:

Because government is God in the minds of most Christians, Christians cannot be trusted not to betray a freedom fighter."

Every pastor who stands for God and resists government will be hung from the church steeple.

Yet, many, if not most, of today's Christian leaders and pastors view government, not as a "dangerous servant" and "fearful master," but as much a captain to be served. When Christians are forced to choose between submission to government and submission to God, they will choose government every time.

When Christians do not surrender to God laws, they will surrender others to be punished by man's laws. If they do not seek first the Kingdom of God, they will seek first the rule of men. If Jesus is not Lord, then Christians cannot be trusted not to betray one another. When the government is god, Christians cannot be trusted not to betray freedom fighters.

Just as we have a responsibility to be thoroughly Christian, so does the State. Any other position is to advance the death of God in the arena of politics. Because Israel failed to require the state to be thoroughly "Christian," they surrendered the civil order to the enemy. Note the progression: First, they surrendered the civil order to the pagans; then they relinquished their wealth to support the Philistines; and finally; then they submitted to chains and slavery; and finally they turned over God's patriot to be murdered by the godless government. They betrayed Samson because they first betrayed the law of their God.

Christians are human beings. When facing a government threat, most believers will bind and repudiate a prophet rather than endure the hostility of an offended government.

When the federal marshals show up, churchmen will scramble like cockroaches for safety. Modern day pastors are sitting on a cushion of strawberries and have no stomach for confronting statism and the tyrannical rule of the state. Churchmen will not even blink before handing over a pastor / prophet over to government in order to preserve the status quo in the church. In the mind of many, Christians must make sure they are in total compliance to every presumption of government. It happened in Germany in WWII and it happens in America today.

"And one will say to him, 'What are these wounds between your arms?' Then he will say, 'Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends.' (Zech. 13:6).

And, it hurts to be betrayed:

- “Hast thou no scar; thou has not followed far that has no scar” (Amy Charmichael).
- Did not Joseph’s brothers sell him into slavery because of his honesty (Gen. 37)?
- Were not Moses brethren ready to forsake him for confronting Pharaoh (Ex. 507)?
- Were not the men of Keilah willing to surrender David to Saul (1 Sam. 23)?
- Was not the sentence of death pronounced upon Jeremiah by civil authorities for preaching the truth (Jer. 26:7)?
- Was not Zechariah stoned to death because his brethren could not tolerate his preaching (2 Chr. 24:20)?
- Was not Jesus handed over to Pilate by his Jewish brothers?
- Did not all men forsake Paul after he was indicted by Nero (2 Tim. 4).
- Was not Cardinal Cajetan and Johann Eck and Charles the V ready to have Luther excommunicated, even killed, because he exposed papal errors?
- Did not the Lutherans and Calvinists and Catholics unite to strangle, behead, and burn Anabaptists at the stake because they rejected paedobaptism?
- Was not William Tyndale burned at the stake by those who called themselves “Christians”?
- Were not British loyalists ready to betray the revolutionaries because they were fearful of King Charles?

Yet, Samson did not use his power to attack his brethren.

He injured none! He marshaled all this strength to attack the true problem – pagan rulers.

Sixth, serve the Lord with joy.

Be Sunny in disposition. Turn anger into joyful service. Take on some hot, political, 3rd Rail issue and attack it with gusto. Disobey some law for you will never understand obedience until you can distinguish between the Rule of God and the rule of man.

Samson seemed to conduct his revenge with the excitement of a host of a **Hollywood game show**. He was a **prankster**. None of his service seemed a burden to him. He dished our revenge with Devilish delight. Yes, our work is

serious, but we must be burdened down by it. **Enjoy tying some fox tails together**, setting some torches on fire, and turning them loose on the taskmasters. Stay in the game and enjoy the contest.

Karol Jackowshi, a nun, suggested the following: Before You die, **give some serious thought to vowing holy disobedience whenever necessary. *Discerning and knowing why one would choose to disobey is by far the most serious and mysterious part of listening to the voice of God.*** It's also a recurring theme throughout the Bible.

Biblical stories tell of four extraordinary circumstances that call for divinely inspired disobedience: (a) the situation is unbearable and survival is at stake; (b) the call to disobey promises deliverance; (c) acts of disobedience would relieve oppression; and, (d) the moral imperative **to set yourself and others free.**

In the end, holy obedience and holy disobedience appear as one and the same call-and both are held together by listening to God more than anyone else.

Given the sad shape of authority in this world, it's not a bad practice for everyone to vow before they die. *What a cosmic event it would be if all human kind listened to God more than anyone else.* I imagine the whole world would be assumed into heaven. Or you could just assume that would be heaven.

Realize the ultimate Samson is the Lord Jesus Christ.

God's Sunshine is His beloved Son. He did not fight the Philistines, but he did lay siege to the castle of the unholy trinity. In a three day battle against Satan, Sin, and Death, the wounded Savior emerged from earth's battlefield as Lord of Life. Learn about Him. Believe in Him. Trust him. Join His Green Berea and be His Nazarite. Christ is our Heavenly Samson. And like Samson, He accomplished more in His death, than He did in His life.

In conclusion, Samson was a freedom fighter, a true patriot. By exposing the evil of Philistine rulers, Samson was able to lead the country he loved to independence.

The focal point of hostility, Samson drained Philistine resources and delivered Israel from the oppression of the Sea Peoples. Where are the Samsons? America needs Nazarites today who have pure hearts and who will expose evil in high places. The great wars in history will no longer be fought on the battlefield, but in the courtroom.

Needed are men who have a clothed understanding of the law of God, who can articulate the message of freedom, and who can stand up to men who love ease more than principle. But, those choosing to ride the third rail must expect

rejection and be prepared to be “sold down the river” not only by opponents, but from butter-cup Christians.

Do not fear anything but compromise.

Know God’s plan and devote yourself as a Nazarite to Christ . . . and look for an occasion against the Philistines . . . for they rule over us.

“For the eyes of the LORD move to and fro throughout the earth that He may strongly support those whose heart is completely His” (2 Chron. 16:9).

62. Faith in the Fight

Psalm 11

“If the foundations be destroyed”

“We’re all going to die!” Ever heard that omen?

Maybe you’ve heard the shout of defeatism from an enemy, or even a friend or a spouse; or perhaps you’ve heard those little voices in your own mind predicting defeat.

How should we respond to the thunder of doom and gloom blasting hopelessness from the canons of doubt in our ears?

In Psalm 11, David listened to the panic and negative reports coming from his own military advisors. Late at night he writes this hymn showing us the way to manage fear.

Facing a fierce military foe and surrounded by trembling soldiers, there was one man in the army who expressed trust in God . . . only one man in the fight that had faith in the LORD!

This psalm is *not* a prayer to God, but an **exhortation** to jittery commanders swallowed up by the seeming power of the enemy.

The psalm opens with David’s confidence in God.

Advice from David’s Anxious Advisors

Psalm 11:1 To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David. In the LORD put I my trust: how (dare you) say ye to my soul, Flee as a bird to your mountain?

David and his men are near the killing zone. The enemy positioned itself on the high ground and appeared to have a strategic advantage. Ready to attack, shouts of hateur bellowed from the enemy. The smell of death whiffed through the air. Hearts pounded. Knees knocked. Soldiers puked and breath turned foul. Seeking advice from his generals, David respectfully listened to their bleak reports. Each advised David to retreat--to fly away like a little bird, to live and to fight another day.

David's nostrils flared. His steel eyes of determination starred back at his generals as he countered he advice of his military staff: "in the Lord, put I my trust . . . why do you advise me to flee like a bird to safety on a high mountain"

Fight or flight? They advised flight . . . but . . . this was not the time to flee . . . and David knew it. This was a day to trust God and vigorously wield the sword and spear against the enemies of Israel.

2 For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart.

The reconnaissance reports revealed the enemy was ready to attack. David acknowledged the keen observations of seasoned generals. Every word fortify fear and increased despair. The enemy moved its archers into position . . . arrows were cocked in the bow . . . and a sky full of deadly darts were about to fall on David's soldiers . . . suddenly, secretly, with surprise in hopes of spilling the most Hebrew blood among David's lesser forces ("the upright in heart").

3 If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?

The fear among David's generals was not that their army would take some casualties, but that the whole infantry would be slaughtered.

The term "foundation" (*hashatot*) is translated "Seth" nine times, "buttocks" two times (2 Sam. 10:4; Is. 19:10), and the "base of a mountain" in Aramaic.

The attack was imminent and the nucleus of David's army appeared extremely vulnerable. If the advancing soldiers defeated David's main force, the battle would be lost.

Possibly, the safety and security of the nation was at risk. It was in lieu of this possibility that David's fearful advisors asked, "What can the righteous do?"

DAVID'S ANSWER TO HIS FEARFUL ADVISORS

God Rules

4 The LORD is in his holy temple, the LORD'S throne is in heaven:

David assures his generals that though there is confusion on the battlefield, there is no confusion in heaven. The God above rules over the battle, over the threats they faced this day, over the clinking, clanking iron-sounds of severed-death.

"In his temple" speaks of God's immanence.

"In heaven" communicates God's transcendence.

"His throne" addresses authority and assured the generals of God's royal sovereignty--His control over the battle. *Archers launch their arrows, but God decides wear they land.*

1 Kings 22:34 But a certain man drew his bow at random and struck the king of Israel (Ahab) between the scale armor and the breastplate.

Therefore he said to the driver of his chariot, "Turn around and carry me out of the battle, for I am wounded."

God Sees

" . . . his eyes behold, his eyelids try the children of men."

This is David's way of saying that God knows! God cares! God sees the plight of His army. Though the enemy uses stealth and concealment, God is not surprised by the tactics of the wicked; that is, God is among the troops as a Shield and Sword protecting and empowering them.

God tests

5 The LORD trieth the righteous:

David does not underestimate the enemy forces or the seriousness of the battle. Rather, he adds perspective: God uses these conflicts to test the righteous.

The word "*trieth*" means "to examine" or "prove" or "refine" His people like a metallurgist purifies silver and gold (Jer. 6:27-30; 9:7; Ps. 7:9).

There was dross in David's army and impurities among David's counselors. Conflict reveals the fractures and flaws in the faith of the church militant. He uses these political conflicts to perfect His army. . . as well as to humiliate and defeat the anti-god forces threatening Christian soldiers.

God hates the wicked

" . . . but the wicked and him that loveth violence his soul hateth."

The "wicked" refer to the savage foot soldiers planning their bloody attack on David's defenses. . . the anti-god forces . . . those thieves and murderers that "cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy" (John 10:10).

The “wicked” here are not just sinners, but professional criminals and strategists who plot the demise of the righteous. In our day, the wicked may not be carrying an AK-47 and wearing military uniforms. Enemies may be carrying microphones, standing in front of cameras, and wearing blue suits slanting the news in favor of some humanist, satanic agenda while spitting out hate and slander against good and reasonable men.

Contrary to popular belief that God is nothing but a powder-puff sugar bear engaged in a slobbering love affair with every vile human being. Contrary to what men think, All Lives Don't Matter. Innocent lives matter, but wicked lives do not.

David announces to His men that God hates the wicked. We fight because we are right!! We fight evil . . . and evil men.

God don't like ugly and He ain't crazy about pretty.

Smart men don't pet rattlesnakes, and a holy God doesn't caress the wicked. He does not love the sinner and just hate the sin. He hates the incorrigible. While God forbids petty, fleshly, childish loathing among His people, it is not possible to be a good man without hating evil . . . and hating evil men. God's rancor against the wicked can motivate us to take on a fight we might normally avoid because we know God wants to use us to tear down “strongholds” and humble the proud. God calls us to be salt, not honey-roasted clusters of mango peach passion pecks.

God judges

6 Upon the wicked he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup.

David assures his generals that they were going to be God's artillery to inflict holy justice on the invaders. God is holy and “He will by no means clear the guilty” (Ex. 34:7).

“Snares, fire, brimstone, and a horrible tempest” are metaphors for punishment.

David was familiar with animal traps, and he knew what God did to Sodom and Gomorrah. He was familiar with the sirocco winds that sucked every bit of moisture from Levantine fauna. These forces of nature could turn a promising harvest into a dry, parched land overnight. David knew that God appointed judgment upon the wicked . . . and . . . perhaps God might be pleased to use Israel's army to bathe Israel's enemies in blood.

Likewise, He may use some Christians to put an abortion clinic out of business or oppose some law favoring Sodomites. He might use some mission team to win the lost to Christ or oppose godless legislation. He plans to judge the

wicked; and perhaps, some believers in civil government might have the privilege of being His instrument to oppose injustice and promote justice.

God is virtuous

7 For the righteous LORD loveth righteousness; his countenance doth behold the upright.

David assures his men that God is virtuous and that He sees their plight. YHWH is righteous—that is, faithful to His covenant. David is confident that his army and his generals would see the face of God. He is not referring to some theophany, but that they would experience the sunshine of His favor on the hellish battlefield (Ps. 17:15).

Conclusion

In our pilgrimage on earth, we face many conflicts. At times, we are overwhelmed by the power of the opposition. We may be tempted to flee . . . and in some cases, flight is a righteous response to overwhelming force (Mt. 10:23). But, in other cases, God's wants us to engage the conflict; to stand and fight; and not give an inch.

In the heat of the battle, we may hear many voices calling us to retreat, to "flee," "run," an "quit" in our own soul.

Never surrender without a fight!!

"Therefore take up the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand" (Eph. 6:13).

"When **you have done all** according to the word of God and it seems like nothing is happening, then **stand**. ... **Stand** firm, hold your ground, and defend your territory against the enemy, by submitting to God and hitting the enemy in the name of Jesus," says Peter Rahm.

Somehow, someday, we would do well to imitate David's *confidence* in God and his *courage* on the battlefield. We would do well to rehearse David's orders and instructions to his fellow generals. We would do well to reflect on Paul's words to the Romans: "If God be for us, who can be against us?"

Let us remember the words of General Patton, "You are here because you are real men and all real men like to fight" (June 5, 1944).

Therefore, let us have faith in the fight.

63. Mischief Thru Law

Psalm 94:20

Psalm 94:20 Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief (amal) by law?

Isaiah 10:1 Woe unto them (Congress persons and legislators) that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness (amal) which they have prescribed;

We live in a jural society that prides itself in the rule of law.

But, nothing could be further from the truth. Our nation's leaders do not believe in the rule of law.

Rather, civil rulers presume to know what is best for you and I and, therefore, seek to rule us by law while exempting themselves from their own statutes; e.g., you can't lie to Congress, but Congress can lie to you. We aren't permitted to make money, but Congress can print money with impunity.

Take a look at the following "laws" designed not to punish criminals, but to control people:

IT'S ILLEGAL

- In New York children must be vaccinated or they can't attend pre-school.
- In Boulder Colorado students were warned against dressing up as Cowboys and Indians.
- Long Island banned footballs at recess because football is violent.
- In Detroit you have to obtain a license to walk your dog.
- Rhode Island banned a boy from school because he had a key chain with a miniature toy gun on it.
- In Georgia one high schooled banned hymns and religious songs at graduation.
- In New York City the mayor ordered people to take the stairs instead of the elevator so they could get exercise during the day.
- In Tennessee you can go to jail for unauthorized baptisms.
- A European the court ruled it's illegal to wear a cross to work.

- In Illinois it's against the law to have sex with the dead, but the dead can still vote.
- In Fremont Nebraska it's illegal to bring rosary beads to school because the rosary is a gang symbol.
- In Dearborn Michigan you can't use your garage for anything but housing your car.
- In Los Angeles you can't put fake grass in your front yard because it's not a football field.
- In San Juan Capistrano the city outlawed the wearing of flip-flops in city parks.
- In Coraopolis near Pittsburg you're not allowed to hoot and howler.
- In D.C., the liberal left forced the Washington Redskins to change their name because it was offensive.
- A city in Massachusetts banned Thanksgiving because it is insensitive to indigenous people.
- In Carrizozo New Mexico it illegal for women to go out into the public unshaven.
- In Alaska it's illegal to push a moose out of an air plane.
- In 2020, the New Mexico governor (Michelle Grisham — Moosum Gruesome) put on the mantle of a dictator and ordered churches closed, restaurants to shut down, six foot distancing between people, and mandatory face diapers, and forbid families from gathering to celebrate Thanksgiving, Christmas, and birthdays.
- In 2021, Congress enacted gender-bender rules for the legislature abrogating the use of he or she, men or women, boys or girls, male or female, Mr. or Mrs., husband and wife, etc.
- In 2021, Congress, consistent with its gender-bender program, denounced "Mr. Potato Head," and Dr. Seuss.

IT'S LEGAL

After reading some of these codes and statutes you begin to wonder if insanity is not a prerequisite to hold political office.

As entertaining as these Nanny State “laws” have become, it is not amusing when politicians pass law to kill babies, to shield baby butchers, to protect the production of pornography, to promote same-sex unions, to tax and confiscate the wealth of the American family, and to ban praying in Jesus’ name because it is not in conformity to the new world religion.

War is being declared on Christian law! Think of all the “mischief ” (*amal*) Roe v. Wade (legalized murder)) or Everson v. Board of Education 330 U.S. 1 (1947) (separation of church and state) has caused.

Someone asked a pastor why God created BAR attorneys. His answer was, “So used car salesmen would have someone to look down on.” And, speaking of lawyers, “What is the difference between a vacuum cleaner and an attorney on a motor cycle? The answer is the vacuum cleaner has the dirt bag on the inside. Not to demean lawyers, but their reputation is well deserved. 98% of the lawyers make the other 2 % look bad.

“Can the throne of iniquity have fellowship with thee who doeth mischief through law”? That is, can these wicked legislators and BAR attorneys who have declared war on God’s law order by attacking Christianity and by promoting atheistic humanism through legislation have any claim on the God of the Bible?

The answer, of course, is that it is easier to shove a camel through the eye of a needle than for a politicians and attorneys to enter the Kingdom of God.

Observations about the word “mischief”

Mischief comes from the “*throne of iniquity*” which refers to wicked rulers; i.e., kings, rulers, and politicians committed to moral anarchism by creating their own, man-made legal system.

The term “throne” refers to their power; and,

The term “iniquity” refers to the character of their administration. It is the word “*havah*” in Hebrew and is translated “deadly pestilence” in Psalm 91:3 (ESV and NASB); and, “wickedness” in Psalm 5:19; “plots destruction” in Psalm 52:2 (ESV).

The source of mischief is politicians — plotters of destruction who smash freedom and dismantle human rights through delusions of law, statutes, and codes.

The word “mischief” is the Hebrew word “**amal**.” It primarily refers to “trouble” or “labor” or “toil.” The main idea is that of labor or work.

Legislators pass statutes making you work for them.

Take for example, a Form W-4 — which is the “Employee’s Withholding Allowance Certificate” (2014) with an OMB number 1545-0074. Consider the definition of “employee” from Title 26:

26 U.S.C. Sec. 3401(c) Employee

For purposes of this chapter, the term “employee” includes [is limited to] an officer, employee, or elected official of the United States, a State, or any political subdivision thereof, or the District of Columbia, or any agency or instrumentality of any one or more of the foregoing. The term “employee” also includes an officer of a corporation.

What’s happening? Are you an “officer” or “elected official” of the United States?

These forms are perfectly legal, but when you sign them you are making a sworn statement under penalties of perjury that you are an employee of the United States Government.

In so signing, you consent to be treated as a government employee whom Congress has a right to tax; that is, you’re volunteering to be classified as an employee of the U.S. Government. And, it’s all perfectly legal.

In Deuteronomy 26:7 the word “*amal*” (mischief) is translated “toil” — a reference to the slavery imposed on Israel during their captivity in Egypt. *Amal* is the word used for the trouble caused by Pharaoh when he taxed Israel then conscripted their labor as permanent slaves in the Empire. Pharaoh was the first tax man. The “task masters” are called “tax collectors” by rabbis.

Isn’t this what legislators do — pass laws taxing our income, confiscating our labor, and making us slaves of the Nanny state?

In Judges 10:16 the word “*amal*” (mischief) is translated “misery.” It refers to Israel’s servitude to tyrant governments. The tyrant kings conquered God’s people, taxed them into poverty, and then made them permanent slaves to the State. Failure to pay tribute resulted in capital punishment or declaration of war.

In Exodus 21:22, the word “*amal*” (mischief) refers to an untimely miscarriage resulting in the death of a baby or mother. It is translated “harm” in the ESV.

In Psalm 7:14 the word “*amal*” (mischief) is translated “pregnant with mischief.” It is talking about fascist legislators who birth new statutes to control society and its wealth.

In Isaiah 10:1 the word “*amal*” (mischief) is translated “grievousness.” The context is about godless rulers who passed decrees that oppressed the “needy,” robbed the “poor,” and made spoil of “widows” and the “fatherless.” Before us

are the kings, advisors, and judges of the nation who devised schemes to enslave people, steal from their fellowman through color of law, and foreclose on people's property by clever statutes and contracts.

Sound familiar? Jewish communism is not new.

As an example of legislative mischief consider the creation of the Federal Reserve and Roosevelt's laws introducing paper currency (FRNs) to the nation in the 1930s. Henry Ford once said,

"It is well enough that people of the nation do not understand our banking and monetary system, for if they did, I believe there would be a revolution before tomorrow morning."

In conclusion, the purpose of this message is to make Christians aware of the mischief politicians do through legislation.

First, changing law is evidence a nation has changed its gods.

Since gods are the source of law, reversals in morals means a nation has changed its religion. While Christianity was at one time the foundation of law in this country, atheistic, evolutionary humanism is the new god on the block. "Laws" that permit mothers to murder their babies and statutes that redefine marriage to include same-sex unions is indicative that we are in a moral revolution bowing down to the gods of chaos.

Second, man cannot create law. Laws are discovered, not made.

You cannot find law in American courts, you can only find statutes, procedures, and rules. Legislators do not pass laws; they pass codes or bills. There is no law in the court because there is no Bible in the courtroom. There is only One Lawgiver and that is the Lord Jesus Christ (Isaiah 33:22; James 4:12).

So, let us never forget the legal carnage left behind by legislators and the burdens they place on men by passing more and more "laws." As best we can, we must oppose and resist all legislation designed to rob men of rights, and making us pull oars on the government's galley.

There is good news, however. The word "*amal*" (mischief) is used in Isaiah 53:11, and it is translated "travail" of soul." It refers to our Lord's anguish as our "Sin-bearer."

Isaiah 53:11 He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.

On the cross the Savior toiled alone to pay for our sins on Calvary. Let us never forget the "*amal*" (mischief) of our Lord. Let us remember his labor and the burdens He lifted by his toil at the cross. He came the first time to defeat sin

and death. He will come a second time to thrash his enemies and to crush those who do “*amal*” (mischief) through law (Hebrews 10:13).

Bless the Lord, oh my soul!

64. The Rule of Law

Psalm 19:7

“The law of the Lord is perfect, reviving the soul; the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple;”

If there is no God, there is no source of absolute law other than death and taxes.

Show me your law, and I will show you your gods (John Rushdooney).

Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge”
(Jesus, Lk. 11:52)

“How strangely will the Tools of a Tyrant pervert the plain Meaning of Words!” (Samuel Adams)

A scientist will attempt to make the impossible possible, while a politician will almost always make the possible impossible. Lawyers seem to make it impossible to do anything without their assistance.

“Men do not make laws. They do but discover them. Laws must be justified by something more than the will of the majority. They must rest on the eternal foundation of righteousness. That state is most fortunate in its form of government which has the aptest instruments for the discovery of law,” Calvin Coolidge, to the Massachusetts State Senate, January 7, 1914.

The key question throughout this work is this: What if the enemy of the Christian is not his neighbor down the street, but the State turned traitor against the Law of God and his own Constitution? In such a political climate, the gladiator Christian who exercises his unalienable rights will sooner or later find himself in conflict with some government statute. Christians, therefore, need to know how to go on the offensive when they are attacked by the Goliath of Government for non-criminal acts. The greater problem in society is not individuals that break the law, but governments that violate their own law.

“Crime is contagious. If the government becomes a lawbreaker, it breeds contempt for law; it invites every man to become a law unto himself; it

invites anarchy.” Olmstead v. United States, 227 U.S. 438.

There is a difference between the *rule of law* and the *rule by law*. The former refers to legitimate law that regulates society—law that even the government must obey. **Rule by law** refers to the raw power of government to advance its control over every aspect of society. *When the government practices rule by law and exempts itself from obedience to its own laws, citizens are no longer secure in law.*

WHAT IS LAW?

Jus est ars boni et aequi. Law is the science of what is good and evil.

To study law is to study the character of God. Law is nothing more than applied theology whether that theology be right or wrong.

Probably the most ridiculous phrase ever uttered is that “you have to have a license to practice law.” It is even more insane when one realizes the definition of license is “permission to do that which is otherwise illegal.” Since when did practicing the law become illegal so that one needs to apply for a license to practice law? The very nature of the Biblical admonitions to obey God’s law contains within it, the unalienable right of man to practice law. From the time we get up in the morning to drive through morning traffic, to the time we drive home during rush hour, we are practicing law. Every stop sign is an undisputable reminder that the citizen must practice law. Without the practice of law, society would drift into chaos. Thus, the Biblical word for cultural chaos is “anomia,” meaning “without law.” But, what is law?

Most people’s view of “the law” is whatever a “law enforcement officer” says it is—yet, none of them are lawyers nor are they competent to testify in court about “the law.” Policemen operate under a hierarchy and simply puppet what they are told.

The study of law can be mind-boggling. With common law, constitutional law, statutory law, criminal law, civil law, corporate law, equity law, commercial law, admiralty law and numerous jurisdictions, it is difficult to know what responsibilities belong to a citizen. To say a person must obey the law is over broad and rather naïve and simplistic.

Pharaoh issued an executive order that the midwives were to execute post-birth abortions against Jewish babies (Ex. 1). Nebuchadnezzar passed a law that all had to honor his image and idolatrous command (Dan. 3). Persia passed a law that nobody could pray to the true God but only the head of State, King Darius (Dan. 6). The Sanhedrin ordered the disciples to stop preaching in Jesus name (Acts 5). Haman charged the Jews with obeying laws contrary to Persia and obtained an executive order to have them charged and executed (Esth. 3). Micah

rebuked his nation for following the laws of Omri (Mic. 6:16). Amaziah, Secretary of Religion under Jeroboam, banned Bible preaching in the King's chapel (Amos 7:13). In all of those jurisdictions, God's people had **NO DUTY** to obey those "laws."

WHAT IS LAW AND WHAT LAWS DO CHRISTIANS HAVE A DUTY TO FOLLOW?

What is usually stated as "law" by policemen or bureaucrats is usually nothing more than unwritten policy by some State agency. The Constitution mentions the "supreme law" of the land, and if there is a supreme law, then there must be something less than law. Codes, statutes, and ordinances apply to some status of persons, but do not rise to the level of being called "law." Even the Constitution which calls itself the "supreme law of the land," is hardly on par with Biblical law.

"It is a well established state principle of law that all federal legislation applies only within the territorial jurisdiction of the United States unless a contrary intent appears" (Foley Brothers, Inc. v. Filardo)

"Men do not make laws, they discover them," declared Calvin Coolidge.

There is only one Lawgiver and one law says James (Jam. 4:12). Criminal laws are reflections of the Ten Commandments which is true law; that is, the will of God over that which He creates. Civil laws are not laws at all but merely codes and ordinances of men that reflect the will of a legislature over that which it creates, namely, corporations and artificial entities. All individuals are required to keep the Ten Commandments, but no man is required to submit to civil laws/codes/ordinances of men unless he contracts to do so.

Martin Luther King said,

"We should never forget that everything Adolph Hitler did in Germany was 'legal' and everything the Hungarian freedom fighters did in Hungary was 'illegal.'" [\[i\]](#)

Blackstone:

"This will of his Maker is called the law of nature. For as God, when He created matter, and endued it with a principle of mobility, established certain rules for the perpetual direction of that motion; so, when he created man, and endued him with free will to conduct himself in all parts of life, He laid down certain immutable laws of human nature, whereby that free will is in some degree regulated and restrained, and gave him also the faculty of reason to discover the purport of those laws. . . . Upon these two foundations, the law of nature and the law of revelation, depend all human laws" [\[ii\]](#)

Bible:

The key word for “law” is “Torah.” The first usage of the term “*torah*” is found in Exodus 12:49- “*One law (torah) shall be to him that is home born, and unto the stranger that sojourneth among you.*” Torah means “instruction.” Later, the first five books of Moses became know as “the Torah.” See how the law of God is a reflection of His character:

Psalm 119:137 Righteous art thou, O LORD, and upright are thy judgments.

Psalm 119:142 Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth.

Psalm 119:144 The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting: give me understanding, and I shall live.

The Ten Commandments are a reflection of the character of God. Because God is righteous, His law is the perfect, objective standard of righteousness. Because God is eternal, His law is absolute and unchangeable. Because God lays a claim on all men by virtue of His creative order, His law is not only for Christians, but for all men and their institutions.

Mine:

Law is a universal fixed principle so associated with the character of God that it is binding upon all men that if so violated would injure the prerogatives of God or the rights of other men. The collective conscience of legislature known as “codes,” “ordinances,” and “statutes” are “laws of men” which apply toward a specific class of people, but in reality do not rise to the level of Law. For “there is one lawgiver” (James 4:12).

Blackstone makes an interesting distinction between *compact* or *agreement* and *law*. A compact proceeds *from us*; a law is directed *to us*. The language of a covenant is “I will.” The language of law is “you shall” or “you shall not.”

Perhaps the best way to understand law is to look at three words: **Agreement** and **Trespass** and **Remedy**.

All law is based on an understanding of these two words. Every five year old after a couple of sessions on the playground understands this intrinsically. Every worker in America that sweats out his duty understands these two words. Every manager trying to hold on to his job is acutely aware of these principles.

Agreement according to Black’s Law Dictionary, 6th Edition is

“a meeting of the minds; a coming together in opinion or determination; the coming together in accord of two minds on a given position. In law, a

concord of understanding and intention between two or more relative rights and duties, of certain past or future facts or performances. The consent of two or more persons concurring respecting the transmission of some property, right, or benefits, with the view of contracting an obligation."

Agreement is a term distinguished from "contract" in that a contract requires the demonstration of mutual exchange or consideration. All contracts represent agreements, but all agreements are not necessarily contracts.

If Sam asks Bob to loan him his wire cutters so he can put in a fence and Jim agrees if Sam loans Bob his circular saw for a roofing project such an agreement is a contract. The bargain is use/possession of property in exchange for the same. If, on the other hand, Bob merely asks to borrow Sam's circular saw for a day to fix his own roof there is no contract. Sam, besides the benefits of a neighborly relationship with Bob gets nothing of market value in return for the displacement of his circular saw for a day. The agreement is unenforceable in a court because it lacks consideration. However, Bob still has constructive title to Sam's property for the day because Sam agreed to transfer possession. Possession is nine tenths of the law. While Bob is using the circular saw the law is on his side because he has possession, but the facts are not.

Now let us change the scenario. Bob doesn't really know Sam well but walks by Sam's driveway and sees a circular saw on the floor. Bob walks onto the driveway and into the garage, takes the circular saw home with him and uses it for the day to fix his roof. He returns the next day with the circular saw and there stands a disturbed Sam. Bob has committed a *trespass*.

Trespass:

"An unlawful interference with one's person, property, or rights. At common law, trespass was a form of action brought to recover damages for an injury to one's person or property or relationship with another" (Black's Law Dictionary, 6th Edition).

If Bob takes Sam's circular saw without asking, it is a trespass. If Sam kidnaps Bob and locks him in his garage, it is a trespass.

A violation of law requires some quantifiable infraction or breach of right. (Black's Law Dictionary, 6th Edition).

The term "violation" refers to an "injury; infringement; breach of right duty or law; ravishment; seduction." Therefore, a trespass and a violation refer to a right that is subject to infringement. But, if a person waives his right, there is no infringement.

Therefore, any claim of a breach of contract must prove injury to person or property. Many a case has been dismissed for want of injury or “failure to state a claim upon which relief can be granted.” This is particularly relevant to claims against the state because the state is not a person that has sensibility. The state is a fiction, an idea, a corporate “person.” The state has no rights. It can’t testify. It can’t speak. It can suffer no harm. However, the dastardly reality is that the state presumes it has control over you, your property, and your money; that is, that it has title to Sam and Bob.

Thus, we come to the third word that is key in understanding law and that is the word “**remedy.**” Remedy is the recourse man has when a contract has been violated. Remedy is three fold: administrative remedy and judicial remedy and war. The goal is to avoid war. Remedy involves all the maxims of law, procedure, court rules, etc. that are involved in pleading a case. And, it is too extensive to discuss here. The Bill of Rights is of this sort and prescribes a remedy for ultra vires acts of the state.

Since this scenario is of such absolute anathema to the founding principles on which this nation was conceived, such a conclusion cannot comport with the law. Thus, when trying to wrap your mind around law, it is necessary to look at the law of nature.

Natural Law v. Positive Law

When the Founders declared independence from England, they did so based on the “Laws of Nature and Nature’s God’”

The **law of nature** is the opposite of “**positive law.**”

The law of nature is the Law of God which is composed of fixed physical principles and the revelation of absolute law. Positive law is the will of man delivered to subjugated people or people under contract. The laws of nature is composed of two parts: (1) the forces and rules set in motion by God at the time of His creation, and (2) the revelation of His will as iterated in the Word of God (Blackstone). The former governs man in relationship to his environment; the later regulates men in relation to one another and the property they manage.

Bouvier’s Dictionary:

The law of nature is that which God, the sovereign of the universe, has prescribed to all men, not by any formal promulgation, but by the internal dictate of reason alone.

If you pull a coin from your pocket and drop it, it will fall to the ground. Likewise, if you drop your keys, they will hit the floor at 32 feet per second. This is the law of gravity and no legislative body can change it. The law of

gravity is a universal fixed principle that is “laid down, ordained, or established.”

Thus, in relationship to human anatomy, a virus or cold is a **trespass**. A thorn in the finger is a disagreement, a biological trespass. In certain instances, laying hands on this body is a trespass, *a res ipsa loquitur*, “the thing speaks for itself.” However, nature also has **agreements**. Hydrogen and oxygen link up to form water. Flame unites with oxygen, heat, and carbon to produce fire. Moss on a rock, tree roots in the soil, and birds in a bush all demonstrate a harmony of agreement.

Man, on the other hand, has the capacity for **imagination**; that is, man can contemplate a reality not found in nature. Automobiles and airplanes don’t grow on trees. They are constructions of man that enhance man’s quality of life.

However, man can imagine living outside the law of God and the laws of nature. He can push the envelope and justify a trespass of the Ten Commandments or the laws of nature. **But MAN CANNOT CHANGE THE LAW**. It is this fact that makes man-made laws, statutes, and codes so maddening.

The study of law is man’s imagination at work on how to by-pass law by changing the definition of words; by enslaving and controlling men; by stealing wealth under color of law. And, this too is maddening. Thus, much of legislation is nothing more than **STATE SPONSORED TRESPASS**. Legislators pay judges and “law enforcement officers” to enforced their imaginations through coercion and intimidation even though their codes and statutes violate the law of God and natural law. And, this is also the maddening thing about the practice of law.

Probably, the greatest example of mad-man lawyering is when Franklyn D. Roosevelt ordered U.S. citizens in 1933 to turn in their gold coins and persuaded them to accept worthless FRNs to discharge debt. Imagine the colossal fraud, violations of common law, and coercion used to induce American sheeple to turn in their gold for paper. Roosevelt initiated a **STATE SPONSORED TRESPASS** through H.J.R. 192.

We are a jural society that believes in the “Rule of Law.”

In America, all law must be written. **If is not written, it is not law**. But, not everything that is written is law.

“A joint resolution of the legislature is not law.”

“A resolution of the house of representatives is not a law.”[iii] IRS publications are not law.[iv]

A case decision by a court is not law.

Public policy is not law.

Public beliefs, axioms, and trite sayings are not law. Bills passed by Congress in the geographical "United States" are not laws that apply to Sam Citizen in the private sector.[v]

Just as the laws of Canada do not apply to American Citizens, neither do the laws of the United States apply to American Citizens.

65. Theonomy

Psalm 78:5 For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children:

Psalm 78:10 They did not keep God's covenant, but refused to walk according to his law.

Q: If God's law is not the standard for civil rulers, what is?

If God's law is not the model for government, what is?

All that is fundamentally wrong with our society can be traced back to the neglect of God's law and rebellion against God's law-order.

If men are not governed by God's law, then they will be ruled by the lawlessness of others.

There is no greater heresy among Protestants (or nations for that matter) than the belief they are at liberty to choose their own law.

God's Law is not only good for Christians; it is good for all men and all of man's institutions.

Not only must every Christian obey God's Law, so must every lawyer, banker, judge, and politician! In modern times, believers may embrace God's law privately, but often deny its applicability publically; that is, to politicians and government officials.

Believers have retreated into a shell of private piety instead of wielding the Sword of the Word against opponents in the amphitheater of political contests. If God's law is not the standard for political conduct, what is? Are men who are a law unto themselves qualified to rule others? Isn't his word sufficient?

For this reason Christians should advance the principles of Theonomy. Theonomy, meaning “God’s Law,” insists on the following applications of God’s Law publically:

- That the Bible is the foundation of law, and sufficient as the guide for public policy; that the God of the Bible is the Source of law.
- That the Ten Commandments and explanatory case law is the standard of right and wrong; and, his law should be applied to the family, religion, and politics—socially, economically, and judicially.
- That not only are individuals accountable to God’s law, so are civil rulers. The government to which the Christian is to submit is one where men acknowledge the Sovereignty of Christ and his law over them.
- That God’s Word is the standard of legislation. If God’s Law-word is not the standard of right and wrong, what is? Men are better civil servants when they know God’s law and serve with a clear conscience. Theonomists do not want a “voice at the table,” or “equal time.” They want godless promoters of pornography, abortion, and Sodomy to be rounded up and punished according to God’s Word. The whole idea that Christians must tolerate Sodomites and transvestites in the work place is offensive to the Christian faith. Civil law must have some standard to judge behavior. That standard will either be the sure Word of God or the capricious, fickle, frivolous, impulsive, arbitrary, derelict opinions of flawed humanistic, idealistic politicians.
- That law and government must be limited. While the proper application of law can cleanse society of evildoers, law cannot regenerate man or society. Regeneration is reserved for religion . . . and only the Christian gospel can transform man. More laws mean less freedom and more bondage. Therefore, Theonomists reject the idea that we need more and more laws to create a better society.
- That Christians should prefer Christian men as their civil servants. John Jay said, “Providence has given to our people the choice of their rulers, and it is the duty, as well as the privilege and interest, of our Christian nation to select and prefer Christians for their rulers.”
- That we choose judges and rulers in light of the standards of God’s Word — men who fear God, men of truth, and men hating covetousness (Exodus 18:21). In America, we want judges who have taken an oath to make decisions agreeable to the Constitution
- That jail sentences and the commercial nature of the prison penal-systems, for-profit corporations, must be replaced with a Biblical system

of justice: Biblical punishments, restitution to victims, corporal punishment, and capital punishment.

- That the Department of Education be dismantled, taken away from the federal government, and returned to the control of parents in local communities. The family and the church must bear the responsibility for training children.
- That government should restrain itself to Biblical purposes — the protection of human rights, the punishment of evildoers, and the promotion of good (1 Peter 2:14). Welfare programs must shift away from the government and return to the church and to the private sector where it belongs. Taxes on personal income must be eliminated. The state must stay within its limited purpose.
- That the State return to a Biblical standard of money, eliminate fraud in government, and refuse to steal from citizens in the name of taxation under color of law.
- That freedom of speech be properly defined in order to eliminate pornography as a “protected right.” The cursing God, blasphemy against God’s law-source, slander, and irresponsible speech must receive appropriate sanctions.

All who are content with a humanistic law system and do not strive to replace it with Biblical law are guilty of idolatry. Gods-religion are the source of law. The tell-tale sign that a nation has changed its gods is to look at its laws. Modern politicians have forsaken the covenant of God, and they are asking believers to serve other gods. They are thus idolaters, and are, in our generation, when our world is idolatrous and our states also, to be objects of missionary activity. They must be called out of their idolatry into the service of the living God. (R. J. Rushdoony, Law and Society: Volume II of the Institutes of Biblical Law; Vallecito, CA: Ross House Books, 1982, pp. 468).

In conclusion, the believer is set free from legalism, but he is not set free from a duty to obey Christ. The challenge of Law is one of continuity v. discontinuity. This problem can be solved when we realize that God is absolute and because His moral law is a reflection of His character, His moral law is absolute and binding on all men and their institutions.

66. Hope for Godly Causes

Psalm 76:10

Everything is going wrong, just right!

Hebrews 6:11 And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

Romans 4:18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

Hebrews 6:19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within the veil;

Romans 15:13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

Everyone needs hope, and everyone has hope of some kind . . . even though it be a false hope that shall perish (Job 8:13; 27:8). But, only Christians have true hope that will eventually be realized.

If there was ever a time we needed hope, it is in our time and our age. Maniacs rule the nations. Christianity is criticized, condemned, and castigated. Slanderers prevail in political battles. The gospel is assaulted, assailed, and attacked. Biblical morals are doubted, despised, and denounced. Hollyweird creates stars out of Sodomites, lesbians, and transvestites. History is being revised, rewritten, and reshaped into the way the new world order wants us to think about the past.

The Confederate Battle Flag, memorials of noble heroes, and Southern causes are being torn down, torn up, and torched. Villains are made heroes, and real heroes like Stonewall Jackson, Robert E. Lee, and President Jefferson Davis are vilified.

The LGBTQueer community and butch feminists are getting their way. The Rothschild banking elite control the nations of Western Civilization. Norway, Sweden, Germany, and Britain are crushed under the megaphone of proud, whiny feminists who have murdered more innocent children than Stalin. Rejection of everything Christian monopolizes the media. Character, common sense, and Christian virtue are despised, denounced, and demonized.

Today, the wicked rule! The Marxist, the Zionists, the Progressives, the Fascists, the liberals, and the twisted transvestites seem to be enjoying a time of unprecedented prestige and power. They have a megaphone in the media and financial backing by the money barons.

If you want to be depressed, discouraged, and downhearted, you don't have to look long or far. Just read the news, and your hope will be beat with an ugly stick.

But, all hope is not lost, and the wicked will not always triumph. Truth is not always on the scaffold while lies sit upon the throne. God is still sovereign. He reigns in the heavens though earthly princes prat around in palaces. He rules the nations.

"The wrath of man will praise Thee, and the remainder of wrath shall he restrain," (Psalm 76:10).

How much wickedness do we have to endure? The answer is " \Just enough!"

Everything is going wrong, just right (Pastor John Weaver)

Let's look at few examples:

ABRAHAM

It appeared that all hope was lost for having a son. Abraham was 100 years old; and, Sarah was 90 years old. The age of child bearing for both had passed. The energies of youth faded day-by-day under the weight of time. But, *everything was going wrong just right*. Abraham believed against hope that God was able to do what He promised even though his body was failing him, and the LORD infused the chosen couple with life-producing power. Abraham became the father of Isaac, Jacob, David, and then the Lord Jesus Christ.

AHAB

Ahab, the ugly toad that sat on the throne of Israel, and his hissing wife Jezebel, the painted, slithering viper from Phoenicia, ruled over the northern ten tribes. They initiated a violent pogrom against God's prophets and replaced them with profane, statist priests.

In 1 Kings 22, there was only one man left in Israel who was a true prophet of the Lord (Micaiah), and King Ahab hated him (22:8).

Earlier, Ahab had slandered Naboth, murdered the man, and then seized his vineyard for his own pleasure (1 Kings 21). Three years passed and Ahab's throne seemed secure. *But, everything was going wrong, just right*.

Ahab went to war against the Syrians to regain Ramoth-gilead. It should have been an easy victory. The king even disguised himself in battle. But, a random arrow from an unknown archer waffled aimlessly through the air to land perfectly between the seam of Ahab's armor piercing his vitals. He bled out as Elijah predicted with dogs licking the blood dripping from his chariot hearse. The wicked will not always triumph nor will the wayward always win.

HEZEKIAH

Hezekiah, the godly king of Judah, and little Jerusalem faced the mightiest army on earth – a powerful Assyrian military strike force that had smashed Syria, Phoenicia, Egypt and all the nations of the Levant (Isaiah 37-39). Who could overcome the bloody spears of the Assyrians? Jerusalem seemed destined to experiencing the same crushing force that had tumbled the nations around them. The reports of the siege and the hopelessness that shrouds a doomed people gripped hearts in the capital city. Hezekiah, however, ordered the people to be silent. *Everything was going wrong, just right.*

The next morning on the first day of battle, Israel's watchmen observed no activity in the camp of the Assyrians. After sending out a reconnaissance team to investigate the abnormality, the city filled with refugees discovered 186,000 dead Assyrian soldiers. God's death angel descended at night and slaughtered the entire army leaving Israel to the spoils of war. Who could have imagined such a change in political circumstances? God acted and the wicked were crushed under his power in the nick of time. The wicked will not always triumph nor will the wayward always win.

Likewise, we live in a day when liberals laugh and the righteous grieve. *But, everything is going wrong, just right.* In His time. God will expose the corruption, smash these citadels of depravity, and exalt righteousness in the nation.

When you feel like things are falling apart, they may be falling into place.

CURRENT EXAMPLES

In 2017, we saw the fall of Harvey Weinstein, Jeff Tambor, Louis C.K., Andrew Kreisberg, and dozens more in Hollywood; and, Charlie Rose (CBS), Matt Laurer (NBC), Brett Ratner (), Hamilton Fish (New Republic), Glenn Thrush (NYT), and more in the media; and, Senator Al Franken (MN), Jeff Hoover (KY), Tim Murphy (PA), Cliff Hite (OH), John Conyers (MI), and many others in politics have been forced to resign over sexual misconduct. This is a miracle! Who has ever heard of the swamp being drained before? God is making the wrath of man (accusations and firings) to praise Him! Everything is going wrong just right!

The "fake news" media led by the Communist News Network (CNN) stunned the world with their merciless, relentless criticism of Donald and Melania Trump making sure they did not enjoy one minute in the White House. While two-thirds of Americans felt exhausted by temper tantrums of journalists and "F-bomb" dropping celebrities, Dan Gainor of Fox News brought this perspective, "Media give Trump the gift of bad journalism that makes him look good." Instead of crushing the couple, they have only grown in popularity. Every conservative wakes up thankful Mrs. H didn't get elected.

Everyone needs hope and has hope, but let's make sure our hope is in our Heavenly Father and not in earthly fantasies.

When others see the dusk, look for the dawn.

If you are at the end of hope, look to Christ, the Author and Finisher of the Faith. You will never come to the end of hope as long as you seek Him who has "neither beginning of days nor end of life" (Hebrews 7:3).

Change the D to an H and your Disappointments can become His appointments.

Nationally, however, we are in a period of great distress. The uncertainty of the unknown unsettles the hand, but the certainty of Him Who made Himself known steadies the man.

There is hope for America and godly principles, but that hope is in Christ.

Let us remember that Christ is the light of the world.

We can curse the darkness or we can light a candle of Christian hope. Let us never retract, never retreat, never retire from the battle for truth and justice. The liberal, politically-correct insanity promoted by the media and dominating politics will not always prevail.

Godly principles do not die and they do not have funerals.

Righteousness cannot fit into a casket, never rides in a hearse, and pall bearers can't carry it to the grave. Christ lives! King Jesus rules! He reigns!

Righteousness will be exalted in His time for His glory. In Him hope never ends, because In Him is endless hope.

67. An Artillery Psalm

Psalm 146

Do ever talk to yourself? What do you talk about?

This is one of the Hallelujah Psalms that records the self-talk of a godly man.

There are three commands in this psalm. In verse one the psalmist orders his own soul to *hallelu-jah* twice. The conclusion of the psalm contains the same command.

Does your self-talk include commands to your own soul to praise God?

This psalm is also called an "artillery" psalm because preachers fired their blazing cannons of exhortation from the pulpit before elections at carnal minds warning their parishioners not to trust political figures.

Voters would do well to reflect on the election season psalm.

In verse 3, we have a Jussive verb enjoining God's people to trust God and not to trust princes (*nadiyb*) -- the ruling class. This is the Spirit's way of telling us, *not to put your trust in politicians* but, put our trust in the LORD.

1 Praise ye the LORD. Praise the LORD, O my soul.

Every psalm tells the story of the author's spiritual quest. This psalmist begins his chorus with the conclusion of His investigation. With renewed conviction, he engraves his purpose in Holy Writ: ***Hallelu-jah!!***

Praise is evidence of spiritual fitness-- visible, tangible, empirical proof of a healthy heart. What health is to the body, praise is to the soul.

A sick soul can't praise God, and a wicked soul won't praise God. An obsessive, impulsive mind with *a heart two-sizes to small* is wrapped up with the ups and downs and the ins and outs of politics.

Possibly, the fire in the hearth of the psalmist's heart had cooled to the point where the author needed to incite the flames of wonder so he could fully adore his Creator. People drowning in the sea of politics have a way of splashing cold water on fires of devotion to Christ. Twice the psalmist lifts his head above the surf and foam of politics to summon his own soul to praise HaShem (LORD).

The issue isn't whether the Lord is worthy of praise, but whether men can escape their idolatrous fixation on politics on earth to explore the wonders of the Creator in Heaven. Because we live in a humanistic culture where man is fascinated with the accomplishments of man, worship takes holy energy. It must be fueled by a desire to know God and reflection on His revelation.

He did not praise his own soul. He was not concerned about self-esteem, but Christ-esteem.

2 While I live will I praise the LORD: I will sing praises unto my God while I have any being.

I will not live forever, but while I live on this earth, I will focus on the beauties of Another. Charged with the duty to love the Lord with all my heart and soul, let my flame in this holy choir glow to the ends of the earth.

If ever a redeemed man had a duty to sing His praises, it is me. Redeemed by the blood of the Lamb . . . Praise the LORD, Oh my soul. Sing, soul, sing!

Rising stars in government compete for our affections, but the psalmist would have none of it. We can't be too daring in our devotion to our Redeemer. This saint shares the reasons why.

SIX REASONS TO TRUST GOD AND NOT THE GOVERNMENT

One: Princes cannot help you.

3 Put not your trust in princes, nor in the son of man, in whom there is no help.

The great error among us is to trust man below instead of God above; to depend on fickle princes on this earth instead of the faithful Creator in heaven. The Spirit commands us not to put our trust in candidates, political parties, legislatures, utopian agendas, and popular trends.

To be disappointed with politicians is to have trusted them. Why should we look to flawed, frail, fickle men lusting for power to help us with our personal problems? Corruptocrats are often the most psychotic imbalanced, spiritually-sick people on the planet.

Two: Princes are flawed and perish like every man.

4 His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish.

No matter how high a prince rises in government, he ends up six feet under. Only a fool trusts a dying man.

"Dead men tell no tales."

When the wicked die, their dreams die with them. But, those who invest praise to HaShem obtain stock in the kingdom of God.

When a politician is in office, citizens consider him an expert on everything, and after he leaves office he returns to the status of an ignoramus. He begins his political career with lofty dreams, and ends his career with failed policies and nightmares for all. He promises his constituents heaven in the cosmos, but creates hell on earth.

These envied creatures are made of dust and return to dust. Why build on the ground of men who will end up under the ground? Their dreams will fall like drops of rain because they are built upon earthly hopes.

The Christian hope, on the other hand, is established on Christ risen from the grave sitting at the right hand of the Father in heaven. Trust the Prince of the kings of earth and not pauper princes proudly parading around like pied-pipers with magical flutes and alluring powers.

Three: The God of Jacob (grace) is the true Source of happiness.

5 Happy is he that hath the God of Jacob for his help, whose hope is in the LORD his God: 6 Which made heaven, and earth, the sea, and all that therein is: which keepeth truth for ever:

True happiness lies in an understanding of law and grace. The LORD was pleased to declare Himself as the God of Jacob because no one loved Jacob but God Himself. This title of grace used 25 times informs us that when man fails us, there is a God in Heaven who helps broken men. He that made the cosmos can move heaven and earth to help us. He who preserves all can preserve us. He who protects the poor can protect us from rich politicians. He that saved Israel from the wrath of Pharaoh can save us from the ambitions of princes. He who prepared a path to save His people at the Red Sea can save us from pet projects planned by bad-hat bureaucrats.

The ground of this hope is that the God of Jacob will never permit His promises to pass away. He is the One who keeps truth forever; that is, He is true to His character, true to His promises, true to His Word, and true to His people. He is the God Who is (YHWH); and because He is, He is the God who can be trusted now and forever.

Like the Sun that appears from behind the clouds, truth cannot hide forever. Like the Sun sends its golden rays to the earth for the benefit of all, God's truth blesses all men.

Four: The Lord helps the oppressed.

7 Which executeth judgment for the oppressed: which giveth food to the hungry. The LORD looseth the prisoners: 8 The LORD openeth the eyes of the blind: the LORD raiseth them that are bowed down: the LORD loveth the righteous: The LORD preserveth the strangers; he relieveth the fatherless and widow:

Feel oppressed by the difficulties of life . . . by political ineptitude? There is help for you.

The LORD surpasses all because He does not regard the rank and status of men. He loves His creatures unmindful of their wealth and power. He is the Champion of the poor and powerless. Politicians rob, oppress, and enslave. His triple blessings are food, justice, and liberty.

Oscar Ameringer said,

“politics is the gentle art of getting votes from the poor and campaign funds from the rich, by promising to protect each from the other.”

When criminal politicians hide behind the majority, the God of Jacob acts in history to deliver the helpless from their ambitions. Nine types of people are beneficiaries of His love: the oppressed, the hungry, prisoners, the blind, the bowed down, the righteous, aliens / strangers, the fatherless, and the widows.

Eight redemptive acts are highlighted: *executeth judgment, giveth food, looseth, openeth, raiseth, loveth, preserveth, and relieveth*. In using these terms we see justice, provision, freedom, enlightenment, restoration, grace, protection, and relief.

Five: The Lord frustrates the plans of criminals.

9 . . . but the way of the wicked he turneth upside down.

The Hebrew term for "wicked" (*rasha-im*) refers to criminals. The world of troubles God has planned for these lawbreakers is compressed into the Hebrew word *avath*, a Piel imperfect (intense action), which can be translated "flip upside down," "turn inside out," or "toss around in circles."

This is God's way of informing us that behind the scenes of history, He is at work frustrating the schemes of corrupt politicians setting up roadblocks and throwing sand in their gears. For this reason ambitious politicians are generally angry, frustrated folks because the opposing party defies their agenda, and because of a lack of money to achieve their ambitions to control the world. Frustrated party officials are evidence God is at work turning the way of the wicked upside down.

We tend to worry about politics when we lose sight of God's work of frustrating the evil schemes of politicians. "Fret not thyself because of evil doers . . . for they shall be cut down like grass" (Psalm 37:1-2).

Believest thou this, my soul?

Six: The Lord reigns continually.

10 The LORD shall reign forever, even thy God, O Zion, unto all generations. Praise ye the LORD.

Mark Twain said,

"Politicians and diapers must be changed often, and for the same reason."

In contrast to the *topsi turvy* world of politics is the reign of the Lord Christ.

That the Lord reigns is the gospel of the Old Testament! Unlike politicians that you can never talk to or get an appointment to see, God's Court is always in session. This King never sleeps. His office is open 24/7.

The great joy of Christians is that God's rule entered history in and through the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ to defeat man's great enemies: Satan, sin, and death. He reigns, not Satan; He rules, not man. He is moving history towards its ultimate destiny, not princes, potentates, and politicians.

The great prayer of Christians is, "Thy kingdom come," may your will be done now, on earth. May men recognize your kingdom rule and submit to it now.

The great message of this psalm is to trust God and not princes; to praise Him and not politicians.

May we be like the psalmist with self-talk that orders our own soul to praise the Lord. We should **not** to be so focused on the turbulent world of politics. Our spiritual health depends on it.

68. Why You Should Not Trust Politicians

Jeremiah 17:9

Ever been disappointed with politicians?

Ivern Ball observed that "A politician is a person who can make waves and then make you think he's the only one who can save the ship.

Seeing the degradation of society, Jeremiah warned his generation to stop putting their trust in political figures:

Jeremiah 17:5 Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man (adam = mankind or anthropos), and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.

He explains why men should not put their trust in politicians and ranking members of society.

Departing from the LORD corrupts a corruptible heart.

Jeremiah 17:9 The heart is deceitful (aqob) above all things, and desperately wicked (anash): who can know it?

He is talking about the hearts of leaders and rulers. Politicians talk honey but practice garlic; promise corn but deliver husks. Simply put: these people are not trustworthy because sin warps everything they do.

The Hebrew word "**deceitful**" (*aqob*) is translated:

- "shalt bruise his heel" in Genesis 3:15
- the bird trap shall "take him by the heel" in Job 18:9.
- "heels made bare" in Jeremiah 13:22

-“supplant” in Jeremiah 9:4

-“polluted” in Hosea 6:8

The Hebrew word “**desperately wicked**” (*anash*) is translated:

-“sick” unto death in 2 Samuel 12:15

-“incurable” in Job 34:6

-“desperate sorrow” or “mortal pain” in Isaiah 17:11

-“woeful” in Jeremiah 17:16

The Lord Jesus Christ explains:

Matthew 15:19-20 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: Matthew 15:20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands defileth not a man.

Young translates Jeremiah 17:9 this way:

“Crooked is the heart above all things, And it is incurable — who doth know it?”

The question “*who doth know it*” is not asked because Jeremiah didn’t know the answer, but for us . . . that we might discern sin’s mark on our own twisted hearts and the gnarled-depravity driving the hearts and minds of the politicians we elect into office.

Christians know intellectually that men are sinners, “*For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,*” but seem woefully blind to this fact come election time.

So powerful is sin in the human heart Jeremiah declared, “The sin of Judah is **written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond**: it is graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars;” (17:1).

Why would people trust in lawbreakers instead of the Lawgiver? But, they did. Jeremiah’s generation put their trust in the flawed kings, false prophets, and fake news.

Maybe the bigger question is why do we trust lawyers, bureaucrats, representatives, judges, and cops?

Our society encourages us to trust politicians by voting them into office. These shysters convince us their opponent is unfit to be in officer, and then prove to us with indisputable evidence they are unfit for office. These contestants break our hearts because they have deceitful motives empowering them to be

easily bought, bribed, and blackmailed. The more they drift away from truth, the further our country sails into a sea of lies.

In a sermon at Westminster Abbey, London, on March 20, 1925, Frederick Lewis Donaldson noted the “The Seven Social Sins” that crop up in every generation:

- Wealth without work.
- Pleasure without conscience.
- Knowledge without character.
- Commerce without morality.
- Science without humanity.
- Worship without sacrifice.
- Politics without principle.

Mark Twain adopted laughter to expose corruption among politicians:

“Reader, suppose you were an idiot. And suppose you were a member of Congress. But I repeat myself.”

Earnest Benn put it this way: “Politics is the art of looking for trouble, finding it whether it exists or not, diagnosing it incorrectly, and applying the wrong remedy.”

But it is not hopeless. The prophet provides a remedy by exhorting his people to start putting their trust in the Lord and to obey him.

Jeremiah 17:7 Blessed is the man that trusteth in the LORD, and whose hope the LORD is.

This is Jeremiah’s way of encouraging us to put our trust in the Lawgiver and not lawbreakers.

Christians know they are sinners, and they also know they don’t know the depth of their own depravity. Therefore they pray,

Psalm 139:23-24 Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

Having embraced the cross, believers pursue a life of repentance, thankfulness, and love.

Oh, that men would turn back to the Son and build their future on His gospel and His promises.

“For he shall be as a tree planted by the waters, and that spreadeth out

her roots by the river, and shall not see when heat cometh, but her leaf shall be green; and shall not be careful in the year of drought, neither shall cease from yielding fruit" (Jeremiah 17:8).

69. Lift up ye Heads, O Ye Gates

Psalm 24

This is a psalm about glory that challenges us to be our best.

With so many people on earth many think they are too insignificant for God to care about them:

"And the justice due me escapes the notice of my God? (Isa. 40:27, NASB)

Others conclude their problems are too complex, their resources too few, and their God too small to fix all that is broken in their life.

This psalm challenges the God-seeker to expand his thoughts about the King of Glory. This regal Person is not small but the man's perceptions of Him may be. Consequently, considering the grand theme of this song is like taking multi-vitamins to grow in one's theology.

Psalm 22, 23, and 24 are a trilogy of Messianic psalms. Psalm 22 presents the suffering of Christ as the Good Shepherd Who gives His life for the Sheep; Psalm 23 presents Christ as the Great Shepherd that protects and provides for His sheep; and, Psalm 24 presents Christ as the Great Shepherd coming to rule over His sheep in the kingdom of God.

The background of this psalm is the time when David brought the ark the Ark of the Covenant from Kiriath Jearim to Jerusalem -- an event that was frustrated by the death sentence on Uzzah the priest when he reached out stabilize the tottering ark -- a breach of transport protocol (1 Samuel 6; 1 Chronicles 13:6).

1 (A Psalm of David.) The earth is the LORD'S, and the fullness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.

David begins his introduction of the LORD with the most fundamental facts. He owns the earth . . . and the people . . . and the wealth thereof; that is, He has jurisdiction over everything and everyone. The earth does not belong to governments but to the people. Selah (stop and think about this!).

2 For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.

He is not only Possessor of Heaven and Earth; He is portrayed as Captain of the Seas and its roaring mysteries. All bodies of water were created by Him and for Him. And, out of this water He created the earth. To claim the earth and seas belong to government is an arrogant overreach of authority.

3 Who shall ascend into the hill of the LORD? or who shall stand in his holy place?

This is possibly the most important question a man can ever ask himself.

There are many hills that boast of power and there are many mountains on which men seek the mysteries of life. David, therefore, queries his readers: Who is going to approach God's mountain to learn about Him?

The question is repeated second time with more specificity, "Who shall stand in his holy place?" What is holiness? Ans: Holiness is the LORD's sensors that detect intruders -- a power deterrent warning sinners that death awaits the invader of His sanctity.

His holiness acts like foot soldiers at Buckingham Palace wearing full dress uniforms of red tunics and bear-skins hats authorized to kill trespassers.

It is easier to hold fire in the palm of the hand than to touch holiness.

How can a sinner approach this holy God? Or, more significantly, how can One so pure and holy tolerate the unclean in his presence? A none-washed street-person in wrinkled clothes would have a better chance of reaching the Queen of England at Buckingham Palace than for a sooty sinner to touch the Divine presence. In David's first attempt to bring the ark to Jerusalem, Uzzah ("her strength") reached out with his hand to steady the shaking ark and was struck dead. With this tragedy in David's mind, he asks "**who shall stand in his holy place?**"

Just as relevant, how was this holy God going to live in Jerusalem surrounded by flawed, dirty people?

4 He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

Who shall enter His Holy House? The psalmist provides the answer: him that hath clean hands. This is so simple, a little child can understand it. The one approaching God must wash his hands . . . and his soul.

As one preacher said, *God loves clean and He ain't crazy about ugly.*

In law, the "*clean hands doctrine*" refers to a party that is innocent of a crime . . . to the party that has injured no man or his property. Here "clean" and "pure"

refers those (1) who have NOT lifted up their soul to vanity (falsehood) but have lifted up their hand to the Most High God, the Possessor of Heaven and Earth (Genesis 14:1) in the sense of accepting his rule over one's life; and, (2) rejecting deceit and hypocrisy as a way of life.

The first time Israel attempted to bring the ark to Jerusalem, the Levites neglected movement protocols and Uzzah was struck dead when he reached out to steady the ark.

Numbers 4:15 And when Aaron and his sons have made an end of covering the sanctuary, and all the vessels of the sanctuary, as the camp is to set forward; after that, the sons of Kohath shall come to bear *it*: but they **shall not touch any holy thing, lest they die.** These *things are* the burden of the sons of Kohath in the tabernacle of the congregation.

When the Levites brought the Ark to Jerusalem the second time, they did it right. They carried the ark on poles and not a cart. They studied God's instructions on how to carry the ark, and they sanctified themselves by washing themselves, putting on clean clothes, and strict abstinence (Exodus 19:10, 15).

1 Chronicled 15:14 So the priests and the Levites sanctified themselves to bring up the ark of the LORD God of Israel.

5 He shall receive the blessing from the LORD, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.

The man who lives by the "clean hands" doctrine before God is promised the blessing of salvation and righteousness from the LORD -- a righteousness revealed in the gospel -- a righteousness from Theos which comes by faith in Christ -- a righteousness produced by the doing and dying of our Lord (Romans 3:21-22).

Job asked the ultimate question, "How can a man be just before God?" (25:4). The answer lies in "justification" by faith -- a judicial act whereby God declares a man righteous and treats him as such (Romans 3:24; 4:5; 5:1).

This is not a self-scrub program, but an act of God that declares a man to have a right standing before God when He believes in the Son . . . a standing with effects that produce a cleans soul. Hebrews 9:14 teaches, the blood of Christ that was shed for our sins, cleanses "our consciences from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living God!"

6 This is the generation of them that seek him, that seek thy face, O Jacob. Selah.

This text is addressed to "Jacob," i.e., to the people that know they need God; that know they are sinners; that know they are weak and cannot succeed in life without His blessing upon them.

"to seek they face" means to seek his grace, approval, and favor. Jacob was a man that nobody loved except the Lord. Those that seek the God of Jacob seek the grace of God.

7 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.

Imagine this dramatic scene -- an enormous parade of priests robed in white bearing swords marching toward the entrance of ancient Jerusalem carrying the Ark of the Covenant, the holy symbol of Divine Sovereignty. As the armed priest approach the city gate, the gate-keepers proudly swing open the weathered doors to receive His Majesty.

But, the psalmist observes an unexpected crisis at the gates. The city gates are too old and too small to receive the King of Glory. The King will have to bow his head and humble Himself passing under the pillars. So, the psalmist orders the gates to "**lift up your heads**" because your arches are too low to receive this exalted King -- a literary device known as an "apostrophe" where by the writer addresses an inanimate object as if it were a person.

These gates are "everlasting doors," grey with antiquity, hoary with age. Perhaps these weathered gates on this Jebusite city looked down upon Melchizedek, King of Salem and Priest of the Most High God, as he marched his army in the morning twilight to greet Abraham with bread and wine after his slaughter of the five kings. But in all the centuries that followed, these doddering doors had never seen such a grand and glorious King gracing the capital city with His presence (Maclaren).

"Lift up your heads" is Psalmist way of instructing men how to receive the King of Glory as their Lord and Savior.

The lesson is clear: The one who wants a relationship with the King must wake up, wash up, and stand up; that is, the man seeking this King of Glory must rise to the occasion. He must dress honorably, speak with dignity, and behave with integrity. Dress up, wash up, and clean up. "Assume a virtue if you have it not" (Shakespeare).

We are told that Buckingham Palace has 775 rooms. These include 19 State rooms, 52 Royal and guest bedrooms, 188 staff bedrooms, 92 offices and 78 bathrooms. In measurements, the building is 108 meters long across the front, 120 meters deep (including the central quadrangle) and 24 meters high. It has 491 employees. But, even this is too small for the King of kings and the Lord of lords.

Our hearts are too small for this King. Our talents are too few to serve this King. Our gifts are inadequate. Our consciences are too dirty. "Lift up your heads, O ye Gates . . ."

America's institutions are too complicated, too convoluted, too corrupt for the King. "Lift up your heads, O ye Gates . . ."

8 Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle.

Why would the psalmist shout the imperial order for the Gates to Lift of their Heads? Who is coming? Who is the King of Glory whose presence demands we clean up and wash up?

Now the psalmist introduces us to this King. He is the LORD, strong and mighty. As "the LORD" He is the everlasting One; the Beginning and the End, the One who was, is, and shall be what we need Him to be; the Aleph and Tet of all expressions wonderful. This is no ordinary person. He is strong in virtue, strong in justice, and strong in grace. He is mighty in knowledge, mighty in presence, and mighty in power. He is a regal King and those entering His presence must be their best and put on their best.

So that we might know how mighty He is, the psalmist says it gain, "mighty in battle." He is a bloody King that never lost a battle; a mighty King who defeated single-handedly man's greatest enemies: Satan, sin, and death; a bloody King who shed his own blood to save sinners like you and me.

9 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift them up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.

This is the psalmist's invitation call for salvation. He repeats the main lesson of the occasion a second time to awaken moronic minds and dopey hearts. The arches above the gates are not tall enough to honor the King of Glory.

Make room for the king. Remove your idols. Confess Him as your Lord. Judge competitors. Clean out your heart and enlarge your soul to receive Him as your Master and King.

Churches would do well to ask themselves, "What they improve so the King of Glory will be pleased to come in to meet with them?"

Psalm 29:1 Ascribe to the LORD, O mighty ones, ascribe to the LORD glory and strength. Ascribe to the LORD the glory due his name; worship the LORD in the splendor of his holiness. The voice of the LORD is over the waters; the God of glory thunders, the LORD thunders over the mighty waters.

Psalm 29:9, . . . And in His temple everything says, 'Glory!'

Note: Churches would do well to review their protocols for church. Is attending a worship service in a t-shirt and wrinkled jeans with coffee up in hand the way to receive the King of Glory?

10 Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, he is the King of glory. Selah.

In case the reader fails to grasp the grandeur of the moment he ask the question a second time, not because he does not know the answer, but because he understands human minds are like bowls of Jell-O.

Likewise, for the dull of heart, he repeats the answer: Who is this King of glory? He is the Lord of Hosts, the Master and Commander of the Universe; the Captain of the armies of Heaven; the One who spoke and brought the heavens and earth into existence by His word. He is the King of Glory, the King of Righteousness, the King of Holiness, the King of Purity, the King of Humility, the King of Goodness, the King of Justice, and the King of Mercy. He is, He is, He is the King of Glory.

The King of Glory is coming to establish His kingdom on earth. "Prepare to meet thy God" (Amos 4:12). Is He your King? Do you have clean hands and are your Gates lifted up high enough to receive Him?

[Listen to Mahalia Jackson sing Psalm 24.](#)

70. A Psalm for Presidents and Governors

Psalm 75

God's Remedy for Lawlessness in a Nation

Every hymn in the Divine Library imparts life to the human heart while providing an antidote that counteracts the poisons that destroy society.

If you are disturbed by the state of the nation, politics, and the spread of lawlessness in society, this psalm is for you.

Likewise, if you are government official, this psalm is a must read because it shows us the necessity of having righteous men in civil government.

The Spirit is pleased to present us with a psalm for presidents, governors, and civil servants trusted with the duties of office.

Oh, that government officials might read this hymn and take it to heart. In like manner, Christians would do well to understand the importance of a state dedicated to restoring law and order.

Though there are many theories as to when this psalm was written, everything about this psalm has the scent of David on it.

A NATIONAL HYMN OF PRAISE

Psalm 75:1 To the chief Musician, Altaschith, A Psalm or Song of Asaph.

Poems are often composed by men inspired by their conflicts. And, this is the case here. It was so important, the hymn writer delivered it to Asaph, the chief musician, to compose a melody to fit the theme.

The Hebrew word “*altaschith*” means “*do not destroy.*” Many think this is a prayer urging God not to destroy the people because of their national sins. But, it also contains a direct warning to fools to stop their destructive behavior lest they be broken by the king’s justice.

Unto thee, O God, do we give thanks, unto thee do we give thanks: for that thy name is near thy wondrous works declare.

The pronoun “*we*” informs us this is a hymn of thanksgiving designed for public worship.

“Do we give thanks” (*yadah*) is a worship term, and it is in the emphatic position in the sentence. *It* means “to throw up the hands” as one testifying to a greater authority. When men testify in court, bailiffs appropriately ask the witness to put one hand on the Bible and to lift the other to heaven to invoke God’s presence in the courtroom. Likewise, presidents and governors, place their hand on the Bible, raise their right hand to Heaven, and take their oath in exchange for public trust. “Throwing up the hands,” acknowledges God as the supreme authority in the universe.

Abraham said to the king of Sodom, “*I have lift up mine hand unto the LORD, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth,*” indicating his bond to the LORD God as his Lawgiver (Genesis 14:22; James 4:12; Deuteronomy 6:4).

In this polytheistic culture seeped in multiculturalism, the supreme need is for Christian men to lift their hand unto the LORD God and refuse to defile their lips with pagan expressions.

“For that thy name is near” provides us with the reason for this psalm. Apparently, the people experienced a God-given triumph which occasioned this psalm—a manifestation of divine power. There is nothing like seeing God at work to set the victor’s pen in motion.

ANTICIPATION OF A NATIONAL CORONATION

2 When I shall receive the congregation I will judge uprightly.

Interpreting verse 2 correctly is the key to understanding this psalm. Who is the "I" in this text? Is the pronoun a reference to God . . . to David . . . to the hymn-writer . . . or a presumptive prince?

Luther, Calvin, and others take this as the voice of God. There is no lack of commentary on this position.

In wrestling with this, the rule of consistency calls this interpreter to view the "I" as the voice of a presumptive king who is anticipating his inauguration day where he will receive the power of government from the people. Thus, when the pronoun "I" references the presumptive all through this psalm. David returning to Jerusalem after the Absalom revolt comes to mind.

The sounds of a coronation ring through this psalm. David was inaugurated three times in his life: at age 30 by Judah (2 Samuel 2:4), seven years later by the northern tribes (2 Samuel 5:1), and after the Absalom revolt (2 Samuel 19:15-43).

The verb in the phrase "when I shall receive" (*laqach*) means "take in the hand." The parlance refers to the transfer of legitimate authority into the hands of the presumptive king.

The term "congregation" (*mow'ed*) is the key to the whole psalm. It is used in the sense of time. It is translated "set time next year" in Genesis 17:21; "In his season year to year" in Exodus 13:10; "the set time" in 1 Samuel 13:8; "set feasts" in 1 Chronicles 23:31. The presumptive conclusion is that a coronation day was set to bestow on the nominee the authority to rule as a king over the nation.

"*Mow'ed*" is translated "congregation" in Psalm 74:4 and 75:2; and "*synagogue*" in Psalm 74:8.

The context implies the nation was in a crisis. Wicked, Wanna-be fellows aspired to obtain political power. The winds of anarchy swept through the nation. But, a public coronation was set to settle the unrest and to formalize the divine will as God's chosen monarch. A young prince, possibly David, anticipates the day the people will confirm his rule . . . place in his hand the scepter . . . the symbol of authority . . . and, when he would ascend the throne by the consent of the governed. After the coronation, he would have a legitimate claim to power, and the authority to use that power to quash a rebellion already in progress.

The word "*uprightly*" means straight or level. It is a legal term referring to equity and fair dealings.

The presumptive king anticipates the day he will be able to apply legitimate authority “to judge uprightly;” that is to re-establish law and order using the power of his office; and, in due time to punish those in rebellion against God’s law-order.

“to judge uprightly” refers to the proper application of God’s law as He intended his law to be applied in a nation. When men define “uprightly,” we end up with utopian ideals, Marxism, tolerance of evil, promotion of vanity, oppressive taxation, and anarchy where every man does what is right in his own eyes.

Oh, that all presidents and governors would align themselves with righteousness and use the powers of their office to purge evil men from society.

IMPORTANCE OF RIGHTEOUS GOVERNMENT

3 The earth and all the inhabitants thereof are dissolved: I bear up the pillars of it. Selah.

The Hebrew word “*dissolved*” (*muwg*) means “to melt down” (See Nahum 1:5, Psalm 107:26, Isaiah 64:7). It refers to a breakdown of society, a descent into chaos and anarchy, and a loss of stability due to a lack of enforcement of law. Without just government, society descends into confusion and chaos. Few things are worse than government officials that tolerate anarchy and refuse to use their authority to confront criminal activity.

According to our constitutional form of government, the whole purpose of authority is to use the power of office to protect the rights of man and to punish those who transgress the rights of others. You have heard it said, “power corrupts, and i corrupts absolutely.” But, this is not true. Many a husband uses his authority in the home to build a godly family, and many officials use the power of office for the good of the people. And, that is the case here.

“I bear up the pillars” refers to essential government—the pillars that uphold law and order. The presumptive king anticipates the day that the people confer on him the legal right to exercise the powers of office in order to promote justice in the land.

This presumptive king is a type of the Lord Jesus Christ Who anticipates the day when His people will recognize His authority. When we read this hymn, we should have the Savior in mind. Our prayer is and always will be, “Thy kingdom come; may men recognize your authority and surrender to it now . . . in our time!” Christians are “looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat” (2 Peter 3:12)].

A WARNING TO THE WICKED

4 I said unto the fools, Deal not foolishly: and to the wicked, Lift not up the horn:

The “I” appears to be the presumptive king. This godly ruler has a message for fools and rebels: stop your foolishness – a term referring to criminal acts; and “lift not up the horn” -- a metaphor referring to an untamed wild ox that will not submit to the yoke.

5 Lift not up your horn on high: speak not with a stiff neck.

The command in verse four is repeated in verse five. The repetition of the order confirms how seriousness this king is about law and order. Governed by God’s law, this monarch is ready to crush rebellion and to punish lawbreakers using the full power of government to do so.

“Lift not up your horn on high” refers to the exceedingly high degree of hubris and chutzpa exhibited by the rebels. It is a warning to revolutionaries.

“Speak not with a stiff neck” refers to the raunchy, trash-talk of those in the cult of arrogance –untamed souls that won’t submit to the yoke, the rule of law, and responsible self-government.

Oh, that all presidents and governors would issue strong warnings to the criminal element in society.

AN ANNOUCEMENT OF SOVEREIGNTY

6 For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south.

The Hebrew word for “*promotion*” is *ruwm*. It is actually the last word in the Hebrew sentence. A Hiphil infinitive, it means “to raise up.” Here it refers to the installation of the man to the duties of public office.

The adverb “*neither*” is in the emphatic position reinforcing the perspective the LORD is the sovereign in the affairs of politics. It *negates* any view that the appointment of this man to office is the work of the people, or the forces of nature at work in the cardinal directions (E.W.S.N.), or the mystical surf and foam in the sea of politics that embraces all continents.

The great lesson of this psalm is that the appointment of a just man to a legitimate office for the good of the nation is not “of the People,” but of God! Likewise, the appointment of a foolish man to office is also of God, not to bless a nation, but to test the people’s resolve to obey God’s law and to resist evil.

7 But God is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.

“But God is the judge” – All depends on Him, not on the natural resources of a country; not on human strength, organization, or wisdom; and, not on the efficient machinery common to political parties.

Appointment to office does not necessarily mean the presumptive nominee has the favor of God. The good, bad, and ugly are also from God. He may give wise rulers to God-fearing people, but He may give babes, children, and women to rule over an idolatrous people (Isaiah 3:4, 12). As a way of punishment, the LORD gave Egypt “cruel lords” and “vicious kings” to rule over them (Isaiah 19:4). In modern democracies, fools run for office and get elected. Mark Twain observed, “Supposed you were an idiot, and supposed you were a member of *Congress*; but I repeat myself.”

God is sovereign. He does as He pleases. Promotion is from above. He is in control seeing that “all things work together for good to those that love him” (Romans 8:28). He appoints competent men to office for the benefit of the people, and He appoints psychopaths to office to humble a nation.

THE CUP OF WRATH

8 For in the hand of the LORD there is a cup, and the wine is red; it is full of mixture; and he poureth out of the same: but the dregs thereof, all the wicked of the earth shall wring them out, and drink them.

“For in the hand of the Lord” is a reference to the sovereignty of God. The general idea in this verse is, that God holds in his hand a cup for people to drink -- a Cup of Blessing or a Cup of Cursing; a cup whose contents promote happiness, or misery; a cup that prolongs life, or causes death.

“And the wine is red:” The word “red” (*chamar*) means “to boil” or “foam” or “ferment” which gives us an image of something that is boiling red hot – conjuring up the idea of trouble. The reference to the “wicked” in this text seems to imply this cup represents the boiling hot wrath of Almighty God.

“Full of mixture” implies this cup is *loaded with herbs* and sedatives to induce sleep or debilitate the object of His wrath. This is the Spirit’s way of informing us that the cup is drugged with stimulants people call “uppers and downers.”

“The dregs thereof” refer to the lees settling to the bottom of the cup – the strongest part of the beverage. The idea here is that rebels will drink the full cup of God’s wrath.

“All the wicked of the earth” is a phrase the Spirit uses to enlarge our shriveled view of God’s jurisdiction over criminal matters. The LORD is not the God of the hills and valleys, but Creator of heaven and earth. He is not just the God of the Jews, but the God of all men, all nations, and all people. No matter what

hole the wicked crawl into, the LORD will find them. He has a death-potion laced with arsenic for them to drink.

“Shall wring them out” conjures up images of a leather bota-bag used to store wine. To *“wring them out”* refers to double-handed force squeezing out every drop of divine wrath, and to leave nothing remaining; that is, God will exhaust all His resources to see the wicked punished.

The attention of the true Christian man is *cruci dum spiro fido*: *“As long as I breathe, I will remember the cross”* where God poured out every drop of wrath on Christ for my sins leaving nothing for me (1 Thessalonians 5:9); therefore,

THE CUP OF PRAISE

9 But I will declare for ever; I will sing praises to the God of Jacob.

In contrast to the cup of wrath for the wicked, we have the cup of blessing for the righteous.

The *“I”* is the author of the psalm in co-union with the king elect – a stanza where the people personalized the duty to praise the God of Jacob from generation to generation. At last, the king and the people are united under a common purpose!

The content of this declaration centered on the wonders of the God of Jacob. *“I will”* communicates commitment and dedication to live for the glory of God by singing His praises. God loves it; the Devil hates it.

The title *“God of Jacob”* refers to the grace of God wherein He protected the life and sons of Jacob. As fate would have it, no one loved Jacob, but the LORD God. His father neglected him; his mother had a twisted love that could have ruined him; his uncle used him; his wives bartered over him; and, his sons secretly indulged their own ambitions behind his back. But, God loved Jacob and stood beside him seeing that all his troubles worked together for the good of this chosen family.

ULTIMATE REALITIES

10 All the horns of the wicked also will I cut off; but the horns of the righteous shall be exalted.

The psalmist ends this chorus with kingdom themes – the blessed destiny of the righteous and the cursed destiny of the wicked. In preaching on the kingdom, John the Baptist referred to the *“baptism of the spirit”* (salvation) and the *“baptism of fire”* (judgment) (Matthew 3).

“the horns” is a metaphor for power, wealth, and blessing.

“cut off” is a term of judgment, condemnation, and destruction.

Possibly the introductory term “*Altaschith*” meaning “do not destroy,” a pleading for God to save the righteous, is gratefully realized in this final stanza.

The idea is that when this king ascends the throne by the consent of the governed, he will assert his conferred authority to bless the righteous and to crush the wicked.

In recent times, humanistic man advances a twisted view of love that excludes hate and every concept of eternal judgment and divine wrath. The reader would do well to recognize . . .

The psalm ends with the people considering ultimate realities of God’s chosen king. We end this psalm with solemn thoughts about King Jesus (Acts 17:6-7) who will save His people from their sins (Matthew 1:21), and who will punish unbelievers for their rejection of the Son (John 3:36).

71. The Politician’s Psalm

Psalm 101

Shortly after David became king of Israel, he penned the policies that would guide his administration as king of Israel. Thus, we call this, “the Politician’s Psalm.”

Oh, that modern officials would be as contemplative and adopt the principles that David scribed for his public life. All men would do well to acquire virtues that will guide them during their pilgrimage on earth. King Alfred the Great did, Stonewall Jackson did it; Robert E. Lee did it. Successful politicians must also do it.

Government officials are required to take an oath to uphold and support the constitution of the united States of America before assuming the duties of office. Oaths sanction performance. In exchange for an oath, We the People grant politicians privileges and power. Without an oath, there is no power and no duty to perform acts of office. Without an oath, the acts of pretenders are null and void. Look at this psalm as David’s oath—his pledge of performance as Israel’s senior administrator.

Further, the oath was to the LORD (Deuteronomy 6:13). The whole problem with American politics is that we do not have one man in office anywhere that has sworn an oath to obey the law of the LORD God.

Psalm 101:1 I will sing of mercy and judgment: unto thee, O LORD, will I sing.

David's first pledge was to conduct his administration conscious of the LORD (YHWH). Most politicians are men-pleasers instead of God-pleasers. Amidst the cacophony of officials feverously scratching their nails on government blackboards, David pledged to compose melodies and to make music; to light a candle amidst the darkness; to promote good over evil. And what was his grand theme? — the virtues of mercy and justice; velvet and steel; the sweets and the bitter; the cream and the vinegar; the soft and the rough; the tender and the tough; forgiveness and vengeance; grace and truth — and, the choices that must be made between good and evil.

Few politicians today know the difference between right and wrong much less have the skills to compose songs with such grand themes. Training in righteousness is, therefore, necessary for success in politics. It takes great skill to blend justice and mercy into a harmony that binds the wicked and frees the righteous; that refreshes the weak and reforms the wretched; that invigorates industry and stifles corruption.

David made a choice to please God and not the bankers.

Thus every politician must choose whom he will serve, God or man. "No man can serve two masters," said Jesus.

Hopefully, the choices of a political leader will please his constituents. But, if a choice must be made to do what's right and follow God's will or to do what's wrong and to follow man's will, hopefully that politician will have the moral character to do what is right regardless of the consequences. Such character, however, is as rare as pretty on an ape.

2 I will behave myself wisely in a perfect way. O when wilt thou come unto me? I will walk within my house with a perfect heart.

David pledged to conduct himself with integrity; i.e., to be holy in his conduct. Holiness among government officials is a scarce commodity. Excellence in ethics, manners, temperament, and political skills must be studied. Few graduate from such a difficult course of study. Corruption is easy; perfection is hard. Precision is tedious; pettiness is effortless. David did not achieve his ambition, but it was good that it was in his heart.

Thus, all politicians must beware of eating fruits from the poisonous tree that compromises one's integrity. No wonder David prayed to God asking Him "to come near unto me!" Holy ambition without His Holy presence leads to unholy action.

Politicians are sinners and sin's sweet fragrances are a constant attraction. Power has its own temptations. In the hands of a good man power can be used

for the benefit of the people, but in the hands of a weak man power corrupts. It is not natural to be pure and holy. Holiness must be studied and supported by His divine Presence. Oh, that more politicians would hunger for the Divine presence in their administration.

David made a commitment to be holy at home as well as at work. It is too easy to be an angel in public and a devil in private; to sing in the choir and to sin in the corners; to be sweet away and sour at home; to be civilized to colleagues and uncivilized to the commoner; to be gentlemanly to the media and barbarous to the masses.

Like a lion following a herd of African antelope, duplicity stalks the life of every politician. There is no harmony so delightful as a gracious, consistent, and principled life among public officials.

3 I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes: I hate the work of them that turn aside; it shall not cleave to me.

David pledged to resist the temptations that confront men of wealth and power. Like a burlesque, the charms of money and pleasure dance their way into the lives of politicians. Politicians would do well to remember the pundit: “sow a thought, reap an act; sow an act, reap a habit; sow a habit reap a character; sow character and reap a destiny.”

David determined to grow flowers, not weeds; to nurture holy ambitions and to starve unholy passions. He failed, but his ambition was correct.

Oh, that we would seek to do better than David. Technology channels temptations to us that men of antiquity never dreamed. Where are the politicians today that have made a covenant to “set no wicked thing” before their eyes? Little wonder, Christianity has no impact on the culture. Political leaders are laden with sins of pride, of wealth, and lust . . . and so are the people.

David says he hated the work of evildoers. On another occasion, he declared, “Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee?” (Psalm 139:21). He not only hated the deeds of the wicked, he hated them—the source of evil infecting other men!! David is not saying that he hated weak and flawed sinners, but a special class of men — those who made a pact with the Devil. He called these men, “the wicked,” “the bloody,” and “thine enemies” (Psalm 139-18-21).

These men and their willingness to take bribes (donations) seem to find their way into niches of government. Evildoers are not just vermin on the street, but government officials dressed in blue suits.

It is posh today to disparage the necessity of hate. Our government is ready to indict men for hate speech, hate crimes, and hateful thoughts. Balderdash!

It is impossible to be a godly man who does not hate wicked politicians.

Where in the Bible does it say we are “to hate the sin, but love the sinner”?

Wicked deeds come from wicked men, and we are called to hate both.

Politicians today have more sweets than a candy store. Christians are called to be salt, not sugar. Life is not about being nice, but about being holy . . . and holy men hate tomcats in the fish market; i.e., chubby politicians gorging themselves from public trough. It must be so!

4 A froward heart shall depart from me: I will not know a wicked person.

David pledged to clean up the deep state—to “drain the swamp” of political alligators and water moccasins. To not “know a wicked person” means that David was not going to employ crooks in his cabinet.

It has been said that 98% of lawyers make the other 2% look bad. The problem with presidents is that they are surrounded by crafty bureaucrats and canny cabinet members that have perfected the art of deception. “When the wicked rule, the people mourn” (Proverbs 29:2).

It was said of “Honest Abe” that he was one of the most cunning men to ever hold office, and that he often cloaked his real ambitions behind noble suggestions. Such cleverness is not to be admired.

David, therefore, determined to surround himself with godly men and to cleanse his staff of two-faced, double-minded, double-tongued, double-hearted shysters. David was flawed, but not corrupt. He did not promote professional crooks to cabinet posts.

As important as personal integrity is, the decision one’s political counselors is just as critical. Many a president has been ruined by his own advisers. President Woodrow Wilson, following the advice of a close cabinet member said to his friends, just before he died, that he had been “deceived” and that “I have betrayed my Country.” No doubt he did! (The Zionists were all over him).

5 Whoso privily slandereth his neighbor, him will I cut off: him that hath an high look and a proud heart will not I suffer.

David pledged to cleanse his cabinet of mudslingers. All politicians instinctively understand the politics of personal destruction. Legislators know that the way to destroy an adversary is to slander him; that is, invent a despicable accusation and leak it to the media. Politicians are masters of the attack ad. They know how to ruin their opponents through backbiting and character assassination.

David had no room in his pool of friends for camouflaged cobras and snipers. He was committed to rid his administration of proud and cunning counselors.

David suffered greatly from Saul's slanderous accusations against him, and he purposed that even his political foes should not suffer the same fate. Truth "Yes," but slander "No." David zealously promoted his political agenda, but he did not employ propagandists skilled in the art of smear campaigns. Mudslingers need not apply.

6 Mine eyes shall be upon the faithful of the land, that they may dwell with me: he that walketh in a perfect way, he shall serve me.

David pledged to employ men of integrity. A good master chooses good servants. Emily Dickenson said, "Her friends were her estate"; that is, all her wealth and hope and success centered on the friends she possessed. "A faithful man who can find"? Godly friends give good advice, but pretenders poison the soup. Friends rush in when foes rush out. A man is rich indeed who has men around him that are committed to integrity and to his success. David made it his ambition to find them, employ them, and to take care of them. Take care of your friends and they will take care of you. Superficial men walk out when you are weak and failing, but your true friends will draw near to protect you.

7 He that worketh deceit shall not dwell within my house: he that telleth lies shall not tarry in my sight.

David pledged to cleanse his staff of schemers; i.e., men skilled in the art of defrauding people of their wealth and property. Working deceit is not simple theft, but grand plots by clever politicians to plunder the assets of the people for their own political ends. It is called "covetousness" — a violation of the 10th Commandment.

David is not judging the hearts of men, but the actions of duplicitous government officers maximizing their positions of power to exploit the weak. International bankers and government officials throughout history have conspired against the people so that the profits of industry flow into their hands.

This was true during the middle ages in serfdom where lords enslaved the masses, and it is true in our day wherein government officials promote the modern "income tax" scheme to skim the milk off every man's paycheck before the worker tastes the fruit of his labor. Jesus had no tolerance for these workers of deceit. His first confrontation was with the moneychangers in the temple, and eventually they had him arrested and crucified for exposing their fraud.

Behind all schemes to enslave men and deprive mankind of their property is the art of the lie. The wretched thing about lies and deceit is that that the deceived

do not know they are being fooled. Such economic schemes of socialism, communism, democracies, and fascism are clever plots to shift power from the masses to the elite. David sought to cleanse his court of these dirty, double-minded, double-crossing, double-dealing, double agents . . . and righteous politicians would do well to do the same.

8 I will early destroy all the wicked of the land; that I may cut off all wicked doers from the city of the LORD.

David pledged to faithfully perform his duties as Israel's chief law enforcement officer. The first duty of the State is to surrender itself to the rule of God; i.e., to seek first the kingdom of God and arrange itself under God's law order (Psalm 2; Matthew 6:33).

God's law is not a private matter demanding something from the Christian but leaving other men to do as they please. The law is valid for the Christian because it is valid for all. God's law is not only right for me, but for all men, and all of man's institutions. A

As Israel's commander and chief, the king had two duties: (1) to punish those who violate the right of men (the "wicked"), and (2) secondarily to protect the people from those who abuse the liberties of a free people. So, when David says "he will cut off all the wicked," he is saying he will faithfully perform the duties of the executive branch of government.

If you are a politician, you serve in one of the three branches of government. And, whatever your calling, God calls you to know your duty, to do it, and to limit your authority to its proper jurisdiction.

Two great evils among politicians must be avoided: (1) dereliction of duty; that is, a slack hand in the performance of official responsibilities; and, (2) ultra vires acts; that is, assuming powers and authority beyond the scope of your office — the latter being the sin of most politicians — the sin of not limiting government to its constitutional restrictions.

In conclusion, this is called the "politicians psalm" because it outlines the principles upon which king David sought to govern his administration. He turned the psalm into an oath to faithfully perform his duty. Modern government employees know little of this psalm or its lofty ideals . . . thus, the reason so few people have confidence in government. It has been said, "If you aim at nothing, you shall surely hit it." Likewise, every politician would do well to sit down and write out the principles upon which he is going to conduct his public service . . . and a man would do better by adopting the pledge that David penned.

72. Is there Hope for America?

Amos 5:6

Amos 5:6 Seek the LORD, and ye shall live; lest he break out like fire in the house of Joseph, and devour it, and there be none to quench it in Bethel.

Is there any doubt America is fallen morally and spiritually?

This great nation once led the world in freedom and industry. Millions of Europeans, Chinese, and Mexicans immigrated here to partake of the fruits of commerce.

Having fallen into perils of feminism, humanism, LGBTQ transvestitism, and every other ism perpetuated under the philosophy of the “Protocols of Zion,” the United States is morally and economically bankrupt.

She is trillions of dollars in debt , overrun by millions of military age men from south of the border, and she is governed by madmen hell-bent on turning boys into drag queens and girls into homoerotic lesbians.

Is there a remedy for a fallen nation? While international relationships are complex, the remedy is simpler than we might think.

The Book of Amos provides the remedy for a broken nation (Amos 5:1-6). Date: 767 and 753 B.C.

There was a day when Israel fell because of her sins. Amos exposes his nation’s fatal flaws:

- feminism on steroids (4:1ff),
- corruption of religion (4:4),
- food shortages, drought, blight, disaster (4:6-11),
- hemlock justice (6:6),
- animosity toward goodness and righteousness (5:10),
- hostility toward conservatism (5:10),
- bribes, corruption, and “pay to play” politics (5:12),
- corruption in the courts (5:12), advancing fictions and false hopes (5:18),
- formality of religion (5:21-22),
- indulgence in luxury (6:1-6),
- commercial oppression of the poor (8:4-6),
- mutation from a righteous nation into a “sinful kingdom” (9:8).

While in this contemptible condition, the LORD God provided a remedy to prevent the people from sliding into the graveyard of the nations.

ANNOUNCING A LAMENTATION

1 Hear ye this word which I take up against you, even a lamentation, O house of Israel.

The first remedy for the nation's woes is to hear the Word of God. Failure to hear the Holy Scriptures was at the root of the nation's troubles. This introductory statement is not an option or a suggestion, but a command: "Hear ye this word . . ."

"Hear" (*shema*) is perhaps the most important command in the Bible. The word "hear" is used seven times in Amos, 34 times in Deuteronomy, and 45 times in Jeremiah. It means "to listen, hearken, and obey." Unlike the false gods, the true God can speak! He has spoken in history and his revelation is contained in the Holy Scriptures.

"Hear this word" is the Spirit's way of saying, "Stand up, listen up . . . and put your ears on!"

The word "*lamentation*" is a term of sadness and alludes to the reading of an obituary at a funeral. It is sad when people do not seek God and do not listen to His Word. God put it this way in Jeremiah, "*every one of you follows his stubborn, evil will, refusing to listen to me*" (16:12).

Likewise, the people of the world are easily lured by the truest trend, newest fad, and latest synthetic priori in metaphysics away from the foundations of truth and law.

People will listen to the radio talk shows, opinion broadcasts, and public advertising, but they cannot or will not hear the Word of the Lord. Hearing is difficult for people whose hearts are like brass.

According to a Gallup Poll in May 2017, out of 81% of American who say they believe in some type of deity only 24% of Americans believe the Bible is "the Word of God." Nevertheless, the remedy for this nation's ills is "Hear ye this word . . ." Without hearing, people will "go their own way" and die (Isaiah 53:6a; Psalm 34:21).

Prayer: In Grace, O Lord, open the ears of Americans to hear the Word of God. Revive us, O Lord.

ANNOUNCING THE NATION'S COLLAPSE

2 The virgin of Israel is fallen; she shall no more rise: she is forsaken upon her land; there is none to raise her up.

The lovely term "virgin" references Israel's holy espousal to God. God loved the nation and delighted in her . . . but then she began to play the whore to the nations. Without deep repentance for deep sins God announces her fall as a broken clay pot on the kitchen floor.

Jeremiah 14:17 Therefore thou shalt say this word unto them; Let mine eyes run down with tears night and day, and let them not cease: for the virgin daughter of my people is broken with a great breach, with a very grievous blow.

Is there hope for a divided, broken vessel like this? Yes, there is (v. 1, 4)

ANNOUNCING THE NATION'S JUDGMENT

3 For thus saith the Lord GOD; The city that went out by a thousand shall leave an hundred, and that which went forth by an hundred shall leave ten, to the house of Israel.

God's judgment took the form of depopulation, loss of power, and economic deprivation. Decimating the people and reducing the population through war was His judgment on the Northern kingdom.

ANNOUNCING THE REMEDY

4 For thus saith the LORD unto the house of Israel, Seek ye me, and ye shall live:

The second remedy is simple, but hard: *Seek the Lord*; that is, turn away from the liberal, governmental policies of Jeroboam II, and return to the God of the Bible and arrange yourself under His authority. The imperative "*seek*" (*darash*) is used three times in this section. This is the key remedy for the nation in the Book of Amos. "**Seek Him and live**" is the gospel according to Amos. Seek Him and not wealth; seek Him and not fame; seek Him and not the false hopes in pagan religions. Seek Him and not the Zodiac or your fortune tellers (Jeremiah 27:9).

[Historical Note: There are two Jeroboams in Scripture: Jeroboam I (931-913 B.C.) and Jeroboam II (782-753). The North's political / religious policies were established by Jeroboam I, but the events in Amos took place during the reign of Jeroboam II who followed the policies of Jeroboam I]

The remedy for many political problems is spiritual reformation. Seek Him and He will infuse life, health, and prosperity into the nation.

5 But seek not Bethel, nor enter into Gilgal, and pass not to Beersheba: for Gilgal shall surely go into captivity, and Bethel shall come to nought.

The remedy includes **what NOT** to seek. The adverb "*no*" or "*not*" (*lo*) is used three times in this verse to negate the verbs "*seek*," "*enter*," and "*pass to*." Three villages are mentioned: Beth-el, Beersheba, and Gilgal

The term "*Beth-el*" means "House of God." But, at this time in history during the reign of Jeroboam II because of the two golden calves erected by Jeroboam I circa 931 B.C. Beth-el had morphed into an apostate, cult center. The prediction

that Beth-el shall “come to naught” can be translated “Beth-haven” or “house of vanity.” The adoption of Jeroboam’s state idols made Bethel “good for nothing.”

Gilgal, once a seminary for Biblical prophets, joined themselves to “*the King’s Chapel*,” Jeroboam II’s State Church (7:13). There is a satiric-play on words here. Like “Paris shall Perish” the Hebrew reads “*ha-gigal, glo yigleh*” is a trill meaning “to roll away” — a satire seeing that Gilgal was where Israelite men were commanded to be circumcised and the “reproach of Egypt” was cut away (Joshua 5:9) — a command issued because of the nation’s neglect to circumcise their males during the Egyptian captivity.

Beersheba in southern Judah was the way to Edom. The region was once called “*the well of the oath*” by the LORD. This is where Abraham ratified his covenant with Abimelech, and the area where Abraham called on “the Lord, the everlasting God” (Genesis 21:31, 33). At the time of Amos, Beersheba had morphed into a cradle of idolatry (Amos 8:14).

The remedy included not only seeking the LORD, but forsaking their bogus religious-political ideologies grounded in Jeroboam’s pseudo-religious system wherein he erected golden calves at Dan and Bethel to unite the nation (2 Kings 12). These false gods were the source of permissive, perverse, liberal laws associated with Baal. When a nation changes its gods, it changes its laws. Godliness is replaced with graft; righteousness with lawlessness; and, purity with pollution.

Do NOT seek to be religious, or spiritual. Do NOT seek a god of your own making. Do NOT seek forms of syncretism blending various belief systems together as one (British syncretism). That all religions are a path to God ignores the law of contradiction. Seek the one, true, virtuous, personal, infinite, triune Spirit of the Bible, the God of Creation, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Moreover, the remedy is NOT political. Trumpeting new presidents, new elections, and new laws only increase disappointments. The election of new democratic representatives will not prevent a nation’s slide into political chaos. The new politicians will become like the old politicians. Economic reform, election reform, and tax reform are merely placebos for eating toxic “yum yums” from The Poisonous Tree.

6 Seek the LORD, and ye shall live; lest he break out like fire in the house of Joseph, and devour it, and there be none to quench it in Bethel.

The Spirit presents the remedy “*Seek the LORD*” a second time. Repeating a command twice is the Spirit’s exclamation point!! He is not ordering the people to dive into religious rituals, but to seek the true God and to surrender to His

law-order. The command is serious. Failure to seek Him will result in a galactic fire of judgment upon the House of Joseph (Israel or the Northern Kingdom).

7 Ye who turn judgment to wormwood, and leave off righteousness in the earth,

“Ye:” The Spirit addresses the political-judicial rulers in Israel who managed to pervert law and to turn the courts into Hemlock Justice – oppression of the poor – a toxic system of law that punishes the innocent and rewards the guilty – a hemlock system of maritime law that strangles the common law – a hemlock system of governmental statutes that undermines Biblical law.

8 Seek him that maketh the seven stars and Orion, and turneth the shadow of death into the morning, and maketh the day dark with night: that calleth for the waters of the sea, and poureth them out upon the face of the earth: The LORD is his name:

The remedy is repeated a third time – the strongest Hebrew literary style that emphasize an action!!! Seek God and live! Seek Him that made the constellations! Seek Him that heals the sick by turning the midnight shadow of death into morning light. Seek Him that reverses fortunes in judgment by turning the day into darkness, and the One Who commands rain to fall on the earth for crops to grow!

If there is any doubt who the nation should seek? Amos names Him directly. The remedy to a nation’s troubles is to seek the LORD. He is not asking for men to be more religious or to embrace multicultural- ideologies, but to genuinely seek the ONLY existent God: “The LORD is his name.”

Addendum:

While “*believe*” is the key invitation term used by Christ in the Book of John, “*seek*” is the primary invitation term used by Amos. “*Seek the LORD*” and “*Ye shall live*” is the gospel according to Amos.

Jesus used the term “*seek*” in Matthew 6:33: “Seek first the kingdom and all these things shall be added unto you.”

Seek is an invitation term in Matthew. The kingdom is not a place or a sphere or a millennial era. It is a reference to the rule and authority of God; that is, life is given to men who acknowledge the lordship of Christ and who arrange themselves under His authority.

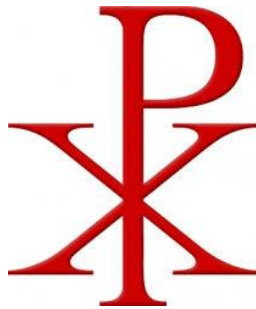
Paul called Christians to seek the risen Christ at the right hand of God: “If then you have been raised with Christ, seek the things that are above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God.” (Colossians 3:1).

“*Seated*” is a reference to the session of our Savior. Our Lord is installed as the Messianic King at the right hand of the Father. He reigns now. He is in

authority now. Therefore, Christians seek to live under His authority and to receive the benefits of the reign of our highly exalted Savior. Our hope is in heaven, not earth; in the King of the Princes of the earth, and not in weak, defiled politicians in temporary positions of power ([Revelation 1:5](#)).

SERMONS FROM THE NEW TESTAMENT

*If we regard the claim that one can achieve sinless perfection a great heresy, we regard satisfaction with sinful imperfection a greater heresy.
Selah.*



73. How Jesus Drove Government Official Insane

Luke 6:11

Luke 6: 11 . . . And they were filled with madness; and communed (plotted) one with another what they might do to Jesus.

Right after Jesus healed the cripple man, the Pharisees were filled with rage because Jesus would not obey their rules, they lost their minds.

The contrast between the authentic Christ and the deceptive government officials is something to behold.

The Pharisees were the leading party of the State. These characters, much like our State officials, did **not** believe in the rule of law for themselves; rather, they believed in **ruling others through law**—through man-made rules, statutes, and regulation. They were the party that believed you could change the world through law. Further, they enforced their rules on the citizenry while exempting themselves.

The word “madness” is the Greek word *anoia*. It means “without a mind,” “stupid,” and “mindless” We get the word “ignorant” from this word, but ignorance is not what is conveyed here. Rather, the idea here is one of rage or fury – a state of mind lacking reason and sensibility.

That Jesus' was healing on the Sabbath drove the government officials crazy—crazy enough to plot on how they might assassinate Him. Likewise, the more you become like Christ and resist the State's control of your person and your possessions, the more you will drive government officials insane.

Let's analyze how Jesus drove these government officials insane.

Luke:6 6-11 And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the sabbath days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it? And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other. And they were filled with madness; and communed (plotted) one with another what they might do to Jesus.

The entire conflict between Christ and the rulers was over whose laws should govern society – the laws of God or the statutes of men rooted in Judaism.

Since gods are the source of law, you can discover the god of that society by discovering its source of law.

In Jesus's mind, the Source of law was the LORD God; in the mind of the government workers, the source of law was their Sanhedrin and Mishna.

In the mind of Americans, the source of law is in WE THE PEOPLE. Democracy places the source of law in man. Can you say, idolatry?

HOW JESUS DROVE THE PHARISEES INSANE

Jesus was a man of Torah and He understood that law had limitations.

The Pharisees saw no limits to law and thought they could change the world by creating more rules to regulate society. They were not concerned with actual violations of God's law; but, they became "unglued" when men did not submit to their case law.

In their minds, the way to change society was to create more laws; the more laws government has, the more it can control the people. Jesus would have none of this.

Jesus loved liberty, but the government officials hated individual freedom.

They were a political party who thought they could change the world by multiplying laws and controlling men through regulations. They thought their codes applied to all men and were indignant when Jesus ignored their rules to heal the man.

When modern men think of freedom, they think of lawlessness -- the freedom to do anything they want. But, this is not liberty. It is a state of moral anarchy. Law is necessary for a civil society, but law has its limits. It cannot save or regenerate men, but properly exercised, it can purge evil from among men. Jesus believe in law -- limited law (God's law); the Pharisees believed in unlimited law -- in an infinite number of man-made laws, rules, and regulations.

Jesus understood there was no liberty without responsibility. He also knew that every time the rulers created a law, the people lost a freedom.

Jesus had compassion on the cripple and used his power to set the man free from his pain and suffering.

The government officials had no feelings for the man. Insentience dominated the ruling class. They were more interested in using the cripple to trap Jesus in a violation of their rules. Likewise today, government officials are uncompassionate people who see law as a means of controlling men.

Our Lord challenged their legal principle: "I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the **Sabbath** days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy *it*?"

Like government officials today, they would not answer Jesus' question. Because they were corrupt, they remained silent. Silence is a species of conduct. When government officials go mute, it is because they have been caught in an act of fraud.

Silence can only be equated with *fraud* where there is a legal or moral duty to speak or where an inquiry left unanswered would be intentionally misleading. [US v. Tweel, 550 F.2d 297, 299 (1977) quoting US v. Prudden, 424 F 2d 1021, 1032 (1970)].

Jesus expressed little concern about being in conformity with man-made statutes, but He had great concerns about being compliant with God's law.

The government officials had little interest in being compliant with God's law, but had great concerns about enforcing compliance with their statutes, rules, and regulations. In their minds, government was god; and, all state creatures must obey god government. Jesus would have none of this distorted, warped political view.

Jesus confronted the government officials for setting up a "speed trap" -- "Sabbath trap" designed to cite him for a statutory infraction of their rules.

They saw themselves as "good guys" because they obeyed the rules; and, they saw Jesus as a "bad guy" because He was so cavalier about their rules and regs. Therefore, the cripple was used as a means of entrapping Jesus into breaking their man-made statute.

Jesus did good, healed the man, and set him free.

Since God's law can be summarized under the principle, "Do no harm," Jesus did not break God's law by relieving the man of his suffering. There is no law against doing good. However, the government officials would rather see the man depressed and suffering than have one of their precious little deep state regulations ignored.

Likewise, if you do no harm, you have committed no crime! If you are charged for violating some statute, fight back and refuse to be trapped in some commercial scheme to control you and to transform *private property* (money) to *public property*.

When Jesus did not comply with their Sabbath case law regulations, he jabbed a sword into the heart of Judaism which sought to control men through law. They went totally berserk – "popped a cork" and "blew a fuse." And like law

enforcement agencies in present time, they kings of admiralty law saw Jesus as a threat to the system. He had to go! Accusation, indictment, trial, and execution clogged the arteries of these hardened hearts.

Just as government officials had little concern for God's law in Jesus' day, they have little concern for God's law in our time; just as the government officials in Jesus' day placed great emphasis on made statutes, government officials are vigorously concerned about the enforcement of man-made statutes today. Like the Party of the Pharisees hated freedom and demanded compliance to their rules, so modern government officials today are eager to penalized you for violating their *mala prohibita* statutes.

As the Pharisees perceived Jesus as a threat to Judaism, modern government workers see those who do not comply with their statutes and rules as a threat to their power.

Congressman Jerry Nadler said: "God's Will is No Concern of This Congress" (2-26-2021)

There is all the difference in the world between the rule of law (the Ten Commandments) and ruling men through law (multiplication of statutes).

The goal of the rule of law is to set men free; when men practice *rule by law* or the *rule of men*, the goal is to control man . . . enslave man . . . to make men slaves of the State.

May we know the difference!

And, as they crucified Jesus for non-compliance, State officials will punish you, dear Christian, if you do not submit to their totalitarian system which believes in the total subjugation of the total man to total government.

74. World Peace, "Hell No!"

Matthew 10:34

"Do not think that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I have not come to bring peace, but a sword.

You have heard people ask, "Why can't we all just get along"?

Bob Marley quipped, "one love, one heart . . . let's get together and feel right."

Nonsense!

The whole idea that sheep and wolves can get along in the same pasture and be friends is as crazy as playing with a pet rattlesnake.

You can't tune a broken piano!

Jesus didn't come along to get along. He came to make sons of the kingdom; and in a secondary sense to separate the sheep from the goats, the wheat from the tares, the godly from the ungodly, the pure from the impure, and the legitimate from the hypocrite through his preaching and teaching. His truth exposed the true condition of men.

Notice the corrective in the text, "Do not think . . . "

Jesus came to correct presumptions and to set the record straight; to let the world know He did not come to pet the goats, to water the tares, or to unite with perverts, lawbreakers, and psychopaths. He came to disjoin the righteous from the wicked.

His mission was not peace to a world full of narcissists, fornicators, liars, and thieves. Rather, he announced their condemnation and expulsion from His kingdom.

"Unless you (civil rulers) are born again, you shall not enter the kingdom of God," declared Jesus.

We are living in morally grey times where there is not a clear distinction between white and black, day and night, the righteous and the unrighteous. Up is down, right is wrong, good is evil, and evil is good. Dust covers Bibles. Minds are fuzzy. The sweet sound of moral absolutes has been drowned out by the bass drum of moral relativism (Isaiah 5:20).

The issue today is that you can hardly tell a difference between Republicans and Democrats, Congress and the mafia, the U.S. government and the New World Order. The two-party system is merely two wings on the same vulture ready to pluck the eye out of every hardworking American in order to feed its voracious appetite.

Madmen are seeking gender destruction, gender reassignment, gender neutral bathrooms, and same-gender marriage. All this gender bending is like placing your baby in front of a lawnmower

It is time to trounce it with truth, not tolerate it.

"In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary act."

We don't want unity, we want separation and more division — a clear, sharp, stinging division between good and evil, the honest and the dishonest, law keepers and lawbreakers, truth and lies, patriots and traitors, the industrious and dead beats, and between the producers and the takers.

Now is the time for division, divorce, dissolution, and dismemberment.

When the Hebrews bowed down and worshiped the *eggel hazahav* (golden calf), Moses asked, "Who is on the Lord's side"? After, the Levites joined him, he ordered them to strap on their swords and to dice those who would not drink from the water of repentance (Exodus 32).

Therefore, let us not go along and try to get along with all the rude, stoned, irresponsible, slobbering, lusty, greedy, and inept, stinkin', blue-suit psychos destroying this country.

Let's expose their abuse of power, their flagrant violations of oaths to obey the organic Constitution, and expose their use of force to pummel the People into submission by the claws of wolf-pack police force.

The belief that we can spend ourselves into prosperity has to die.

The bubble idea that there are no moral absolutes must be pricked.

The agitprop that all religions are the same, and that Christians and Muslims serve the same God be ought to be crushed by the elevator of truth.

The notion that *multiculturalism is a strength* ought to be exposed as a great weakness to overcome by intelligent Christians.

The ADL propaganda that America is built on the Judeo-Christian ethic rather than the Puritan Ethic should be plucked and de-feathered!

That we can invite the world to our shores and expect to survive as a nation must be crushed by the hammer of pragmatism.

There can be no world peace as long as the United Nations and the Banking elite continue to plunder the people; and, to force their secular NWO religion down our throats.

The lie that plundering, rioting, power-seeking "Black Lives Matter" Movement is somehow righteous ought to be crushed by the strong arm of justice.

What is needed is not more Americans repeating the "Pledge of Allegiance," but a more intense division between the moral achievers and the blood-suckin' parasites living off the American host.

We are only as strong as we divide the wheat from the chaff; and as weak as the power that unites us with carpetbaggers and felons.

Let all good Christian men follow the King Who is "Prince over the kings of the earth," and let them demand that civil rulers surrender to His law-order. Then, and only then can we have "one nation under God."

Now is not the time for unity!

Let us be God's attack lambs taking up the sword of truth to hack and slice our way through the propaganda and lies perpetrated through NBC, CBS, MSNBC, and Fox News.

Luke 12:51 Do you think that I have come to give peace on earth? No, I tell you, but rather division.

75. Jesus v. the Pharisees

Matthew 15:1-8

How Jesus Practiced Law

IN THE SUPERIOR COURT

Pharisees

Plaintiffs

v.

Case No. Mt 15:1-8 circa 31 A.D.

Jesus

Defendant /

Counter Plaintiff

A STUDY ON THE DEFENSE OF JESUS AGAINST LEGAL ACCUSATIONS

Introduction: Jesus practiced law because practicing law was the common law right of man. But, the Pharisees and Scribes [lawyers] hated him for it because he did not have a license from the Sanhedrin to practice law.

The Complaint: *Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, "Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread."*

The Answer to the Complaint and Counterclaim: *But he answered and said unto them, "Why do **you** also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition"?*

- **Citation of the law in support of his Counterclaim:** *For God commanded, saying, Honor thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.*
- **Presentation of facts in support of Counterclaim:** *But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; And Honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free.*
- **Summary:** *Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.*

Conclusion:

“Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoreth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments [laws and statutes] of men.” (Matthew 15:8)

- **Answer to the Complaint:** it is not what goes into a man’s mouth . . . but what comes out . . .

LEGAL LESSONS

The lawyers charged Jesus’ disciples with violating public policy—a felony worthy of death or imprisonment or flogging. But, notice this was a political charge. The disciples had injured no one nor had they injured any property. This was political entrapment –a scheme of the state.

Jesus did not go on the defensive; He went on the offensive. When in doubt — attack, attack, and attack! You are God’s attack lamb; that is, point out the deficiencies of the lawyer bringing a complaint against you.

Jesus knew the rules and he studied the behavior of these lawyers and charged them with breaking the laws—the supreme laws of the land—God’s law. The problem is that most of us don’t understand how judges and lawyers break their own laws. WE MUST UNDERSTAND WHAT LAWS THE JUDGES AND LAWYERS ARE BREAKING!

FOLLOW THIS PATTERN:

1. State your counterclaim
2. Site the authority for your counterclaim
3. Site the facts supporting your counterclaim
4. Summarize and Conclude.

In Summary, when you are confronted by a police officer, judge, D.A. or adversary, consider using Jesus tactics. Don't go on the defensive, go on the offensive. State your counterclaim because counterclaims have to be heard first in law. Avoid ranting, emotional reactions, overstate rhetoric. Stick to the basics. Stick to the basic. State your charge, Site the law, Supply the facts, and summarize your case.

76. If Jesus Lived in America

Luke 1:35

“And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.”

Take a journey with me and imagine what it would be like if Christ was born and lived in our time.

If Jesus Was Born America

If Jesus had been born in modern American, the authorities would have questioned the sanity of his parents for having an unassisted home delivery.

Some government social worker would inform the D.A. to have them prosecuted for endangering the life of a child by placing him on a hay stack, in a manger, in a corral with sheep and donkeys present.

U.S. Child Protective Services would take Jesus away from Joseph and Mary because the barn would be considered unsuitable for a nursery.

In America, the social worker would take Mary and Joseph to court to have them declared incompetent. After all, Mary was still a teenager—kind of an unwed mother with claims of being a virgin; Joseph's only means of transportation was sandals and a donkey; and, all they could afford for clothes for her baby was sackcloth. And, giving birth in a stable? How unstable can that be?

If Jesus had been born in an American hospital, he would be registered as an “asset” or “human resource” with the State.

His blood and DNA would be taken, analyzed, and registered in some government bio-bank without the knowledge or consent of his parents.

Mary would be issued a birth / death certificate with the name "JESUS" on it, some kind of foreign situs trust. Further, his mother would be considered a "corporate person" and her name typed as "MARY HELI." The government CERTIFICATE would receive a number, registered through the probate court, BONDED, and then sold on the NY Stock Exchange. Jesus would be issued a social security / taxpayer identification number by the IMF / Federal Reserve and deemed a "debtor" or "surety" for the debts created by the "UNITED STATES, INC."

Further, Mary and Joseph would be required to fill out a mandatory government questionnaire inquiring into the habits, income, and housing of the couple to see if they would be fit parents.

If they did not vaccinate Jesus, they would be arrested for being "selfish" and for endangering his life and the lives of other children.

If they did vaccinate Jesus, we might have an autistic Savior.

What about going down to Egypt? The little family would face the risk of arrest for crossing the border into Egypt without a "U.S. citizen" passport. Mary and Joseph might have been shuttled to a private for-profit detention center for managing immigrants. If Joseph couldn't provide proof he paid his taxes, the family might not be allowed back into the United States.

What if Herod's assassination of the children in Bethlehem had happened in America? Well, let's just say the cops were doing their job when a few locals got in the way of their unlawful search and seizure campaign.

In the United States, cops have more of a chance of being hit by a meteor than being prosecuted for criminal misconduct.

At Age Twelve in America

Remember when Jesus went to the temple at age twelve and was separated from his parents? If that had happened in America, Mary and Joseph could be arrested for permitting Jesus to walk down the street "unsupervised," or going to the temple complex without an escort, or jailed for parental negligence.

Jesus would have been suspended from the temple under a "zero tolerance policy" for asking too many questions to authorities.

Being home schooled in the United States is suspect at best and illegal in some jurisdictions. Even though Jesus was the smartest kid in the synagogue, his parents might be prosecuted by the DOJ as "domestic terrorists" or "right-wing conservative extremists" that pose a threat to the safety and security of the United States. The Missouri Information Analysis Center labeled Christians and homeschoolers and people who believe in limited government as potential terrorists . . . and a dangerous enemy!

Rather than disappearing from society till age 30, Jesus and his parents would be fingerprinted and their movements tracked through U.S. surveillance programs courtesy of NSA.

His Baptism in America

Jesus would be flagged and placed on surveillance for associating with the radical political activist, John the Baptist.

And, the place of his baptism? Would Jesus be required to obtain a license for a public assembly at that a designated River under the control of the Bureau of Land Management? Was the baptismal tank approved by the health inspector? And, don't forget the park fee.

His Temptation in America

Talking to spirits and thin from fasting, those watching Jesus at his temptation would definitely consider him psychotic. Possibly, the authorities would have him undergo a competency exam and placed in a mental health facility with mandatory group therapy. No doubt his parents would be blamed for his condition.

Today's wildlife authorities would have him charged and fined for criminal homelessness, camping without a permit, sleeping on a public sidewalk, loitering, and fishing without a license. Jesus even built campfires without a permit. Heck, in America, the land of the free, he'd spend the next twenty years in prison for violating federal and state statutes for starting a fire without a permit on public lands.

His Ministry in America

If Jesus preached in American, he would be charged for preaching outside "free speech zones." He would be "detained," taken to the local police station, and charged with disturbing the peace, preaching without a license, and unauthorized exercise of free speech rights. In America, the government claims to have the power to regulate the time, place, manner, mode, method and content of a speech in the name of free speech.

Remember when Jesus called Herod a "fox," and when he called the Jewish rulers "liars" and "of the Devil"? No doubt, He would have been charged with hate speech, intolerant speech, threatening speech, incendiary speech, inflammatory speech, and racial extremist speech, and antisemitism. The American Jewish ADL would demand "safe spaces" to be protected from Jesus because "Jews' Lives Matter the Most!"

And, what about feeding the 5000 without a license? Today's restaurant police would cite Jesus for breaking all kinds of health laws: failure to wash hands, not using gloves and a hair net, serving food without a license, opening up a

food catering business without a permit, inadequate sanitation practices, and failure to pass cooking inspections by the local food and safety inspector.

And, what about traveling on the public highways? Somehow, I can't see Jesus getting a "license" from the State to travel and do His Father's will. Can you?

Would the BATF charge Jesus for operating a moonshine business in the hillbilly country Galilee? Bootlegging six pots of wine to the marriage feast in Cana would be a criminal act in America. Not only did he make "moonshine wine" without a license, he didn't pay the \$2.24 cent tax per liter. If busted by the BATF, Jesus would have been labeled a "moonshiner" and sentenced to a federal prison—three years for producing spirits without a license and thirty years in prison for not paying the excise tax.

And, what about Jesus' law lectures: "By what authority are you doing these things, and who gave you this authority?" queried the Jewish BAR Association. They reasoned that if Jesus did not have a degree from the law school of Hillel or Shammai, Jesus was not qualified to practice law. In fact, the American Jewish BAR association would definitely have him charged for practicing law without a license—for holding himself out to be some kind of expert in law . . . and giving legal advice without a BAR certificate.

What about Jesus' medical practice? He touched people without wearing gloves; and, gave medical advice on what and what not to do. He accepted the title the "Great Physician," but didn't intern with any approved medical school. He not only diagnosed medical conditions, he performed open eye surgery, and cured diseases using hundreds of unconventional methods and remedies—all without a license. Oh, the audacity of the man!

And, what about medical neglect (Mark 2)? Jesus left critically ill patients to go on a lecture circuit to give speeches about spiritual healing. Today's medical board would cite him for medical negligence at best or medical malpractice at worse.

And, going across the Sea of Galilee? Did he have a boating license?

The Department of Game and Fish would cite him for an overcrowded boat and reckless endangerment of the lives of passengers. Because he was awakened out of his sleep and still groggy, the boat patrol would cite Him with BUI, Boating Under the Influence, failure to stop a vessel for a Law Enforcement Officer, boating during dangerous weather, and not having Sufficient Personal Flotation Devices on board.

And, what about the two-thousand pig stampede into the Sea of Galilee. Isn't this the very definition of domestic terrorism? He destroyed an entire swine corporation. The pig cops would definitely arraign him on charges of willful

malicious destruction of property . . . and, don't forget about the unlawful disposal of dead bodies on State owned lake! Can you spell, B I G T R O U B L E?

And, Jesus chasing out the money-changers and overturning banking tables at the temple? Well, this was over the top: S.W.A.T teams with hand grenades and military equipment would have swarmed the temple complex. The FBI would have gang-tackled him, slammed him to the ground, and cuffed him.

The DOJ, urged on by the Jews, would have charged Jesus with conspiracy, criminal mischief, treason, domestic terrorism, interference with banking, intimidation, coercion, disturbing the peace, influencing public policy, violation of all kinds of criminal laws, disrupting commerce, preaching without a license, willful malicious damage of public property, threatening people with a whip, and intentionally, recklessly, and maliciously creating a riot (18 U.S.C. §2331).

And what about the Olivet Discourse? NSA would have intercepted Jesus' prediction about the destruction of the temple complex – the center of government in Israel. In America, the FBI and CIA and NSA would have grabbed Jesus, cuffed him, and charged him with conspiracy to overthrow the government, obstruction of commerce, threatening to damage government property, retaliation against government officials, inciting terrorism and the like.

And, we could say more.

The point is this. That if Jesus had been born in our time, he would have been shot, arrested, handcuffed, imprisoned, or just “disappeared” without a trace because of the modern surveillance police state. No matter how much he'd try not to ruffle the feathers of politicians, he would have died an early death in the “land of the free” where no criminal is left behind – not because He was a criminal in any way, but because of the present political climate in a police state.

So, you call yourself a Christian? Well, if you are not on some government hate list, what kind of disciple are you? If you are not in conflict with some three letter bully gang like the FBI, IRS, or CIA, how can you say you are following Jesus? And, if you are staring down government bullies, good for you, you are in good company.

So, you are wearing the mask of a pastor. Why haven't you been arrested for violating some public policy? If you are “squeaky clean,” how can you say you are a follower of the Nazarene?

But, Beware!

When government is god in the minds of religious men, you cannot expect them not to betray you.

77. Herod v. Peter

Acts 12

THE SUPERIOR COURT

Presiding Judge: the Risen Christ

The Lawful Assembly in Judea (intervenors)

Plaintiffs

v.

Criminal Case: **ACTS 12 Circa 44AD**

Herod Agrippa

Defendant

NOTICE OF VOID JUDGMENT WITH SANCTIONS POSTMORTEM

COMES NOW Dr. Loukas, executor with ministerial duties to our Sovereign, on behalf of the lawful assembly of Judea, living souls redeemed by the blood of Christ, mature in age and competent to plead, by the Authority and Power delegated to us solely by the Grace of God, in and through our Lord Jesus Christ, in accordance with His Commandments and Testimonies as revealed in Holy Writ, sole by and under the Leading Warrant in Law and by His Will do post this **NOTICE OF VOID JUDGMENT WITH SANCTIONS POSTMORTEM** at the gates for public edification:

WHEREAS King Herod Agrippa, hereafter "Herod," partook of the forbidden fruit on the poisonous tree and refused to repent and believe the gospel; and,

WHEREAS Herod entered the venue of the Lord Jesus Christ having no lineage to the tree of life, abiding in death, *persona non standi in judicio*, without authority for His presence, to disturb the peace in God's kingdom regarding His beloved bondservants, James and Peter; and,

WHEREAS Herod having relied upon hearsay in an alien law order not recognized in the dominions of Christ; and having no standing in law, regarded idolatrous dogmas and expedient traditions of politicians originating with the vain imagination of men; and,

WHEREAS Herod with *dolos malus*,⁷⁴ under the Serpent's rule, having no *in rem jurisdiction* over the Lord's property, and no *in persona* jurisdiction over Christ's bondservants, and no *subject matter* jurisdiction over the ministerial duties of God's servants; and,

WHEREAS Herod with *animus nocendi*⁷⁵ acted on mere allegations unsupported by facts setting forth a genuine issue for trial, under color of law, under laws unintelligible and unfamiliar to us, under laws alien to the Law and Testament of our Lord and Savior Jesus for whom we minister; and, having failed affirmatively to show Probable Cause based on sworn testimony testifying of injury to person or property, did willfully, maliciously, and recklessly issue a miscreant warrant to arrest James and Peter, ministers of the Lord Jesus Christ; and,

WHEREAS Herod having declared war on God's law order refused "his Assent to Law, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good," proceeded without *corpus delecti*,⁷⁶ without Lawful authority from our Only Sovereign upon whose shoulders all de jure governments are founded, without due process, without probable cause, without providing witnesses in favor of these ministers to come forward did falsify, slander, malign, charge, indict, judge, and condemn Christ's bondservants to be executed; and, Herod with malice of forethought to *debellat*⁷⁷ the saints, did execute James, an innocent with clean hands having no nexus to Rome, in violation of the Sixth Commandment. Further, He with *mala intendo* did unlawfully enjoin Peter, an innocent with clean hands; and,

WHEREAS we the lawful assembly in Judea did formally assemble by lawful right to petition our Sovereign Judge, the Lord Jesus Christ, and did interpose with petitions for injunctive relief on behalf of Peter do post this

PUBLIC NOTICE:

WHEREAS there is only One Lawgiver who is able to save and destroy, and since His superior court is never in recess, despite the defects of our persons

⁷⁴ Dolos malus: a craft of politicians employed for the purpose of deception.

⁷⁵ Animus nocendi: mind of harming

⁷⁶ Corpus delicti: body of crime; i.e., a judiciary can't proceed without tangible evidence of a crime.

⁷⁷ Debellatio: warring down or wearing down the opposition.

and the defects of our petitions, the Judge heard our pleas; and (A) issued a Void Judgment with severe Sanctions against Herod for overreaching his de facto authority; and, for his violations of the Supreme Law of our Sovereign; and (B) ordered the immediate release of Peter; and (C) refused to intervene in the execution of bailiffs because they were unlawfully posing as police officers, and because they were compliant with unlawful orders and did not interpose to uphold the God-given rights of the innocents; and (D) ordered the immediate execution of Herod Agrippa circa March 5, in the 43rd year of our Lord at a public assembly in Caesarea because he ate of the poisonous tree and disturbed the peace in our Lord's dominions.

De Facto authorities acting under color of law, **SO NOTICED AND WARNED.**

Dr. Loukas

NOTICE OF VOID JUDGMENT was accepted by the Court, Herod charged, condemned, and executed for crimes against humanity by an order of the Superior Court circa 44 CE. Furthermore, saith naught.

Luke: God's bondservant, executor, historian, and court investigator

"The Judge withstanding in the superior court"- James 5:9

78. Sweet Jesus Whippin' the Banksters

John 2:15

John 2:15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables;

Revelation 18:21, 23 The great city of Babylon be thrown down . . . for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

Introduction

When commercial interest gained control of God's temple, our Sovereign Lord made a scourge of small cords and drove out the money-changers.

The Banksters are back!

America is totally controlled by the Jewish banking elite known as the International Monetary Cartel. And, this den of thieves a.k.a. “Occupied Wall Street” has driven America into incalculable debt and the people into poverty and joblessness.

Isn't it about time to make whips and drive out the Banksters again?

Facts About the Passage

First, the pronoun “he” refers to our one and only Sovereign, the Lord Jesus Christ, Lord of the Sabbath, Master and Commander, King of kings, the only Lawgiver.

The term “money-changer” (*kollubistes*) means “bankers” or “Banksters” in the pejorative sense of the term. Because Roman coins had the image of Caesar on them, temple administrators required “offerings” and “purchases” be made with Hebrew shekels. Thus, currency was exchanged – for a price.

Second, the term “tables” (*trapeza*) was the bench or counter on which banking transactions were conducted. The term *trapeza* is properly translated “bank” in Luke 19:23; that is, the table was the bank. In overthrowing the bench, the Lord extinguished banking activity and banned Babylonian banking practices in the nation.

Third, the temple complex was both a **civil and religious center**. There was no separation of church and state in Israel. The temple was the seat of Moses, the center where the Sanhedrin met to manage national affairs; and, it was also the place of worship, the center of redemption and reconciliation of the people to God. That is, in driving the money changers out of the temple complex, he was driving the Banksters out of the nation – out of civil government as well as *church* government.

Fourth, the Lord Jesus Christ established an absolute principle: “Make not my Father’s House an house of merchandise.”

The Greek word “merchandise” is *emporion* from which we get the word *emporium*. The term refers to “a center of trade” or “center of commerce” or “retail store that sells articles.”

The verb “make” (*poeite*) is a present, active imperative meaning that good Christian men are to constantly, perpetually resist and fight Merchant Law. The negative demands negation of specific acts; that is, negative law limits government. It imposes a duty on man to deal with a particular evil.

Emporiums are run by merchants under merchant law. Thus, we conclude that in driving out the Banksters, our Sovereign was abolishing commercial interests and Merchant Law in government as well as the church.

Fifth, the Banksters were Jews, not Gentiles. These Jews partook of the forbidden fruit of the poisonous tree, and were barred from the tree of life and the benefits of the Kingdom of God. Most of these Jewish Banksters learned their trade secrets from the University of Babylon, the rabbinical center of Judaism during the Intertestamental Period.

In driving the Jewish Banksters out of the temple complex, our Master was not being “anti-Semitic.” He dealt with the source of evil. The poisonous root was Talmudic Jews who broke the Tenth Commandment of their One and only Lawgiver (Isaiah 33:22).

Sixth, the Lord God condemned the Banksters because they intentionally, maliciously, recklessly violated the Tenth Commandment, “Thou shall not covet thy neighbor’s *property* . . .”

This commandment had the effect and force of law; that is, government is responsible to identify the lawbreakers and to punish them. So, what is meant by “*covet*”? Is God sanctioning “thought police” or the lawful motive of making money? The answer, of course, is “No!”

Covetous is more than desire. Sin arises when evil desire is coupled with **subversive plans** and **clever schemes** to unlawfully possess the property of another—such as the “income tax” and “property tax” and “home loans” that shift wealth from the family to the State under color of law. Thus, the Son made a whip and banned the Banksters because their money-changing operation was not a legitimate (*something lawful*) business, but a financial contrivance deployed to fleece God’s flock.

Seventh, in Luke 19:46 our Lord referred to the Jewish Banksters as a “*den of thieves*.” He was not addressing petty theft, but constructive, institutional fraud on a grand scale by government Sanhedrin officials. This was a “*den of thieves*,” not a thief’s hideout. The Banksters banded together to protect their commercial schemes so they could fleece God’s flock while performing religious duties; that is, these Jewish Banksters used the power of the State and the color of law to hide thievery (trade secrets).

Eighth, though rudimentary, these Babylonian Jewish Banksters excelled in the art of loan-sharking and money-changing during our Lord’s sojourn on earth.

Just as the simple serpent in the Garden of Eden grew into a hideous dragon in Revelation (12), Jewish usury grew into a huge, complex, hideous international Monster through the centuries which the apostle John called “*Mystery Babylon*”

or the “*Great Harlot*.” Complete with “sorceries” (Rev. 18:23), the whole earth comes under the spell of this hideous Banking Magician. These “sorceries” (the UCC Code) include a depository of magic tricks: credit card scams, Federal Reserve Notes, foreclosures mills, electronic funds, interest on nothing, income, wages, junk bonds, toxic securities, derivatives, filter stocks, and other fictitious assets.

These Jewish, serpent Banksters active during our Lord’s lifetime morphed into the grotesque Ashkenazi Banking Monster we know today:

- Ben Bernanke, Federal Reserve Bank or FED.
- Thomas J. Benison of JPMorgan Chase & Company;
- James J. Hill of Morgan Stanley;
- Athanassios Diplas of Deutsche Bank;
- Paul Hamill of UBS;
- Paul Mitrokostas of Barclays;
- Andy Hubbard of Credit Suisse;
- Oliver Frankel of Goldman Sachs;
- Ali Balali of Bank of America; and
- Biswarup Chatterjee of Citigroup.”
- Trilateral Commission
- Council on Foreign Relations, Club Rome, and the modern Illuminati.
- The IRS, the collection agency for the International Monetary fund.

With all three branches of government in bed with the banking prostitutes; and, with “religious societies” (a.k.a. “churches”) committing fornication with the Banksters’ bedroom master, the IRS, isn’t it about time God’s bondservants made a cat of nine tails to drive out the Thieves again?

Or, maybe we should implore Heaven to use a millstone and throw the covetous hookers into sea (Revelation 18:21).

79. Salvation by Caesar

Acts 4:12

“Salvation is to be found in none other save Augustus, and there is no other name given to men in which they can be saved.”

Source: CA Farmer 241:5 (Oct. 5, 1974), p. 28.

According to the German historian, Ethelbert Stauffer, the religious principle of the Roman Empire, from the days of Augustus on, was **salvation by Caesar**:

“Salvation is to be found in none other save Augustus, and there is no other name given to men in which they can be saved.”

This helps us to understand the boldness of St. Peter, and the total power he declared rested in Christ, when he said of Jesus Christ, “Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved” (Acts 4:12).

When Peter preached that Jesus was Lord, he declared war on Rome.

Modern Christians, by their devotion to the State, have fallen into the pre-Christian error that the State is god . . . and only the state can save us politically, economically, and socially.

War between Christ and Caesar, the Christians and Rome, was thus inevitable. The state and its emperors claimed to offer salvation. The church declared that salvation was only in Christ.

We are again in the age of Caesars, of political saviors. All over the world, politicians proclaim their plans of salvation, and the cornerstone of their building is man. “Look unto me,” say these false saviors, “Vote for me and be saved.”

St. Peter faced a hostile nation whose hope of salvation was in freedom from Rome. Thus the Zealots, or revolutionists, had a large popular following. Salvation for them meant their own political order. For the Roman overlords and their followers, salvation meant Caesar’s rule and plan.

St. Peter ruled out, not only all other religions, but all the political plans of salvation with his blunt words:

“Neither is there salvation in any other.”

Christ is unique, and His salvation is exclusive. He is THE way, and the ONLY way to God.

Peter made salvation emphatically clear when he said, “for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.”

That “All road leads to heaven,” is untrue. There are no other paths to the Father, but Jesus Christ . . . but there are many roads to hell!

This means that false political saviors will not give men salvation but ruin. False religious saviors are magicians with tricks and delusions. Truth is exclusive. We cannot say that two plus two can equal five, nor can we play games with truth.

Thus, as we are confronted by political and other saviors, we must stand with St. Peter and declare: None other name!

Source: Rev. R.J. Rushdoony (1916-2001) was the founder of Chalcedon and a leading theologian, church/state expert, and author of numerous works on the application of Biblical Law to society.

Note: Legally, this is Peter’s Notice of Void Judgment to the Sanhedrin, Rule 60 of the Rules of Civil Procedure.

1. The general rule is that a void judgment is no judgment at all. Where judgments are void, as was the judgment originally rendered by the court here, any subsequent proceedings based upon the void judgment are themselves on the face void initio, Donte Lamar Jones v. Commonweal of Virginia, No. 16-1337, On Petition for a Writ of Certiorari To the Virginia Supreme Court, Singh v. Mooney, 261 Va. 48, 51–52 (2001),
2. A voidable order is an order that must be declared void by a judge to be void; a void order is an order issued without jurisdiction by a judge and is void ab initio and does not have to be declared void by a judge to be void. Only an inspection of the record of the case showing that the judge was without jurisdiction or violated a person’s due process rights, or where fraud was involved in the attempted procurement of jurisdiction, is sufficient for an order to be void. Potenz Corp. v. Petrozzini, 170 Ill. App. 3d 617, 525 N.E. 2d 173, 175 (1988). In instances herein, the law has stated that the orders are void ab initio and not voidable because they are already void.
3. That the United States Supreme Court has clearly, and repeatedly, held that any judge who acts without jurisdiction is engaged in an act of treason. U.S. v. Will, 449 U.S. 200, 216, 101, S. Ct. 471, 66 L.Ed. 2d 392, 406 (1980): Cohens v. Virginia, 19 U.S. (6 Wheat) 264, 404, 5 L.Ed 257 (1821).
4. A voidable order is an order that must be declared void by a judge to be void; a void order is an order issued without jurisdiction by a judge and is void ab initio and does not have to be declared void by a judge to be void. Only an inspection of the record of the case showing that the judge was

without jurisdiction or violated a person's due process rights, or where fraud was involved in the attempted procurement of jurisdiction, is sufficient for an order to be void. Potenz Corp. v. Petrozzini, 170 Ill. App. 3d 617, 525 N.E. 2d 173, 175 (1988). In instances herein, the law has stated that the orders are void ab initio and not voidable because they are already void.

5. In essence, no judgment existed from which the trial court could adopt either findings of fact or conclusions of law. Valley Vista Development Corp. v. City of Broken Arrow, 766 P.2d 344, 1988 OK 140 (Okla. 12/06/1988);
6. A void judgment is, in legal effect, no judgment at all. By it no rights are divested; from it no rights can be obtained. Being worthless, in itself, all proceedings founded upon it are necessarily equally worthless, and have no effect whatever upon the parties or matters in question. A void judgment neither binds nor bars anyone. All acts performed under it, and all claims flowing out of it, are absolutely void. The parties attempting to enforce it are trespassers." High v. Southwestern Insurance Company, 520 P.2d 662, 1974 OK 35 (Okla. 03/19/1974);
7. A void judgment cannot constitute res judicata. Denial of previous motions to vacate a void judgment could not validate the judgment or constitute res judicata, for the reason that the lack of judicial power inheres in every stage of the proceedings in which the judgment was rendered. Bruce v. Miller, 360 P.2d 508, 1960 OK 266 (Okla. 12/27/1960).

80. Are All Powers from God?

Romans 13:1

“If Jesus is Lord, it is not possible or desirable to repeatedly submit to any government” (B. Stockton)

The fundamental premise of this work is that Jesus Christ is Lord, the King of the Nations, and the Prince of the Rulers of the Earth. The man who lives by His law does his neighbor no harm and is a threat to no man (Jeremiah 10:7; Romans 13:8; Revelation 1:5).

The gospel is the good news that God reigns (Psalm 97), and that His rule has entered history in and through His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ (Mark 1:14-15). This gospel “turned the world” right side up by teaching another king, King Jesus (Acts 17:6-7).

But, in recent times, the gospel of the kingdom of God has been clouded by theological balderdash and Christians calling for obedience to overreaching police states. The fetters shackling believers is the misapplication of Romans 13.

Are we Americans required to obey the orders of every cop, administrator, and government worker?

Most learned American would probably say, “No!” But, most ministers would probably say, “Yes!” based on their presumptions and beliefs about Romans 13.

The way we interpret and APPLY Romans 13 determines how we interact with government.

Romans 13:1 Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

The phrase “*Let every soul*” (*psuche*) is a Hebraism meaning, “let every man (anthropos).” The term “souls” refers to living, breathing human beings, not corporations or artificial entities.

The adjective “*every*” or “*all*” (*pa’sa*) is in the emphatic position emphasizing the fact that God wants all men to obey the command. The term “*every*” includes kings, prime ministers, presidents, governors, generals, and sheriffs, and mayors, and citizens.

The word “*subject*” (*huppotasso*) is a military term referring to soldiers who are required to submit to and obey their commander. “Subject” is a present, active participle enjoining “*every soul*” to obey the powers ordained of God.

The imperative to “*be subject*” is not dependent upon the form of government whether it be a dictatorship, a monarchy, a parliament, republic, or democracy. Any form of government is acceptable to God when that government acknowledges His sovereignty and limits its activities to its divinely appointed purpose. The whole idea that democracy is superior to a benevolent monarchy is nothing more than communist propaganda.

Furthermore, *God not only commands the people, but princes to be in submission to Him*. Civil rulers are not without the claims of God.

Because God does not call rulers to do evil, Christians have a duty to resist evil when evil becomes public policy.

If “*leaders*” regularly do miscreant things, harming the state and the people, this simply reveals that these are not men God has called to lead.

Moreover, the term “*authority*” itself is *not* singular, but is composed of all the established magistrates. And therefore, the duty to resist evil acts by one government source does not license us to resist all authority, for a lesser magistrate can resist an evil, higher magistrate.

We have no authority to resist the institution of government or the office, but we have a duty to resist miscreant officers and aberrant policies that do more harm than good.

The God of the Bible called Nineveh to repent (Jonah 3), judged Egypt for its sins (Isaiah 19), and weighed Babylon (Belshazzar) in His scales (Daniel 5). If the ultimate authority is man, then all things must serve man and surrender to man’s authority. If the ultimate authority is the Christian God, then all rulers and their governments must serve Him and surrender to His Law-word.

The plural noun “authorities” (exousia) informs us that there are multiple jurisdictions and levels of authority within institutions. The word is used over 102 times in the New Testament. It refers to duties that have been committed by a grantor to trustee(s) for the good of beneficiaries. In this text, God is the Grantor; rulers are the trustees; and citizens are the beneficiaries.

Just because a person shows up in a black uniform with a badge does not mean they have authority over you or anyone else.⁷⁸ Men in black only gain

⁷⁸ A smiling baby with a thick head of black hair, Ingrid Ronan Johnson was born to a Miccosukee mother and a white father, inside Baptist Hospital in Kendall. Two days later, police detectives arrived at the hospital acting on a court order to remove the baby from the new parents. The order was not signed by a Florida judge, but by a tribal court judge on a reservation 32 miles away in the heart of the Everglades. The cops were from the Miccosukee police force, a department whose jurisdiction covers

jurisdiction if they are properly bonded⁷⁹, and if there is “probable cause” like a crime being committed (Amendment IV).

The duties committed to trustees in Romans 13 must be in compliance with the “*ordinance of God*” (v. 2) (Biblical duties [law] given by God to men) or what the Framers of the Constitution would call the protection of individual rights and the administration justice.

“*Higher powers*” refers to civil rulers working through the apparatus of government. It does not refer to general principles of corporations. The duties of State are carried out through individuals.

The term “ordained” means “to put in order,” “to decree,” or “to establish.”

God did not abdicate His sovereignty when He ordained civil authority on earth: “*The LORD hath prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom ruleth over all*” (Psalm 103:19) because He is the “*King of the nations*” (Jeremiah 10:7). All who receive power are responsible to God and held accountable to Him.

God not only ordains the institution of government, He has a hand in the selection of its leaders.

Promotion comes not from east and west, but from God (Psalm 75:6, 7).

He appoints good rulers to an obedient people and He is involved in appointing foolish rulers to foolish people as judgment against their folly. God not only promotes good rulers to test man’s obedience, He permits evil administrators to arise within a system to test whether men will obey God or government? (See Isaiah 19)

NOTICE that the subject of government is a religious and theological issue. Both justice and injustice have their altars of religion. Therefore, the Christian must look at the government through the lens of Holy Scripture as a subtopic of Systematic Theology . . . and not through the lens of government propaganda or the frivolous opinions of statisticians.

Can we imagine a more loving plan for government than one appointed of God that acknowledges the authority of Christ, that encourages people to pursue

mainly the reservation and properties owned by the tribe. The hospital on Sunday allowed the baby to be taken away.

<http://www.miamiherald.com/news/local/community/miami-dade/article206139429.html#storylink=cpy>

⁷⁹ WE THE PEOPLE do not require badges. Most states require elected or appointed officers to take an oath to support the Constitution, and to post a faithful performance bond as evidence of their sincerity. If they have not posted a bond, they are imposters posing as a government officer.

virtue that protects our God-given rights, that restrains lascivious behavior, and that prosecutes criminals with zeal and integrity?

The government to which God requires Christians to submit is a government that derives its authority from the Lord God and organizes its penal laws around the principles and precepts in God's Law-word.

Only this kind of government is ordained of God. All others are usurpers and pretenders—that is, *de facto* governments. Any obedience rendered to these is out of fear.

Modern man teaches that the subject of government is purely a secular endeavor and that the political process survives best where *the doctrine of separation of church and state*⁸⁰ are radically enforced. This is a pure falsehood. The Lord is the ONLY Lawgiver (James 4:10), and all government is under His jurisdiction.

Jeremiah 10:7 Who would not fear thee, O King of nations? for to thee doth it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their kingdoms, there is none like unto thee.

Psalms 22:28 says, "for dominion belongs to the Lord, and he rules over the nations."

Modern secular men abuse the First Amendment by insisting that Christian beliefs be separated from political action. This ideology plays right into the hands of secular men who would like to eradicate every vestige of Christianity in public debate.

The Bill of Rights is not a grant of power by the people to the State; but, a limitation of power of the State by the people.

The First Amendment meant *Congress* is limited from setting up a national denomination and *Congress* is limited from prohibiting the free exercise of religion. The First Amendment does not limit faith or the people, only the government (*Wallbuilders on Separation of Church and State*).

⁸⁰ The phrase "separation of church and state" is not in the Constitution. The phrase "wall of separation between the church and the state" was originally coined by Thomas Jefferson in a letter to the Danbury Baptists on January 1, 1802 describing how the two institutions act separately under divine decree; that is, the government has no authority over the church, and the church has no authority over the State. It does not mean that individual Christians can't rely upon their faith or express their faith to influence public policy. This would play right into the hands of atheists, humanists, and secularists who seek to influence public policy through their beliefs.

No thinking Christian would turn the government over to be run by secular men. Legitimate authority exists by divine decree. The whole idea that government is a secular concern and that Christians have no claim on the topic of government is secular propaganda – the result of humanistic indoctrination—a perversion of the doctrine of separation of church and State to muzzle Christians from speaking out on political issues.

“Political secularism, he says, recognizes the legitimacy and even moral necessity of religious faith, while preventing any one faith from being established. Philosophical secularism, on the other hand, views religion more negatively and attempts to establish a common unbelief as a basis for government” (Wilfred McClay, Angle Conference, Key West, Florida, 2007)

It is God, not man that established the institution of government (Genesis 9; 1 Samuel 8-9). In fact, the First Pentecost was a civil Pentecost wherein the Spirit came upon leaders of a nation (Numbers 11). Just as He is Head of the Church, He is King of the nations.

Jeremiah 10:7 Who would not fear thee, O King of nations? for to thee doth it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their kingdoms, there is none like unto thee.

Revelation 1:5 and from Jesus Christ the faithful witness, the firstborn of the dead, and the ruler of kings on earth. To him who loves us and has freed us from our sins by his blood

The “Got Questions Organization” preaches that Christians need to submit to government, regardless of its character, just because it exists.

Did God ordain Nimrod, the Pharaohs, the Viking kings, the Huns, the Canaanite kings, Mussolini, Pol Pot, Mao Tse Tung and other tyrants and expect believers to submit to their every wish and whim? Of course not! Even the Hebrew judges organized a *COUP* d’état against the Philistines, Moabites, and Ammonites in order to restore the God-ordained order in Israel. It would be an error to believe that a Stalin or a gang leader is ordained of God. Our Lord does not require us to acquiesce to tyranny. This would be like saying it is good to submit to evil.

Paul called Christians to expose evil, not to submit to it.

Ephesians 5:11 Take no part in the unfruitful works of darkness, but instead expose them.

Evil is not in the environment, it is within men. Evil is not in government, it is in men who run the government. When evil seeks to score a touchdown on the gridiron of politics, it is the duty of the good guys to tackle the bad guy with

the pigskin regardless of his status in the league. When King Ahab tried to do an end run around the law “thou shall not steal; thou shall not kill” regarding Naboth and his vineyard, Elijah caught up with him and gave the civil ruler a message from God, “because you have sold yourself to do what is evil in the sight of the LORD. . . . I will destroy you” (1 Kings 21:20). You can’t do this if you think your duty is to submit to authorities just because they exist.

Some pastors are so insistent this verse means absolute obedience to government that they condemn the Framers for starting the Revolutionary War. Even John MacArthur, for whom I have enormous respect, has said, “So the United States was actually born out of a violation of New Testament principles, and any blessings God has bestowed on America have come in spite of that disobedience by the Founding Fathers.”

John is in error here. It was not the Framers who rebelled against England, it was King George who rebelled against God’s law, the rule of law, and violated the principles of good government (See the Declaration for the atrocities of King George.)

Our country was born out of resistance to an overreaching State. When King George rebelled against God’s law and his duty to the colonies, 56 colonial leaders pledge their precious all to resist the tyrant wearing the crown. Because King George rebelled against God and committed ultra vires acts against the colonies, the thirteen colonies had no choice but to separate and to form their own government.

When in the Course of human events it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the *Laws of Nature and of Nature’s God* entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that *they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation* . . . He has refused his Assent to Laws, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good . . .” (Declaration of Independence).

Paul is not teaching that every politician is from God or that Christians should submit to tyrants. Rulers do rise to power that are not from God. Some are vessels of glory and others are vessels of wrath (Romans 9:22). Some are in place as a reward for obedience, and others are in place to test Christians *to see if they will obey God rather than man* (Deuteronomy 8:2; 13:3)! Selah!

Hosea at 8:4, “They have set up kings, but not by me: they have made princes, and I knew it not.”

Let’s see how others translate Romans 13:1.

The Authorized King James Version reads, “*Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God.*”

The *New American Bible* (1970) reads, “*Let everyone obey the authorities that are over him, for there is no authority except from God;*”

The Living Bible (1971) reads, “*Obey the government, for God is the one who has put it there;*”

The *Good News Bible* (1976) reads, “*Everyone must obey the state authorities, because no authority exists without God’s permission.*”

The ERV reads, “*All of you must obey the government rulers. Everyone who rules was given the power to rule by God.*”

Paul was writing to the saints in Rome (1:7). To understand government, we must begin with the sovereignty of God.

The term “*ordained*” (*tasso*) means “to put in order,” or “to arrange,” or “to designate.” It is God, not man that established the rules for the civil order. The Ten Commandments was given *by the LORD who brought thee out of Egypt as a means to establish a civil society*. The law was never given as a means of saving the soul, but it was given to establish law and order among men. *God’s law is not only good for you and me, it is good for all men and all of man’s institutions* (John Rushdoony).

The genitive “*of God*” informs us that God is the Source of rightful authority; that all rightful authority is from Him (Isaiah 33:22).

The second clause reads, “. . . for there is no power **but** of God.” The Greek reads, “*ouv ga.r e;stin evxousi,a eiv mh. u`po. qeou/*,” or “there is no authority if not from God” or “except from God.”

The “*if not*” (*eiv mh*) is usually translated “except.” The term “except” is a good translation of the negative particle, but it literally means “if not.” This construction in Greek informs us of an exception to a general rule. It is the same particle used in Romans 13:8.

Romans 13:8 Owe no man anything, but (except) to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

See verse eight and the *Appendices* on how to translate Romans 13:8.

The general rule is that there are many powers claiming authority. But, there is only one legitimate authority. The rightful powers that God ordains must be recognized by Christian men. Paul wants us to know that there is no legitimate authority except one that is ordained of God. To say that Kim Jong-un of North

Korea or Pol Pot of Cambodia was ordained by God for the good of the people is nothing but Christian blather.

The government to which Christians are commanded to submit is one that seeks to arrange itself under Christ and His laws. That is, Paul is not teaching that every government is ordained of God, BUT that there is no *de jure*⁸¹ authority unless God ordains it!

All man-made governments organized around humanistic principles are *de facto* governments lacking God-sanctioned authority.

J.B. Phillips agreed when he translated this verse as follows:

“Everyone ought to obey civil authorities, for all legitimate authority is derived from God’s authority.” (Emphasis mine)

Adding the adjective “legitimate” or “righteous” or “lawful,” or “good” helps clarify what kind of government is ordained of God.

The KJV translators adds the adjective “good” to define what kind of works are being discussed in verse three; that is, legitimate “rulers” are not a terror to “good works.” Illegitimate government are!

In order to clarify the kind of authority to which all souls are required to submit, we must add an adjective: “good,” “righteous or legitimate” as did J. B. Phillips:

“Everyone ought to obey civil authorities, for all legitimate authority is derived from God’s authority.”

Paul is not calling men to obey tyrants, thugs, murderers, bullies, dictators, despots, and rogue regimes. On some occasions these must be resisted through fight or flight, not obeyed. The rulers that God wants every soul to submit are legitimate authorities . . . and that, very cautiously.

When tyrant Herod gave the order to have all the babies in Bethlehem slaughtered, Jesus’ parents resisted by fleeing the district. They didn’t hold up a white flag and surrender to the murderous plot of their *de facto* king just because he wore a crown. When the synagogue leaders at Nazareth plotted to throw Jesus over the cliff, our Lord resisted them by exercising escape and evasion maneuvers to evade the *de facto* rulers.

⁸¹ De facto: “. . . a person who exercises unlawful authority, or lawful authority in an unlawful manner . . .” (Webster’s American Dictionary of the English Language. De jure (Latin): according to rightful entitlement or claim; by right.

God is sovereign and He does ordain evil rulers . . . *not* to be obeyed, but to test man's willingness to resist evil. God raised up Pharaoh, not that men would honor him, but that mankind might know the power of God to judge this tyrant and to deliver His people out from under his abusive power.

*Exodus 9:16 And in very deed for this cause have I **raised thee up**, for to shew in thee my power; and that my name may be declared throughout all the earth.*

God decrees unrighteous rulers, *not* to be obeyed, but to be resisted. Christians are called to support legitimate rulers and to resist bad rulers and bad laws. Christians must not only reject evil in their personal life, but resist evil at work in and through the institutions of man.

Moreover resisting State policy is not a manifestation of "rebellion or disobedience," as some have claimed, because seeking to correct confusion or error "is not an act of disobedience," but an act of obedience to Christ and a purification of His institution of justice on earth.

Likewise, questioning authority is not evil. It is a mark of maturity and good citizenship because it keeps officials honest.

Legionnaire Ministries adds some sense to this text when they say,

*We are told to bend over backwards to honor the king or be obedient to the civil magistrates. **That doesn't mean a slavish obedience to the civil magistrates.** There are occasions on which Christians **not only may but must disobey the civil magistrates.** Anytime a civil government **requires a Christian to do what God forbids or forbids them to do what God commands, then the person must disobey.***

But, there is a problem with the above statement in that **it narrows the definition of evil to evil magistrates that require individual Christians "to do what God forbids or forbids them to do what God commands."** Christian are not subjects of Congress. They are not slaves to civil rulers. Americans have no duty to state or federal government. In America, the people are free . . . sovereign. Only government workers and corporations in contract with the State have to obey the government.

Rulers are renowned for "*doing mischief through law*" (Psalm 94:20) and no one is obligated morally to surrender to these despots.

What modern democratic government is going to command Christians to commit homosexual acts or for mothers to kill their baby? Rather, democratic institutions do not generally require Christians to do "what God forbids." Rather, they protect abortionists, Sodomites, lesbians, idolaters, transvestitism,

theft through taxation, and then force their values down the throats of our youth.

When government authorities protect criminals and do not punish them, then they are no longer God's servants. Such regimes are not ordained of God! They are beast-like and governed by Satan. When a State gives into evil, shouldn't they feel pressure from Christian men? *When politicians feel the heat, they see the light.*

For example: At the University of Iowa, the administration shut down a Christian group which demanded all members support its statement of faith—a statement of faith that was anti-homosexuality. This anti-faggot policy was strongly resisted by the administration, and the group sued the liberal university (Fox News, January 15, 2015).

The same University shut down this Christian club because its by-laws mandated the leader be a Christian. The University said that the club had no right to insist the Christian club have a Christian leader inferring the club should allow a Muslim or homosexual to be president. This so outraged the Christian community that the university telephone lines were fried by angry callers. Two days later the University was forced to reverse its policies (Fox News, December 12, 2017).

In the 15th and 16th centuries, Christians used Romans 13 to support the divine right of kings⁸² and to press disgruntled citizens into compliance. In modern times, pastors use Romans 13 to support Marxist democracies⁸³ and to press Christians into compliance with statutes passed by Congress.

All governments are not evil, nor are they a necessary evil. Many a man uses his authority in the home to be a blessing to the family; many a church has a great leadership team that uses their authority to strengthen God's flock; and, many boards in corporations make decisions that benefit the stockholders. All government is not a necessary evil.

William Holmes McGuffey informs us that in early America that when settlers established townships, the men of the town organized themselves into a church, and built a building. After building their chapel, they established magistrates from church members, and enacted penal codes in harmony with the Torah/Pentateuch.

⁸² Divine right of kings, political doctrine in defense of monarchical absolutism, which asserted that kings derived their authority from God and could not therefore be held accountable for their actions by any earthly authority such as a parliament (Encyclopedia Britannica)

⁸³ A democracy: two wolves and a lamb taking a vote on what to have for lunch.

*"God was their King, and they regarded him as truly and literally so . . .
." (Revised Electric Fourth Reader)*

Many modern pastors use Romans 13:1 to beat Christians into submission to democratic forms of government saying that all Christians have a duty to obey magisterial authorities, but I've never heard a preacher teach his flock that civil rulers have a duty to obey God! Have you?

A God-ordained authority will acknowledge the authority of King Jesus (Acts 17:6-7). If magistrates don't acknowledge the Lord Jesus Christ as King, how can they be legitimate?

A Christian can support any style of government as long as rulers acknowledge Christ and seek to be compliant with His law-order. Whether we are talking about monarchies or democracies, those that do not acknowledge God's sovereignty have their roots in humanism; and, when they become hostile to His law-order, they join the rebellions of Psalm 2. They must be vigorously resisted and enthusiastically admonished "to kiss the Son" lest He be angry.

Those states that acknowledge the Lord Jesus Christ and His law are to be supported howbeit their many flaws. To these, as Legionnaire Ministries says, "We are to bend over backwards to be obedient . . ." But, the same cannot be said about atheistic, liberal, humanistic democracies hell bent on overthrowing the Christian faith and adopting the policies of the Whore of Babylon (Revelation 13, 17, 18).

We the People have a right, even a duty, to resist and overthrow a tyrant government (See the Declaration of Independence).

Pastor Erwin Lutzer got it right:

"If we say that we will always obey the State, the State becomes our God" (Hitler's Cross).

"It is ironic that virtues of loyalty, discipline, and self-sacrifice that we value so highly in the individual are the very properties that create destructive organizational engines of war and bind men to malevolent systems of authority" (Obedience to Authority, 1974, p.188).

When Judah was ruled by the Athaliah, the poisonous viper of the House of Baal, Jehoiada the priest organized a military coop "all the people of the land went into the house of Baal, and brake it down; his altars and his images brake they in pieces thoroughly, and slew Mattan the priest of Baal before the altars" and executed the treacherous queen.

2 Chronicles 11:20 "And all the people of the land rejoiced, and the city was in quiet: and they slew Athaliah with the sword beside the king's house."

Karol Jackowski, a nun, made a list of “Ten Fun Things to Do Before You Die” which included “liberating a country” and to willfully, deliberately “disobey some government law.” In her reasoning, she concluded that one can only do what is right when they recognize something wrong and refuse to do it. (Amazon: “Ten Fun Things to Do Before You Die: Karol Jackowski).

“Before you die, give some serious thought to vowing holy disobedience whenever necessary. *Discerning and knowing why one would choose to disobey is by far the most serious and mysterious part of listening to the voice of the Gods. It’s also a recurring theme throughout the Bible. Biblical stories tell of four extraordinary circumstances that call for divinely inspired disobedience: the situation is unbearable and survival is at stake; the call to disobey promises deliverance; acts of disobedience would relieve oppression; and last but not least, swift, immediate divine intervention is not at all likely. The only divine reasons for disobedience are those that come from God and contain moral imperatives to set yourself and others free... Given the sad shape of authority in this world, it’s not a bad practice for everyone to vow before they die.”*

If you have never deliberately disobeyed a law in the State, then you are not discerning evil in the government or you have not worked through the issue, “Who is your God”?

Finally, the Christian prays, “*Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done.*” This is not a prayer for the arrival of an alleged millennium, but a prayer that that rulers and magistrates might acknowledge the rule of God and surrender to His authority now. We do not pray for the success of rebellious Congress or that citizens might be subject to their powers.

1 Timothy 2:1 I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

We pray that Christians might live under the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ and not be compromised by an unequal yoke with the idolatrous State so we may carry out our service to the Lord in all godliness and sincerity.

If the Lord’s white sheep become dirty grey, the black sheep feel more comfortable (Vance Havner).

If a government becomes a black monster, the Lord’s white sheep can’t live in peace.

“I stand up for what I believe, and for that, some called me a ‘rebel.’ But,

the only people who ever called me a 'rebel' were religious tyrants who tried to control me."

81. No Duty to Government

1 Corinthians 7:23

"Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men."

STATEMENT OF ISSUE

Whether government official are enforcing their own Administrative codes meant ONLY for THEM upon regular Citizens who are not being paid by the corporation?

The premise of this brief is that elected officials (unbonded) have deceived the country into behaving like government employees without pay. They themselves are taking public money to occupy government seats/positions/agencies when they are nothing more than private contractors.

SCRIPTURE

Matthew 28:18-19 All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth . . . go into all the world.

Luke 19:13 Do my business till I return.

*1 Corinthians 7:23 Ye are bought with a price; be **not** ye the servants of men (governments).*

GOVERNMENT OF LIMITED AUTHORITY

"The issue today is the same as it has been throughout all history, whether man shall be allowed to govern himself or be ruled by a small elite." -- Thomas Jefferson

*"**The greatest [calamity]** which could befall [us would be] submission to a government of unlimited powers." -- Thomas Jefferson, Declaration and Protest of Virginia, 1825. The Writings of Thomas Jefferson, (Memorial Edition) Lipscomb and Bergh, editors, ME 17:445*

*"The powers delegated by the proposed Constitution to the federal government **are few and defined**. Those which are to remain in the State governments are numerous and indefinite."*

-- James Madison, Federal No. 45, January 26, 1788

THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

*We hold these Truths to be self-evident, that all Men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are **Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.***

PRINCIPLE

Duties can only be imposed by law. We the people did not give Congress or the State the authority to create duties for the American people. Government can regulate its own employees, but it can't regulate people who are not employed by the State. Likewise, it can only lien public employees,

26 U.S.C. § 6331 (a)

*"Levy may be made upon the accrued salary or wages of any **officer, employee, or elected official, of the United States, the District of Columbia, or any agency or instrumentality of the United States or the District of Columbia, by serving a notice of levy on the employer (a government agency).***

ARTICLE X

*The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, **or to the people.***

HALE V. HENKLE – 201 U.S. 43 (1906)

*He owes **no duty to the State** or to his neighbors to divulge his business, or to open his doors to an investigation, so far as it may tend to criminate him. He owes no such duty to the State, since he receives nothing therefrom beyond the protection of his life and property.*

TEXAS SUPREME COURT IN DALLAS V. MITCHELL, 245 SW 944:

"The rights of the individual are not derived from governmental agencies, ... or even from the Constitution, but they exist inherently in every man, and are merely reaffirmed in the Constitution and restricted only to the extent they have been voluntarily surrendered by the citizenship to the agencies of government."

IN FEDERAL CROP INSURANCE V. MERRILL, 332 U.S. 380, THE SUPREME COURT RULED:

"Whatever the form in which the government functions, anyone entering into an arrangement with the government takes a risk of having accurately ascertained that he who purports to act for the government

stays within the bounds of his authority, even though the agent himself may be unaware of the limitations upon his authority.” Also see Utah Power & Light Co. v. United States, 243 U.S. 389; United States v. Stewart, 311 U.S. 60; and generally, in re Floyd Acceptances, 7 Wall. 666.

UTAH POWER & LIGHT CO. V. UNITED STATES, 243 U.S. 389 (1917)

The United States is neither bound nor estopped by acts of its officers or agents in entering into an arrangement or agreement to do or cause to be done what the law does not sanction or permit. So held

“Where such regulations exceed the power of or authorization by Congress, they may be disregarded as void, but not so where they are merely illiberal, inequitable, or unwise.

CONTINENTAL CASUALTY CO. V. UNITED STATES, 113 F.2D 284 (5TH CIR. 1940):

“Public officers are merely the agents of the public, whose powers and authority are defined and limited by law. Any act without the scope of the authority so defined does not bind the principal, and all persons dealing with such agents are charged with knowledge of the extent of their authority,” 113 F.2d, at 286.

These U.S. Supreme Court rulings are considered the highest law of the land in our courts. They place a burden on both the employer and employee to check the authority of the agent. The risk of not doing so is that if the agent asks an employer or employee to perform certain actions without proper authority, the employer or employee may be violating the law and not know it. They, unfortunately, can be held accountable for any violations because it is said that ignorance of the law is no excuse.

ON LEE v. UNITED STATES, 343 U.S. 747 (1952)

What is perhaps even more noteworthy is its pervasive disregard in practice by those who as law officers owe special obedience to law. What is true of the federal Act against wiretapping and its violations is widely true of related state legislation and its disobedience. See Westin, The Wire-Tapping Problem, 52 Col. L. Rev. 165 (1952). Few sociological generalizations are more valid than that lawlessness begets lawlessness. U.S. v. Prudden, 424 F.2d. 1021; U.S. v. Tweel, 550 F. 2d. 297, 299, 300 (1977)

DEPRIVATION OF RIGHTS IS A CRIMINAL MATTER 42 U.S.C. §241, 242.

Teste Meipso: With Christ as my witness, the above brief is true and correct to the best of my knowledge, information, and belief.

Submitted this _____ day of _____ in the year of the appearing of His Majesty, the Lord Jesus Christ, _____.

In the King's Business,

Joe Patriot

82. You Can't Serve God and Government

Matthew 6:24

"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon or (government)."

WHO IS YOUR MASTER?

Our text says you can't serve God and mammon!

But, the predicate nominative could be left blank as men serve all kinds of things besides God.

"You cannot serve God and _____! You can't serve two masters whether that master is your ego or wealth or government or _____!"

The great question is, "To whom does your life belong"? Who owns you? By listening to the media you'd think that government is god; that our whole life is determined by what happens in Washington D.C.; that Congress makes laws for the American people living on Main Street, Anywhere, U.S.A.

The word serve is the Greek word *douleuo* which means "to do service toward" or "to be a slave to" or "to submit to" or "to obey." To serve a master is to recognize his authority and to subject all to his command. Masters have power. What the master owns, he has the power to use, destroy, sell, or give away.

If Christ is your Master, what does He require of you?

Micah 6:8 He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the LORD require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?

First, take note of the context of Micah 6:8.

This verse was given to Israel as they were changing gods and serving Moloch kings—kings that claimed ownership the land and the people—kings with so called “laws” that required total allegiance by the total man to total government. Draft, military service, taxes, and even total sacrifice was required by these despot kings. And, to think, Israel was so easily persuaded to trade freedom for absolute despotism; i.e., to lay aside God’s laws that lead to freedom and to adopt the “statutes of Omri” which led to bondage (6:16). Remember, Omri and Jezebel had a government agency composed of 400 eunuchs. Why would any thinking man want to castrate himself and serve some egomaniac? Sounds like “Emperor’s Slaves” in the Forbidden City in China.

The LORD God asked Israel, “*What doth the Lord require of thee?*” Total sacrifice? Compulsory military service? Your fingers? Your testicles? Your lands? Your children? All your wealth? Well, that is what the governments in the Levant demanded of their servants. Many of a servant of Moloch ended up an oriental eunuch.

In contrast to these Moloch kings, notice what the LORD God required! Three simple things: justice toward men, mercy toward the weak, and faithfulness to Him. No God ever required so little!

NO GOD EVER REQUIRED SO LITTLE!!!

As long as you do your neighbor no harm, you were pretty much free to do what you wanted to do! That is, when the Lord Jesus Christ is your Master, you have maximum freedom in your life. But, service to tyrant kings lead to the total subjugation of the total man to total government. No wonder Micah cajoled his own people. They had exchanged responsibility and freedom under the LORD God for security and slavery under tyrant kings.

Second, if government is your master, what does the government require of you?

If you are a government slave on the government’s plantation, the government has the power to command you, tax you, draft you, regulate you, use you, or destroy you.

If you are turning on the news eagerly hoping the government will make your life better, government is your god!

If you are looking to the State to reduce taxes, to spend money to help the economy, or adopt some law to improve your life, then government is your god!

If you feel obligated to obey whatever regulations are passed by Congress; if you believe that government is some kind of parent and has authority to control you; if you vote to decide who you want to own and control you; if your

pay monthly tithes out of your income to the State; or, if you write you Congressman begging him to enact some law or nullify some policy, then government is your master!!

If you feel you have an obligation to tithe to the government temple; and, if you consent to let someone else decide how much of your money you are allowed to keep, then you are their slave. They will decide how much of your hard earned dollars you are allowed to spend . . . and on what!

This being the case, government revenue agents are no different than Egyptian taskmasters. The only difference is their title! Their function is the same: to make you a slave and to increase the wealth of the State. As long as you submit to them, they grow in power and prestige, and you become poorer and poorer.

When you vote, you are not given a choice to vote for King Jesus or a government under His authority, only a choice between what two statist politicians who want to rule you, control you, use and abuse you. Jesus is never a choice. *Freedom is never on the ballot.* No matter which politician you vote for, you will be extorted and regulated by one of them. You will be controlled by their executive orders and legislation. The beast never changes.

Voting is a form of worship and devotion. When you go to one of their worship centers to prove your allegiance, you are saying elected officials have the right to rule you. When you vote, you concede the state has authority over you; i.e., you are agreeing you are going to be someone's slave; and, that you hope that the master you vote for will be kind toward his loyal peasants. When you vote, the only question is will which boss will control the government that claims you as one of its human resources?

As long as the politicians see you voting, protesting, calling, and writing them, they know they control you. As long as you beg them for tax cuts and whine about certain legislation, they know they have power over you. As long as they see you timidly addressing them as the "Honorable Legislator" while begging them to change their so called laws, they know that they own you in mind and body. If you vote, it is because you still view them and their fellow parasites as bonafide authorities. If you vote, you must believe the system isn't rigged. When you vote, you confirm to them that it is their choice and their goodness that determines the length of your chain. As long as you vote for them as your legal lords and masters, the tyrants know they have nothing to fear.

If you write or call your Congressman, it sends a message to them that you think they are important. As long as you play their games and legitimize their system, they feel safe. As long as you obey their so called "laws," and pay their so called "taxes" (tithes), they have nothing to fear. The government has an unquenchable appetite for money. It is a bottomless pit. It is a leech with two

daughters: Give and Want. The slave master doesn't mind his slaves pitifully begging for mercy as long as you keep working and paying your tithes. They will retire comfortably.

Politics is about money and greed and power.

Those in power are not worried about elections or petitions, but they do fear an informed public.

- They fear you will one day realize that egomaniacs are in office skimming the cream off the top and leaving you with skim milk.
- They fear you will realize your money belongs to you and not them; that one day you will stop giving them your hard earned money.
- They fear that one day their victims will wake up and revolt.
- They fear that men might once again claim "No king but King Jesus!"
- They fear you might really believe that you can't serve two masters: God and mammon . . . or, God and government . . . or the government that serves mammon.
- They fear you might realize how treasonous they are to the Constitution and demand they be hung by the neck until dead.

Therefore, stop believing in the divine right of politicians.

- Stop calling liars and crooks "lawmakers."
- Stop calling mercenaries "police officers" or "law enforcement officers."
- Stop believing government officials have a right to rule you.
- Stop believing they cease to be sinners and start becoming geniuses when they get a job with the State.
- Stop believing they have authority where there is none. Stop believing government is good for you when in truth they are cynical, cruel, and beastly.
- Stop paying tithes so they can retire wealthy and you poor.
- Stop asking politicians nicely for the privilege of keeping what you worked for. Stop talking about your civil rights and start talking about God-given rights.

For people to be free they must stop acting and thinking like slaves of psychopathic madmen. Stop bowing to megalomaniacs. Stop paying tribute to psychopaths. Stop obeying political parasites. Stop applying for unnecessary licenses as if you have to have to beg the permission from government to do

something. Stop asking for legislative permission to run your own life. If you believe in unalienable rights given you from the Creator, stop asking nicely for the psychopathic vultures to let you be free.

If Christ is your Master, your only concern is what is His will? What does His law forbid me to do or command me to do? If Christ is your Master, you don't need the permission of government to work, or get married, or to travel, or to invest your earnings, or to tell you how and where to spend your money. You don't need any State or country or legislature or sheriff or mayor to run your own life. All of this has been carefully articulated by our Lord in His Word. Where His word is silent, you are free to pursue your own choice as long as you do not infringe on the rights of others. This is responsibility, and responsibility leads to freedom.

Who is your master? If Jesus is our Master, let's act like it. Obey Him. Love our neighbors. Stop serving government. Stop treating government officials as gods who are intellectually and morally superior to Christian men. Tithe to Christ. Do justice. Love mercy, and walk humbly with your God. No man can serve two masters: God and a government.

83. Viva Christo Rey

Acts 17: 6-7

The Lost Message of the Church

"Viva Christo Rey!"

Acts 17: 6-7 " . . . these that have turned the world upside down are come hither also . . . and they all act contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there is another king, (King) Jesus."

Faithful Christians examine their message to see if it conforms to the gospel that "turned the world upside down" in the first century.

When Jesus burst out of the chains of death to escape the winding grave clothes, believing men confessed He is Lord of all.

"From the mount of Olives, the place where in dread conflict His garments were rolled in blood, He has mounted in triumph to His throne." (Charles Spurgeon)

Christians have the hope of a their own personal bodily resurrection morning because there was a rising again for Him.

In the Book of Acts Jesus emerged as the hope of sinners where He is referred to as "Savior" twice and "Lord" ninety-two times.

Titles like "King" and "Lord" and "Master" invoke His authority.

The New Testament assigns the title "Lord" to Jesus 747 times. Clearly, the riveting apostles preached Jesus as the ascended Sovereign.

In the Old Testament, the name YHWH in Hebrew and LORD in English appears 6,832 times. Sovereignty and authority thunder through the centuries because of His powerful name. Under the title LORD, He created heaven and earth; as the loving King, He gave the law to Israel, and the prophets obeyed Him. Clearly, the core of the OT gospel centered on the hub, "The LORD reigneth" (Psalm 93:1; 96:10; 97:1; 99:1).

Because He possesses all authority in heaven and earth, Christians have de jure power to conduct kingdom business here on earth (Matthew 28:18-20).

The Apostle John closes out the canon of Scripture with the trumpet, thundering announcement, "*Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth!*" (Revelation 19:6).

Can you hear the roaring, rumbling, crushing thunder of the LORD's reign?

Will you surrender to it?

In speaking about our Lord's ascension, Charles Spurgeon, reminded the Brits that when generals and kings returned from war, they celebrated their victory with a triumphal march through Rome. Riding on the stallions through the streets of the capital, they paraded their naked captives as trophies of war. The inhabitants crowded to the windows, filled the streets, and thronged the housetops, and showered acclamations and garlands of flowers upon the conquering hero as he rode along.

"The chariots of God are twenty thousand, even thousands of angels: the Lord is among them, as in Sinai, in the holy place. You have ascended on high, you have led captivity captive: you have received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them."

Psalm 47:5, "God is gone up with a shout, the LORD with the sound of a trumpet."

The modern gospel does not proclaim Jesus' thundering authority which splits the sprawling cedars of man's pride. Rather, it appears to offer "fire insurance" against the terrors of hell and how one can prosper financially by faith.

The gospel that "turned the world upside down" did not proclaim health and wealth but a chariot-riding king splattered with blood with sword in hand, King Jesus (Acts 17:6-17).

The gospel of the kingdom announces the King entry into history to crush man's enemies -- Satan, sin, and death with the hammer of His holiness.

Spurgeon put it this way,

"Angels and glorified spirits saluted our returning Champion, and leading captivity captive, He assumed the mediatorial throne amidst universal acclamations: 'Having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.'"

This Victor-King defeated death through the cross and was seated at the right hand of God (Acts 2:30-32).

While men called Jesus the "the Savior" and the "Christ," the gospel that stunned the Mediterranean world proclaimed Jesus as "the Prince of the kings of earth" (Revelation 1:5) -- greater than Herod and greater than Caesar.

This King claimed authority "over all flesh" at the most in opportune time, hours before His death, and then proved it by His resurrection from the iron grave (John 17:2).

He commissioned his disciples to go into the nations proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom . . . but not before He assured them that all authority in heaven and earth had been given to Him (Matthew 28:18-20).

Paul taught that to enter the kingdom of God one had to embrace Jesus as Lord (Roman 10:9); that the whole purpose of His death, burial, and resurrection was that He might be Lord both of the living and the dead (Romans 14:9)

Because He has authority over all men, He calls all men everywhere to repent and bow the knee to His authority (Acts 17:30-31).

If the winds and sea obey Him (Matthew 8:27), all princes must be charged with obedience.

Throughout history human governments have demanded the total allegiance of their 'subjects' at the expense of individual God-given rights, personal liberties, and religious truth.

The Mediterranean world of the first century taught Roman citizens that Caesar was Lord.

In the 17th Century, the State taught citizens to believe in the "crown right of kings."

The 18th-century philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau (1712–1778) argued that all societies need a religion to hold men together. Because Christianity tended to pull men away from earthly matters, Rousseau advocated a "civil religion" that would create the links necessary for political unity around the state.

Consequently, modern democratic societies returned to pagan forms of Statism as described by Robert N. Bellah in 1967.

The State media apparatus religiously promotes government as the one holding the golden scepter to rule the world.

Political religions compete with religion for the affection of men and seek to occupy the same ethical, psychological and sociological space as a traditional religion.

Consequently, government seeks to co-opt de facto authority over existing religious organizations and their beliefs. Consider the modern trend to incorporate churches under IRS 501(c) 3 IRS control. Citizens are encouraged to kiss the ring of the finger of some politician in order to achieve the socialist's utopia of equality, prosperity, and democracy.

But, there is no peace without the Prince of Peace. Jesus offers no peace to rebel, antichrist governments.

The gospel that turned the world upside down and conquered Western Civilization did not proclaim government as god, or Caesar as king, or the Roman City State as the hope of the world.

There is no law without a king, and King Jesus has His law. The West seeks to practice the *rule of law* over and against the *principle the king is law*; however, there is *no law without a rex* (See Exodus 20:1-3). Because *there's only one King and one the law*, we must work toward the truth that *the law that comes from King Jesus*. Christians believe in *THE KING IS LAW or Rex Lex!! Once man recognizes One King (Rex Lex), then we can work toward Lex Rex. Selah.*

DUX LUX REX LEX Cross. The rough English translation is "my Leader (Commander), my Light, my King, and my Law" in reference, of course, to Jesus Christ. Word order makes little difference in Latin.

Rex, Lex, Lux, Dux is Latin Christian meaning "My King, My Law, My Light, and my Commander: Jesus is Rex (King), Lex (Law) Lux (light), and Dux (Leader or Commander).

The gospel that turned the world upside down taught "another Rex, King Jesus."

The Apostolic Declaration that launched the gospel from Jerusalem into the Mediterranean world acted on a commission sealed by Lord's signet ring procured by His ascension to heaven's throne:

"We ought to obey God rather than men" - Acts 5:29

The Historic Battle-Cry of the Christian Church became:

"AND HE HATH ON HIS VESTURE AND ON HIS THIGH, A NAME WRITTEN, KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS." - Revelation 19:16

Notice the consciousness of Augustine, Bishop of Hippo (354-430), and how he refers to Christ as King:

"Let these and similar answers (if any fuller and fitter answers can be found) be given to their enemies by the redeemed family of the Lord Christ, and by the pilgrim city of King Christ" ((Augustine, "City of God").

Consider the following four testimonies of men who lost their lives confessing Christ as king:

(1) 'I leave my testimony against Popery, Prelacy, Erastianism; against all profanity and everything contrary to sound doctrine; particularly against all usurpations made upon **Christ's right, who is the Prince of the Kings of the earth**, who alone must bear the glory of ruling His own kingdom, the Church.' (James Renwick)

(2) 'I am come here this day to lay down my life for owning Jesus Christ's despised interest, and for asserting that He is King, and for averring that He is Head of His own Church.' (James Skene)

(3) 'I suffer for maintaining **that Christ is a free King** in His own house.' (Isabel Alison)

(4) 'I leave my testimony as a dying man against the horrid usurpation of our Lord's prerogative and crown right.' (Captain John Paton)" (For Christ's Crown and Covenant)

Do you want to turn the world right side up? Then kiss the signet ring of King Jesus and claim your rights as a citizen of the kingdom of God.

"Kiss the Son"- Psalm 2.

The gospel gladiators that "turned the world upside down" did not shout "Hail Caesar, we who are about to die salute thee," but that there is *another king, King Jesus enthroned in the celestial city.*

In 1618 the King James VI attempted to force the pattern of worship of the Anglican Church upon the Scottish churches. His son Charles I also pursued this policy in 1625. In 1638, the Scottish Presbyterians rejected this royal usurpation by signing the National Covenant which declared religious independence from the State church. In 1643, they signed the Solemn League and Covenant which pledged their allegiance only to the Crown Rights of Jesus Christ. Thus, they became known as **the Scottish Covenanters**. Because they believed in unlimited sovereignty of the Lord Jesus Christ risen from the dead, they opposed the principle embedded in the doctrine called "The Divine Rights of Kings."

Such dissenting views brought strong opposition from King Charles II in 1662 wherein he outlawed Presbyterianism and declared the Covenants as illegal. The Biblical doctrine taught by the Scottish Covenanters that British kings ought to bow to the authority of King Jesus made the Covenanters 'rebels' and traitors to the State in the eyes of the government.

Driven from their pulpits, many resorted to field preaching. Using the force and power of the government, kings sent their sheriffs to hunt the down, arrest, jail, and brutally torture and kill the Scottish protestors.

In spite of severe persecution and deprivations, many of these despised so called "rebels" faced the police powers of the State proudly waving their banners which read: "FOR THE WORD OF GOD AND THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS" and "FOR CHRIST'S CROWN AND COVENANT."

In May 1685, a bleeding remnant of 200 Scottish Covenanters at Blackgannoch Moss faced the king's brutal police force loudly proclaiming their fervent declaration of faith:

*"LET KING JESUS REIGN, AND ALL HIS ENEMIES BE
SCATTERED!" (A proper twist on Numbers 10:35-36)*

The belief in the sovereignty of the Lord hummed in the hearts of Presbyterians, Baptists, and Methodists prior to the Revolutionary War.

The last time men seized the truth that there is "no king, but King Jesus" a nation was born (1776)! (A Theological Interpretation of American History" by C. Gregg Singer; "The Light and the Glory" by Peter Marshall and David Manuel)

From the pulpit and town hall came the cries for liberty, but the average colonist blended his cry for liberty with a common loyalty to King George. Though most Crown-appointed governors remained loyal to their king, one wrote to the Board of Trade in England saying:

"If you ask an American, who is his master? He will tell you he has

none, nor any governor but Jesus Christ." ("The Myth of Separation" by David Barton).

In 1775, John Adams and John Hancock were at the home of Rev. Jonas Clarke, a Lexington pastor and militia leader. On the night of April 18th, Paul Revere made his famous ride to warn these patriots of the approaching Redcoats. The next morning a Christian militia confronted the British brigade at the Concord Bridge. British Major Pitcairn shouted to the regiment of Minutemen:

"Disperse, ye villains, lay down your arms in the name of George the Sovereign King of England."

The immediate response of Rev. Jonas Clarke or one of his company was:

"We recognize no Sovereign but God and no King but Jesus!"

And, then, there was the shot that was heard around the world.

Later, Patrick Henry penned these words for our instruction:

"It cannot be emphasized too strongly or too often that this great nation was founded, not by religionists, but by Christians; not on religions, but on the gospel of Jesus Christ!" -- a gospel that emphasized the sovereignty and authority of the Lord Jesus Christ.

But, things have changed. TV, media, public disinformation clouds the truth that Jesus is King.

Do Americans still believe in "no king but King Jesus"? Or, has their hope shifted to a *government of the people, by the people, and for the politicians . . .* a world government of Zionists, feminists, and globalists?

With the statist mindset of modern Americans and their hope in the powers of government, we would be hard pressed to find Christians today that profess and practice *there is "no king but King Jesus."*

Christians used to stand at attention when they heard the words of the Hallelujah Chorus, "King of kings and Lord of lords." Today, millennials sit on their hind quarters sipping on Starbucks coffee discussing the Green Gospel and how to save the planet from global warming.

Until Christians grasp that King Jesus is on the throne, they will fiddle with politics in order to advance the utopian One World Government -- the key to happiness by internationalists.

Isn't it time for believers to reflect on the authority of Christ and the practical application of what the Scripture means when it announces our Lord as "KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS"?

Christian would do well to reclaim their authority and stop applying to the government for 501 c (3) privileges and benefits.

Modern America cannot be reborn until hope shifts away from the City of Man to the City of God, from "Hail Caesar" to "Praise Jesus," from trust in government to trust in God.

*"I set **my king** upon my holy hill of Zion . . . Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be instructed, ye judges of the earth. **Serve the LORD** with fear, and rejoice with trembling. **Kiss the Son**, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him" (Psalm 2:6, 10-12).*

*Romans 10:9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth **the Lord Jesus** (acknowledge His authority), and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.*

When totalitarian Marxist President Calles of Mexico (1920s) rebelled against God's law-order and labeled the Catholic Church insurgents, he demolished statues of Christ and Mary, burned Catholic churches, executed priests, closed Catholic hospitals and seminaries, banned the wearing of religious clothing, forced vaccinations upon church people using the same needle, outlawed the Eucharist, and banned worship services.

The Catholic peasants had a choice (1) to give up their faith or (2) to take up arms and fight against the communist dictator and his antichrist policies. Led by the Knights of Columbus, Catholics resisted the fascist federales with fire and thunder.

It was called the **Cristero War** and their battle cry was "Viva Christo Rey" or "Long live Christ the King!" This phrase was cited by the martyrs as they were mercilessly executed. To the Catholics, it was their final confession; to the Marxist government, it was an act of treason worthy of death.

Viva Christo Rey!

84. Mixing Religion and Politics

Ephesians 4:6

"One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all."

1 Corinthians 10:26 "for the earth is the Lord's, and all it contain."

In March 2012, Napp Nazworth wrote an article titled, "Mixing Religion and Politics is Bad for Both."

Nazworth's opinion begs for a retort. He could not be more wrong *because the parties have already mixed politics with religion and religion with politics.*

What is politics *but the outworking and expression of somebody's religion howbeit it secular or Christian or Muslim.*

Religion is not exclusively some form of theism, religion is about man's fundamental values . . . morality . . . laws.

Every act of legislation represents somebody's morality and deeply held religious beliefs.

The federal government in the United States forced churches through the Johnson Amendment to register with the State and to keep their mouth shut — a winning strategy by this antichrist president. Since Nazworth's article is addressed to "Christians," his view only reinforces the censorship of Christians in the market place of ideas.

The issue is not whether religion should be mixed with politics, but rather will thinking people wake up and realize **politics is a contest of who's religious values are going to rule society** — the religion of progressive liberals or the religion of Christianity?

Religion, after all, stems from people's most deeply held beliefs and the scruples that grow out of their persuasions.

"All people have to have something to believe in," said Jacki Pick (Blaze Radio). "We all serve somebody, whether we know it or not. We have beliefs and we act on them as those guide our lives, and the way we live is proof of what we really believe. And for [the left], there's a very powerful segment of that movement — I call it the socialist movement, because it is — that is godless."

Nazworth's article is found on "Mystagogy," a website advocating Greek Orthodox beliefs in the monastic tradition of the Greeks not dissimilar to Dominicans and Franciscans.

His view fits *hand-in-glove* with this segment of Christianity which advocates a monkish lifestyle and withdrawal from the conflicts of society (the world) in cloisters for monks. Rather, than engage the arduous issues in the mudslinging

world of politics, their monks have retreated to extreme pietism in order to avoid the mud war of electioneering – a tragedy in and of itself.

Nazworth went on to say that, “Young people are turning away from churches because they associate Christianity with Republican politics.”

This is a red herring.

The secular government, ruled by deep state liberals, forces children into the warehouse of public education to learn the art of fornicating with the beast by voting and paying tithes to the State. It indoctrinates our youth with liberalism, statism, and socialism while preventing them by statute from engaging the tenets of true Christianity. Even prayer is banned in school, on the football field, and around flag poles.

Young people are *not* turning from the church. Youth graduate from high school Magna Cum Lauds of the secular State as indoctrinated unchurched, pagan humanists. Law calls them *U.S. citizens* subject to the United States (14th Amendment) . . . and not to Christ.

While I agree that Republicanism is not synonymous with Christianity, one has to acknowledge that abortion, Sodomy, lesbianism, transvestitism, feminism, communist equality, heavy taxation, and redistribution of wealth are the very tenets of the Democratic Party – a creed that is vigorously and maliciously hostile to the creeds of true Christianity.

Nazworth should have encouraged Christians to engage the issues of our time and to plow through the Word of God to discover the Lord’s remedy for the disputes ripping our country apart.

After all, Jesus is not only Head of the Church (Ephesians 1:22, 4:15), **He is the King of Nations** (Jeremiah 10:7, 10).

BAD KARMA

A study in 2012 concluded that mixing religion and politics in America is bad karma.

Political science Professors David Campbell (University of Notre Dame) and Robert Putnam (Harvard) published their findings, *God and Caesar in America: “Why Mixing Religion and Politics is Bad for Both”* in the March / April edition of *Foreign Affairs*.

Loosely interpreted, the authors encourage Christians to be silent, and to keep their religious views to themselves.

Silent about Christ? Such a conclusion begs comment.

Their work supra shed some light on American politics in that Americans are more likely to choose their religion based on their political position whether it be conservative or liberal; that Republicans are more likely to be churchgoers and that Democrats are more likely to live autonomously.

They revealed that young people will take a political position, let's say on LGBTQ rights, and then choose a church that agrees with their belief system. Young people, say the authors, are comfortable with the idea of a God, but uncomfortable with "organized religion."

So, how should a Christian respond to this mammoth conclusion that our world is better off if men don't mix religion with politics?

First, this research was not based on Biblical studies.

It was a sociological study and regardless of what these two authors concluded, the believer has a duty to follow the Word of God.

Isaiah 8:20 To the teaching and to the testimony! If they will not speak according to this word, it is because they have no dawn.

Second, it is easy to figure out why youth are turned off by the American church scene.

Pastors are more interested in making good Baptists, good Catholics, and good Charismatics than they are about helping congregants develop a solid, Biblical world view to become decent Citizens. This was Benjamin Franklin's criticism of the churches in his day.

But, things have deteriorated since the Revolution. Contemporary churches in America have lost their simplicity in Christ and turned into Broadway stage productions with electric guitars blaring at 91 decibels and people jumping up and down like pogo sticks at a rock concert. With the attendees dressing in tank tops and shorts, sippin' on coffee and eatin' donuts, one has to ask, "What happened to the dignity of Christianity"? Moreover, there are the crazy Charismatics gibber-jabbering nonsense occurring at the same time their nut-job pastors perform shameful theatrics as stage conductors. The American church is fundamentally distorted, debilitated, disordered, declining, and in a dead fall spiritually.

Only occasionally can you find a healthy Bible-practicing church service in America where Christian people bring a Bible to church, sing glorious hymns, and respectfully listen to well-prepared Scriptural sermons that comply with Biblical standards.

Third, there is a huge problem with the conclusion of Campbell and Putnam that religion and politics don't mix.

Whether Christians realize it or not, they are already involved in politics. The media forces their religious-political views down the throats of Americans all day every day. Likewise, politicians can't resist trying to control people's behavior.

The above authors seem to operate on the assumption that Churchianity and religion are equivalent terms; that is, the authors appear to possess a narrow definition of religion reducing it down to a church experience. Amazingly, they do not seem to include the religions of Islam, Buddhism, Hinduism, or atheism in the equation.

Know that religion is about fundamental values of men; that is, all men are religious because all men have a belief system about ultimate realities. To exclusively label Christians as "religious" permits the secularist to escape the slur and promote their core religious values in public in the name of neutrality without contest. *Everyone is religious* and that is what is not being said today.

By limiting the definition of "religion" to the American church experience, they inevitably lead their readers to substantiate the trite doctrine of separation of church and state.

Inadvertently, the authors boot "Christians" out of the political debate and out of power. But, encourage atheists, humanists, liberals, socialists, communists, Islamist, and every other political kook to express his / her political / spiritual beliefs and to seize power under the metaphor of separation.

If only Christians are religious, and you support the premise that religion and politics don't mix, then you can conveniently exclude Christians from the debate.

No one is suggesting that America needs to blend the institution of the church with the state. No one!

But, to call Christians "religious" and secular liberals and atheists non-religious is absolutely cuckoo.

*Religion is about man's ultimate concerns and ultimate values. Since every man has ultimate concerns, even if it is *staying alive*, every man is religious.*

The real issue in America is not whether religion will be mixed with politics, but whose religious values are going to prevail in the institutions of state power?

Will it be the values of gays, Sodomites, lesbians, transvestites, Black Lives Matter, Planned Parenthood, Zionists, Muslims, or will it be the values flowing out of the Puritan Ethic?

Conclusions that “politics and religion do not mix” must be challenged when claimants limit the subject of religion to include only “Christians” or the American church experience. Liberals have no problem mixing their secular religious values with politics. They just don’t want Christians to return the favor.

Atheists, feminists, and the LGBTQ community are just as religious as any people on the planet.

Religion mixes with politics whether we like it or not.

Every man in office has ultimate concerns. As a homosexual Muslim, Obama is very religious. Neutrality is a mirage. His administration has a religious agenda even though it is not called a religious agenda by CBS, NBC, or ABC.

The religion of progressives believes that Sodomite sex acts should be treated with dignity; but, Christians with Biblical knowledge know that Sodomite acts are filthy, unnatural, perverted, and lawless. Progressives believe the government can tax and spend its way into prosperity; conservative Christians believe in fiscal responsibility, restraint, and careful planning. These beliefs are religious in nature.

For this reason, all legislated statutes are religious because they express somebody’s creed.

To conclude that politics and religion don’t mix is a falsehood, a deception, a ruse, a clever covert psych-op designed to eliminate Biblical thought (and Christians) from the debate; and, to enable those with secular religious values to control the debate and to seize power.

Our country is NOT better off when secular minds have control of power.

Fourth, it is true the church has its own mission distinct from the mission of civil government;

But, it is not true that individual Christians are to refrain from exercising their faith in the political arena. Liberals exercise their religion of Equality and Inclusivity every day, all day!

If the Word of God is not the fundamental yardstick for government, what is?

The Pilgrims and Puritan stated their purpose in settling America: *“For the glory of God and advancement of the Christian faith.”*

What a simple statement. It is the duty of Christians to advance the Christian faith in the home, the church, and the affairs of State. The mission has not changed (Matthew 28:19, 20).

It is not the mission of the church to change government, but it is the mission of Christians to call all men, including politicians, to believe the gospel and surrender to God's law-order.

Fifth, Jesus is Lord, and He makes a claim on all men including civil rulers.

Isaiah 33:22 For the LORD is our judge; the LORD is our lawgiver; the LORD is our king; he will save us.

John 17:2 since you have given him authority over all flesh, to give eternal life to all whom you have given him.

Matthew 28:18 And Jesus came and said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.

Colossians 2:10 and you have been filled in him, who is the head of all rule and authority.

Revelation 1:5 and from Jesus Christ the faithful witness, the firstborn of the dead, and the ruler of kings on earth. To him who loves us and has freed us from our sins by his blood

The risen, glorified Christ makes a claim on men and upon all of man's institutions. Just as Christ is Head of the Church and has a will for His ecclesiastical institution, Christ is Head over all rulers and authorities and has a will for His civil institutions.

Enough of this nonsense saying you can't mix religion with politics. It can't be prevented! No politician can separate his values from his political positions.

Government is filled with men and women with intense atheistic, humanistic, feministic, racial, LGBTQ, materialistic religious values.

How much better would American institutions serve the needs of the people if they were governed by Christian men with a conscience toward God?

If Christians surrender government offices to secular rulers, they will be ruled by pagans who are chomping at the bits to advance globalism, the new world order, same-sex marriage, incest, Sodomy, gender choice, abortion, feminism, equality (communism), a world tax, and other fruits from the Poisonous Tree.

Jesus is King of kings, and Lord of lords. He not only calls Christians to advance the Christian faith among friends and neighbors, but among politicians charged with the duty of office.

He not only calls Christians to repent and obey him, he calls government officials to repent and obey Christ.

Acts 17: 30 "And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now

commandeth all men everywhere (in government) to repent:"

85. What Would Jesus Do?

1 Peter 2:21

"For to this you have been called, because Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example, so that you might follow in his steps."

21 Questions

What do you think Jesus would do?

- Would Jesus say the Pledge of Allegiance?
- Would Jesus attend a public school to receive a government education?
- Would Jesus submit to the grope a dope police at an airport?
- Would Jesus apply for a state issued driver's license to travel from place to place to preach the gospel?
- Would Jesus apply for voter registration card so he could help choose the next Caesar?
- Would Jesus accept a social security number and use it to open a bank account?
- Would Jesus turn the other cheek if he saw a thief trying to steal one of his sheep?
- Would Jesus fill out a 1040 form and send it to the IRS?
- Would Jesus surrender 50% of His ministry income and give it to Caesar?
- Would Jesus approve of Christians giving 35% of their income to the government and only 10% to His heavenly Father?
- Would Jesus sign up for the draft to be a soldier pawn for the imperial designs of the U.S. Congress?
- Would Jesus reach for a ministry license if asked to show by what authority he does things?

- Would Jesus apply for a permit to organize a protest about money changing in his Father's house?
- Would Jesus ask Peter to put most of the fish he caught back into the lake because he caught more than his limit allowed by law?
- Would he ask the health inspector's permission to feed 5000 people in a city park?
- Would Jesus produce a birth certificate to show he was the Son of God?
- Would Jesus vote for a Moslem or a Mormon or Serial Adulterer to be the next president?
- Would Jesus ask his 12 disciples to incorporate with the State so they could receive tax benefits from the IRS?
- Would Jesus even have 12 male disciples out of fear of being called "gay"?
- Would Jesus allow women to be part of the 12 in order to avoid being called "sexiest or male chauvinist pig"?
- Would Jesus submit a motion to dismiss in federal court if accused of being a tax protester?
- Would Jesus provide wine if a homosexual couple was getting married in Cana?

Just Wondering!

86. How One's Theology Impacts Politics

2 Timothy 2:15

"Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman who needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth."

This discussion raises the question on how Theology (Reformed and Dispensationalism) impacts politics.

Consider the thinking of Noah Webster:

“In my view, the Christian religion is the most important and one of the first things in which all children, under a free government, ought to be instructed No truth is more evident to my mind than that the Christian religion must be the basis of any government intended to secure the rights and privileges of a free people. When I speak of the Christian religion, I do not mean an ecclesiastical establishment, a creed, or rites, forms, and ceremonies, or any compulsion of conscience. I mean primitive Christianity in its simplicity as taught by Christ . . .”[i] (Noah Webster).

A.W. Tozer (1897-1963) said *men perform according to their theology whether it is right or wrong.*

If Scripture is the ultimate authority on all subjects on which it speaks, then it is the sufficient guide on how a believer should interact with government and the politics of his day. Likewise, it is the sufficient guide for government.

But, what if his interpretation of Scripture is incorrect? What if he has no theology of government? What if he believes men should always obey their government for all civil rulers are appointed by God. Or, what if his theology of government is that Christians are not supposed to be involved in politics because politics is Satan’s domain?

While the majority of Christians were wrapped up in trying to predict dates for the second coming of Christ, John Dewey (1859-1952) introduced humanism into the public schools, the doctrine of separation of church and State was adopted as the public policy, [\[ii\]](#) the courts ruled against praying in the schools, [\[iii\]](#) the Bible was ostracized from the classroom, invocations at football games ceased, the federal government seized control of State schools, [\[iv\]](#) and *Roe v. Wade* (January 22, 1973) opened the door to butchering millions of babies in America.

It took twenty years to wake America’s sleeping giant (the church). After Christ did not come in 1988 as Hal Lindsey and Edger Whisenant predicted, many Christians realized something was wrong with their theology and some began to shift their energies toward political issues. Through the work of the “Moral Majority,” the 1990’s became the decade that conservative Christians emerged from the cocoon to engage the political process in a serious way.

To understand how theology impacts politics, one needs to understand the two views of government, the *Reformed View of Government* and the *Dispensational view of Government*.

Whether the average Christian understands these terms or not, most Christians in America have come under the influence of dispensational theology and its powerful emphasis on end time events.

Reformed theology grew out of the Reformation in the 16th and 17th centuries and emphasized the sovereignty of God over all of human affairs and that governments are ordained of God and are responsible to respond to God's Revelation in order to fulfill its purpose and function according to the Law of God. The ideal society is built on God's laws and administered by covenanters.

Dispensational theology grew out of Darbyism after 1850 and asserted that governments are under the control of Satan, and that Christians should be separate from the world (politics), and that they should pursue a holy, piestic life. Christ will come during a time of great cultural disintegration. Why improve the political system because it will only delay the coming of our Lord? To understand how these systems impact politics or the lack thereof, one needs to understand the theology of the two systems.

TWO VIEWS OF GOVERNMENT

The Reformed view of government is rooted in Presbyterianism from the teaching of Luther, Calvin, Zwingli, and Knox. The ideals of reformed theology and its many variations captured much of Europe, but achieved its greatest influence in America around 1750 A.D. Under the preaching of Jonathan Edwards and the revivalist of the Great Awakening, reformed theology had a profound impact upon the thinking of the founding fathers of our nation. Reformed theology can be found in the Anglican church, Congregational churches, Baptist churches, and the majority of Presbyterian churches.

God is sovereign and rules over the nations.

Human government is a covenantal institution given by God to be serviced by reformed people.

The Biblical ideal is a theocratic government: God's rule over civil authorities (government), and God's rule over ecclesiastical affairs (the church); that is, where civil rulers acknowledge they are responsible to God's law.

The church is the great legislator of moral law as found in the Word of God, and the civil authority is the great enforcer of moral law as found in the Bible.

Christians obey the moral law out of love for their Savior and are subject to the discipline of the church; pagans obey the moral law out of fear civil rulers and are subject to the discipline of the courts.

The purpose of government is limited to the administration of justice; that is, punishing those who violate the life, liberty, and property of other men.

The purpose of the church is limited to the administration of the gospel and its ministries of charity and grace.

Government should be an instrument of God to extend His rule on earth. It should be subject to the rule of law; that is, it should obey God's law and obey its own laws—laws that reflect God's moral order.

Christians should be in subjection to good government and good laws, but they are not required to submit to evil rulers and bad laws; that is, if the government breaks covenant with God, the innocent party in the covenant is released from the covenant's binding duties.

The Dispensational View of government resides in independent Bible churches, Baptists, Church of Christ, and Pentecostals circles.

Dispensationalism began with J.N. Darby (1800-1882), an Anglican pastor, and was popularized by C.I. Scofield (1843-1921). Lewis Sperry Chafer systematized the system (1871-1952). Hal Lindsey is probably the most well-known dispensationalist. Teaching that 1948 started the countdown for the end times, his book, *The Late Great Planet Earth* (1970), had a profound impact on the youth of America. Deeply entrenched in Adventism, dispensationalists hold to an eschatological view of the Scripture, which emphasizes a powerful distinction between Israel and the church, a separation of law and grace, a future for Israel, and the imminent return of Christ to earth. Eschatology is the driving force in the movement and impacts their view on government.

Christians are under the authority of the church and under the authority of civil government. The world system is under the control of Satan and incapable of reformation. Christendom is leavened. Political involvement is a vain, worldly, carnal exercise.

Pietism: The main objective of the Christians life is to know Christ and to make Him known—not to reform the culture. Christians are called to “come out” and “be separate” and pursue a holy life. Christian involvement in politics should be narrow and limited.

Gospel proclamation: It is the duty of the church to preach the gospel and save souls, not reform the government.

History is headed toward a new world order that will be governed by the antichrist. Only the second coming of Christ can restore the biblical order.

Christ is coming soon, maybe next week, and Christians do not have time or the commission to involve themselves in politics. In fact, the worse things become politically the closer the church is to the rapture. The logical conclusion of this kind of thinking is that bad is good. To make improvements in the culture might delay the coming of Christ. War, strife, division, pestilence, earthquakes, hurricanes, and political chaos in the Middle East are signs that Christ's coming is just around the corner.

BACKGROUND OF THE TWO VIEWS

Dispensationalism is deeply rooted in pietism—regeneration, a “born again” experience, a powerful personal devotional prayer life, the pursuit of holiness and personal experiences with God.

Pietism emphasizes a heartfelt religious devotion, ethical purity, charitable activity. One’s demons are not political, but personal struggles against the flesh, the world, and the devil.

Similar to the medieval society with its monkish orders, piestic devotion leads to a life of separation from the world and the abandonment of politics. By separating from the world, monasticism pursued personal religious experiences and a powerful devotion to God.

Disdaining the wickedness in the world, the Anabaptists manifested the mysticism of the medieval Christian culture.

The Waldensees and the Lollards were forerunners of the Anabaptist movement. Anabaptists were severely persecuted, but a form of piety survived in many countries in Europe.

The Quakers came from England. The Mennonites and Amish came from Germany. The mystical teaching by Philip Jacob Spener impacted Lutherans coming to America. The Puritans and Moravians were not only covenantal but deeply piestic. (Source unknown)

In America, pietism gained popularity through the Niagara Bible Conferences (1883-1897) and the publication of the famous Scofield Bible (1909, 1917). Plymouth Brethren, Baptists, Pentecostals, and Charismatics were all influenced by dispensationalism. Dallas Theological Seminary and its sister seminaries carried the message of the Holy Spirit filled life to millions. The “deeper life movement” was a piestic force teaching men the “secrets” of victory over the flesh. Personal piety, not political engagement is the heart cry of dispensationalism.

Reformed theology began in Germany and Switzerland where Luther and Calvin sought to reform the Catholic Church. The Protestant movement was a back to the Bible movement—an attempt to return to the authority of Scripture as opposed to the authority of church canons. Reformed theology spread to Holland and England and Scotland through Lutheranism and Presbyterianism. Reformed theology stresses the legal aspects of justification and the covenantal relationship between God and men.

Reformed theologians see government as an institution designed by God for the purpose of punishing injustice and extending the kingdom of God. The Puritans envisioned the ideal society as governed by the Law of God; that is, civil

authorities needed to be in submission to God to achieve the purpose of divine government as much as the church needed to be in submission to God to fulfill her purpose.

The most famous Puritan Reformed pastor was Jonathan Edwards (1703-1758). Edwards was thoroughly Calvinistic in his theology but also combined pietism into a sort of Neo-Puritan gospel that stressed the need for the individual to repent and come to Christ. The "Great Awakening" (1730-1740) was a period in history where the ideals of piety and ideals of reformation theology combined into a powerful political force that set the nation on fire for Christ. It prepared the way for independence and a constitutional government of the people, by the people, and for the people.

THE STRENGTH OF BOTH VIEWS

The strength of Reformed view is in its stress on the sovereignty of God.

God rules over the nations. Government is an institution designed by God and to be maintained by reformed people. They believe that the church and the government must be subject to the laws of God. The church submits to the Law out of conscience, and sinners submit to the Law out of fear of punishment.

The reformers see government as a covenant, a contract between the people and their rulers. In order to be legitimate, all legislation must reflect the moral Law of God. As the rulers submit to the Law of God, the people are responsible to support and obey their government.

Reformers have a high view of government and believe it can be used to advance the kingdom of God. Those advancing dominion theology are patient and have a long-range vision for society. If the government goes awry, the people have a responsibility to change rulers, and, or change their government.

Reformers possess a powerful *theonomy*. The belief that the OT Law is binding on men today, thunders loudly in the reformed community. Excepting the cultic, ceremonial laws of the OT, the moral law is the ethical standard binding on all men. The law cannot save men or reform men, but it can testify to the character of God. It can be used to convict the sinner of his need for Christ, and it can be used as a tool to sanctify the believer.

The strength of Dispensationalism is that proponents have a high view of Scripture and a powerful drive to be holy people.

The Pietism Movement, whether of the Puritan variety or dispensational variety, places an emphasis on individual holiness and a vigorous Christian life. Private religion, however, is not a healthy replacement for public religion.

Dispensationalism has produced millions of Bible students. Law and grace remained separate in God's salvic plan.

Dispensationalism kept the church from merging into another political Israel. Its emphasis on the second coming created a hope that spawned greater piety. By not being involved in politics, evangelism has flourished and thousands have come into the kingdom because of its emphasis on individual salvation.

THE WEAKNESSES OF BOTH VIEWS

We must keep in mind that truth and error can be found in both systems; that we are not talking about two different gospels, but two different views of government.

The weakness of dispensationalism is in its negativity. The system creates Christians who are withdrawn and isolated from the political process. They are not just withdrawn, but antagonistic to politics. Politics is seen as something worldly and carnal. Adherents believe that government is conspiratorial in that Satan manipulates his minions in government.

Dispensationalists have a short-term view. Because Christ may return at any moment, involvement in politics is seen as a distraction from the gospel. They believe in *private* religion, but NOT *public* religion. Its non-involvement in politics has empowered atheistic secularism and those who perversely pound the drum for separation of church and State.

Simply put, dispensationalists are quite content to let American politics go to hell in a hand basket. Dispensationalists are generally antinomian in that they de-emphasize God's law. The Ten Commandments has been reduced to a *personal moral code*, and virtually no energy is expended collectively to preserve the Ten Commandments as a *public moral code*. By de-emphasizing the OT Law and failing to see it as an absolute standard binding on all men AND THEIR HUMAN INSTITUTIONS, Christianity declined as a positive force in the American society.

The weakness of Reformed Theology is its over optimistic view that the gospel will not only conquer individual human hearts but human institutions.

While dispensationalism is extremely pessimistic, reformed theology, particularly the postmillennial variety, is extremely optimistic. Reformers possess a "wine and cheese" theology that isolates them from the "bread and butter" Christian.

Federal theology, if not taught correctly, can be impersonal and sterile. Their love for truth can produce an elitist's mentality that makes them feel superior to the common Christian. Its emphasis on Calvinism and predestination has a tendency to stifle individual initiative and engagement in evangelism.

Mainline Lutheran Churches and Presbyterian churches, under the influence of liberalism, lack the potency of their conservative Presbyterian brethren.

Calvinism has produced some of the greatest intellectuals of our time, but it has also turned some branches of the church stone cold. Ice water runs through the veins of many. Sometimes it is difficult to distinguish between a covenant of law and a covenant of grace.

Both are merged into one system without precise clarification. Putting theory into practice has been more than a little struggle. Advancing the Reformed Christian worldview and how it should be applied to American law has been slow and difficult.

In conclusion, what is needed is for both groups to obey the Word of God. A combination of dispensationalism's personal, private emotional vitality and zeal for holiness and Reformation theology's intellectual covenantal understanding of how God's law should be applied to government is greatly needed.

Dispensationalists would do well to study dominion theology, develop a theology of government, and engage the political process as a service to Christ; Reformed theologians need to find a courageous Pentecostal fervor to communicate a coherent, Biblical theology of government that is contagious—a theology the “bread and butter” Christian can grasp and assimilate into his world view.

Married to Christ or to the State?

“Christians, like slaves and soldiers, ask no questions” (Jerry Falwell).

Is your church established by Jesus Christ and united under His authority, or does your church owe its existence to the State? That is, are you born-again by Christ or born-again by the State?

Colossians 1:18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

Is your church united under Christ to preach, proclaim, and protect the doctrines of the gospel, or is your church bound by contract to protect and perpetuate the States' public policies?

“In order to determine whether recognition of exemption should appropriately be extended to an organization seeking to meet the religious purposes test of section 501(c)(3), the Internal Revenue Service maintains two basic guidelines: 1) That the particular religious beliefs of the organization are truly and sincerely held, and 2) That the practices and rituals associated with the organization's religious belief or creed are not illegal or contrary to clearly defined public policy”

(Department of the Treasury, I.R.S., Pub. 557 Tax-Exempt Status

for Your Organization. Chapt. 3 Page 14).

Is your assembly a church of Jesus Christ created by Him for His purposes or is it an organization of the State created by men for their purposes?

If the church is a community established by the authority of Jesus Christ then why would this community want to become a body politic under the authority of wicked, unbelieving bureaucrats with strict operational restrictions?

“Come out from among them and be ye separate says the Lord” (I Cor. 6:17).

“Thus shall ye separate the children of Israel from their uncleanness; that they die not in their uncleanness, when they defile my tabernacle that [is] among them” (Le 15:31)

If the church is the bride of Christ, how can it let another authority rule over her?

2 Corinthians 11:2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

Why would any church leader put the strict operational restrictions imposed by the arbitrary and human rule of the legislators over the church instead of the loving and eternal freedoms of Jesus Christ?

1 Corinthians 7:23 Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.

Is there any good reason for the church to apply to the government for anything? Is not Christ sufficient for all her needs?

3 John 1:7 Because that for his name's sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

How is it an advantage to exchange a God-given mandatory exemption as Christ's Church for a classification as an organization which is only generally spared taxation?

How is it an advantage to exchange Constitutional, First Amendment protection for a statutory favor?

Has not the church been led astray by false prophets, lawyers, and certified public accountants who bring the law of man into the church?

Luke 11:46 And he said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne[such as incorporation entanglements]”

2 Peter 2:1 But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers [incorporation lawyers] among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord [as head of the church].

If the church is the Bride of Christ and Christ loves the church and has sacrificed himself for it, what can the State possibly give to the church that the church does not already have infinitum in Christ (Eph. 5:26)?

87. The IRS is Head of the Church

Colossians 2:18-19

Let no man beguile you . . . (by) And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

The Blind Incorporated Church

Christ said of His lukewarm church in Laodicea, “You say, ‘I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.’ But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, **blind** and naked.”

The evidence of the modern church being blind can be seen in “the blind (lawyers) leading the blind (pastors)” to incorporate with the State.

A Corporation is a man-made legal entity created by statute called an “artificial person.” It is a myth, a fiction of the mind, a dead entity with no conscience or sentience.

The touted benefits of a corporation are granted by the State which includes legal visibility, the power to hold property in perpetuity, and the privilege of suing and being sued.

The legal attributes of a corporation are discussed in **Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 at 74 (1906)**:

In the matter of Hale v. Henkel, the issue was whether a corporate officer could refuse a grand jury’s request to examine a small corporation’s books and records. The court stated that while an individual can stand on his constitutional rights and refuse to submit his books and records to a State agency for examination, a corporation had no such right:

“A corporation is but an association of individuals with a distinct name

and legal entity, and, in organizing itself as a collective body, it waives no appropriate constitutional immunities, and, although it cannot refuse to produce its books and papers . . .

*the corporation is **a creature of the State**. It is presumed to be incorporated for the benefit of the public. It receives certain special privileges and franchises, and holds them **subject to the laws of the State and the limitations of its charter**. Its powers are limited by law. It can make no contract not authorized by its charter. Its rights to act as a corporation are only preserved to it so long as it obeys the laws of its creation.*

The individual may stand upon his constitutional rights as a citizen. He is entitled to carry on his private business in his own way. His power to contract is unlimited. He owes no such duty [to submit his books and papers for an examination] to the State, since he receives nothing therefrom, beyond the protection of his life and property. His rights are such as existed by the law of the land [Common Law] long antecedent to the organization of the State, and can only be taken from him by due process of law, and in accordance with the Constitution. Among his rights are a refusal to incriminate himself, and the immunity of himself and his property from arrest or seizure except under a warrant of the law. He owes nothing to the public so long as he does not trespass upon their rights."

The decision in Hale v. Henkle did not postulate new ideas about corporations, as these principles are rooted Roman history.

Let's **contrast** the nature of the church with the characteristics of a corporation as recognized in Hale v. Henkle:

(1) While the corporation is a creation of the State, the church is a creation of God (2 Corinthians 5:17).

But as this work will show, modern churches chose to become "creatures of the State" rather than be a new creation under Christ; the comforts of the world, rather than "the afflictions" of the cross; the approval of man-made governments than "to go outside the camp bearing His reproach" (Hebrews 13:3, 13; John 8:23; 12:43).

(2) The State is "sovereign" over its corporations (legally), but the Lord is "sovereign" over the church (legally).

(3) The corporation is "incorporated for the benefit of the public," but church exists for the glory of God and the benefit of individual">(4) A corporation is a "franchise" of the State, but he church is the living representation of Christ on

earth (Ephesians 1:23).”>(5) Incorporation is a State “privilege,” but the church has rights and authority antecedent to the constitution (Matthew 28:18).

(6) A corporation is “subject to the laws of the State,” but the church is subject to the laws of Christ (1 John 5:1-3).

(7) A corporation’s powers “are limited by law,” but the church has access to unlimited power (Acts 1:8).

(8) A corporation must “obey the laws of its creation, but the church must obey the Lord Jesus Christ (Matthew 6:24).

(9) A corporation has no constitutionally-protected rights, but a church has unalienable rights by virtue of its union with Christ which are protected by the U.S. Constitution.

We could add:

(10) The IRS (26 U.S.C. Section 501) is the legal head of a “charitable, religious” organization, but the Head of the church is the Lord Jesus Christ (Ephesians 1:19-21).

(11) Corporations have to pay for the privilege of being a franchise with the State via a system of taxation, but the church is automatically exempt from taxation by virtue of its sovereignty under Christ.

(12) A religious charity civic-corporation is “not organized for profit but operated exclusively for the promotion of social welfare” may need a decision letter stating that they are exempt from taxation, but the church does not need a tax exempt status because the church is not under the authority of Congress (First Amendment).

(13) The IRS created religious corporations as non-profit organizations, but the church is a prophetic organization declaring the will of God in all things relevant to its mission.

It is forbidden by law to participate in “any political campaign on behalf of (or in opposition to) any candidate for public office;” this includes publications. Thus, pastors are required to preach sermons consistent with public policy as they are bound by contract to do so. (see a discussion of this problem on The Daily Signal).

“Under the Internal Revenue Code, all section 501(c)(3) organizations are absolutely prohibited from directly or indirectly participating in, or intervening in, any political campaign on behalf of (or in opposition to) any candidate for elective public office.” (IRS)

(14) Corporations are under obligations to the State per the requirements of its contract, but neither the individual nor the Church has a duty to the State.

(15) A religious corporation is a dead corpse (blind, mute, and naked) that belongs to the State, but the church is the glorious, living corpus of Christ.

(16) What God creates, He controls, and what the State creates, it controls. Thus, all government approved 501 c 3 religious organizations are controlled by the State.

While CEO pastors of “church” religious organizations often complain about the lack of freedom to address political issues, they have no right to do so because they agreed to accept the rules of the State when they signed the 501 c 3 contract. Shame on these rebellious pastors for not keeping the rules they agreed to keep.

The Persecuted Church

Though persecuted, the early church flourished without the approval of the Roman State. Rome did not hate the church because it worshiped Christ, but because Christians would not incorporate under the authority of Rome; that is, they were “illicit” (contrary to public policy). Rome could have cared less about who you worshiped, as long as it had control of you and your associations.

The modern church experiences no persecution because they have surrendered the body of Christ to the State. Why would the State distress any of those who have surrendered to the authority of government to be ruled by its law? A blind, mute, (masked, vaccinated) IRS-approved church is no threat to State.

It is a miracle that Christianity survived centuries under “the Divine Right of Popes,” and the “Divine Right of Kings.” And, it will be a miracle if Christianity survives the deception of government incorporation.

Perils of the Church in America

The Puritans fleeing Europe sought to build a country where men could worship God based on the dictates of their conscience. But, even here the battle rages. The government destroyed state sovereignty in the Civil War, established secularism as the State religion in the Everson Case in 1947, and made the church blind and mute through the Johnson Amendment in (1954). Bible reading was kicked out of the public schools circa 1962 without protest from the blind and mute church.

The Confederate Battle Flag was modeled after St. Andrew, an early martyr who was crucified on an X type cross because he refused to say, “Caesar is Lord.” He could have lived if he would have confessed Rome to be his master.

The modern church confesses Christ as its Lord and Savior, but in practice she denies Him. Because churchmen have made the State their commander legally through their articles of incorporation, **government is their lord and master**. Once incorporated, the organization is under contract. It must submit to the

obligations of the contract. It has no “God-given rights” as those “rights” are surrendered when the “church” integrates with (married) the State.

*“The term integrated auxiliary of a church refers to a class of organizations that are related to a church or convention or association of churches, but are not such organizations themselves. In general, **the IRS** will treat an organization that meets the following three requirements **as an integrated auxiliary of a church**” (IRS gov).*

Matthew 12:30 “He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth” (Jesus).

In 1811, James Madison vetoed a petition to Incorporate the Episcopalian Church in Alexandria Virginia because incorporation placed the church under the authority of the State in violation of the First Amendment.

Madison had no problem recognizing a church’s corporation with the State as a violation of Scripture and the Constitution.

The Bewitched

The apostle Paul asked the foolish Galatians, “**who hath bewitched you**, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?” (Galatians 3:1).

We should ask the modern 501 c 3 religious organizations, “who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth as Head of the Church?”

Haven’t modern churchmen have been blinded by their lawyers’ legal-speak? Why would any pastor, deacon, or elder surrender the Headship of Christ in order to obtain a State franchise? There are no benefits here. Only chains and fetters!

The church is under the authority of Christ and needs no license by the State to operate! Why can’t churchmen see this? Is it not because they are “wretched, pitiful, poor, **blind** and naked?”

Statism blinds churchmen because it creates a hallucinogen that causes them to believe they must gain permission of government in order to do a thing. While modern pastors are statistes seeking approval of the State, the first-century church said, “It is better to obey God than man” (Acts 5:29).

“If Jesus is Lord, it is not possible or desirable to always obey the state.”(B. Stockton)

The modern church is in need of an antidote — a baptism of seeing — of seeing the authority of Christ and surrendering to it.

"Lord, give us eyes to see!"

88. Can't Always Obey the Government

Romans 13

Romans 13:1 "Everyone ought to obey civil authorities, for all legitimate authority is derived from God's authority" (J.B. Phillips - emphasis mine).

Luke 4:8 "And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve."

PUSHING BACK AGAINST THE DISTORTIONS OF ROMANS 13

To think that good Christians must always obey the government is the product of more than a little evil.

In obeying the Lord Jesus Christ, Christians place themselves in an adversarial position to the autonomous, rebellious State. And, if one thinks it is good Christianity to always obey the rebellious, secular state, they put themselves in an adversarial relationship to the Lord Jesus Christ.

Let us never forget that our Lord was crucified by a corrupt government; that John the Baptist, James, Peter, Paul and all the apostles were killed by governments that demanded total compliance.

Let us not forget that God's people were judged and exiled to Babylon (586 BC) because they stubbornly refused to disobey man-made statutes forced upon them by their own kings; that is, they were compliant with rebellious rulers and kings (2 Kings 17:7-8).

Christians err when they think that all regimes are worthy of respect and obedience.

Because Romans 13 has been misinterpreted and misapplied, this writ **challenges the presumption that it always the duty of Christians to obey secular rulers and bad laws.**

THE PUSH TO HUMBLE BIG GOVERNMENT

Government plays a big part in our lives – in fact, it pushes itself into our lives whether we want it or not.

Progressive / liberals believe that every problem can be resolved by Big Government. Legislatures are vomiting out government solutions *ad nauseam*. Nightly news is filled with reports of speeches by politicians, candidates running for office, legislation passed by Congress, police raids, internationally events that impact our lives, and developments in our cultural wars. And since government impacts our life, it is important to develop a holistic theology on God and government that is consistent with Scripture.

THE PUSH TO RESIST MAXIMUM COMPLIANCE

In recent times, Evangelical pastors have pushed Romans 13 down the throat of their congregations advocating total obedience to Godless, secular regimes.

Unwittingly, Christians end up supporting the wicked schemes of unscrupulously politicians.

Many have used Romans 13 to teach unlimited obedience to the government— even urging their churches to become state created organizations surrendering their authority to the Internal Revenue Service and abandoning the Headship of Christ.

Pastor Greg Dixon, Indianapolis Baptist Temple, said the following:

The opponents of unlimited submission to government are deemed as rebellious, anarchist and disobedient. However, there is no practical, historical or biblical consistency in the shallow arguments of these simpletons (Article, *Revisiting Romans 13*).

THE PUSH TO CONFESS CHRIST AS LORD . . . AS KING

WHO IS LORD, CAESAR OR CHRIST?

The trend for the church to surrender its sovereignty to the state by becoming State Approved 501 c 3 Organizations has produced namby-pamby, spineless, passive, effeminate Christians in the pew who do not have the moral backbone to confront the legal atrocities passed by Congress and enforced by the callous, arrogant, aggressive administrative branch of government.

Today's pastors are so sweet, you could get tooth decay by listening to their lollipop sermons on how Christians are supposed to smile and obey government regimes like Stalin, Pol Pot, and Mao Tse Tung--a theology that Daniel, the three Hebrews, John the Baptist, and Jesus would not recognize.

Sheeple fall into the hands of unscrupulous politicians whose agenda is immoral, tyrannical, and anti-Christian.

The atrocities of the Nazi Party occurred in part because the church in Germany failed to develop a holistic Biblical theology of God and government. Hitler's favorite passage in the Bible was Roman 13 (Erwin Lutzer, Hitler's Cross).

Furthermore, Romans 13 was the most expounded and talked about passage by the Lutheran Church during Churchill's War against Germany. Unfortunately, the superficial, state-sponsored Lutheran Church in Germany fell into syrupy compliance with the Nazi Party.

Lutheran pastors used Romans 13 to encourage their flocks to surrender to Nazi policy, and American pastors have fallen into the same dog-on-a-leash error as German theologians.

Something is radically wrong with a pastor that teaches it is the duty of Christians to bad laws and bad government!! Robert E. Lee, Stonewall Jackson, and President Jefferson David did not think this way.

What is a Christian to do when the government he is supposed to honor is the enemy of God's Law turned traitor to its own constitution?

A corrupt, overreaching government challenges us to go deeper into Christ and obedience to Him by resisting tyranny (Dietrich Bonhoeffer)

Judge Napolitano stated *that because the government breaks its own laws the government is not your friend* (Judge Andrew P. Napolitano, Constitutional Chaos, p. ix).

Christians need to rethink Romans 13 and develop a complete, accurate theology of God and Government from the whole of Scripture--a muscular theology that unleashes a militant Christianity that takes its marching orders from King Jesus (Acts 17:1-7).

THE PUSH FOR A BALANCED VIEW OF ROMANS 13

*Romans 13 does **not** teach total compliance of the total man to total government!*

With so many pastors calling for maximum surrender to fatally flawed government regimes, and with churches rushing to make the IRS head of its corporate 501 c 3 organization, it is important that Christians see Romans 13 in light of the whole of Scripture and to push back against an unbalanced view of Scripture.

Reckless politicians hell-bent on creating a lawless society are shackling every American and their grandchildren with unsustainable debt and cuffing them to stifling man-made statutes enforced by a police state.

We Americans find ourselves in the same predicament as the founding fathers, but this time the "long train of abuses" are by the "United States, Inc."

We Americans have been let down, slowed down, taken down, beat down, stripped down, dumbed down, locked down, broken down, thrown down, held down, clamped down, cracked down, shut down, and taxed down through a "long train of abuses" by Washington D.C.!

The whole idea that God expects us to submit to a police state is repugnant to Scripture and repulsive to the Christian mind.

The problem of an overreaching government must be laid at the feet of the church and its immature pastors.

The church is the living body (corpus) of Christ, but today churches are rushing to become 501 c 3 corporations owned and ruled by the State; and, ordered around by its wicked, ugly step-sister, the IRS (a UN organization).

When a church gives up its Scriptural status, due to the deception of some incorporation attorney void of Biblical truth and not competent in Biblical law (Lk. 11:53), it exchanges its prophetic status as the body of Christ to become a government "non-prophet" organization.

Furthermore, deceived pastors teach their ignorant flock that it is necessary to commit themselves to the "unequal yoke" (2 Cor. 6:14) because Romans 13 teaches that the church should always obey the state. Sounds like the Lutheran church under Hitler and Nazi Germany doesn't it?

All this is pure hogwash and must be abandoned if the church is going to fulfill Christ's commission "to make disciples of all nations (peoples and states).

Goo-ordained "rulers are not a terror to good conduct, but to bad;" and must be supported. It follows, therefore, that bad rulers are a terror to good conduct, and a comfort to bad works, and must be resisted (13:3). Isn't this true?

THE PUSH FOR PASTORS TO DEMAND GOVERNMENT OBEY CHRIST

The government to which Christians owe their allegiance for conscience sake must give countenance to the authority of Christ and supremacy of His Word—that allegiance is due to a state just because it exists irrespective of its moral character is ludicrous and unbiblical and undesirable.

States that do not acknowledge the authority of Christ over them have joined the rebellion of Psalm 2.

To think that Christians owe allegiance to godless, de facto humanistic regimes that rewrite history, that destroy our Christian heritage, promote Islam, sanction the murder of the unborn, approve of homosexuality, levy oppressive taxes, is openly hostile to Christian Chaplains praying in the name of Jesus, or orders the Ten Commandments to be taken off courtroom walls **exposes blatant ignorance of God's Word on the subject of God and government.**

God not only commands the people to obey him, but rulers to obey Him. Just as the church has a duty to surrender to the God's law-order for their ministry, the government has a duty to surrender to God's law-order for their services to mankind.

Just as the Christians have a duty to say "No!" to evil, the State has a duty to say "No!" to evil . . . and, if it doesn't, Christians have a duty to say "No!" to government.

The preachers that command their flocks to always obey the government, seldom call the State to obey the Lord Jesus Christ. Why?

Why aren't preachers calling presidents and congressmen to repent and surrender to the Lord Jesus Christ? Maybe, because they are in bed with the Whore of Babylon! Selah.

"Every soul" includes kings, prime ministers, presidents, governors, generals, and sheriffs, mayors as well as citizens. Civil rulers are not above God's law or their own law.

Muslims have no difficulty in demanding their leaders submit to the Koran. Why is it that Christian experience labor pains and suffers an epileptic fit calling politicians to submit to Christ and His Word? Isn't it because they fear men more than they fear God?

Not only do individuals have a responsibility to be a Christian, governments have a duty to be thoroughly Christian and to "seek first the kingdom and His righteousness" (Mt. 6:33). Isn't this correct?

THE PUSH TO SUBJECT ROMANS 13:1 TO THE WHOLE OF SCRIPTURE

Hermeneutics: Every verse in the Bible must submit to the whole of Scripture; and, the whole of Scripture does not teach absolute submission to any State – See the three Hebrews in Daniel 3.

The phrase, "there is no authority "except" of God in Romans 13:1 literally means, "if not." *That is, there is no legitimate authority unless (if not) ordained of God.*

The government to which Christians are to submit is a government that acknowledges the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ and seeks to punish acts of rebellion against God's law-order.

The whole idea that Christians are to submit to regimes that kills babies, promotes same-sex-marriages, taxes its people into poverty, and imprisons its own citizens for misdemeanors is repugnant to Biblical Christianity.

All man-made governments that organized around humanistic principles are de facto governments acting under color of authority and color of law.

They are more likely deserving of resistance than compliance.

J.B. Phillips agreed and translated this verse as follows: “Everyone ought to obey civil authorities, for all legitimate authority is derived from God’s authority.”

If Jesus is Lord, it is not possible or desirable to always obey the State.

Obedience to Christ can only be rendered where His authority is proclaimed and recognized.

Romans 13 must be applied to our unique constitutional government that not only empowers but limits the federal government—a government designed to be a servant of the states, not a ruler over the states.

The federal government commits nonfeasance when it fails to follow a constitutional mandate; and, it commits malfeasance when it deliberately violates a constitutional restriction.

Good government follows the rule **of** law while bad governments rule **by** law; that is, try to rule you and control you through the ten trillion statutes that they themselves do not obey.

When the federal government over reaches its authority and commits ultra vires acts, it not only violates Scripture, but its barbarizes its contract with WE THE PEOPLE.

Because the government breaks the law and denies it, the government is not your friend –Judge Napolitano, Constitutional Chaos, p. ix.

Not only are Christians supposed to obey the law of God, governments are required to obey God’s law. God’s law is not a private matter! It is not for the Christian to obey while leaving the State to do as it pleases.

Israel’s God is the “King of the nations” (Jer. 10:17).

We hear much from the pulpit about a Christian’s duty to obey the government, but the same pulpits are dead-dog silent on the government’s duty to obey the Lord Jesus Christ.

Not only can individuals sin against God, governments can sin against God. The difference being that when a government sins, it has a Herculean impact on millions of people.

*When injustice becomes law, rebellion becomes duty!**

Good government is ordained of God. WE THE PEOPLE are responsible to obey good government and good laws, but **no Christian has a duty to obey bad officials and bad laws** (Proverbs 29:2; Psalm 94:20; Daniel 6).

When governments fear the people, there is liberty and freedom, but when the people fear government, there is bondage and oppression.

While you have a right to know the government's business, the government has no right to know what you do in your business.

At times obedience to state policy is obedience to God; at other times, disobedience to the State is obedience to God (See the Hebrew midwives and the three Hebrews in Daniel's time).

THE PUSH TO LIMIT GOVERNMENT TO ITS DELEGATION ORDER

In the Bible, every king, magistrate, and judge was limited by God's Word.

America follows the rule of law; that is, the Constitution is not a grant of power, but a limitation of power. God's law limits man. Law cannot regenerate man or society. It is in place to restrain evil men.

The sovereignty and authority of God is unlimited and unconfined; civil authority is *limited and confined*. The negative commands, "Thou shall not . . ." are in place to limit government men and their political powers.

The purpose of government is not charity, but justice—that is, to defend the basic rights of man: life, liberty, and property.

When a government abandons this purpose and seeks to duplicate the mission of the church (grace) by offering "privileges" and "benefits" and "franchises," it steps outside its jurisdiction, abandons its authority, and sins against God.

Statism is the belief that the government is the answer to all things. When the government seeks to be the source of all goodness, wisdom, and power, it seeks to be a god.

Many modern politicians have made an idol out government believing that the federal government is the solution to all of man's problems.

It is much easier to teach Christians to always obey the State than to teach them when and how to disobey the State.

If the State cannot be resisted in the minds of Christians, then the state has become their god!

If the State has to be obeyed at all times, then the State is a god!

And, when the State becomes a god in the minds of Christians, you **cannot expect them not to betray you.**

Individual Christians have no duty to obey the state, and the church has no duty to the State (Hale v. Hinkle).

THE PUSH TO GET THE CHURCH TO STOP THINKING GOVERNMENT IS SUPERIOR TO CHURCH AUTHORITY.

God made three institutions: family, government, and church. Each has de jure authority and limited jurisdiction.

The church has its own jurisdiction, its own mission, and its own authority. It can not command the State nor can the State command the church. *The church can instruct the State regarding God's law, but the State cannot instruct the church about God's law.*

The church can demand the State repent of its same-sex marriage policies, but the State cannot force its will on the church.

At no time is the church required to become a state church, a 501 c 3 organization, or obtain permission from the state to carry out its mission. If the State can't be resisted, then it has become a god in the mind of Christians.

When a church seeks to incorporate by the authority of the state, it abandons the authority of Christ (Col. 2:4-9). *Better to be a prophetic church than a non-prophet, non-profitable church.*

THE PUSH TO APPLY SCRIPTURE CORRECTLY TO AMERICA'S UNIQUE FORM OF GOVERNMENT.

America is unique in that it does not have a monarch. It is a republic. *The president is not commander and chief of the American people, but commander and chief of the armed forces.*

In America, the government is not a king--the people are king--sovereigns without subjects (Treaty of Peace-1783).

The federal government is not sovereign. It is a servant-government bound by the Constitution. The people are sovereign in the legal sense, and the State operates as a sovereign in relation to other international states.

However, the constitution does not enforce itself. The constitution can only be enforced by standing up for your God-given rights as secured by the constitution.

The states or the People, not the Supreme Court, are the ultimate judge of whether the acts of the federal government are constitutional or unconstitutional; and, the people are the judge of their own state as to whether it functions within the restraints of the constitution.

Since the first command says, "Thou shall have no gods before me," (Ex. 20:3) *the first duty of a Christian is not to submit to authority, but to question authority.*

Christians have no duty to obey a government that disobeys God's law and ignores its own constitution, its own laws, and acts outside its jurisdiction.

Christians have no duty to obey raunchy laws by the rebel State.

A government that does not obey its own law or the laws of God is an enemy of the people!

There is a difference between lawful and legal. It was legal to kill Jews in Nazi Germany, but it was not lawful. Something lawful reflects God's will; something legal reflects the will of the legislature. God's law restrains evil and liberates man; man's law controls men and enslaves them.

God's law is negative, thereby confining the purpose of government. This is good.

Man's law is positive, thereby giving unrestrained power to government. This is bad.

The legal head of the church is Jesus Christ (Col. 1:18; 2:4-10); the legal head of a federally incorporated church *organization* is the UN gorilla, the IRS!

THE PUSH TO APPLY EXHORTATIONS IN ROMANS TO AMERICA'S UNIQUE TAX SYSTEM.

Since all law is written, all tax laws are written. Nowhere in the tax code can one find a tax on the church or upon working families; that is, pastors need to stop calling Christians to pay taxes they don't owe.

Has not the church denied the sufficiency of Christ by surrendering its affairs to the godless IRS?

The State can only tax that which it creates. The church is not created by the State and has no duty to the State.

While individual Christians may have a duty to pay certain taxes, *the church has no duty to pay taxes, to reveal its records, or to cooperate in anyway with a State Corporation.*

It certainly has no authority from Scripture to make its treasurer and uncompensated tax collector for the United States Government. The First Amendment erects a wall of separation between the State and the Church—if the Church claims its freedom in Christ.

A Christian should pay the taxes he legitimately owes, but he has no duty to pay taxes where no law exists.

To know what taxes a Christian must pay, he must consult the Constitution and the laws created by Congress as recorded in the Federal Register. Upon information and belief, the only "persons" required to pay the "income tax" are government workers and employees, and government corporations.

A Christian has no duty to pay taxes not required by written law. If it is not written, it is not law; that all people must pay "their fair share" is not law, but propaganda.

Furthermore, while a Christian should pay taxes he legitimately owes, he has no duty to give what the government wants.

The Bible does not promote anarchy. We do not want to get rid of government; **we want to get rid of wickedness in government.** Christians are not anti-government, but anti-tyranny.

We are not against good rulers; we are against ungodly rulers and ungodly statutes.

We are not against the *rule of law*, but we are against the *rule by law* . . . which by the way is what we have in the United States today.

THE PUSH TO FORCE GOVERNMENT TO OBEY ITS OWN LAW AND TO RESTRICT ITS ACTIVITIES TO THE CONSTITUTION

A government that demands obedience by the people, but exempts its own officials from obedience to statutes is unworthy of respect. The slogan "Clinton for Prison" comes to mind.

We are not against citizens submitting to good law, but we are against citizens that are willing to trade blind obedience and silent submission to bad statutes for the sake of peace.

While Romans thirteen supplies general instruction on the authority of civil government and the duty of citizens to be generally subject to those powers, **the whole of Scripture does not support unlimited obedience to any State!**

The Founders of America faced the oppression of King George and knew well the teachings of Romans 13. They understood their duty to surrender to good government. But, they saw King George in violation of Scripture, not themselves.

No king had behaved so badly, and they confronted him for it through many formal and godly appeals. When he refused to surrender to the will of the LORD God, they saw no alternative but to resist his despotic rule.

They looked at God's Hall of Fame in Hebrews 11 and found condition precedent for resistance.

As Mayhew said in 1750, "Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God." In their minds, they could not obey a wicked law for the "Lord's sake" (1 Peter 2:13).

"If we say that we will always obey the State, the State becomes our God (Pastor Erwin Lutzer, Hitler's Cross, p. 134)

89. No Such Thing as Righteous Rebellion

James 4:12

James 4:12 - "There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the one who is able to save and destroy. But you--who are you to judge your neighbor?"

Today, we want to study the subject of rebellion.

We are familiar with the sixties revolution wherein youth revolted against their parents, morals, and rules.

Drinking, smoking pot and free sex erupted like a basil cancer on college campuses. Christian censorship organizations that monitored Hollywood were forced to disband. Pornography flourished. Hippies rioted in the streets against the Viet Nam War, and some campuses were forced to shut down. Liberalism was in; conservatism was out.

Many were proud of their rebellion . . . but their rebellion was not against institutions as much as it was against the laws of the Creator God.

The Biblical word for "rebel" (*marah*) entails "to revolt," "to resist," or "to be stubborn." It is primarily used to describe willful, flagrant disobedience to God's revealed will.

Oxford Dictionary describes rebellion as "an act of armed resistance to an established government or leader." But, the British perspective goes askew from the Word of God. Such definitions are carnal and worldly.

Biblical theology teaches us there is one God and one absolute law order.

Because there is only one Lawgiver (James 4:12), rebellion can only be against God and His laws. Civil disobedience is not always rebellious. Because there is only one law order to which all men are responsible, the right and wrong of human conduct must be measured against His will. Rebellion is a religious term and its energy is always directed against the will of the Creator.

Furthermore, since there is only one Lawgiver, the State cannot create law. People can discover law, but not create it. Legislators can pass statutes toward those in contract with the State, but it cannot make law. And, what Congress calls "law" is really only rules, codes, and regulations for artificial entities.

Since rebellion is against the Lord and His law-order, **there is no such thing as righteous rebellion as some ministries propose** (Proverbs 31 Ministries; Christian Science Journal; American Creation).

In order for there to be rebellion there has to be a righteous standard from which to deviate. Since God's law is good, true, and perfect, all rebellion is a rejection of His canon of righteousness (Psalm 19:7-10).

Because all rebellion is against God there is no such thing as "righteous rebellion."

For the sake of clarity, the application of the term "rebellion" must be reserved for acts of disobedience to God's law. Because the essence of the common law is "do your neighbor no harm," the health of society or individual men can be measured by the degree of conformity to God's law.

It is of little consequence when men disregard State law . . . unless, of course, State law is in conformity to the law of the LORD God.

(1) **All men have a duty to obey the Creator.** God's law is not only relevant for the Christians; it is requisite for all men and all of man's institutions.

Even the government has a duty to obey God, and when it doesn't, it is in rebellion against the rule of law. By rebellion we refer to willful resistance to the authority of the LORD God, and not resistance to the fickle, changing statutes of a humanistic legislature.

Psalm 2:2 The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed . . .

The opposite of rebellion is obedience to God's law.

Obedience to law cannot save the soul, but it can restrain men and purge evil from a community when properly applied. Salvation is found at the cross in a Savior who obeyed the law on our behalf, and died for our sins.

Obedience to God's law creates an orderly society, and disregard for His law unleashes those forces within human nature that yield the ills of society: proud arrogant youth, sexual promiscuity, teen pregnancy, lust of all kinds, theft, violence, drug addiction, fraud, disrespect, and rioting.

Compliance to State statutes with the color of law creates a color of order, but its impact for restraining man's depraved energies is limited in proportion to the State's compliance with the laws of God.

In Deuteronomy 13:1-14, God orders His people to kill rebels who revolt against His law-order; that is, resistance to overreaching officials is obedience to God.

Furthermore, the only law mentioned in the Constitution to which the people are obligated to keep is the common law; that is, the universal law of "nature and nature's God" (Amendment VII; Declaration of Independence).

(2) While all men are sinners, **it is possible to live life in obedience to the Lord.** Isaiah was able to say:

Isaiah 50:5 The Lord GOD hath opened mine ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back.

When God redeems a man, and he becomes a new creation in Christ, his whole regenerated being hums with desire to be in tune with God's law (Psalm 119:70-72, 92, 97).

(3) **The greatest sponsor of rebellion is the State** (Psalm 2). Politicians, lawyers, and judges often lead the rebellion against the kingdom of God (See the Everson Court (1947)).

Isaiah 1:23 Thy princes are rebellious, and companions of thieves: every one loveth gifts (bribes), and followeth after rewards (pay offs): they judge not the fatherless, neither doth the cause of the widow come unto them.

(4) **The State has little concern about treason to the LORD,** but rulers unravel at the seams when it comes to treason against the government (NYT). Moreover, the State often labels the State critic as rebellious or treasonous when in fact it is State officers that are being rebellious to God and His Word.

Furthermore, **not all that is called rebellion is rebellion.**

Athaliah called the revolt of Jehoiada the priest "treason," but in reality it was Athaliah, the de facto queen, who was in murderous rebellion against the Lord and His Messiah prince (**2 Kings 11:14**).

Consider the early Christians how were labeled rebels when in fact it was the Jewish leaders who rebelled against the Torah.

King George called the Colonist rebels for not submitting to his taxes, but it was King George who rebelled against good government and reason. When King George addressed the Parliament over the colonies rejection of the King's tax, he called his speech, "A Proclamation of Rebellion." However, in reading the Declaration of Independence, the Founders were careful to list the King's oppressive acts against good government and the rule of law. Shortly thereafter, King George sent his troops to enforce compliance with his unjust policies – so typical of tyrannical regimes.

The South was labeled "rebels" by the North in order to justify Northern Aggression. But it was the Northern States who rejected Christianity, rebelled against limited government, and violated their own constitution.

The South did not violate the Constitution in seceding from the Union, but Lincoln (1) violated his oath of office to "protect and defend" the Constitution,

(2) ordered the military to block southern ports before they seceded which was an act of war, (3) issued the order to invade the South without any military provocation from the South (4) shut down the press in the North where journalist spoke out against him, in violation of the First Amendment, (5) arrested Congressman Clement Vallandigham of Ohio as well as the City Council of Baltimore for speaking against him ; (6) illegally suspended the Writ of Habeas Corpus in order to keep opponents from speaking out against his war, (7) issued the Emancipation Proclamation which was a clear violation of the Constitution at the time, (8) jailed men without a trial and subjected them to torture (water boarding), and (9) killed over 50,000 Southerners not engaged in the conflict.

Many teachers and coaches have been fired for leading students to pray because school boards are in rebellion against the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ.

The most influential rebels work for the State. Those working in the apparatus of government and the press that supports them are the greatest promoters of rebellion within a nation.

Many citizens have been targeted by the IRS and labeled “tax protestors.” But, it is the IRS who has rebelled against truth, constitutional limitations on taxation, and full disclosure about the nature of America’s taxation system.

This organization shows no restraint and no shame in its love of money and its violation of the Tenth Commandment.

Exodus 20:17 Thou (IRS agents) shalt not covet (develop a scheme to take) thy neighbor’s house (or cars), thou shalt not covet thy neighbor’s wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbor’s (including his private income).

For this reason, Benjamin Frankly and Thomas Jefferson wanted the nation's motto to be, “*Resistance to tyranny is service to God.*”

(5) It is not rebellion to resist an apostate government or an official guilty of crimes against the people. In fact, rebellion against the State may be in conformity to the will of God. It is a twisted mind that thinks it is wrong to disobey a tyrant, mob boss, or local thug.

Resistance to an apostate government is obedience to God. The Hebrew midwives in Exodus one, Rahab in Joshua 2, the three Hebrews in Daniel 3, Daniel himself in chapter six, and the apostles' preaching against the order of the Sanhedrin in Acts five are examples of people who obeyed God in disobeying rebellious governing authorities.

The government’s slander of its faithful citizens who expose corruption provides evidence of the State’s rebellion against God’s law-order.

Many a good man who resists theft in the name of taxation has been the target of the renegade IRS organization because it is unrestrained by God's law.

You can see in the following verses how rebellion is always associated with violations of God's law . . . that nations and their politicians commit apostasy . . . that those who obey God's commandments and prod state officials to obey His law are often labeled misfits, weirdos, rebels, tax protestors, racists, homophobes, and anarchist when , in fact, the opposite is true.

(6) Because the State is the source of idolatry and rebellion, God exhorts all the nations and their governments not to become proud and rebel against Him.

Psalm 66:7 He ruleth by his power for ever; his eyes behold the nations: let not the rebellious exalt themselves. Selah.

The opposite of rebellion is submission to the laws of the LORD; and, the opposite of submission to a rebellious government is obedience to God; that is, accurate Christian living involves obedience to God's commands and non-compliance with some policies of a rebel legislature.

All laws that interfere with the rights of man or obedience to the LORD must be resisted.

(7) Moses exhorted Israel not to rebel against the Lord by refusing to enter Canaan to war against the Canaanites.

Numbers 14:9 Only rebel not ye against the LORD, neither fear ye the people of the land; for they are bread for us: their defense is departed from them, and the LORD is with us: fear them not.

Refusing to war against the ungodly in positions of power is rebellion against God's will.

Non-compliance with godless policies is an act of obedience to the Creator.

(8) Moses recounted how the nation as a whole revolted against the Lord.

Deuteronomy 9:7 Remember, and forget not, how thou provokedst the LORD thy God to wrath in the wilderness: from the day that thou didst depart out of the land of Egypt, until ye came unto this place, ye have been rebellious against the LORD.

Deuteronomy 31:27 For I know thy rebellion, and thy stiff neck: behold, while I am yet alive with you this day, ye have been rebellious against the LORD; and how much more after my death?

Ezekiel calls his nation the "rebellious house" of Israel sixteen times in his book and six times in chapter two. Rebellion against God's law order marks the *terminus ad quem* of a nation's political order (Ezekiel 2:3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9).

(9) God's Word gives instruction on how to deal with an antagonistic son whose hostile acts against parents are rooted in rebellion against the LORD.

Deuteronomy 21:18-19 If a man have a stubborn and rebellious son, which will not obey the voice of his father, or the voice of his mother, and that, when they have chastened him, will not hearken unto them . . . bring him to the elders:

(10) During Joshua's day, the people understood that Joshua was God's appointed commander and that to disobey his administration was act of rebellion against God Himself.

Joshua 1:18 Whosoever he be that doth rebel against thy commandment, and will not hearken unto thy words in all that thou commandest him, he shall be put to death: only be strong and of a good courage.

In Jeremiah' day, it was God's will for his wayward people to submit to the yoke of Babylon. To resist Babylon was to rebel against the LORD (Jeremiah 27:13).

(11) Both the people and the government had to be exhorted not to desert the commandments of the LORD.

1 Samuel 12:14 If ye will fear the LORD, and serve him, and obey his voice, and not rebel against the commandment of the LORD, then shall **both ye and also the king that reigneth over you continue following the LORD your God:**

In summary, because all rebellion is against the law of the Lord God, there is no such thing as a righteous rebellion. But, all that is labeled rebellion is not rebellion. Because the State is the leading sponsor of rebellion, accurate living demands we recognize the State's rebellion against God's law and resist it. For, resistance to the rebel State is obedience to God.

Part II

We are working on defining and understanding what rebellion is according to the Holy Scriptures.

Because there is only one lawgiver (James 4:12) and one standard of righteousness, rebellion can only be against God and His laws. Refusal to be complicit with crime is not rebellion, but obedience to God. Because there is only one law order to which all men are responsible, the right and wrong of

human conduct must be measured against His will. Rebellion is a religious term and its energy is always against the will of the Creator.

Furthermore, since there is only one Lawgiver, the State cannot create law. Man can discover law, but not create it. Legislators can pass statutes toward those in contract with the State, but it cannot make law. And, what Congress calls "law" is really only rules, codes, and regulations for artificial entities.

Since rebellion is against the Lord and His law-order, **there is no such thing as righteous rebellion as some ministries propose** (Proverbs 31 Ministries; Christian Science Journal; American Creation).

(12) The Bible identifies rebellion as the sin of witchcraft and Samuel applied it to Israel's head of state (Saul).

1 Samuel 15:23 For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the LORD, he hath also rejected thee from being king.

Those who obey God's law serve the LORD; those in rebellion to His law serve the Devil.

The etymology of the word "witch" denotes "one that knows." Though not exclusive to women, the term "witch" has strong, feminine associations because many women in the occult seek the power of special knowledge. Eve comes to mind. Rebellion is called "witchcraft" because witchcraft involves personal autonomy, self-law, and man's attempt to be a god-like creature who can control the future. A rebel rejects God's sovereignty, takes hold of the helm and says,

*"It matters not how strait the gate,
How charged with punishments the scroll,
I am the master of my fate,
I am the captain of my soul." (Invictus)*

So antichrist is this poem, William McDonald, one of my Bible teachers flunked a class in college because he refused to memorize the poem required by the professor. Oh, that all Christians would refuse to memorize this witchy poem.

(13) Nehemiah summarized the history of Israel as one of anarchy against God's law-order and persecution of those who obey God's law.

Nehemiah 9:26

*Nevertheless they were disobedient, and rebelled against thee, and **cast thy law behind their backs**, and slew thy prophets (by slander and then the sword) which testified against them to turn them to thee, and*

they wrought great provocations.

Notice how Nehemiah identifies rebellion **as the rejection of God's law-order**, and not civil disobedience to the laws of a king. Since disobeying God's law involves the injury of men (slander and murder), and disobeying some state code does not injure men, rebellion against God's law involves criminal felonies while infringement on state rules and regulations seldom rises to the level of criminal action.

Israel was not deported because they disobeyed their kings, but because they obeyed the government and kept their ruler's permissive statutes (See 2 Kings 17).

(14) The sentence for rebellion against God's law is the death penalty.

Psalms 5:10 Destroy thou them, O God; let them fall by their own counsels; cast them out in the multitude of their transgressions; for they have rebelled against thee.

We have here an imprecatory prayer -- a prayer that petitions heaven to dispense justice to rebellious rulers.

(15) The source of rebellion is the evil heart of man.

Proverbs 17:11 An evil man seeketh only rebellion: therefore a cruel messenger shall be sent against him.

Evil is not in the atmosphere. It is the hearts of fallen men. Men given to evil are marked by disobedience to God's law. In our time those evil men include evil women, politicians, Democrats, Republicans, liberal judges, and left-wing media organizations. When evil is institutionalized in a political party, the nation should tremble.

(16) God summons the heavens and the earth to act as a jury and to indict God's people as renegades. Pastors would do well to identify insurgents in the church of Jesus Christ.

Isaiah 1:2 Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the LORD hath spoken, I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against me.

This verse takes us into the courtroom of Almighty God to hear the Judges indictment against Israel. Again, rebellion is against the LORD and not against human institutions; against His law, and not man's statutes, codes, and regulations.

(17) Rebellion is recognized by rejection of God's law-order.

Isaiah 30:9 That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children

that will not hear the law of the LORD:

Ezekiel 20:21 Notwithstanding the children rebelled against me: they walked not in my statutes, neither kept my judgments to do them, which if a man do, he shall even live in them; they polluted my sabbaths: then I said, I would pour out my fury upon them, to accomplish my anger against them in the wilderness.

Before us are crimes against humanity and transgressions against the LORD God. A *transgression* refers to a single act of violating God's law while *rebellion* refers to a rejection of God's law-order in its entirety.

(18) Jeremiah accuses Hannah, one Israel's pastor-prophets, of teaching the nation to disobey the LORD.

*Jeremiah 28:16 Therefore thus saith the LORD; Behold, I will cast thee from off the face of the earth: this year thou shalt die, because **thou hast taught rebellion against the LORD***

Consider how the media plays a role in inciting rebellion against God's law-order. Just think of how many pastors in America teach their congregations to rebel against God by encouraging them to obey rebels in the IRS, CONgress, or State statutes.

Pastors teach rebellion to their congregations when they think government is righteous and can be trusted.

Pastors teach rebellion when they encourage their flocks to comply with all the rules, codes, and regulations of rebellious lawmakers.

Pastors teach rebellion when they don't teach their congregations how and when to disobey public policy.

Pastors are rebellious when they cannot disobey the government. For if one can't disobey the government, then the government is god (Pastor Erwin Lutzer).

Pastors are rebellious when they teach grace is the opposite of law. The opposite of law is not grace, but lawlessness; the opposite of grace is not law, but permissiveness.

(19) Rebellion is so contagious; God has to exhort His own ministers not to rebel against Him.

Ezekiel 2:8 But thou, son of man, hear what I say unto thee; Be not thou rebellious like that rebellious house: open thy mouth, and eat that I give thee.

Holiness is never contagious, but rebellion is as infectious as a January flu.

(20) Rebellion is characterized first and foremost by refusing to be influenced by God's Word. Taking down the Ten Commandment in courtroom and classrooms comes to mind.

Ezekiel 12:2 Son of man, thou dwellest in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not; they have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house.

Rebellion blinds evolutionary professors to the truth of creation; blinds liberal politicians to the truth of Christ's authority; blinds Planned parenthood to the fact that abortion is murder; blinds homosexuals to their condemnation; blinds women to the dangers of feminism; blinds the UN to the evils of globalization; blinds the unbeliever about the coming judgment.

A little humor: The reason the Ten Commandments are not posted in the courtroom is that they create a hostile working environment for lawyers, judges, and prosecutors who are engaged in a adultery, lying, and stealing.

(21) Glory to His grace! There is a remedy for rebellion. There is forgiveness and restoration to men who confess their rebellion, repent, and surrender to His authority.

Daniel 9:5 We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from thy precepts and from thy judgments:

Daniel 9:9 To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him;

1 Kings 2:3 Observe what the Lord your God requires: Walk in obedience to him, and keep his decrees and commands, his laws and regulations, as written in the Law of Moses. Do this so that you may prosper in all you do and wherever you go.

Psalms 128:1 Blessed are all who fear the Lord, who walk in obedience to him.

*Hosea 14:1-4 O Israel, return unto the LORD thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity. Take with you words, and turn to the LORD: say unto him, Take away all iniquity, and receive us graciously: so will we render the calves of our lips. Asshur shall not save us; we will not ride upon horses: neither will we say any more to the work of our hands, Ye are our gods: for in thee the fatherless findeth mercy. **I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for mine anger is turned away from him.***

In summary, because all rebellion is against the law of the Lord God, there is no such thing as a righteous rebellion. But, all that is labeled rebellion is not

rebellion. The main sponsor of rebellion is the State. Resistance to the rebel State is obedience to God. Civil disobedience is a good thing when its energies are connected to the law of the LORD God.

Those who love the Lord and obey Christ will not placate, appease, or surrender to the unconstitutional acts of state officials. Consequently, rebellious State officials may accuse and even prosecute Christians for their obedience to the Lord.

Trusting government is simply not Christian (Psalm 118:9-9). The motto of good Americans is inscribed on our coins, "In God we trust."

90. Taxation and the Bible

Romans 13:6

"Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; Honor to whom Honor."

A Look at the Biblical Tax System

Have you ever heard of a poor person taxing himself into prosperity?

Well, Congress believes it can tax the nation into economic recovery . . . and Christians fall for the propaganda that taxation is good for America.

But, the truth is Americans are being taxed to death. And, there is no taxation without respiration. Our death march into bankruptcy is the result of forsaking the Biblical law and God's restriction on the State's taxing powers.

Consequently, Christians need to return to the Word of God and develop convictions about God's law order on taxation.

One could easily get the false impression the Bible has nothing to say about the subject. But, this is due to the failure of modern Bible teachers to recognize the nature of Israel's tax laws. Tax law is clarified when we understand that the LORD God was King of Israel and ruled from His throne in the Tabernacle. Thus, the Sanctuary was not only the center of Israel's religious order, but also the center of Israel's civil order. (1) As King, Israel paid taxes to their Sovereign to support the civil administration; as sinners the nation tithed to support the Levites who serviced God's program of reconciliation. Thus, the temple complex served the civil and the religious order of the nation.

The first kind of tax was the poll tax:

“When thou takest the sum of the children of Israel after their number, then shall they give every man a ransom for his soul unto the LORD, when thou numberest them; that there be no plague among them, when thou numberest them.” (Ex. 30:11-16).

The term “sum” refers to a military census.

The word “ransom” or “atonement” could be translated “covering.” It is not a religious covering but civil protection for the soldier and the civilian in times of warfare.

The term “plague” means “a blow” a “striking” “a fatal attack.” The people placed themselves under YHWH as their King and paid tribute to Him.

In return, God protected His people from strikes by foreign armies and biological plagues. God did not need the money, but the people needed to recognize on a yearly basis that their safety was due to the umbrella of protection that God placed over the nation.

Thus, this tribute was a military tax of a half-shekel (a weight of silver). Though this tax was called a “temple tax” in the New Testament, it never the less serviced the military, administrative needs of the nation.

This tax was for the protection of the soldier and promotion of peace among the people. Holy men engaged in a holy war were invincible under God’s plan. Israel fought many just wars where not one single Israelite was killed (See Psalm 91-The Warrior’s Psalm). Death was the result of presumptive, unholy wars governed by unsanctified, unsanctioned acts of Israel’s kings.

The poll tax was placed on the head of every male twenty years of age or older and was collected under civil authority; that is, the tax was laid on every man eligible for the military draft. A rule of uniformity prevailed.

The rich man and the poor man were required to pay the same amount; that is, it was a “fair tax” in that the “rich shall not give more, and the poor shall not give less” (Ex. 30:15).

The poll tax was equal for all men, and it was small so as not to unduly burden the poor man. Taxation was severely limited! The tax was necessary, but it did not unduly burden the family. Thus, discriminatory, progressive taxation was forbidden. Women and children, priests and Levites were exempt. The tax was paid to civil authority to the temple for the maintenance of (or atonement) of the civil order.

This was the tax of which the collectors asked Peter regarding whether or not his Master, Jesus, was willing to pay. When queried, Peter pledged his Lord’s willingness to discharge the traditional poll tax (Mt. 17:24ff). Jesus’ reference to “the kings of the earth” shed light on the fact that this was a poll tax or a

military tax consistent with Israel's civil order. Jesus, being the Lord Protector of the nation, of course was exempt—a lesson Jesus drove home to his impetuous disciple.

The second type of tax was the tithe (Lev. 27:32).

This tax was not discharged to the temple but was collected in storehouses around the nation (Mal. 3:10). It was used for the support of the Levites and priests; that is, to serve the ecclesiastical functions of the temple. The danger in Israel was not so much from enemies without as from enemies within. Defense against the aggression of an alien power was achieved by the military—thus, the poll tax. But, how could the nation be delivered from an offended God?

God is holy and the Israelites sinners. What could protect the sinful nation from a jealous God injured by the disobedience of His people? No military can protect a nation against the justice of the Almighty. Thus, the Levitical system was designed to protect the people from the just judgment of YHWH through a system designed to facilitate propitiation, reconciliation, and restoration of the people to the favor of their Savior God. Thus, this is great lesson King David discovered in 2 Samuel 24—a million-man army was not sufficient to stop the plague initiated by an offended God against the pride of the nation. The Levitical system was fundamental for protecting the nation. Thus, the temple had to be the center of the nation's affections. The Levites were not soldiers but teachers, priests, and servants of the temple. The tithe went to support their important work.

Both forms of tax were mandatory in Israel; the first to support the civil order or the state, the second to support the religious order and the temple services. The difference between the two is that there was no choice on the head tax and where it had to be paid. Mature men paid the temple authorities for the maintenance of Israel's civil order. The tithe, however, could be distributed to any warehouse in Israel. Further, the tither could bring more, but not less. All other tithes were voluntary and considered an act of worship. Thus, the head tax and tithe and voluntary offerings amounted to no more than 17% of a person's income for the year.

Insights for our Times

A study of taxation in modern times is a study of the good, bad, and the ugly

Taxes are necessary to support the civil and religious order of a nation.

The head tax supported the military, the state, and the courts. Use of the military was strictly defensive. The state had authority to collect a tax to maintain the civil order. In Israel this tax amounted to a half shekel or about two or three day's wages for a working man. Every man paid the same, rich or

poor. And, this had to be paid to the temple – to Israel’s King and the center of Israel’s legislative body

The tithe supported the social, religious, and educational order which amounted to ten percent of a person’s annual wage. Each man’s tithe was different because each man’s crop or produce from the land was different. The tithe was taken to one of Israel’s storehouses scattered around the nation.

The state controlled the use of the head tax; the tither controlled the use of the tithe tax. The poll tax supported the military and the civil order while the tithe was used to support social functions like education, welfare, and the Levitical system. Taxation falls under the Sixth, Eighth, and Tenth Commandment. There was no tax on land, but there was a tax on the increase of the land – a true income tax. A Biblical tax, therefore, will protect and prosper a social order while an ungodly tax destroys the weak while promoting the agenda of the powerful.

Taxes were limited.

There was a limit on what the state could tax, but there was no limit on what a family could earn. Both the poll tax for the civil order and the tithe for support of the religious order was set by God. The state could not arbitrarily raise the tax to support its agenda without impunity. The state had a budget and worked within its natural restrictions.

Taxation is a religious issue

Because God’s Word addresses the civil order, government and taxation are deeply religious matters. Christians, therefore, need to develop convictions about tax law just as they develop beliefs about salvation and marriage.

God’s law is for all men and all of man’s institutions.

Not only are Christians responsible to surrender to God’s law, Christians are to pray “Thy kingdom come” and insist that their government surrender to the authority of Christ the King; that is, governments become evil and tyrannical when they arrogate to themselves powers not granted to them by the Creator.

America was Built on Biblical Foundations and Limited Taxation

In early America, the Founders understood God’s limited taxing laws and applied them to support the civil, religious, and educational needs of the young republic. Taxation was necessary but limited. The Founders believed in strong families and an ethical, limited government. Unlimited taxation threatens God’s law order and permits government to expand beyond Biblical limits.

Purpose of Government: the protection of rights

In the Biblical system, government was charged with protecting the people—not to provide charity; to protect people’s property, not to pirate people’s property. The half-shekel poll tax serviced the administrative needs of the state, but kept the government small. The limited tax did not injure the family or prevent it from prospering. Rich and poor paid the same. Both deserved equal protection by the state.

In the Declaration of Independence, the only purpose of government was to protect human rights. Providing welfare, education, and health care are outside the purpose of government. Education is the concern of the family. Grace is the concern of the church. When the government engages education and charity, it seeks to be parent and priest to the People.

Results of Abandoning Biblical Foundations

A Biblical tax system maintains social order and protects the society from social chaos. Increasingly, the present system of taxation of property and wages is nothing more than wealth confiscation under the color of law. Power to tax anything and everything is power to destroy. The present system with its coercive tax policies is no longer limited to protecting rights, but is used to advance the political agendas of CONgress; that is, to produce a social revolution in favor of humanism to the detriment of the Biblical law-order.

When Christians are ignorant of God’s rules for limited taxation, Christians end up promoting the government’s presumption of its unlimited taxing power. The belief the government can righteously tax as much as it wants is a product of more than a little evil. Wealth is transferred from the family to the god-State. Families cannot afford basic necessities, save for the future, or create wealth. Mothers are forced into the work place to satisfy the elephantine appetite of Congress—the result of abandoning God’s law. This forfeiture of Biblical law created an opportunity for the state to become a superpower while diminishing the financial strength of the average family.

Thus, the abandonment of God’s law is nothing more than an exchange of the true God for the false god of big government; a forsaking of the law of God for the laws of men (legislative bodies); the surrender of dependence on God to a dependence on the nanny state; the eroding of true freedom for the false comfort of the illusion of freedom.

The abandonment of God’s law increases man’s dependence on the prerogatives of the state and decreases man’s dependence on his need for God. After all, the state promises to take care of us from cradle to grave, from the womb to the tomb. Security becomes more important than freedom. Everything must be taxed to supply the appetite of Big Government . . . and CONgress must find new, hidden, creative ways to feed its lust for power. Unlimited taxation

enables the state to play god and build its kingdom on earth: welfare, education, social security, Medicare, Medicaid, and Health Care. The result is a Superpower State parasitically sucking the life out of its slave families.

The average American family paid 54% of its income in taxes in 2005.⁸⁴ This does not hidden taxes to support the government.⁸⁵ In Sweden, accumulate taxes have been as high as 90%. If all the taxes imposed by the Italian government were collected, it would result in more than 110% of a family's income. Every Italian must lie or die!

Health, Education, and Welfare

In God's system, the family is the institution of education; the state the institution of justice; and the church the institution of grace. The modern state sees itself as parent, priest, and police. In early America, every child was homeschooled and there were few non-readers in the nation.⁸⁶ Churches ran charities and hospitals. But, because power has been transferred to the state, families are up sided; churches nullified; and the state glorified as the savior of mankind.

Elimination of Poverty

When God is honored in a nation "there shall be no more poor among you." When godless men rule, wealth is transferred to the rulers. When the state seeks to eliminate poverty and create jobs and enters the market place and legislates individuals purchase certain products like health insurance, it increases poverty (Deut. 15:4; Is. 3:15).

Tax Exempt "Churches"

Biblically, the government could not tax the priesthood or tax churches or its ministers. Levites were exempt. Religious institutions did not fall under the jurisdiction of any government. Exemption is not a privilege granted by the

⁸⁴ NowandtheFutre.com/taxes.html retrieved 4.1.2012. Approximate tax paid: Federal-18%; State and Local-10%; Sales tax- 9.7%; Federal Corporate Income tax-3%; Property tax- 2.5%.

⁸⁵ Hidden taxes: gasoline tax, heating and cooling taxes, phone taxes, interest on loans, water and sewer taxes, etc. The Edison Electric Institute (EEI) says taxes are hidden from consumers and calculates utilities pay a total of \$25.8 billion in taxes of all kinds (Institute for Policy Innovation).

⁸⁶ There was practically universal adult male literacy in New England by 1790 (Early American Literacy, Tammy Drennan). The U.S. Department of Education reported that roughly 40% of Americans in 2008 were below satisfactory levels of adult reading proficiency. Adult Literacy in America, Third Edition, National Center for Educational Statistics, April 2002, retrieved 2011-01-12.

state, but an acknowledgement of the Biblical order—the limitation of government and the sovereignty of God over family and church.

The government owes churches nothing but their protection—the common protection provided all citizens. King Artaxerxes of Persia banned a tax on the temple lest “there be wrath against the realm of the king” (Ezra 7:23-24). In the Roman Empire, the church fought to keep Caesar’s foot off the neck of the church.

When the state orders the church to abandon the headship of Christ and to surrender itself to the head of State (IRS), the state promotes apostasy. To force a church to be a 501 c 3 organization, a dead corpus of the state instead of the living corpus of Christ, is to have the heel of the government on the neck on the non-prophet “church” organization.⁸⁷

Modern Taxation is a form of theft in violation of the Eight Commandment

When the Scripture says, “Thou shall not steal” it applies to all men and all of man’s institutions. More money is stolen in the name of taxation than any other name. The greatest heists of history are not by bank robbers but by tax collectors. The purpose of the command, “Thou shall not steal” is to proscribe various forms of legalized robbery—the transfer of wealth from one group to another. When the state exempts a part of a man’s income from taxation the state is basically saying that “it owns the man and all he has; that by the grace of all-merciful, all-wise Wizard of Oz a man is allowed to keep a portion of his earnings. Such a presumption is pure arrogance and an attack on God’s law-order. And, because it is against God’s law-order it must be resisted and replaced.

Setting forth his renowned dictum that “the power to tax involves the power to destroy,” (Daniel Webster) Chief Justice Marshall said: “That the power of taxing it [the bank] by the states may be exercised so as to destroy it, is too obvious to be denied” (p. 427), and “That the power to tax involves the power to destroy ... [is] not to be denied” (p. 431). (McCulloch v. Maryland, 1918). Since Congress claims the power to tax the family and church, it has the power to destroy them.

Modern Taxation and Usury is a violation of the Tenth Commandment

⁸⁷ Most churches in America have organized as "501c3 tax-exempt religious organizations." This is a fairly recent trend that has only been going on for about fifty years. Churches were only added to section 501c3 of the tax code in 1954. We can thank Sen. Lyndon B. Johnson for that. Johnson was no ally of the church (<http://hushmoney.org/501c3-facts.htm>).

Exodus 20:17 Thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbor's.

The locus of law is not in the will of the People but in the Word of God. There is only one Lawgiver—only one (Is. 33:22; Jam. 4:12). Scripture condemns fraud, but modern legislators are constantly creating new ways to transfer wealth to Washington D.C.. When Scripture says “thou shall not covet thy neighbor’s house” he was not addressing “desire” but clever, fraudulent, sophisticated revenue schemes by the powerful over the powerless. Theft under “color of law” is nevertheless theft.

Notice that the first in the list of coveted things is not a “wife” but a “house.” Any banking loan (home mortgage) lasting over seven years is a fraud in violation of God’s law (Deut. 15). Modern man enslaves a man for life to pay for his house. Any government plan that demands tax payments to the state but risks a man’s house by liens and seizures is a vicious scheme in violation of the 10th Commandment. Just because CONgress passes a revenue bill to increase taxes does not means it is lawful. Redistribution of wealth, taking from the rich to give to the poor, is a form of theft. Social engineers that justify redistributing wealth are thieves, plain and simple! Tax exemptions and tax incentives prejudice the free market and affect commerce. The government turns justice inside out when it taxes savings (interest earned) and rewards debt by providing deductions on mortgages and interest paid.

The average American in the year 2005 lives a fragile existence, in a struggle for survival that can be ended by missing a few paychecks. The carrot at the end of the stick which was formerly known as “the American dream” has been replaced by a whip that can best be described as the American nightmare of homelessness, and slow, early death.(rense.com-The New American Slavery).

It doesn’t matter if you’re a “white collar” or “blue collar” employee. If you’re an American, you’re too highly paid. There are billions of people who want your job, and your government is doing all they can to see that you lose it to them. You see, we’re not really Americans anymore. Now we’re just anonymous faces in the “global village,” because our government has sold our nation to foreigners and international bankers, and the new bankruptcy law has doomed the American citizen to a life of debt slavery (rense.com-The New American Slavery).

Progressive Taxation

The Bible condemns progressive taxation⁸⁸:

“the rich are not to give more than a half shekel and the poor are not to give less”(Ex. 30:15).

But, the modern state collects income taxes before a man even sees a dollar.

For the state to claim more than 10% of anything is to claim that the state is greater than God.

To put in place a system where the state is paid first before tithes can be given to the LORD is a claim by the state that it is more important than God.

Thus, the present tax system is not only arrogant, but an enemy of the Biblical law-order.

Indoctrinating the people that the rich should “pay their fair share” is nothing more than propaganda — a form of class warfare that pits the poor against the rich—seeds of envy which “rots the bones” on American soil (Proverbs 14:30).

Hidden Taxes

God requires equal weights and measures to insure integrity in business. But, the modern state has developed clever schemes to transfer wealth from the family to the state (Proverbs 16:11; 20:10, 23: Mic. 6:11).

With the enactment of the 16th Amendment and the establishment of the Federal Reserve, corrupt administrators have been able to devalue the dollar, tax Americans through inflation, and interest on loans.

When Frankly D. Roosevelt made it a crime to pay debts in silver and gold (June 5, 1933), he transferred the power to create wealth to a private banking cartel—an act of treason. FRNs are not backed by gold or silver but by public confidence. The government now taxes everything from soup to sardines. And, these hidden taxes keep the family feeble and the government muscular. The powerful now rule over the powerless.

Federal income taxes represent only 42 percent of the total tax burden of U.S. taxpayers. The remainder is hidden, distorting taxpayers’ awareness of their real tax burden and of the true cost of government. Only fundamental tax reform with an emphasis on visibility can ensure a fair tax code that allows taxpayers to evaluate whether they are getting their money’s worth from

⁸⁸ Progressive taxation alleges to protect the low-income group from high taxes by putting the onus on the high income earners (Progressive taxation system: A brief study on its pros and cons).

government (Riley; Schlecht; Berthoud. Institute for Policy Innovation, IPI Center for Tax Analysis, "Hidden Taxes: How Much Do You Really Pay"?)

Proverbs 22:7 The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.

Inflation is taxation without legislation- [Milton Friedman](#)

Privacy

Privacy is a basic human right. But, modern governments strive to capture information about private citizens utilizing every means possible to do so. Even 2020 IDs are an order "to capture" an image of the person. In filing information returns, the state knows where you live, the names of your family members, and in which banks you deposit money. It knows your employer, your salary, your credit card purchases, and your investment portfolio. When the state strives to be omniscient, privacy is lost.

Isaiah 45:15 "Truly you are a God who hides himself, O God and Savior of Israel."

Matthew 6:3,4 "But when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your giving may be in secret. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you."

"But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you." Matt 6:6

Property Tax

In Biblical law there is no such thing as a tax on land.

"The earth and everything in it belongs to the Lord," (Ex. 24:1).

Modern governments acts like land belongs to the state . . . and therefore requires families to pay rent (property tax) for use of land. No man, government, county, or state has a right to tax private land or private property. But, they do have authority to tax business property, business real estate, and business personal property.

If the earth belongs to the Lord, what belongs to Caesar? The answer is closer to nothing than something.

When the Bible says, "Thou shall not steal," the command applies not only to individuals but to the state which seizes land under color of law after a man cannot pay his alleged debt to the State or bank. Thus, the modern state has

rebelled against God's law. A tax on property is an affront to God's law-order as it destroys the family.

"Didn't it belong to you before it was sold? And after it was sold, wasn't the money at your disposal"? Acts 5:4

But, God did tax the produce or the increase from the land!

This was a true income tax. But, it is an income tax set at 10% and **no more**. What a man gave beyond that was a free will offering.

A proper interpretation of the constitutional tax system would lead me to conclude that the constitution tax system is Biblical; that is, the tax on "gain" or "corporate profit" would be aligned with the Biblical system.

A wage is merely an exchange of labor, and labor was never taxed in Israel. The present system wherein public policy taxes a man's wages is not only unconstitutional, but a violation of God's law-order . . . and absent in the tax code. *A tax on income not only injures but destroys.*

Inheritance Tax

Biblical law requires inheritances to be passed on to sons. In contrast, the modern State requires that wealth be transferred to the state. An inheritance tax, a Marxist initiative, is a violation of Biblical law and assertion by the state that the "earth and everything in it" belongs to government – an assertion that the state is more important than the family.

God's law on inheritance can be found in Numbers 27:8-11; Deuteronomy 21:15-17, and 2 Corinthians 12:14. God gave the earth to families, not the government. To tax the land is rebellion against God's law order because it attacks the strength of the family.

Ezekiel 46:18 Moreover the prince shall not take of the people's inheritance by oppression, to thrust them out of their possession; but he shall give his sons inheritance out of his own possession: that my people be not scattered every man from his possession.

Application

We need a radical return to kingdom proclamation (Acts 17:6, 7).

Jesus is King and God calls all presidents and congressmen to repent and confess His authority (Acts 17:30). Only when rulers acknowledge the risen, ascended, glorified Christ will governments exercise restraint.

Each family needs to develop a strategy for wealth creation.

The governments of the world have declared war against the family. Families are impoverished in the taxation madness of our age. War is the art of

deception and the government has established constructive fraud to enrich the State. Therefore, each man must engage the conflict being as “wise as a serpent.”

Flee idolatry (1 John 5:21).

Government is not God! Americans need to insist on limited government and stop looking to the state for all its needs. There is one Lawgiver. If the First Commandment means anything, it means man is to have no Lawgiver or law source other than the LORD God.

While the gospel does not contain salvation by law, it does contain law. Every command in the NT is case law under the Ten Commandments. law.

Law cannot regenerate society, but limited law can purge out evil in society.

We must pray more earnestly, “Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done ON EARTH as it is in heaven.” Consequently, Christians must begin to resist man-made laws designed to regenerate society by enslaving man. Christians must resist all taxation inconsistent with the Constitution – taxation that impoverishes the family while increasing the wealth and power of the Herculean State.

91. Did Jesus Pay Taxes?

Matthew 17:24-27

Did Jesus pay taxes to Caesar?

Because this is one of the most misinterpreted and misapplied chapters in the entire Bible, we need to study it carefully. Pastors have errantly used this text as a hammer to pound Christians into being tax slaves to the United States Government.

Matthew 17:24-27 (KJV)

And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute *money* came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute? He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus

Matthew 17:24-27 (NIV)

After Jesus and his disciples arrived in Capernaum, the collectors of the two-drachma tax came to Peter and asked, “Doesn’t your teacher pay the temple tax?” “Yes, he does,” he replied. When Peter came into the house, Jesus was the

prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers? Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

first to speak. "What do you think, Simon"? he asked. "From whom do the kings of the earth collect duty and taxes— from their own sons or from others?" "From others," Peter answered. "Then the sons are exempt," Jesus said to him. "But so that we may not offend them, go to the lake and throw out your line. Take the first fish you catch; open its mouth and you will find a four-drachma coin. Take it and give it to them for my tax and yours."

Matthew was a former tax collector, and this story was of tremendous interest to him. However, this passage may not teach what you have been led to believe.

First, there is an interpretive problem with this text. Some believe this passage refers to paying the Roman poll tax. Some have taken this passage and attempted to tell us that Jesus paid taxes to civil authorities and therefore we should joyfully pay every tax that Congress creates.

The first thing we must understand is that God is God and that the government is not God. He is Sovereign over man, the church, and civil rulers.

Second, there is an application problem. Some have used this passage to shackle believers with tax obligations that leave them debtors for life.

These preachers believe Christians should have an unlimited commitment to the State and unlimited joy over being the government's tax slave. The argument reasons that though Jesus was exempt from this taxation, he paid taxes to Caesar.

The implication is that all good little Christian boys and girls should give the government whatever it wants. Nonsense!

Government is not God. Only God is sovereign, and only God deserves unlimited obedience. The government is limited by God and limited by the Constitution in its taxing authority.

In Romans 13, a legitimate government is called God's deacon (*diakonos*) with limited authority to protect the righteous and punish the wicked (13:4) under the common law. When the State ceases to protect the innocent or punish true criminals, it ceases to be the legitimate servant of God. When it overreaches its

authority or multiplies its laws to control the masses, it ceases to be a legitimate servant of God.

Third, there is no record of Jesus paying taxes to Caesar unless it is this passage. Would Jesus, the Son of God, pay taxes to an inferior? Taxes are imposed by a superior upon an inferior. If Christ paid taxes to Caesar, then He would have to be subject to the Roman State.

God is God, not the State. Jesus is Lord, subject to no man: "All authority in heaven and earth is given unto me" said Jesus (Mt. 28:18).

Jesus is not now in subjection to human institutions nor was he subject to Caesar at any time during His earthly life! He is the Head of every man (1 Cor. 11:2, 3) and the Head of the Church (Eph. 1:19ff' 5:23; Col. 1:18) and He is the Head over all rule and authority including civil authorities (Col. 2:18).

If we interpret this passage as Christ paying taxes to Caesar, then we have the kingdom of God being subject to the kingdom of man.

Jesus Christ did not come to serve the Roman government, but to serve His Father; likewise, we are not here to serve the government but the gospel of Christ! Selah.

PART I

Facts Relating to Interpretation

"And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute money came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute? (17:24).

The Place

This event happened at **Capernaum**, a busy commercial lakeside city on the northern shore of the Sea of Galilee. Jesus made Capernaum His home during his ministry (Matthew 4:13). Jesus entered Capernaum shortly after his journey north into the region of Tyre and Caesarea Philippi near Kefar Dan and the southern foothills of Mt. Hermon. While in this region, Peter, James, and John witnessed the transfiguration of our Lord on one of the mountains in this area. They heard the Father's voice saying, "This is my Beloved Son in whom I am well pleased. Listen to Him."

The Time

The transfiguration story and the confrontation with Peter by the tax officials happened before Jesus' Perea Ministry. The transfiguration story is recorded in Luke 9:28 shortly before the last six months of his ministry which Luke begins recording in Luke 9:51. The tax confrontation, therefore, took place

sometime in September or October in 31 A.D. at least six or seven months before Palm Sunday.

The Temple Coins

Mahoni Faber (pastor) argues that this was not the temple tax because (a) it was the wrong time of year for the tax, and (b) the coin collected from Jesus was a "*tetradrachma*" and not a Hebrew shekel, which would have been the only coin acceptable in the temple. Faber augurs that this tax was a Roman poll tax, which was obligatory for all citizens. But, this is incorrect.

It is true that the text involves Roman money and not Jewish shekels. The NIV wrongly translate the Greek word *didrachma* (a Greek coin) (plural noun) as "temple tax." The word *didrachma* is a Greek silver coin worth two drachmas, about as much as two Roman denarii, or about two days wages. Because two drachmas were worth one half shekel of silver, it was commonly used to pay the half-shekel temple tax.

The first word for "*tribute*" is an English translation of the Greek word *didrachmon* in verse twenty-four.

The second word translated "*tribute*" (17:25) is the Greek word *kensos* (kh/nson) which means "an evaluation of property according to a census" or "taxes." We get the word "*census*" from this term. It is a direct tax upon property.

The word "*custom*" (KJV) or "*duty*" (NIV) is a translation of the Greek word "*telos*" (te,lh) which means "head" or "sum" or "end of a thing." Simply put, Jesus was asking Peter about whom the kings of the earth collect their "summary tax."

The word "*money*" is a translation of the Greek word *stater* (stath/ra) which refers to the *four drachmae coin* known as the *tetradrachma*. The *tetradrachma* was equal to one shekel.

Peter was sent to fetch a *stater* out of a fish's mouth to pay the temple tax, and it was a *tetradrachma*. Since each male was charged ½ shekel for maintenance of the temple, one shekel or one *tetradrachma* would have covered the tax for both Peter and Jesus.

A *stater*, therefore, is a silver coin equivalent to four Attic or two Alexandrian drachmas, or a Jewish shekel: just exactly enough to cover the half-shekel Temple tax for two people.

Some argue that the *didrachma* could not be used as a temple tax because it was a Roman coin unacceptable to the Jews. Having the impression of the Phoenician god Melkart wearing a laurel wreath on his head and a lion skin on his shoulders on one side and an eagle on the other side would indeed be idolatrous to the Jew. However, because of its high silver content and mint

quality, the quality of this silver coin was held in high esteem by Jews and Romans.

According to Edersheim, the Life and Times of Jesus, the *didrachma* was an acceptable coin collected by the tax collectors.

John McArthur agrees that the “double drachma” was a common coin in circulation that “was commonly used in reference to the Jewish Temple tax because two drachmas were equivalent to the required half shekel . . .”⁸⁹

Interestingly, even after the Temple was destroyed by Titus in 70 A.D., Vespasian ordered the Jews to continue to pay the *didrachma tax* to support the Temple of Jupiter Capitolinus. This statement of the power of Rome must have cut deeply in to the surviving Jewish soul in the empire.

The Temple Tax

Unlike Congress and State legislators that whimsically tax everything from soup to nuts, God’s taxes were limited; and, this is true of the ordained temple tax. Some gifts given to the Lord God were voluntary (Exodus 25:1ff) and others were mandatory.⁹⁰ In order to impress upon Israel the value of redemption, Moses issued the following law:

“When you take a census of the Israelites to count them, each one must pay the LORD a ransom for his life at the time he is counted. Then no plague will come on them when you number them. Each one who crosses over to those already counted is to give a half shekel, according to the sanctuary shekel, which weighs twenty gerahs. This half shekel is an offering to the LORD” (Ex. 30:13, 14: See also 38:26 & II Chron. 24:6, 9)

“And when Moses had gathered the multitude together again, the ordained that they should offer half a shekel for every man, as an oblation to God; which shekel is a piece among the Hebrews, and is equal to four Athenian drachmae” (Antiquities 3.8.2).

The ½ shekel tax was a semi-mandatory tax laid only upon adult males in Israel. In Nehemiah’s day, the tax was reduced to 1/3 a shekel due to the poverty of those who expatriated back to Israel from Babylon (10:32). The tax was not for Roman civil purposes but for constructive usage to help maintenance the temple and to provide offerings for the Jewish community as a whole nation.

⁸⁹ John Mc Arthur, New Testament Commentary: Matthew, Chicago, Ill: Moody, 1988.

⁹⁰ Robertson and Plummer see this tax as more voluntary than mandatory.

According to Alfred Edersheim, the yearly tax was collected during the **Passover season**. About a month before Passover in the month of Adar (March), Jewish tax collectors would set up their tax booths to collect taxes from residents in Israel and near Jerusalem before the Passover in the month of Nissan (our Passover).

Jews living in foreign lands also had to pay the ½ shekel or the two Attic drachmas tax. But, they could do so at one of the other pilgrim feasts such as the **Feast of Weeks** (Pentecost) in the month of Sivan (June) or the **Feast of Booths** (Tabernacles) in the month of Tishri (September/October).

Late payments were collected by distraint as late as the month of Adar (February/March). The tax confrontation of Peter by the tax collectors could have happened as late as the month of Tishri, or it could have been much earlier in the summer when the confrontation took place. It appears that the tax was six months overdue.

This tax, therefore, was not a tax to Rome but the Temple tax required by Moses. However, we must keep in mind the temple was both the seat of civil and religious authority.

Because Jesus was not at the Passover the previous spring, the Jews were critically aware that Jesus had not yet paid the *didrachma*. They were probably not as much interested in the tax as trying to find a legal reason to indict him. Therefore, the fact that the tax collectors confronted Peter about Jesus' tax policy does not appear to be out of custom with the times.

Apparently, the tax collectors kept tabs on Jesus and were aware that they had not yet received a *didrachma* from Him. Once the *didrachma* was collected, it would be changed into shekels by the moneychangers at the temple (John 2:14ff).

The Dialogue

We know that priests and Levites were exempt from this tax, and maybe the collectors wanted to know if Peter's Master was going to claim exemption as a priest. Maybe they hoped to trap Jesus in a controversy. Abruptly confronted by the tax collectors, Peter *hastily* answered for his Master to affirm to them that Jesus was indeed an *Israelite taxpayer*.

As Peter came into the house eager to tell the Lord about his encounter with the temple tax collectors, our Lord asked Peter, "*What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?* He saith, Yes." (17:24).

Our Lord knew about the encounter before Peter said a word. What a Savior! Our Lord is omniscient. He knows about all our conversations.

Peter must have been shocked by the Lord's question, but he knew the answer, "of strangers;" i.e., the kings of the earth do not collect taxes from their sons to pay for government services. Apparently, Jesus was seeking to impress **an important lesson** upon His impetuous disciples which Peter had forgotten on the Mount of Transfiguration that happened a few weeks before regarding the proclamation of the Father that Jesus was **the beloved Son of God**.

This story is not about taxes, it is about Jesus being the Son of God — something that Peter failed to include in the equation when he gave his hasty answer, "Yes." If Jesus is the Son of God, He has no duty to pay the temple tax! Thus, Peter should have answered, "No!"

Hebrews 3:4-6 "For every house is built by someone, but the builder of all things is God.) Now Moses was faithful in all God's house as a servant, to testify to the things that were to be spoken later, **but Christ is faithful over God's house as a son**. And we are his house if indeed we hold fast our confidence and our boasting in our hope."

As the Son, Jesus had no duty to pay the temple tax. And, He prodded Peter to remember that fact: "Then are the children free"?

When asked if Jesus paid the temple tax, Peter should have said, "No, He is the Son of God and Ruler over His Father's House!" But, Peter wasn't thinking theologically, he was thinking pragmatically. He just spit out the first answer that came to his mind.

Jurisdiction

Jesus was not giving a lesson on taxes to His disciple. Jesus was not giving a lesson on His tax-exempt status regarding the payment of taxes. **He was drilling home a lesson regarding His Sonship!**

The word "*exempt*" should be translated "free." It implies an obligation to do something that one is required to do in the first place. As the Son of God, Jesus had no duty to pay the temple tax in the first place and therefore could not be exempt. He was simply free from any tax obligation. As the Son, He was **not** the object or subject of the tax. He was simply non-assessable. As the Son, He was Lord of the Temple. The temple servants had no authority to tax the Master. Jesus was Sovereign, and a sovereign is not subject to law. As the Sovereign, the Lord Jesus Christ is the source of law (Mt. 5:22, "but I say unto you . . ." (Is. 33:22).

Since the Temple servants had no jurisdiction over Jesus, they had no power to tax Him! and, the disciples had no duty to pay the tax because they too, are sons of God by adoption!

There is another little twist to this story.

When the temple tax collectors approached Peter, they asked, “Doth not your Master pay the drachma”?

Peter’s answer to the negative question was “Yes,” which could be interpreted as “Yes, my master doth not pay the tax; or, the negative “not” in the question could be there as a kind of idiom designed to raise a doubt about whether Jesus paid the tax; or, the answer could be “yes, my Master does pay the tax.”

Possibly, Peter entered his house to go get the tax money for himself when Jesus raised the question, “. . . of whom do the kings of the earth exact tribute”?

Thus, Peter presumed to answer for Christ . . . *and wrongly so!* And, in so doing committed our Lord to pay a tax He did not really owe.

But, in order not to create a “scandal” (17:27) that would hinder His salvic path to the cross, Jesus gave Peter permission to pay the tax He did not owe.

[No! The application is not that we should pay every presumptive tax government craves or deceives its citizens into believing they owe taxes where there is no law requiring them to do so. This would be ridiculous. We are only obligated to pay lawfully created taxes. In America, all citizens pay indirect taxes.]

There is another huge lesson here for us. *If you make a promise, keep it.* Peter gave the wrong answer, but he committed himself and Jesus to pay a tax they did not owe. But, having made the promise, Peter had to fulfill his promise (vow, oath), and come up with the tax.

You have to admire our Lord. Peter had gotten himself and Jesus into a tax jam by **presuming** Jesus owed this tax, but our Lord graciously helped Peter dig himself out of the hole he had created. How many times has the Lord helped us get out of the stupid messes that we create for ourselves. Our presumptions about taxes get us into trouble. He is the great Fixer as well as a great Savior!

Where did the money come from to pay this temple tax?

It did not come from the treasury of the disciples (John 12:6;13:29)! The disciples were not responsible for the debt Peter created.

Why didn’t Jesus take the money out of the treasury? Because it was Peter’s big mouth that got him into this financial mess. It was not the disciples’ responsibility to pay for Peter’s error.

Out of grace, Jesus provided a way for Peter to work and to discharge his sudden incurred debt by going fishing.

There is another huge lesson. Jesus knew a fish had a *stater* lodged in his mouth and He knew He was sovereign over creation – even the fish. Isn’t this proof He was indeed the Son of God?

Moreover, Jesus controls all the animals, birds, and fish in the sea. When Peter went fishing, our Lord ordered the fish to jump in Peter's net and to die that day. More proof that Jesus is the Son of God.

When Peter pulled the coin out of the fish's mouth, he was not only able to voluntarily pay the tax for the Savior, he received a powerful lesson that Jesus is indeed the omniscient Son of God, LORD of the Temple, the Only Sovereign! "The Lord God omnipotent reigneth" (Revelation 19:6) Selah!

One more fact needs to be observed. Jesus did not report or pay these taxes for all his disciples.

Why did Jesus not pay the tax for the other disciples, only Peter? **Because Peter hastily volunteered our Lord to pay the temple tax – a tax He did not lawfully owe!**

When asked by the tax collectors if his Master paid taxes, Peter said, "Yes" to the query. Jesus provided a supernatural way to impress this lesson on Peter and a way for Peter to "save face" before the tax collectors.

Keeping one's word was more important than winning a theological battle at this point. Peter gave a witless answer and was trapped in an obligation for this tax to be paid (Eccl. 5:2).

PART II

Be Careful About How You Apply this Passage!

Every Christian must apply this passage in the nation wherein he resides. There are some applications that we can make from this passage regarding taxation, but before we do, one needs to understand America's unique form of government.

America was designed to be a constitutional republic and not a fascist democracy with Plutocrats living off the sweat and labor of the People.

The Founding Fathers knew this story well, and they designed a tax system where "the sons are free." **There are ONLY two types of taxes in the Constitution:**

- (1) Direct taxes on the states according to the rule of apportionment: "Representatives and direct Taxes shall be apportioned among the several States . . ." – Congress has no authority to tax the People directly.
- (2) Indirect taxes according to the rule of uniformity: "The Congress shall have Power To lay and collect Taxes, Duties, Imposts and Excises, to pay the Debts and provide for the common Defense and general Welfare of the United States;

but all Duties, Imposts and Excises shall be uniform throughout the United States”

In 1894, the politicians pit the poor against the rich in order justify an income tax. A statute was passed imposing a tax on all incomes over \$4,000. The tax faced an immediate challenge. In *Pollock v. Farmers ‘ Loan trust co.* (1895), SCOTUS held the tax a direct tax was **UNCONSTITUTIONAL because not apportioned; that is, the “income tax” is unconstitutional.** The Court’s position was that taxes on the rents or income of real estate and taxes on personal property or the income from personal property *were direct taxes and must be apportioned.*

However, this all changed in 1913 when foreign bankers gained control of Congress and changed the system to make the “sons of America” pay the taxes of foreigners.

WE THE PEOPLE were endowed by the Creator with certain unalienable rights where the source of inherent political power resides in the People—not the State. We are a nation of written laws. Every word in the Constitution was **designed to limit and restrain the power** of our servant government.

When the servant acts like a master (*a Dulocracy*), the People have a duty to resist and correct their servant. WE THE PEOPLE have no duty or obligation to surrender to a “tag and grab” government or to obey an unconstitutional statute. The government is not our god or master. Jesus is our Lord and Master.

To understand the taxing laws of this nation one needs to consult the Constitution, the Statutes at Large, and Title 26. And remember, the IRS (IMF owned) booklets are not law!

Raw, political power is different from *law* – one refers to brute force, the later to authority and the rule of law.

The State often uses force to thrusts its will on the People absent any authority to do so, and this is certainly the case in the United States today. Congress only has authority to pass laws in the District of Columbia for U.S. citizens “subject” to the State.

When seeking to understand taxing law, one also needs to understand taxing power. Law and power two are two different matters!

First, and most important, we have a lesson on Sonship.

Jesus was under no obligation to pay the temple tax. As the Son of God, He was Sovereign and not subject to the tax. As the Sovereign, Jesus was not the object of the tax because **He is the Source of law** (Is. 49:10). Only Jesus could say, “you have heard it said . . . but I say unto you.” While Jesus was born under

the law as a Hebrew male (Galatians 4:1-6), He was still **Lord of the Sabbath** (Mt. 12:8) and **Lord of the House**:

*Hebrews 3:3-6 Jesus has been found worthy of greater honor than Moses, just as the **Builder** of a house has greater honor than the house itself. . . But Christ as **a son over his own house**; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.*

If we have any doubt that Jesus is the Son. Look closely at how our Lord's knowledge about Peter's dialogue with the tax collectors. Peter no sooner walks into the house and Jesus queries him about the affair. Jesus knew because He was the Son of God. As the Son, He is omniscient and knows all things—even our words. He is Master and Lord and as Master He is worthy of our worship.

Furthermore, not only did Jesus know about the *stater* [equal to one shekel, the payment for two people] in the fish's mouth, he told Peter that the first fish he would catch would have a *stater* in its mouth. Not only did he know about the fish, he had control of the fish and ordered the perch to bite Peter's hook. Jesus is not only omniscient; He is omnipotent.

In Matthew 8, Jesus identifies Himself as *Lord of the Sabbath*. While it is true that Galatians four describes Him as being born "under the Law," it is also true that on occasion He asserted His authority on a Sabbath and over the temple. This appears to be the case here. Jesus wanted to remind His disciple of Who He was and to rifle a lesson into the heart of Peter.

As the Son of God, He was free; i.e., He was non-taxable, non-assessable.

Likewise, Peter by his relationship to Christ was also free because he was a son by adoption (Rom. 8:15). When asked if Jesus paid the temple tax, Peter should have said, "No, Jesus is the Son of God, and the Son of God is non assessable!"

When Jesus said, "*then are the sons free,*" His answer corrected Peter's errant thinking! His disciple had forgotten the truth that Jesus was the Son and His Father was God. Christ was the head of His own house. All others, even Moses, were merely servants (Hebrews 3:1-4).

Jesus went ahead and paid the temple tax lest He "offend" the authorities. The word "*offend*" comes from the Greek word *skandalon* which means "to stumble" "or catch in a snare."

Jesus paid the tax, not because he was under any compulsion to do so, or because he was setting an example for all men to pay taxes, but because He did not want to create a confrontation with the priests on this issue before He completed His mission of redemption. A hot topic like taxes could have led to a legal confrontation with de facto authorities. It was simply not time to offer

this kind of resistance. Jesus' purpose on earth was greater than a *tetradramacha*. Any altercation on the tax issue would have derailed Jesus' ministry and His main message regarding the kingdom of God.

Howbeit, we must not conclude by Jesus' example that Christians should passively pay whatever the State demands in order to avoid a confrontation with them. That would be slavery! We were not created to be debt sureties to the United States, Inc.

To use this passage as an example of paying taxes in order to avoid conflict is as screwy as using a worm to define an inch.

The orderly participants in Boston Tea Party certainly did not think this way.

Pastors who teach that Christians should pay whatever the government craves would not only give the State unprecedented power, but it would produce sapless, spineless, milquetoast Christians.

Christians should not be marshmallows that the State can roast at will.

As members of WE THE PEOPLE it is our right, even our duty to confront the continual expansion of government in our lives (See the 1st Amendment).

"The power to tax is the power to destroy," said Chief Justice John Marshall.

All law is written. If it not written, it is not law! That "everybody should pay their fair share," or "everybody has to pay taxes," is not law, it is political propaganda!!

Therefore, the Citizen must know **the written law** and stand on it lest the government overstep its authority and injure him.

Total subjugation of the total man to total government is not the will of God for any nation.

Second, we have a lesson on the subjects of taxation:

Jesus asked his hasty disciple: "of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute of their own children or of strangers"?⁹¹

⁹¹ The word "toll or tribute" (te,lh h' kh/nson)] refers to the custom or wares tax as well as the poll tax. The Latin word "census" comes from the Greek word kensos. The word "custom" refers to a tax on wares—like a sales tax. The word "tribute" refers to a census or a poll tax. A tax on custom was an indirect tax and could be avoided. A poll tax was a direct tax and was mandatory. Tribute was not paid by Roman citizens. Tribute was paid by a conquered people. Even Romans had to pay a custom tax if they availed themselves of a government privilege.

In providing his answer, Peter acknowledged a common **truth** — that governments raise money from foreigners (aliens, one belonging to another) rather than from sons (natural born men on the land). Jesus provided a **remarkable truth** for his errant disciple: “Then are the children free.” [Notice that Jesus is making a comparison between those exempted by the State’s taxation laws (the sons) and those exempt under the temple’s taxation laws (the sons of God)].

In creating the Constitution, the American People knew the government needed revenue to fund its responsibilities and the Founders provided a way to raise revenue through duties, imports, and impost taxes and on commerce involving aliens and non-resident aliens. Direct and indirect taxes could be imposed, but each class was restricted by the *rule of apportionment* and *the rule of uniformity*.

WE THE PEOPLE gave the federal government no power to tax us or our property directly.

In America, only government employees, officers, and contracted individuals have a duty to pay the income tax.

Congress simply cannot tax anything it wants. Its power to tax is limited by the Constitution. The taxing power of the District of Columbia is limited . . . **unless** the People allow it to operate outside the restraints of the Constitution. It is restrained by the taxing clauses of the U.S. Constitution. The children were free; that is . . . until 1913 . . . but, that is another subject.

Third, we have a lesson on sovereignty.

Just as our Lord was not subject to the temple tax, neither are the disciples who were sons of God by adoption. The kingdom of God is not subject to government. God is sovereign! His church is not under the authority of the State. The State cannot lawfully tax the church or its ministers! God’s ministers are exempt from all modern income tax schemes by Congress, howbeit, the State has power to manipulate its citizenry.

Fourth, we have a lesson on the mandatory nature of taxation.

The temple tax was quasi-voluntary. Good Jews were expected to pay, but the poor were relieved of this duty.

Taxes are not voluntary. Offerings, on the other hand are voluntary (Ex. 25:1-3).

The church has no mandatory church tax backed by force of law. Funds necessary to operate a Christian ministry are raised through free will offerings from God’s people (2 Cor. 9:1ff). We call them “gifts” or “offerings” or “voluntary tithes.” However, the command “thou shall not steal” applies to congregants in regards to pastoral support.

Scriptural churches, of which there are only a few, do not pay a salary to their pastor. They support him with their voluntary gifts. To claim to be a church and then use corporate-statutory language such as “salary,” “pay,” and “income” is completely hypocritical of a church that claims to have Christ as its Head and the Bible as its authority.

Using corporate, legal, commercial language exposes the church’s identify crisis wherein it calls itself a corpus of Christ and at the same time a corpus of the State; that is, if it calls itself an organism of Christ and at the same time a government approved organization.

Doesn’t the Scripture condemn being double minded in the Book of James? The will of God is clear, “Come out from among them and be ye separate, saith the Lord” (2 Cor. 6:14).

Since the IRS is the legal head of a 501 (c) 3 organization, then meeting tax filing requirements is required of a government corpus. But, if a church owes its existence to Christ, it cannot be taxed by the State.

Just as it is wrong for the people to treat offerings for the church as a mandatory tax, it is just as wrong to treat civil taxes as a voluntary gift. If you owe a tax, pay it. All taxes are mandatory for whom they apply!

The key is “to whom does the income tax apply, in what jurisdiction, and where is the tax written”? For that answer one must consult the Constitution and the laws passed by Congress.

Fifth, there is a lesson on freedom.

If the children are free, then live freely. But are we free? Americans should know the difference between freedom and slavery. How can we be free if we are compelled by force to yield a portion of our wages to the State? Or, work to pay some alleged income tax from January till April 24th?

Have we not been enslaved without a shot being fired by the tricksters in the District of Criminals? Doesn’t the Constitution forbid slavery (13th Amendment)?

In the 1550s, La Boétie observed what happens when tyranny is passed on from generation to generation:

“It is true that in the beginning men submit under constraint and by force; but those who come after them obey without regret and perform willingly what their predecessors had done because they had to. This is why men born under the yoke and then nourished and reared in slavery are content, without further effort, to live in their native circumstance, unaware of

any other State or right, and considering as quite natural the condition into which they are born . . . it is clear enough that the powerful influence of custom is in no respect more compelling than in this, namely, habituation to subjection.”⁹²

If the children are free, why is the church of Jesus Christ appealing to the government to be tax exempt?

Does the State have authority over the church? Where is that in Scripture?

Why are pastors and church leaders subjecting their churches to the authority of the IRS?

The church is in a separate jurisdiction from the State. Does not the church commit adultery when it claims to be married to the Christ but has signed a contract to be married to the State?

In the Byzantine Empire, a fugitive could enter the church doors or cling to a cross and plead for mercy from the overreaching State to church leaders, and the civil authorities could not step onto church ground.

The church has always been in a separate jurisdiction.

Only in times of apathy and apostasy have church leaders surrendered church authority to the State. It is apostasy to advance the error that the church is subject to the State. It is also an error to advance the belief that Christ paid taxes to Caesar. That would make the kingdom of God subject to the kingdom of men.

In conclusion, this passage provides evidence that Jesus is the Son of God. To use Jesus’ example of paying the temple tax while He Himself was the Master of the House to encourage Christians to pay some controversial, income tax is a tragic misapplication of this passage. The result would not only produce milquetoast Christians, it would empower the nine hundred pound gorilla to gorge himself on the fruit of people’s labor.

Finally, if a person insists on teaching that Jesus paid taxes to civil authorities and therefore Christians should pay the “income tax,” they should not use this passage to do it.

⁹² Étienne de La Boétie, The Politics of Obedience, The Discourse of Voluntary Servitude, 1550s. the blessing of God’s people.)

92. The Law and Taxation

Matthew 19:18

*Then he *said to Him, "Which ones?" And Jesus said, "You shall not commit murder; You shall not commit adultery; You shall not steal; You shall not bear false witness;*

"You Shall Not Steal" (Exodus 20:15; Deuteronomy 5:19)

Both the Old and the New Testament condemn stealing. Not only are individuals not to steal, God's law does not permit government to steal in the name of taxation upon one's income or their private property.

Background on Biblical Taxation

There were *two types of taxation* in the Old Testament: the poll tax and the tithe.

To eliminate confusion, the reader must understand that the temple served as the civil center of government as well as a religious center for the people. The Sanhedrin conducted their civic duties just south of the Temple proper at the same time the priests were performing their work of reconciliation.

The Poll Tax was levied upon every man twenty old and upward [Exodus 30:11-16] and was payment for God's protection. The head tax was the same for young and old, rich or poor. It was equal and it was paid to civil authorities for the maintenance or covering for the civil order in the nation. It was paid at the temple or in N.T. times to tax collectors who worked for the temple. This is the tax that Peter paid with the gold *stater* found in the fish's mouth (Lk. 19).

The poll tax designed to support the civil order was 1/2 shekel per year or about two days wages. In contrast of value consider that if a man slandered his wife, the fine was 100 shekels (Deut. 22:13-21). No stronger fine could be levied in Israel.

The tithe was not equal nor was it paid to the central government. The tithe was collected for the Levites to maintain the temple services and for their work as educators for the nation and for the social order. The tithe was not a tax on the land but upon the increase of the land. Thus, it was a true "income tax" of 10% and no more.

The head tax supported the military while the tithe supported the Levities system. The poll tax had to be paid to civil authorities at the temple complex, but the tithe could be taken to any number of warehouses for that purpose. There was no land tax as the land belonged to the Lord.

There are many lessons that can be gained from this model:

The poll tax was small in order to accommodate the poor and because Israel's civil government was to be small. Big government means big taxes and small liberties.

There was no tax on land because the land belongs to God (Psalm 24:1). A tax on land is a wicked, humanistic invention that creates a culture of economic death.

Property is basic to a man's freedom. A tyrannical state always limits a man's use of his property, taxes it, or confiscates that property as an effective means of enslaving a man without necessarily touching his person. Theft is more than stealing property; it is at the same time an assault on a man's freedom. Neither the state nor an individual has any right to transgress this law.

The state does transgress this law not only by acts of confiscation, manipulation of money, and by taxation, but also by any and *every undercutting of Biblical faith and education*. State supported and controlled education is theft, not only in its taxation plan, but also *by virtue of its destruction of public character, so that a godly society is turned into a thieves market.*

A tax on the increase of a business or upon the land is Scriptural and constitutional indirect taxes upon corporate gain are fitting with this model. But a tax upon labor or income is not only not Scriptural and unconstitutional, it is slavery. In the name of taxation, the U.S. government has declared war on every American—a war which weakens families and destroys the nation.

The modern property tax is nothing more than ryot tenure-- another unbiblical, unconstitutional scheme of theft. Ryot tenure means a man will never be anything but a serf to the state.

Ryot Tenure: A system of land Tenure, *where the government takes the place of landowners and collects the rent by means of tax gatherers.* The farming is done by poor peasants, (ryots) who find the capital, so far as there is any, and also do the work. After Slavery, *it is accounted the worst of all systems.* because the *government can fix the rent at what it pleases, and it is difficult to distinguish between rent and taxes.*

Theft in the name of taxation is still theft. Unbiblical taxation injures and destroys. The whole idea of stealing one's man's wealth and redistributing it to the poor under the guise of compassion is theft under the color of law.

Men have always found it profitable to make a living under color of law. If the ruling elite are poor, they use wealth distribution to steal from the rich under the pretense of giving to the poor (democrats). If the ruling elite are rich, they use their power to encourage the poor to work harder to create wealth and pay

their taxes while they protect their income turf (republicans). Both are unjust as both vulturize the working man. Augustine, in his work, "The City of God" (Bk. 4), stated:

Justice being taken away, then, what are kingdoms but great robberies? For what are robberies themselves but little kingdoms? The band itself is made up of men; it is ruled by the authority of a prince, it is knit together by the pact of the confederacy; the booty is divided by the law agreed on (City of God, Book IV).

In Israel, the tithe was ten percent of one's income (Deut. 14:28; Amos 4:4). The poor tithe every other year (Deut. 14:28), alternated with a rejoicing tithe (Deut. 14:22-26) on each six-year cycle out of seven. Thus, the combined poor tithe and religious tithe, averaged out to about 15 percent per year; some say 18 percent.

If this be true, when then is the failure to tithe held to be robbing God? The answer is very clear: without the tithe, the totalitarian state progressively develops to play god over society. With the tithe, the rule of society is restored to God through His ordained tax.

Failure of the church to teach its importance and meaning constitutes a form of robbing God as surely as the failure to pay a tithe. However, when the State uses force to collect its tithe of 33% a year, it is difficult to see how any church society can tithe to the Lord without resisting the excessive tithe collected by the State.

The decline of tithing led to a decline in Christian social financing. The result was the shift of power to the state, and also the growth of taxation to remedy the lack of financing.

Without restoration of the tithe, there can be no restoration of Christian social order, nor can power be restored to the Christian man under God (Rushdoony, p. 515).

Rushdoony is correct, but he failed to address the issue that the tithe cannot be restored until men are paid a proper days wage and until the State is restrained from taxing a man's income under color of law.

In the Medieval church, though corrupt at times, the charges against priests seldom raised an issue of the neglect of the poor.

The modern social order robs God by stripping virtually every area away from His jurisdiction. Within a generation after the abolition of the legally required tithe in the United States, the state supported and controlled schools came into existence.

If the church collects the tax, the church rules society; if the state collects the tax, the state rules society. If, however, the people of God administer the tithe to godly agencies, then God’s rule prevails in that social order. In the modern world, the operative god is the state (John Rushdoony).

Every god describes the way it will be worshiped, and the modern god/state demands absolute obedience to its regulations and expects tithe/taxes to support its agenda to predestinate the world and make every nation apart of the new world order.

The Constitution permits a direct tax on states and an indirect tax to support the government, but nowhere does the Constitution permit a direct tax on a private citizen’s income.

Q: If there was a rebellion over the Whiskey Tax in 1791, why isn’t there a rebellion by thinking, moral Americans over the unconstitutional presumptive property and income taxes? After all, the 1894 tax on the income of the rich was declared unconstitutional by the Supreme Court in the Pollock Case of 1895. Unfortunately, however, there is no law against the State lying to the people, creating a presumption about taxation, and then warranting the people to volunteer to pay taxes “under penalties of perjury” (1040 Form). Thus, the command “be not deceived” takes on new meaning in the United States.

For a state to claim total jurisdiction over a man’s birth [registration of birth certificates], education [public fool systems], marriage [permits], career [licenses], health care, and income [taxes] like the modern state does, is to claim to be a god, the ultimate ruler of man. The modern attempts to establish public health care options is nothing more than the idolatrous State attempting to be a god—that is, to control the health decisions of every citizen.

93. Should Christian Pay Taxes to Caesar?

Luke 20:22

“Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no?”

What belongs to Caesar?

If you answered “Yes,” to the title question, then you answered foolishly without studying the text.

If you answered “No,” then how do you interpret what Jesus said?

Luke 20:19 And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God truly:

22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no?

23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar's.

25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and unto God the things which be God's.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

PART I – THE AMBUSH

There are few subjects that raise the hair on the back of people's neck like the subject of taxes. Opinions are like toes, everyone has them.

And, Luke 20:19-26 is one of those sticky passages that demand our best effort to interpret and apply it correctly.

I am convinced this passage can be interpreted to mean whatever any one wants it to mean. But, we are not at liberty to pick and choose our own meanings to passage. There is only one true interpretation of Scripture.

Some have used this passage to pummel Christians into submission and to demand they submit to all kinds of taxation schemes by greedy, crafty, covetous, criminal politicians.

Many pastors teach that everything belongs to Caesar and that Christians should give whatever the State demands as an act of obedience to God. Jesus said pay taxes to Caesar. Period! Let's all go home now and pay our taxes like good little Christians. **But, nothing could be further from the truth!**

It behooves us to understand what this passage is saying and not saying; and, how it should be properly applied in a constitutional republic.

This brief is not against taxation or the right of government to raise legitimate revenue to support its services, but it is against supporting unlimited, lusty unconstitutional taxation, fraud, and theft empowered by a wrong view of our Lord's teaching, "Give unto Caesar . . . everything he demands."

Such a bad doctrine would end up supporting *paternalism*, the belief that the nanny State is some kind of god and that all authority resides within government; that the State has total authority over the total man.

Taxes

Taxes are a mark of sovereignty. This is why foreign embassies do not pay taxes to other governments. Foreign states consider themselves as equals.

Likewise, Biblical churches do not pay taxes to the State. Not because they are "tax exempt," *but because the State has no jurisdiction over the church.* Only God is sovereign and both State and church have their own spheres of authority on earth. The whole concept of being a "tax-exempt" church is nothing but political propaganda to trick the people into thinking civil government has authority to tax churches and their property.

Both state and church have authority to raise revenue. The State has no authority to tax or create law towards a true church—not in America (See the First Amendment).

Since taxation is a sign of sovereignty, a civil authority that claims more than ten percent of a person's gross income *declares itself to be more valuable than God*; and, a State that demands to be paid first through an automated tax system *declares itself more important than God!* And, therefore, must be resisted by the spiritual man.

For this reason, we must ask the question, "What belongs to Caesar"?

The Trickster Lawyers

Luke 20:19 And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

John Motley said, "A good lawyer is a bad Christian." And, it is certainly true in this passage.

This event happened a few days before our Lord's passion. The unscrupulous lawyers and corrupt priests scrutinized Jesus closely hoping to catch him in some infraction of the law so they could indict Him for a capital crime. Unable to charge Jesus with a common law offense, these lawyers sent operatives to trap Him in a religious debate.

Did you notice the politicians "**feigned**" to be honest?

Like media personalities today, the leaders were not seeking truth by their questions. They had to pretend to be honesty.

Don't be deceived, politicians put on a mask of honesty or they would never get elected!

The objective is clearly stated: "*They wanted to hand him over to the authority of the governor;*" i.e., the deceivers wanted our Lord accused, arrested, arraigned, jailed, tried, and condemned!

The motive is clearly stated in John 11:48. These politicians were afraid of losing their "place" in the nation. Jesus was no threat to Rome, but He was a threat to the Sanhedrin. Because Jesus was a threat to their power, they had to eliminate him in order to preserve their power.

Things have not changed. Politicians still act in a way to preserve their political power. They seldom act in the real interest of the nation.

The Trap

The very question, "Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar?" is a field littered with political land mines and booby traps.

How do you destroy an innocent man? It is very simple. Slander him! Accuse him of not paying taxes! Indict him as a felon for using frivolous tax protestor arguments. States accuse innocent persons of doing they very thing that the government is guilty of doing – stealing.

Can you feel the temperature go up when the words "tax protestor," "evading taxes," or "tax rebel" are used? So powerful are these phrases psychologically that all the media has to do is attach these terms to a news story and the public assumes guilt! Few things are more unforgiving than not paying a tax to the State. The priests new this and ultimately *used the charge of tax evasion to have Christ arrested and condemned* (Luke 23:2).

The tactics of the State have not changed. On February 17, 1960 a warrant was issued for Dr. Martin Luther King's arrest on charges that he had falsified his 1956 and 1958 Alabama State income tax returns. The charge was false, but it

did not matter. The political tyrants wanted to discredit him in the eyes of the public. Amazingly, an all-white jury acquitted him.⁹³

When Congressman **George Hansen** exposed corruption by the billions of dollars, he angered the “mega banksters.” Though the U. S. Supreme Court eventually declared him innocent, he was shackled, tortured, and sent from prison to prison over a four-year span for alleged IRS and federal election infractions. He was a victim of false allegations by an agency desperate to retain its power over the people through fraud and intimidation.

After **Joseph Banister**, former IRS agent (2004), exposed fraud in the agency, he was targeted for legal assassination by the DOJ in his CPA practice.

Fortunately, Joe won his case without having to give a defense. He explains in his own words a little bit of the intimidation tactics used against him:

Although the IRS achieved its underhanded goal of marking me with the “scarlet letter” of “disbarred” IRS practice status, the “disbarment” fiasco also exposed a great deal of IRS trickery, injustice and hypocrisy to the thousands of Americans who were following the battle. It appears that the “disbarment” fiasco discredited the IRS much more than it discredited me so the IRS had to cook up another way to “kill the messenger.”

What the IRS cooked up was to accuse me, in November of 2004, of criminal conspiracy to defraud the United States of America and of criminal preparation of false tax returns, accusations that, if sustained, could have sent me to federal prison and certainly would have discredited me forever. The problem for the IRS was that the accusations were totally false and a jury of my peers, seeing that the charges were false, acquitted me on all charges.

In fact, more than one juror commented after the trial that I was more than just “not guilty,” I WAS COMPLETELY INNOCENT.

Once again the IRS failed to “kill the messenger” and it had no choice but to reach back into its ever-growing and ever-brazen bag of dirty tricks . . . Federal and State government’s pledged to work together to destroy anyone who questioned the legitimacy of income tax administration and enforcement.

Joe Banister, a man of impeccable character, describes the methods of a State desperate to retain its power:

The federal income tax enforcement apparatus simply cannot coexist with credible people who expose its misdeeds, so rather than correct the misdeeds, the credible people must be destroyed. (*Freedom Above Fortune Newsletter*, July 17, 2006).

⁹³ The King Center, “The Chronology of Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.”

There can be no doubt the religious establishment was seeking to execute God's Messenger and to destroy the credibility of Jesus. Pretending to be truth seekers, they came to Jesus with a trick question:

"Is it lawful to give taxes to Caesar or not"?

Background to the Question:

The word "taxes" should be translated "tribute" (*phoron*). Mark and Luke use the term *kenos* or poll tax levied upon a Jew for his own person which was a mark of servitude to Rome.

Israel already had a poll tax established by God in Exodus 30:11-16—an atonement or covering; i.e., protection of civil government. Every male paid this tax to be protected by YHWH, the King of Israel. But, over time the people rejected God's government and became a subjugated people.

Caesar extracted tribute from the people to support his armies. The tribute tax was one denarius or one day's wage—a sort of nuisance tax. This is the reason Jesus asked for a denarius.

The whole of the Roman tax system amounted to about three weeks of a workingman's wages—a pittance compared to the U.S. income tax wherein a citizen must work at least five months of the year to support the U.S., Inc.

No wonder Judge Andrew Napolitano frequently ask the question on Fox News, "Does the government exist to serve us or master us? The answer, of course, is obvious: Like Rome, U.S., Inc. masters us.

An issue raged in the nation between the Pharisees, those who believed in Jewish independence from Rome, and the Herodians, those who wanted political stability and were loyal to Rome. The question was this: "Was Rome's occupation of Israel legal in nature"?

The Herodians argued that Rome gained authority over Palestine by military conquest and that the Jews needed to support the de facto government because Rome had the political power to destroy traitors.

The Pharisees agreed that Rome gained control over Palestine by might, but argued that Roman rule was without God's authority and consent of the governed, and therefore, paying taxes to Caesar was not legitimate.

Samuel Rutherford would have agreed with the Pharisees when he stated,

"Mere conquest by the sword without the consent of the people is not a just title to the crown."

Conscientious allegiance to Rome under a covenant with God seems impossible for a covenantal people. If Caesar's power over Palestine was lawful, then he

had a right to tax the people; but, if his rule over the Jews was unlawful, then he had no right to tax the people.

Had the opponents of Jesus been interested in the political question rather than trying to trap Christ, our Lord might have answered with more clarity and specificity.

The question, however, was not raised to pursue the truth message, but to trap the Messenger.

Entrapment

How do you destroy someone with whom you disagree? Since not paying taxes is treason to the State, the Pharisees hoped to trap Jesus in His words. If Jesus had said, "Yes, you should pay taxes to Caesar" then the Pharisees would have accused him of being a traitor to the Jewish nation.

If he said, "No, you should not pay taxes to Rome," then the Herodians would have accused Him of being a traitor to Caesar and have had him arrested for being a tax protestor.

Furthermore, the question was mute because nothing Jesus said was going to change the political reality of Roman domination. Caesar had power over Palestine and extracted tribute from the people by force. The whole line of questioning on taxes was the noose on which the Jews hoped to hang Jesus.

A true answer

Recognizing their duplicity, Jesus asked for a denarius. Interestingly, Jesus did not have a coin in his pocket.

The Latin inscription reads (clockwise from left of emperor's ear): *Augustus Ti(berius) Caesar Divi Aug(usti) F(ilius)* ["Augustus Tiberius, son of the Divine Augustus"]. On the other side of the coin, the symbols included the emperor's mother, Julia Augusta (Livia) sitting on the throne of the gods, holding the Olympian scepter in her right hand, and in her left, the olive branch a symbol that she was the earthly incarnation of the heavenly Pax.⁹⁴

There is a bit of irony here. Tiberius was falsely titled *the son of divine Caesar Augustus*, when in reality Jesus was *the true Son of the living God*.

Jesus answered their question with a question: "Whose portrait and inscription are on it?"

The Jewish lawyers answered "Caesar."

⁹⁴ Rusdoony quoting Stauffer, 1973, *The Institutes of Biblical Law*, Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, p. 721.

Jesus responded, "Give unto Caesar the things that belong to Caesar."

We must remember, however, that Jesus' answer was in response to their *entrapment question* (Mt. 22:18).

Jesus' short, stunning answer appears to be designed not only to enlighten hearts but to darken minds. Jesus spoke in parables not only to share truth, but to hide truth (Mt. 13:15). What was His intent behind His answer?

First, the imperative sentence, "Give unto Caesar . . ." should be translated, "Give things of Caesar to Caesar." The word "*Render*" or "*Give*" is the Greek word *apodote* which means "to give away" or "to pay." Jesus affirms that some things belonged to Caesar.

Second, Jesus did not define what belonged to Caesar nor did He answer the question whether Caesar had legitimate authority over Palestine or the right to tax God's people in Israel. He did not fall into the snare of the Herodians or the noose of the Pharisees.

Though Jesus did not say what belonged to Caesar, Caesar had a power to levy tribute. Liking it or not, the Jews received "protection" from Caesar. In so saying, Jesus may have placed His stamp of approval upon the principle of tribute. This interpretation is affirmed by Paul who taught us to "pay ye tribute also" (Rom. 13:6, 7). *Those that believe that the State has no right to collect taxes are surely in error.*

Third, in saying, "Give unto God the things that belong to God" Jesus taught that Caesar was not God nor was Tiberius the son of the divine. God was sovereign over Caesar. *Even Caesar was responsible to give to God what belongs to God.*

Furthermore, in saying, "Give unto God . . ." Jesus acknowledged that *Caesar's power was limited*. Caesar was not God nor did he have title over his subjects or their property. *Everything did not belong to Caesar*. God's law limits all Caesars.

Some things belonged to the Pharaoh of the exodus, but not the nation of Israel. Some things belonged to King David, but not Uriah's wife! Some things belonged to Ahab, but not Naboth's vineyard. Some things belonged to Herod, but not his brother's wife. Selah.

Fourth, in saying, "Give unto God the things that belong to God" Jesus acknowledged that God has a claim on men and their possessions; that there is a higher duty than service to the State. Men may not have a duty to Caesar but they certainly have a duty to God. Man cannot rob God of His prerogatives nor His property with impunity.

Fifth, Jesus does not address the American system of taxation that is authorized by and limited by the U.S. Constitution. Because America is a republic, this passage must be carefully applied.

*In this country, the government should **not** be equated with Caesar. The federal government received its power from **WE THE PEOPLE / States**. *The Caesar in America is We the People!* The Founders created a servant government where employees are public servants! Americans do not exist to serve the government, the government was created to serve the People.*

Furthermore, we are a nation of laws, not of men. **All law must be written**. To understand lawful authority and taxation in this country, one must consult the constitution and the written laws of this nation (See Statutes at Large and Title 26) . . . and then determine to whom they really apply. Congress hasn't passed a law that applies to average Citizens since 1868. All law applies to corporations, government employees, and those in contract with the State.

"The individual . . . owes no duty to the state . . ." Hale v. Henkel

No one is bound to obey an unconstitutional law, and no courts are bound to enforce it (American Jurisprudence, Second Edition)

Keep in mind the constitution was created to limit government because all governments are in search of schemes to expand their powers. And, there is nothing like a good crisis to expand government power.

Sixth, Jesus does not address the abuses of Caesar. Rather, He left his critics pondering what lawfully belongs to Caesar and what belongs to God.

Taking the full context of Scripture, we need to remember that tax collectors were identified as sinners and commanded to repent: See Matthew 3:8; 5:46, Matthew 9:10; Mark 2:16 and Luke 3:13; 18:13.

Later that century, John called the Roman Government "Babylon the Great" (Revelations 14:8) and "The great dragon...that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan..." (Revelations 12:9.).

The Lord had a redemptive mission to fulfill and it simply was not the time to confront Rome with its atrocities.

Troubling Questions on Taxes

PART II

Several questions come to mind not only on the interpretation of this passage, but its application:

Should the Jews have paid taxes? What does belong to Caesar? What belongs to God? What belongs to me? What is a Christian supposed to do when Caesar lusts after what is not his to take? Who is Caesar in America? Should I pay taxes to government?

Should the Jews have paid taxes to Caesar?

Jesus did not answer the question directly. It could have been “Yes,” or it could have been “No.”

The answer, of course, depends upon how we answer the question, “What belongs to Caesar”? Did the Jews belong to Caesar? Did their property belong to Caesar? Did the Holy Land belong to Caesar? Did God’s temple belong to Caesar?

If you say that Rome had lawful authority over Israel, then he had lawful authority to levy taxes. Jews should pay taxes for conscience sake to legitimate authority. But, if you conclude Caesar did not have lawful authority over Israel, then Caesar did not have lawful authority to tax the Jews. This no doubt was the position of the Pharisees.

If Jesus intended for the Jews to pay taxes to Caesar, this would have been a perfect time to address the issue. Whether Caesar had lawful authority over Israel was a moral and theological question of the time. **The historical reality**, however, was that Caesar had raw, de facto police power over Israel by conquest and the might to levy and collect tribute. In this case, Jews paid tribute, not for conscience sake, but out of fear of being punished for not doing so.

What belongs to Caesar?

Christ’s brilliant answer leaves us pondering what lawfully belongs to Caesar. What are “the things of Caesar”? *The answer is closer to nothing than it is to everything.*

Did the Jews belong to Caesar? No, the Jews belonged to God: “Now this is what the Lord says, he who created you, O Jacob . . . you are mine” (Isaiah 43:1).

Did the Earth belong to Caesar? No, “The earth is the Lord’s and the fullness thereof” (Ps. 24:1; See Ps. 50:12).

Did Palestine belong to Caesar? No, the land belonged to the Lord: God called Palestine “His land” (Jer. 2:7). The land did not belong to Caesar.

Did Caesar own all the livestock in Israel? No, “For every beast of the forest is mine, and the cattle upon a thousand hills,” says the Lord (Ps. 50:10).

Did Caesar own the life and property of the people? No, for “all souls are mine” says the Lord (Ezek. 18:4; Ps. 24:1).

Did Caesar own his nation? No, for the Bible says, “for dominion belongs to the LORD and he rules over the nations” (Ps. 22:28).

Did Caesar own the labor of every man? No, for that would make every man a slave of Caesar.

Apparently, the Chief Priests interpreted Jesus’ answer as “nothing” because they charged him a few days later of forbidding paying taxes to Caesar (Lk. 23:1-3). If Jesus had come out directly and said “nothing” he would have died before His time.

So, what belongs to Caesar? Possibly, he owned the following:

Authority to execute justice: The purpose of Caesar’s government was “for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well.” (1 Pet. 2:14).

Government creations: What Caesar creates, he controls. Caesar created roads, ports, coins, corporations, and ships. Having created these things, he had a right to control them and to tax people for their use.

Contracts: When under contract with Caesar, Caesar had a right to expect fulfillment of a duty in the contract. Likewise, if one swore allegiance to Caesar, he owed Caesar his life.

Corporations: Those organizations, cities, and guilds that applied for incorporation for some corporate privilege became obligated to Caesar. Caesar had a right to tax corporate privileges.

Government lands and buildings: It is important to understand that God did not give kings and governments the earth. God gave the earth to families for their benefit. However, Caesar needed a small portion of land from which to run his government.

Coins: The fact that Caesar’s coins were used in the nation indicated Caesar’s authority over the nation.

COMMON ERRORS

We error if we think that everything belongs to Caesar!

During the period of the kings, Ahab coveted the vineyard of Naboth. Unable to win him by persuasion, Jezebel had Naboth falsely charged, condemned, and executed. The legal seizure of Naboth’s vineyard satisfied the lusts of King Ahab, but its unlawfulness roused the anger of God (1 Kgs. 21:20).

We error when we think Jesus endorsed the Roman Taxation System when He said “Give unto Caesar . . .”

Tax collectors were notorious sinners. They were in the same category as prostitutes. The difference between the two is that prostitutes victimized

people in secret with their client's willing consent; tax collectors victimized people openly without the citizen's consent by using force and intimidation to steal from the people under the color of law.

Tax collectors clearly violated God's law, "Thou shall not steal." It is inconceivable that Christ approved of paying taxes to Caesar's tax collectors. Everyone knew that tax collectors openly stole from people through Rome's taxation system. Tax collectors were the prototype for sinners (Mt. 5:46; 9:11-13; 18:15-17; 31:23).

Judge Napolitano stated,

Because taxation is compulsory, and therefore taking of your property, we may assume that it is a malum in se – an evil in itself (Napolitano, Andrew (2011). It is Dangerous to Be Right when the Government is Wrong, p. 221)

We error when we think government can tax anything it wants or as much as it wants.

The State is limited by the God's Word and by the Constitution. While every State needs a way to support its activities, its means of raising revenue is also limited. In early America, the government was totally financed by duties, imports, and exports. The whole idea the government can levy a tax on personal income in order to redistribute wealth is repugnant not only to God's Word, but to the US Constitution.

We also error when we expect the government to provide goods and services and think we don't have to pay for them.

We error when we think "Government is my shepherd, I shall not want."

Many believe that taxes are part of an agreement that voters make with government, a contract in which citizens agree to exchange their money for the government's goods and services. To consume these goods and services without paying for them is *itself* theft, and is rightly punished as breach of contract. No one is against limited services, but to these positivists there is no limit to the services government should provide and no end to the taxes they wish to charge. Hillary Clinton said, ""We're going to take things away from you on behalf of the common good" (Hillary Clinton for President 2007); that is, individual wealth must be sacrificed for the good of the whole. To the paternalist, government is the father who knows what's best for the family.

What belongs to God?

Jesus' answer raises the question, "What belongs to God"? The simple answer is "Everything." Even Caesar belongs to God (Ps. 24:1). However, though all things belong to God, he does not ask us to give everything to Him but to use

our resources to provide for our families and gospel ministry; i.e., to be stewards of what God gives us (Lk. 16:1ff).

In America, clever politicians have devised a system not only where the government receives a hefty portion of a working man's income, the system is devised so that the government gets its portion first before God. Even the choice of giving to Caesar is taken away from the worker because the boss deducts from his wages before he receives a penny of his earnings. In so acting, *the government is saying that not only is the State more important than God, it is saying it deserves more than God.*

Consequently, the average family simply cannot tithe to God, and those that do probably do not have health insurance or retirement benefits.

While there may be exceptions, Christians who claim to tithe usually tithe out of their net income rather than from their gross income. Since the average Christian only gives around 2.5% of his income to the Lord,⁹⁵ many a church and its ministers are left crippled and handicapped financially. Understaffed, churches limp along unable to carry out their sacred duty. Most are forced to borrow for building programs and are deeply shackled in debt. All of this seems ethical to the common taxpayer. Few really question the morality of the system or demand change.

What Belongs to Me?

Our forefathers read the Bible and thought long and hard about this question. Some plantation owners and merchants around 1776 made the equivalent of \$500,000 a year. Times were good for most Americans. The British wanted a slice of the cash flow and levied unjust taxes on the Colonists. Convinced that their prosperity and their liberty were at stake, they resisted the King's lust:

But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty to throw off such Government . . ." (The Declaration).

They knew the greatest threat to prosperity was not thieves on the street, but government at work behind closed doors.

They stated in the Declaration that, "We are endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable rights, that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness (wealth)"? Men have a right to be free. The product of life and freedom is property.

⁹⁵ Omaha World-Herald, Fuller Seminary, Church Growth Institute.

My labor belongs to me. My labor is my property and it does not belong to Caesar.

“It has been well said that ‘the property which every man has in his own labor, as it is the original foundation of all other property, so it is the most sacred and inviolable’ (Butcher’s Union Co. v. Crescent City Co., 111 U.S. 746 (1884)).

When God said, “Thou shall not steal,” He intended the commandment to be applied not only to individual persons but to the State!

He bestowed not only a right upon individuals to own property, but the right of others to own property.

However, we live in a fallen world where unscrupulous politicians are at work scheming ways to confiscate our hard earned money. Consequently, we must do all we can to protect our property and the property of our neighbors.

When God said, “Thou shall not steal” He was addressing the sinful inclination of man. Murder robs man of his **life**. Slavery robs man of his **freedom**. Theft robs man of his **property**.

If truth be told, governments have killed more people, enslaved more populations, and stolen more property than any other entities of man.

This scheme is one of the fundamental legal precepts of socialism: The government decides what it will take from you and what you may keep from it (Napolitano, Andrew (2011). It is Dangerous to Be Right when the Government is Wrong, p. 221)

I was talking to a CPA one time and he told me that I was supposed to pay 35% of my income to Uncle Sam, but that the rest of my income was exempt. “Exempt”? Was he claiming that all my income belonged to government? Accordingly, by the infinite grace of the State I was allowed to keep 65% of what I earned? This would be slavery.

While it is an error to shun the authority of the State it is also an error to attribute unlimited authority to the State—including the authority to tax anything it wants.

The Thirteenth Amendment forbids slavery including the confiscation of our labor in the form of an income tax.

... taxation is the confiscation of our property by people who prefer to spend it on their priorities rather than ours. (Madsen Pirie, President of the Adam Smith Institute, 2000)

When God said, “Thou shall not steal” he was speaking not only to men, but to the institutions men create. **If the citizen has no moral right to steal, neither does the State!**

This command applies to corporations and governments. Just because a legislative body makes a law to tax something does not mean that it is lawful or moral. Theft in the name of taxation is still theft. Theft in any form should not be tolerated!

Ps 50:18 When thou sawest a thief then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers.

“It is impossible to introduce into society a greater change and a greater evil than this: the conversion of the law into an instrument of plunder” (Frederic Bastiat).

“To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical” (Thomas Jefferson).

“The power to tax involves the power to destroy,” (Chief Justice John Marshall in McCulloch v. Maryland, 1819).

“If a thug were to accost you in the street and demand your wallet or purse, you wouldn’t hesitate in knowing what to call it – theft! If a group of thugs were to demand at least one third of your income every month and threaten dire consequences if you didn’t accept their offer of “protection,” you wouldn’t hesitate in knowing what to call it – theft! Yet you are robbed every day. Every month at least one third of your income is taken from you forcibly, without your consent. It is taken by the government. And yes, even if only a few realize it, that too is theft! For just how does government differ from a mugger? Why is the State’s “protection” racket different from that of any other gangster? Both conform to my dictionary’s definition of theft – the seizure of individuals’ property without their consent. The only difference is that the government is less honest than its private competitors in crime. At least a thief doesn’t claim to be committing his crime for your own good, to be performing a desirable social service in “the public interest” (Chris Tame, Political Notes 44).

What is a Christian supposed to do when Caesar lusts after . . . what belongs to God . . . what is not his to take (private property)?

It is so much easier to give what is Caesar’s to Caesar when Caesar gives what is God’s to God. It is not difficult to obey the State when the State obeys God’s law. It is a privilege to render taxes to lawful authority that obeys God’s Law, but it is grievous to pay taxes to a government that despises God’s law and

abuses its authority. It is our duty to pay lawful taxes, but we have no duty to pay unlawful taxes that are extracted by deceit and coercion.

We grieve when the State disobeys God's law. We groan over parliaments and congresses and legislatures and Prime Ministers and Presidents that do not acknowledge the State has a duty to God. We mourn when governments sanction murder, legalize theft through fraudulent taxation, promote homosexuality, and propagandize "voluntary compliance" through coercion. How can we as Christians own governments that practice legal tyranny? It would be an error to confuse love of government with love of country.

"Though we can passively submit out of fear, we cannot actively submit out of conscience" (Greg Price, pastor).

For, "truth to Christ cannot be treason to Caesar" (Samuel Rutherford).

In Micah 3, God chastised the rulers of Israel for eating the people's flesh and flaying them alive. This metaphorical language was not describing physical mutilation, but lusty rulers who unlawfully seized the liberty and property of His people.

Micah 3:2 Who hate the good, and love the evil; who pluck off their skin from off them, and their flesh from off their bones;

Could it be that Jesus' statement, "Give unto Caesar what belongs to Caesar" which included nothing in Israel, was a statement of contempt? Should His silence be interpreted as an affirmation, or should his lack of exposition be interpreted as a negation?

Not only is sin at work in the human heart, it is at work in human institutions.

Just as humans covet and steal, so governments collude and steal from the weak through a thicket of lies and deceit. Too often, *history has taught us that totalitarian states seek to control and to seize private property in order to prevent the people from having any power independent of the State.* In the founding of this county, the people owned the land and all the money. Today, the banks in collusion with the government, own the money and the land it covets.

What should a person do when the State oversteps its authority to seize private property?

What should a person do when the government does not obey its own law or exceeds its legitimate taxing power through institutional fraud and deception?

Too often *the extension of a tax from what is lawful to what is lusted after have been vigorously enforced behind semantic deception.* Surely, these are the questions that

try men's souls. In these situations it might be good to remind ourselves of the following principles:

- At times obedience to the State is obedience to God (I Pet. 2:13).
- At times disobedience to the State is disobedience to God (Rom. 13:1ff).
- At times obedience to the State is disobedience to God (2 Sam. 20:1ff; 2 Kgs. 17:1ff).
- At times, disobedience to the State is obedience to God. Obedience to God and resistance to the State are at times indistinguishable (Examples: The Hebrew midwives; Rahab, the three Hebrews, Daniel, General Robert E. Lee).

While it is true that Christians should pay taxes they legitimately owe, *it is not true they should give Caesar everything he wants.*

Thomas Jefferson stated the following:

We must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must make our election between economy and liberty or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debt, as that we must be taxed in our meat and in our drink, in our necessaries and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements, for our calling and our creeds...we [will] have no time to think, no means of calling our miss-managers to account but be glad to obtain subsistence by hiring ourselves to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow-sufferers. And this is the tendency of all human governments. A departure from principle in one instance becomes a precedent ...till the bulk of society is reduced to be mere automatons of misery. And the fore-horse of this frightful team is public debt. Taxation follows that, and in its train wretchedness and oppression (Thomas Jefferson).

Who is Caesar in America?

To modern interpreters, the term "Caesar" has become synonymous with the term "government." But, that is a presumption which is not supported by the facts of American history.

America is unique among the nations of the world in that the people are considered sovereigns without subject. On September 3, 1783, after the Revolutionary War, King George surrendered his sovereignty to WE THE PEOPLE at the Treaty of Peace. For the first time in history a nation was established where all men were equal to a King and where the Citizen had no power over him except God and conscience. In *Lansing v. Smith* (1829), the court ruled,

“People of a State are entitled to all rights which formerly belonged to the King by his prerogative” (4 Wend. 9, 20).

The new republic created a **servant government** of the people, by the people, and for the people. Americans do not have a king or a Caesar. Americans are a Caesar without subjects.

“The Supreme Court of the United States just last year reminded the president that he is not commander in chief of the United States. He’s commander in chief of the armed forces. That the United States civilian citizens are not under his control as commander in chief,” said Allen Dershowitz, Harvard Professor, December 19, 2005, on CNN.

At the close of the *Constitutional Convention* in Philadelphia on September 18, 1787, a Mrs. Powel anxiously awaited the results. As Benjamin Franklin emerged from the long task, she asked him directly:

“Well Doctor, what have we got, a republic or a monarchy”? “A republic if you can keep it,” responded Franklin.

No doubt, this republic is being tested. The life and freedom and property of Citizens are in grave danger. It appears we are no longer a republic or a democracy, but a Dulocracy where our servant government has taken over the master’s house.

Should I pay taxes to government?

Most Americans are ill equipped to answer this question. Yes, we should pay taxes we legitimately owe! No, we are not required to pay taxes we do not legitimately owe!

To understand one’s tax liability or the lack thereof, an American needs to consult the U.S. Constitution and the laws passed by Congress. It would be an error to assume Congress has unlimited taxing power, and it would be an error not to distinguish between what the law requires and what the government demands. The two are not the same.

The tentacles of the income tax enforcement apparatus “are much more numerous and far reaching than most law-abiding, liberty-minded Americans could have imagined . . . These tentacles are constantly trolling for ways to reach beyond the walls of the IRS to protect the federal income tax from any credible opposition”⁹⁶ (Joe Banister. Freedom Above Fortune letter, Monday, July 17, 2006).

⁹⁶ Joe Banister, former IRS Agent, criminal division.

If the government would stay within fundamental law, it would be worthy of praise and conscientious obedience. When a government steps outside its taxing authority, it abandons its authority and should be resisted. We should pay lawful taxes to legitimate governments with joy for conscience sake. Taxes paid to tyrannical governments are burdensome and paid out of fear.

Like the Jews in Jesus' day, we may be forced to lawfully render passive subjection to the power of government out of fear for our lives and the confiscation of our property, but we must never render active allegiance to tyrannical rulers out of conscience.

The Jews could lawfully pay taxes out of fear to Rome because they were a subjugated people. In political theory, we are NOT a subjugated people.

Christians believe in the principle of paying taxes and in supporting legitimate, lawful government. But, we should not believe in paying taxes to support the schemes of de fact government that disobeys the Law of God and its own laws.

A ruler without unlawful authority has no more legitimate right to our taxes than a thief has to our wallets. We may lawfully submit out of fear because of the State's might, but we can never submit out of conscience with joy when the State forsakes what is right.

Should Pastors Pay Income Taxes?

The answer depends on whether the "pastor" is a government employee (CEO) working in "The King's Chapel" — a 501 c 3 non-prophet organization (Amos 7:10-13) or he is a true pastor working for the Lord in His Vineyard?

If a government employee pastor receives an "income" from a corporation, then he must pay the required taxes at 26 U.S.C.; but, if the pastor is a man of God and receives gifts and offerings from a Biblically organized church, the answer is "No!"

If you are a CEO employee working in the King's Chapel, and you want to be God's Man, then consider doing the following:

Stop fearing the IRS, and start fearing God.

Show some moral courage. "Physical courage seems to be quite common, but moral courage seems to quite rare." (Mark Twain).

Stop signing government contracts like Form W-4s, Form W-2s, and Form 1099 under penalty of perjury . . . stop signing period. These only apply to "officers and employees" of the Unites States or political subdivision of the District of Columbia (26 CFR31.3401(c)-1).

Start calling your church collections "church offerings," or "gifts" or "freewill offerings;" that is, use Biblical terminology and don't allows the church

treasurer to be an secret government agent, "sorcerer" that magically transform the "Lords' Offerings" into "income" or "wages," or you into an "employee" or "payer," or "payee" or "recipient" or "contractor."

Do all you can to extract your "religious organization" from its 501 c 3 contract, and re-organize your church under God's Laws? Do not consult the King's lawyers! That is how your church got trapped in the first place.

Think long and hard about the First and Tenth Amendment.

Study God's laws and U.S. code definitions. The term "wages" in the Bible is not the same thing as "wages" in the USC. The definitions are totally different; that is, don't fall into semantic deceit.

Help God's people to understand that they are supplying your needs through "gifts" and that this is not "income" or "gains" from corporate activity.

Teach your people the difference between a church, the living corpus of Christ, and a government corporation, a dead, fictional "person."

Instruct and teach your church treasurer to serve the Lord, and not to be a fearful, trembling, uncompensated agent of the IRS.

Gradually, slowly, carefully extract yourself from all presumptive, adhesion government contracts, including, but not limited to, obtaining a non-interest bearing "common law" trust account at a local bank. But know this: government has power and won't hesitate to use it against a lone-wolf pastor. Be wise.

Do not expect any cooperation to be free from the State, IRS, IMF, Federal Reserve, A BAR Attorney, or an administrative government judge.

Realize you have no duty to the State! You are in ecclesiastical jurisdiction under the Lord Jesus Christ, and, not the jurisdiction of the United States, Inc.

We must to pay legitimate taxes because if we are involved in taxable activities, but we do not need to pay illegitimate taxes to unlawful authority because the government is barbaric.

In light of our times, each must decide in his own conscience what course he should take. Paying taxes to Caesar is not a sign of allegiance as long as one renders to God what is God's.

Finally, the Scripture says we should pray for our leaders not pay for them!

We should pray that they may leave us alone so we can conduct our work without fear or interference (I Tim. 2:1-7).

We pray that our representatives will confess Christ and that He will give them repentance. We are living in a day an age when those in authority ignore their

own laws. As Judge Napolitano said, *“Because the government breaks the law and denies it, the government is not your friend.”*⁹⁷

Furthermore, this government has become our enemy because it does not obey its own laws. We may chose not to pay certain types of taxes when there is no law is requiring us to do so, but the government may use fear and intimidation to enforce compliance in the absence of law.

We may need to pay legitimate taxes because we are involved in taxable activities, or we may also need to pay illegitimate taxes to unlawful authority because the government is barbaric.

In light of our times, each must decide in his own conscience what course he should take. Paying taxes to Caesar is not a sign of allegiance as long as one renders to God what is God’s.

94. Is there a Curse on 501 C (3) Organizations?

Mark 11:12-14, 21

“The fig tree you cursed has withered”

Q: If Jesus were on earth today, do you think he would approve of your 501 c (3) church organization or do you think he would condemn it?

Jesus cursed the fig tree saying, “May no one eat fruit from you again” [Mk. 11:14ff]. This seems totally out of character with the sweet Jesus we all know who went about “doing good.” This was the only time he ever cursed anything unless it was the Bay of Pigs near the Gesarenes on the eastern shore of Galilee.

Afterward, Jesus went into the temple and drove out the money changers.

Both stories represent the same truth—that Jesus was going to destroy the temple, the priesthood, and the faithless, fruitless Nation of Israel.

James Brooks explains,

“The usual designation, ‘the cleansing of the temple,’ leaves a wrong impression. Jesus’ purpose was not to reform the temple, but to abolish it. This is symbolized by the expulsion of the merchants [and the curse fig tree], who in

⁹⁷ Judge Napolitano, *Constitutional Chaos*, p. ix.

turn represent the priestly establishment and beyond that the whole nation”
[the New American Commentary, p. 183, 184.]

Notice that Jesus did not prune the tree or fertilize it. He destroyed it! He did not seek to reform the temple practices or revive its vitality, but to abolish it symbolically by shutting down its commercial practices. The literal fulfillment of the nation’s destruction was accomplished during the siege of Titus in 70 A.D.

What’s the point? Some religious systems are so corrupt, they are beyond repair. The corrupt nature of the commercial interest of the priesthood and the corrupt commercial nature of Hebraic temple practices was beyond “cleansing”, beyond fixing, and beyond redemption. Jesus solution was not revival nor reformation, but death of the system.

Chuck Baldwin, in his article, “State-Owned Churches Are Killing America,” February 3, 2011 exposed the truth that America’s 501 c (3) church organizations are a blight on Christianity and the death of America. He is correct! And, the solution is not revival nor reformation, but total destruction of the state- church incorporation system. God destroyed the State-church system of Germany in 1944 and He can do it again in America.

Question: If Jesus was on earth today, do you think he would bless your 501 c (3) church organization or do you think he would curse it?

My conclusion is that the 501 c (3) church system is so corrupt, the only answer to the question is that Jesus would abolished the organization just like He did the corrupt commercial temple system.

This does not mean Jesus will curse his church!! That will never happen. The church is his bride and His Bride is blessed. However, the incorporated “501 c 3 non-prophet church” has no such protection and is destined to bear His curse. Why?

Ans: Because it has wedded itself to the State and the corrupt interests of commerce. Consequently, it behooves every Christian to do what he can to end these IRS controlled, State-owned, non-prophet organizations.

May no one eat fruit from a 501 (c) (3) “Church” organization again . . . they “Are Killing America”!

And, may God’s free Church rise again to be a blessing to the world!

Pressures on “churches” to Organize Under the authority of the IRS.

The church is the body of Christ and it has no authority to organize itself under the IRS – arguably, the most evil, miscreant organization on earth.

BE IT KNOWN, *the church has more fear of the IRS than it does God!*

The church owes its existence to the resurrected Christ sitting at the right hand of God. It is the living corpus of Christ on earth. A "church" 501 c 3 religious organization owes its existence to the State . . . and, as soon as it is birthed, it is still born. All corporations are dead, fictional entities.

"A corporation derives its existence and all of its powers from the State and, therefore, has only such powers as the State has conferred upon it. Power is used here to mean the legal capacity to execute and fulfill the objects and purposes for which the corporation was created, and the source of this power is the charter and the statute under which the corporation was organized." Len Young Smith and G. Gale Roberson, Smith and Roberson's Business Law, West Publishing Company, 1966, page 796.

One of the BIG problems with young pastors is that they have no training in law. Consequently, they operate on presumption and babel promoted by the media and state *liaryers*. These pastors are so inept at law, they even seek counsel from British Rothschild Bar attorneys for legal advice – a profession Jesus Christ condemned.

Despite what people think, there is no law requiring churches to incorporate! None! Zero! Zilch!

Christians act presumptuously when they think that Congress can legislate what churches can and cannot do. All law must be written or it is not law! And, the Constitution is the supreme law of the land. And, the supreme law in the First Amendment forbids, proscribes, blocks, censors, impedes, nullifies, and restricts Congress from enacting any regulation to govern a church and how it is to be organized.

Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment[1] of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.

The Internal revenue code does mandate certain charities organize under 501 c 3, but churches are **NOT** charities required to file.

All churches are automatically exempt from the requirement to organize under 501c3 codes.

The Internal Revenue states that,

"Churches and religious organizations are generally exempt from income tax" (IRS Publication 1828-revised 2015).

"The following organizations will be considered tax exempt under section 501(c)(3) even if they do not file Form 1023: (a) churches, their

integrated auxiliaries, and conventions or associations of churches,..."[2]

"Some organizations are not required to file form 1023. These include: Churches, interchurch organizations of local units of a church, conventions or association of a church, such as a men's or women's organization, religious school, mission society, or youth group."[3]

These organizations are exempt automatically if they meet the requirements of section 501(c)(3). However, if the organization wants to establish its exemption with the Internal Revenue Service and receive a ruling or determination letter recognizing its exempt status, it should file Form 1023 with the key District Director."[4]

The publication says, "**These organizations are exempt automatically if they meet the requirements of section 501(c)(3)**". The publication seems to indicate that there is a requirement to be automatically exempt . . . but the "requirements" is in reference to "organizations" and **NOT CHURCHES**. The same section of 557 states,

*"If **Organizations** that have a statutory requirement to apply for recognition do not comply with the requirements relating to exemption applications, deductions for charitable contributions will not be allowed for any gifts or bequests made to those organizations."[5]*

For those organizations that do apply for a 501 c 3 status, the IRS has certain rules to be "religiously exempt." **But, they do NOT apply to free churches!!** These rules that apply to 501 c 3s are as follows:

*"In order to determine whether recognition of exemption should appropriately be extended to an organization seeking to meet the religious purposes test of section 501(c)(3), the Internal Revenue Service maintains two basic guidelines: 1) That the particular religious beliefs of the organization are truly and sincerely held, and 2) That the **practices and rituals associated with the organization's religious belief or creed are not illegal or contrary to clearly defined public policy.**"[6]*

Note the Ten Commandments and the Gospel of Christ are totally "contrary to clearly defined public policy."

On the same page of that publication we see phrases like,

"If you are organized to operate a home for the aged, the following information must be submitted:" Or if you are a scientific organization, "You must show..." etc.

But for religious organization there are only 'two basic guidelines' which are merely maintained by the Internal Revenue Service. These mere guidelines are maintained only to determine whether recognition of exemption should appropriately be extended to a non-church organization seeking to meet the religious purposes test.

The IRS does not specifically define the term "church." Fundamental law does NOT permitted congress to define a church. The IRS has no Constitutional authority to define, limit, regulate, promote, restrain, restrict or control any aspect of church life including but not limited to demanding the church treasurer keep individual giving records!!

According to the government website, churches are not God's churches preaching the gospel, but a religious organization promoting charity:

"Organizations described in section 501(c)(3) are commonly referred to as charitable organizations" (IRS/gov).

*"But when you give to the needy, **do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing** (a metaphor for privacy), so that your giving may be in secret. And your Father who sees in secret will reward you" (Matthew 6:3-4 ESV).*

Oh, that Americans understood the limitations of Congress and would stop treating them like lawmakers for themselves or their churches. Congress has no authority over you . . . unless you are in contract with the Gov. Congress has no authority over a church unless the church representative signs a contract with the IRS.

The Authority exercised in Congress' capacity as government for federal territories and as applies to operation of United States Government **does not extend** to the several States and the population at large.

"All Offices attached to the seat of government shall be exercised in the District of Columbia, and not elsewhere, except as otherwise expressly provided by law." 4 U.S.C § 3, 7 72 ,6 72.

"No constitutional right exists under the Ninth Amendment, or to any other provision of the Constitution of the United States, 'to trust the Federal Government and to rely on the integrity of its pronouncements.'" MAPCO, Inc. v Carter (1978, Em Ct App)573 F2d 1268, cert den 437 us 904, 57 L Ed 2d 1134, 98 S Ct 3090.

Psalm 118:8-9 It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man. It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in princes.

National motto: "In God we trust."

The only duty we have is to resist despotism, and “to throw off” constituent regimes and replace them with new guards that will protect our substantial rights and zealously act to prevent the derogation of our rights. (See the Declaration of Independence.

“[T]he general government is not to be charged with the whole power of making and administering laws: its jurisdiction is limited to certain enumerated objects, which concern all the members of the republic, but which are not to be attained by the separate provisions of any.” – James Madison, Federalist 14, 1787

“It will not be denied that power is of an encroaching nature and that it ought to be effectually restrained from passing the limits assigned to it.” – James Madison, Federalist 48, 1788

“I own I am not a friend to a very energetic government. It is always oppressive.” – Thomas Jefferson, Letter to James Madison, 1787

“The propriety of a law, in a constitutional light, must always be determined by the nature of the powers upon which it is founded.” – Alexander Hamilton, Federalist 33, 1788

The Ninth Amendment reads:

“The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others held by the people.”^[5] This shows the federal government doesn’t have the ability to infringe upon the rights of the people in any circumstance, even if the rights aren’t explicitly protected by the Constitution.

The Tenth Amendment states:

“The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people.”^[6] This limits the authority of the United States government to those powers listed in the Constitution and concedes the premise that individual States retain the powers not granted to the national government but that are also not barred to the States by the Constitution. Also, it grants that the people themselves retain power under this system of government as well. These are key points of the concept of limited government established by the Constitution in the United States because they overtly state the power of the federal government is not unlimited. (Wiki)

Authority exercised in Congress' capacity as government for federal territories and as applies to operation of United States Government **does not extend** to the several States and the population at large -.

"The Congress shall have Power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations respecting the Territory or other Property belonging to the United States . . ." Article IV § 3.2

The Federalist No. 78, at 524-5 (A. Hamilton).^[31] The United States Supreme Court is in accord:

"The Constitution sought to divide the delegated powers of the new Federal Government into three defined categories, Legislative, Executive, and Judicial, to assure, as nearly as possible, that each Branch of government would confine itself to its assigned responsibility. The hydraulic pressure inherent within each of the separate Branches to exceed the outer limits of its power, even to accomplish desirable objectives, must be resisted." Quoted in Finck v. City of Tea, 443 NW 2d 632 - SD: Supreme Court 1989.

The laws of Congress ONLY apply to Washington D.C. and federal territories.

Rule 54(c) application of terms, Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure:

"Act of Congress" includes any act of Congress locally applicable to and in force in the District of Columbia, in Puerto Rico, in a territory or in an insular possession.

"State" includes District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, territory and insular possession.

The criminal code, is evidence of law applicable only in territories and possessions of the United States. For all practical purposes other than as sections of the Code might apply to officers and employees of the United States, and admiralty and maritime jurisdiction of the United States, the Code is **municipal law in territories and insular possessions of the United States.**

A "Code" is not a Law," (In Re Self v Rhay Wn 2d 261), in point of fact in Law,).

"The Common Law is the real law, the Supreme Law of the land. The codes, rules, regulations, policy and statutes are "not the law." (Self v. Rhay, 61 Wn 2d 261), They are the law of government for internal regulation, not the law of man, in his separate but equal station and natural state, a sovereign foreign with respect to government generally.).

"The general rule is that an unconstitutional statute, though having the form and name of law, is in reality no law, but is wholly void, and ineffective for any purpose; since unconstitutionality dates from the time of its enactment, and not merely from the date of the decision so branding it."

"It (the legislature or statutory laws) may not violate constitutional prohibits or guarantees OR AUTHORIZE OTHERS TO DO SO."

Lockard v. Los Angeles 33 Cal2d 553; Cert den 337 US 939.

U.S. Const., Art. VI, cl. 2; *Maryland v Louisiana*, 451 US 725, 746; 101 S Ct 2114; 68 L Ed 2d 576 (1981) reveals that , "Where a state statute conflicts with, or frustrates, federal law, the former must give way."

"If there should happen to be an irreconcilable variance between the two Constitution is to be preferred to the statute." (A. Hamilton, *Federalist Papers* #78 See also *Warning V. The Mayor of Savannah*, 60 Georgia, P.93; *First Trust Co. v. Smith*, 277 SW 762. *Marbury v. Madison*, 2 L Ed 60; and Am.Juris. 2d Constitutional Law section 177-178)

Weimer v Bunbury, 30 Mich 291; 1874 Mich. LEXIS 168 (1874) reveals that "The Bill of Rights in the American Constitution has not been drafted for the introduction of new law, but to secure old [already existing] principles against abrogation or violation."

Every man is independent of all laws, except those prescribed by nature. He is not bound by any institutions formed by his fellow man without his consent. Mugler v. Kansas 123 U.S. 623, 659-60.

"Insofar as a statute runs counter to the fundamental law of the land, (constitution) it is superseded thereby." (16 Am Jur 2d 177, Late Am Jur 2d. 256)

"...all laws which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void' (*Marbury v Madison*, 5 US 1803 (2 Cranch) 137, 174, 170).

"All laws, rules and practices which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void." *Marbury v. Madison*, 5th US (2 Cranch) 137, 180 .

The incompetence of government officials in being able to define "the church" accurately is nothing short of phenomenal.

The IRS stupidity is exposed by including mosques and synagogues in their definition of the term "church" in the code:

"The term church is found, but not specifically defined, in the Internal Revenue Code (IRC). The term is not used by all faiths; however, in an attempt to make this publication easy to read, we use it in its generic sense as a place of worship including, for example, mosques and synagogues" (Publication 1828).

The IRS, which has no qualifications to define a church, describes the "attributes of a church" this way:

Consider this maxim of law: "He who accepts the benefit must also bear the burden," meaning if one accepts any benefit of the incorporated Church one is liable for the debts and acts of the church leadership. If the Church is sued and a cash settlement is ordered by the court, there is virtually no limit as to how far the court can extend its power to collect from the members, even if they are not the officers or perpetrators of the civil crime.

One of the big disadvantages of a 501 c 3 religious "charity" organization is that it cannot take Bible in hand to rebuke government officials: "Section 501(c)(3) organizations are restricted in how much political and legislative (*lobbying*) activities they may conduct." (IRS / gov). Such a restriction eliminates the ministry of Moses, Samson, David, Solomon, Isaiah, Hosea, Malachi, John the Baptist, Jesus, Paul and John.

95. Seduction Through Idols

I John 5:21

2 Kings 21:9, 11 "Manasseh seduced them to do more evil than did the nations whom the LORD destroyed before the children of Israel and hath made Judah also to sin with his idols."

I John 5:21 Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

PART I – FACT OF IDOLATRY

If we could charge Americans with one sin above all others, it would be the sin of idolatry.

Look at the evidence. So many Americans today are sporting tattoos, an act of idolatry forbidden by God's Word (Leviticus 19:28). Prohibition against carving a tattoo into your body is case law under the First Commandment:

Exodus 20:3 "Thou shall have no gods before me"

Leviticus 19:28 Ye shall not make any cuttings in your flesh for the dead, nor print any marks upon you: I am the LORD .

When was the last time you heard a statesman exhort people to pursue the LORD God and to obey His commandments?

In the name of freedom, the State encourages citizens to pursue their wants, lusts, ambitions, desires, wishes, talents, goals, personal morals, money, and careers, but never the LORD God. Isn't this the heart of idolatry?

Idolatry is no small matter.

The Shema presents us with one God and one law order.

Part One: Deuteronomy 6:4-5 "Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD: And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."

Part Two: Deuteronomy 10:12-13 "And now, Israel, what doth the LORD thy God require of thee, but to fear the LORD thy God, to walk in all his ways, and to love him, and to serve the LORD thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul; To keep the commandments of the LORD, and his statutes, which I command thee this day for thy good"?

Idolatry is the first sin banned in the ten commandments.

Therefore, it behooves us to understand it.

"What is idolatry and why is it so emphatically condemned"?

"How can a civil ruler seduce a nation by idols"?

"Why is polytheism and omnism so detrimental to a society"?

Webster defines idolatry as "the worship of idols or excessive devotion to, or reverence for some person or thing." An idol is anything that replaces the one, true God. The most prevalent form of idolatry in Bible times was the worship of images that were thought to represent various pagan deities. The most prevalent form of idolatry in our day comes in the form of intellectual movements that seek to usurp devotion to the Lord Jesus Christ.

Government officials that introduce idolatry into a nation.

In order to unite a nation, the state that promotes **omnism**, the belief in all religions; and, **polytheism**, the belief in many Gods; **pro-nomianism**, the belief that more laws can save society; and, **atheism**, the religious belief that the individual is his own god.

In our text above, **King Manasseh** seduced the nation into idolatry by his idols.

Why were the people so easily seduced? Why didn't they resist? Calvin says it well:

"Every one of us is, even from his mother's womb, a master craftsman of

idols" (John Calvin).

PART II - MARKS OF IDOLATRY

Idolaters deny there is only one true god.

The First Commandment proclaims the paramount truth that there is one God: "Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God is one."

The First Commandment anchors all Theology on the maxim that there is one, absolute infinite, personal God and no other — the God of the Bible, the God of Creation, the God of Israel, and the God of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Idolaters are liberal in that they are too broad minded to limit their theology to an absolute.

Idolaters seek to extinguish the fear of god in the nation as a whole.

The First Commandment was given to spawn the "fear of God" and to prompt obedience.

*"And now, Israel, what doth the LORD thy God **require** of thee, **but to fear the LORD thy God, to walk in all his ways . . .**"*

To promote the fear of the living God is the boilerplate of common sense; and to desert the fear of God is to abandon any sense of reality. When men embrace humanism, Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, or atheism, they embrace a lie and some form of deception.

For this reason the Shema became the foundational law for all Israel . . . and all men. The fear of God is the cornerstone of a civil, just society. When men abandon the fear of God, they invite the gods of chaos to rule the nation.

Idolaters reject the principle that there is one God and one law order.

If the First Commandment means anything, it means there is one Lawgiver with one absolute law-order (James 4:12).

The first principle of the Shema is that there is one God with one law applicable to all men and all of man's institutions.

Christianity does not recognize any other god or religion or its law order as valid because the First Commandment condemns polytheism, religious pluralism, omnism, and legal positivism.

Omnism is a belief that all religions are valuable even equal, whereas **Polytheism** is belief in many gods. **Both share the same defects.**

Polytheism is its own disaster. It promotes double mindedness, double standards, double vision, double talk, double speak, and double think where a

“double minded man is unstable in all his ways” (James 1:6-8). Polytheism acts like a seductress drawing a man away from his lawful wife to commit adultery with a harem of Jezebels.

The premise of polytheism is that we live in a multiple universe with multiple equal gods, multiple law orders, multiple personalities, multiple authorities, multiple standards, multiple belief systems, multiple values, multiple judicial systems, and multiple lords.

More specifically, since gods are the source of law, polytheism / omnism spawns legal pluralism and multiculturalism—hence, a divided nation.

In the pluralistic world of idolaters there is a law for the Buddhist, a law for the Muslim, a law for the Hindu, a law for the Christian, and a law for the secular man.

Polytheists will not tolerate any claim by any group that their law represents absolute truth. To the idolater, all matters are relative. Damn the narrow-minded man that believes in absolute truth by an absolute God with one, absolute law for all men and all of their institutions.

Secular atheism is not the answer because atheism has its own religious values and contradictory codes of conduct which God-fearing men cannot accept. In secularism, women have a right, even a duty, to kill an unwanted baby. In Christian law, the taking of an innocent life is murder.

In omnism, absolute law, absolute truth, and an absolute God are denied.

In the multi-universe of idolaters the only law is positive law. All law is pragmatic and imperialistic . . . for the good of the “State,” subject to change as necessity demands.

“Legal positivism is the legal philosophy which argues that any and all laws are nothing more and nothing less than simply the expression of the will of whatever authority created them. Thus, no laws can be regarded as expressions of higher morality or higher principles to which people can appeal when they disagree with the laws. It is a view that law is a social construct. The creation of laws is simply an exercise in brute force and an expression of power over the people to get them to conform to the will of the majority. Therefore, from a positivist perspective, it can be said that “legal rules or laws are valid not because they are rooted in moral or natural law, but because they are enacted by legitimate authority and are accepted by the society as such” (Law Teacher.net, adapted).

Idolaters advocate self-law encouraging people to make their own choice as their own god.

"Ye shall not do after all the things that we do here this day, every man whatsoever is right in his own eyes" (Deuteronomy 12:8).

In the world of the idolater, each man must find his own way; diversity is a strength, not a weakness to overcome. Liberalism rules the day when every man does what is right in his own eyes. Idolaters make up their own religion, their own values, and their own morals. In King Manasseh's day, people were singing,

"I did it my way" (Isaiah 53:6).

Frank Sinatra:

*"And now the end is here
And so I face that final curtain
My friend I'll make it clear
I'll state my case, of which I'm certain
I've lived a life that's full
I traveled each and every highway
And more, much more
I did it, I did it my way"*

In the multi-universe of idolaters there are no absolutes. Every man is his own law with his own moral system.

*Ephesians 5:5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, **who is an idolater**, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.*

Because there is no ultimate or divine law-order in the mind of idolaters, he must create his own law system and determine his own values and make his own choices. Isn't this what is being taught in public schools today?

In omnism, each man, therefore, is immune to the beliefs and values of other men. Attempts to convert others are vigorously disparaged. Memorials to the Ten Commandment cannot be tolerated because such icons claim to be superior to other religious systems. Therefore, the tolerant polytheist becomes *vigorously intolerant* when men that fear God announce the absoluteness of God and His law to which all men are accountable. Think of John the Baptist:

Mark 6:17-18 "Whom John beheaded . . . For John had been saying to Herod, "It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife."

Because the fundamental premise of idolaters is that there is no absolute no absolute God with an absolute law. We live in a multi-universe where very man is his own law order.

Speaking to Vogue (2017), Oprah Winfrey, talk show host, was asked what being in a long term relationship, but not ever getting married, taught her about women in our society:

“Live life on your own terms,” she responded.

Idolaters deny the necessity for obedience to God’s law.

The First Commandment and its case law announce one God with one law demanding unwavering, unchanging, unqualified obedience:

“Ye shall walk after the LORD your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him” (Deuteronomy 13:4).

Since we are a product of the Creator God, there is not one aspect of our lives that is not subject to His law.

In promoting polytheism and omnism, idolaters discouraged devotion and loyalty to the true God and His statutes.

Idolaters seek to liberalize the educational system.

Education regarding God’s law-order is inseparable from obedience. A person must know the law to obey the law. For this reason parents were encourage to teach the law to their Hebrew children during their down sittings and uprisings.

Deuteronomy 6:6-7 And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.

What devout Israelite would send his kids to be educated by the Phoenicians? But, Christians under the influence of idolatrous omnistic propaganda will send their children to be educated by communists promoting idolatry in the public school system.

The Biblical world view holds there is one God with one absolute law requiring unwavering obedience. Anything other than Christian education is apostasy!! (2 Thessalonians 2:3-5; Hebrews 3:12, Matthew 13:21; Mark 4:17)

Sending Christian children to be educated in polytheistic, pluralistic, humanistic public schools is clearly idolatrous because it subjects the mind of children to the multi-universe of polytheists with multiple law orders, multiple personalities, multiple authorities, multiple standards, multiple belief systems, multiple values, multiple sex partners, multiple wives, multiple sexual identities, multiple lifestyles, and multiple lords.

Children educated in public schools graduate thoroughly brainwashed by the pluralistic, feministic, Sodomite statist's agenda of idolatrous liberals.

The Hebrews, in order to be faithful to God, developed *the practice of the Tephillin*, the binding of the law on the forehead and cords of blue in their clothing.

“And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes” (Deuteronomy 6:8).

In **the Christian world view**, the home, family, education, work, and civil duty must be viewed by, built on, and lived under God's law-order . . . or it is not a Christian home!

Idolaters deny grace; that is, that God's law-order was a product of His love for the good of mankind.

The First Commandment not only proclaimed His Sovereignty (Lord), it announced His grace. Because it was given by the Savior-God who brought them out of Egypt, the law is a product of His love (Exodus 20:1-2). The law was holy and good for the nation.

*Exodus 20:2-3 I am **the LORD thy God** (Act of Sovereignty), which have **brought thee out of the land of Egypt**, out of the house of bondage (Act of Salvation). Thou shalt have no other gods before me.*

*Deuteronomy 6:24 And the LORD commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear the LORD our God, **for our good always**, that he might preserve us alive, as it is at this day.*

In grace, God gave His people His law. Likewise, He provided grace to keep the law – not to be saved, but to produce a godly civil order in society.

Law cannot regenerate society, but it can purge out evil men from among men.

Salvation is always by grace!

Multiplying laws does not, cannot, and will not produce man's utopia. Judaism, the multiplying of laws by legislatures, robs people of freedom and makes them slaves to the ruling party.

The opposite of law is not grace, but lawlessness. The opposite of grace is not law, but permissiveness.

God saves men by grace for justification (Romans 5:1; Ephesians 2:8-10) and provides grace to keep His law for sanctification (Romans 8:4). Moreover, the grateful response of men impacted by saving grace is the keeping of the law (Romans 13:8; 1 John 5:1-3; Deuteronomy 6:24).

Omnists hold there are many roads to God and many ways to salvation. But, the Holy Scriptures teach us there is only one way to God. Jesus Christ is “the way, the truth, and the life, no man comes unto the father” except through Him (John 14:6). And, this is the offense of the cross as the gospel proclaims there is no forgiveness apart from the work and shed blood of the Son (Ephesians 1:7). All other religious claims are false.

Theologically, there are **not** two gospels **nor** are there two systems of law. There is one absolute God with one absolute law; and, one gospel offering salvation to those who embrace the Son. There was and is only one way to salvation, and that is faith in the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ (1 Corinthians 15: 1-12).

Idolaters deny the judgment of God upon their unfaithfulness.

The First Commandment instructs men about the jealousy of the LORD (Exodus 20:5).

Jealousy is a virtue of God. *It is a praiseworthy zeal to preserve and protect that which is precious.* His jealousy prevents apostasy. It is grounded in justice and becomes active when His people are seduced by interlopers. The fire of jealous ignites when men depart from Him in search of paramours.

There is a day “when God shall **judge** the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel” (Romans 2:16).

SEDUCTION BY IDOLS IN AMERICA

It is the State that promotes idolatry to a nation because the government seeks to unite all men and all religions under its authority; that is, the State promotes omnism and polytheism in order to secure devotion by all citizens.

The United States by inviting Muslims to this country has become more and more omnistic, and more and more removed from the precepts of Christianity. In fact, it has gone out of its way to be hostile to Christianity in order to gain the approval of Muslims, Sodomites, Hindus, Chinese, Africans, et al. *Congress-male-fems-trans* stumble all over each other to see who can be them most inclusive.

Idols in America come in the form of an *intellectual movement* and the icons of propaganda that perpetuate a political agenda.

*Colossians 2:8 "Beware lest any man spoil you through **philosophy and vain deceit** (intellectual movements), after the tradition of men (mystical doctrines, beliefs, theories, teachings, movements), after the rudiments (specious intellectual systems) of the world (political cosmos), and not after Christ (the truth)."*

It is the State that introduces idolatry to the nation. Almost every president has sought to seduce a nation through his idols by revolution . . . change . . . and a radical idealistic movement toward the left. Few ever move toward the truth of Christianity and its limited reasonable, moral, laws.

Whenever a civil leader seeks to extinguish the fear of God and obedience to His Word, he or she acts treasonously to the Creator. Whenever a civil ruler introduces a bill that promotes a political agenda that opposes Biblical values, he or she acts seductively.

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by removing monuments dedicated to the Ten Commandments?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by removing monuments dedicated to Confederate heroes?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols in psychological temples on the altar of self-esteem?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by rewriting history into how the Politically Correct Movement (Zionists) wants us to think about history?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by redefining marriage to include Sodomites, lesbians, and transvestites?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by science and its worship of chaos, masks, vax-jabs, and evolution?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by twisting women's rights into autonomous authority under color of law to murder an unborn baby? Manasseh sacrificed his children by fire to the god Moloch; Americans sacrifice unborn children under the banner of Women's health "rights"? But, at the same time deny a person has a right to reject untested, experimental vax-jabs. What hypocrisy!

Since when did people's bodies become the property of the State?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols encouraging women to abandon the home and to sacrifice themselves to careers? Millions of American are working 60-80 hours a week to please the god of success?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by promoting the New World Order, internationalism, radical immigration, the cashless society, and statism?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by protecting pornography, prostitution, homosexual sex, lesbian sex, gender identify, fornication, adultery, orgies, and swinger parties?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols of money, commercialism, social justice, taxes, redistribution of wealth, and materialism?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by skipping church on Sundays to attend colossal cult centers to worship a pantheon of god athletes?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by protecting the evil acts of Zionists and their antichrist agenda?

Are not civil rulers seducing the nation to sin with idols by promoting and protecting Muslims and promoting the false religion of Islam?

In America, more sins are committed in the name of freedom and democracy than any other cause.

In summary, idolaters commit spiritual adultery by seducing the nation to depart from the Lord and to follow the polytheistic practices of diverse religions.

Idolaters are open to every idea, philosophy, god, religion, belief system, legal positivism, and religious practice. "Exclusion" is not a word in their vocabulary. Idolaters are totally intolerant of Christians who insist there was one God, one law-order, and one way to salvation . . . and, the liberal "church" is drowning in a sea of inclusivity..

Liberals have no absolutes except "there are no absolutes" because they are not committed to the one, true, absolute God and His absolute law. Idolaters lead people into religious pluralism (idols), polytheism (idols), omnism (idols), legal pluralism (idols), and multiculturalism (idols) demoralizing the nation plunging it into an era of shame and debauchery.

Furthermore, Christians need to be alert and recognize how American leaders are seducing America to sin with their idols of freedom and democracy and political change.

96. A Message from Reverend Cows

Colossians 2:8

"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ."

World Ideologies as Explained by Reference to Cows

Pure Socialism

You have two cows. The government takes them and puts them in a barn with everyone else's cows. You have to take care of all the cows. The government gives you all the milk you need.

Bureaucratic Socialism

Your cows are cared for by ex-chicken farmers. You have to take care of the chickens the government took from the chicken farmers. The government gives you as much milk and eggs as the regulations say you should need.

Fascism

You have two cows. The government takes both, hires you to take care of them, and sells you the milk.

Nazism

You have two cows. The government shoots one for being of insufficient genetic purity. Several Bureaucrats oversee your operations with the surviving cow. They sell all of the milk, but you are permitted to retain a portion of the profit. Later, the government takes the remaining cow and shoots you for having had a cow of insufficient genetic purity.

Pharaohism

The Gods have two cows, both given into your care. You must feed and milk them. At regular intervals the Priests take the milk to the Temple. The milk not used by the Gods is later shared with you. If you don't give the Priests a problem they may let you into the Afterlife.

Caesarism

Caesar, as The State, has granted you two cows. You must feed and milk them. The Caesar's soldiers sometimes take the milk to Rome. If you don't give them a problem they don't burn your farm.

Feudalism

You have two cows on the Manor's land. The Lord takes as much of the milk as he wants. Also your wife and daughters when it suits him. If you don't give the Sheriff a problem he won't burn your cottage.

Pure Communism

You have two cows. Your neighbors help you take care of them, and you all share the milk.

Real World Communism

You share two cows with your neighbors. You and your neighbors bicker about who has the most “ability” and who has the most “need.” Meanwhile, no one works, no one gets any milk, and the cows die of starvation.

Russian Communism

You have two cows. You have to take care of them, but the government takes all the milk. You steal back as much milk as you can and sell it on the black market.

Russian Free Market Economy

You have two cows. You have to take care of them, but the Mafia takes all the milk. You steal back as much milk as you can and sell it on the “free” market.

Cambodian Communism

You have two cows. The government takes both and shoots you. No one ever sees the cows or the milk again.

Militarism

You have two cows. The government takes both and drafts you.

Totalitarianism

You have two cows. The government takes them and denies they ever existed. Milk is banned. No one ever sees you again.

Authoritarianism

The State has two cows and a person to tend them. The State decides what to do with the cows, the milk and the person.

Technocracy

You have registered two cows. Two guys in white lab coats inspect them. Later, lab tests show you have a genetic defect. You are terminated and someone else is given the cows.

Pure Democracy: Two wolves and a cow voting on what to have for lunch.

Republic: Two wolves and a cow voting on what to have for lunch, except the cow is allowed to arm himself with an AR-15 and a bazooka to prevent the wolves from treading on his rights.

A Neighborhood Democracy

You have two cows. Your neighbors decide who gets the milk.

Representative Democracy

You have two cows. Your neighbors pick someone to tell you who gets the milk.

British Democracy

You have two cows. You feed them the remains of other cows and they go mad. The government doesn't do anything.

Texas Democracy

You have two hundred thousand head of cattle. One of them gets Mad Cow. You sue Oprah.

Bureaucratic Democracy

You have two cows. At first the government regulates what you can feed them and when you can milk them. Then it pays you not to milk them. Then it takes both, loses one in the system and milks the other. It pours the milk down the drain. You are then required to fill out forms accounting for the missing cows. Then they fine you for clogging the drain.

Tyrannical Democracy:

You can never own your farm. The wolf pack decides how much to charge the farmer for the privilege to pasture cows on his farm. The wolf pack advertises on the wolf channel that this is freedom, that you live in the freest country in the world, and you didn't build that farm by yourself. Therefore, you must pledge allegiance to UNITED WOLF STATES OF AMERICA.

Pure Capitalism

You have two cows. You sell one and buy a bull.

American Capitalism

You don't have any cows. The bank will not lend you money to buy cows, because you don't have any cows to put up as collateral.

Enron Capitalism

You have two cows. You sell three of them to your publicly listed company, using letters of credit opened by your brother-in-law at the bank. He then executes a debt/equity swap with an associated general offer so that you get all four cows back, with a tax exemption for five cows. The milk rights of the six cows are transferred via an intermediary to a Cayman Island company secretly owned by your CFO who sells the rights to all seven cows back to your listed company. The annual report says the company owns eight cows, with an option on six more.

Globalism

You find someone in a Third World Country who has two cows. You pay him a few cents a day to milk them. You ship the milk to the First World and sell it at a huge profit.

Environmentalism

You own a parcel of rural land and put two cows on it. You are immediately cited by the zoning enforcement division of the County's Community Development Board.

In short order several state and national environmental groups file actions against you. Your water rights are questioned. Your solid waste plan is questioned. Your sanity is questioned. In a vain attempt to avoid a trial, you pay to have an Environmental Impact Study done to determine the impact of the cows on your neighbors. During the Public Comment phase you learn that none of them want a smelly dairy in their backyards ¢ and that one of them, anonymously, turned you in to Zoning Enforcement. You are dragged into court anyway, and found guilty of a Code Violation. You have 30 days to come into "compliance" or lose your property. Every time you return to court to prove you are compliant, Community Development has changed the code! All the while you are investigated by scores of bureaucrats from all levels of government. Your business hemorrhages red ink as the toll of fees, fines, court and legal costs (and required bribes) mounts. You have to move your cows to increasingly more remote locations as all the private land available for grazing in your area is being quietly bought up by non-governmental organizations and made into "nature preserves." Finally, you move your cows onto public lands. The government, misled by biased scientific studies conducted by scientists on the payrolls of environmental and multinational organizations, becomes concerned about erosion and bans you from grazing your cows on public land (which you, as a citizen, "own").

Meanwhile, the Animal Rights movement gets legislation passed banning you from milking or killing your cows. Soon, to be in accordance with international treaties, the government is forced to kill one of the cows to reduce overall greenhouse gas emissions.

While they are at it, they confiscate any motor vehicle older than five years, for the same reason. Your original rural property is then condemned under eminent domain and made into a corridor for high tension power lines from the new "clean" nuclear power plant in the next state. Your remaining cow is taken by federal agents in SWAT gear in the dead of night and sent to a regional holding facility from which it is sold to some guy in a Third World Country who will be paid a few cents a day to milk it.

You may buy milk at the market, in recyclable containers, but only if show your national ID card which includes encoded information on how much milk you have already purchased in particular time period. If your transaction is deemed unusual by an artificially intelligent computer program it will be flagged for human attention. You may be laundering milk! All the while, you will be required to continue to pay taxes to support the public lands you are not permitted to use, to pay for the research used to deny you the use of that land, and to support the United Nations organization which oversees all public lands (which will have been turned into UN bio-spheres by then).

Political Correctness

You are associated with (the concept of “ownership” is a symbol of the phallogocentric, war mongering, intolerant past) two differently – aged (but no less valuable to society) bovines of non-specified gender. You do not milk them for to do so would violate their rights as a species. You wear all man-made materials, as you would never consider harming these beautiful creatures of Gaia. You have no clue where milk or hamburgers come from.

Surrealism

You have two giraffes. The government requires you to take harmonica lessons.

Protectionism

You have two cows. Foreigners also have cows. You believe that those foreigners are milking their cows and selling their milk here for less than you can. You get the government to pass levies and tariffs against foreign milk. You also get the government to compensate you for your loss to foreign milk producers. Soon the government is paying you not to milk your cows, while milk produced off shore sells at an inflated price. You are paid to do nothing while poor children go without milk.

Libertarianism

It's none of your damned business how many cows I've got or what I do with 'em!

Pure Anarchy

You have two cows. Either you sell the milk at a fair price or your neighbors try to take the cows and kill you.

Russian Anarchy

Your cows are shot in the street. You are shot in Mexico.

American Anarchy

The closest you ever got to a cow was your black leather jacket with the circle A on the back. You wear ripped up jeans and have a stud through your tongue. You think if you skate real rad maybe you can smash the State.

Anarcho-Syndicalism

You have two cows. You want more control over the price of milk and less government interference in your dairy operations. You and your buddies stage a General Strike. Milk trucks are parked, blocking important highways and access to key buildings and facilities. It soon spreads to other industries, shutting down the nation. Nobody get any milk until your demands are met.

Criminal Syndicalism

You don't own any cows, but you know who does. You and some guys with names like "Fingers," "Lefty" and "Louie" hide shotguns under your overcoats and go have a few "words" with the guys with the cows. After a bomb mysteriously goes off in a barn you have control of all the milk on the Lower East Side.

Illuminism

A Secret Cabal has two cows. One is sacrificed in a Grove in California. The other tells the President what to do.

Bruce Durnism

You only have one cow, and you're milking the bit for all its worth.

Nancy Pelosi Distributive Democracy

It is just terrible that you have rain on your farm and that a river runs through it to water your cow. You should feel very guilty your cows are fat. Therefore, you must pay a global warming tax so it will rain in the Sahara, Mojavi, Kalahari, Akatacama, and Gobi Deserts . . . as long as no Republicans live there.

Dr. Reverend Cows

97. The Porn War

1 Peter 2:11

"Dear friends, I urge you, as foreigners and exiles, to abstain from sinful desires, which wage war against your soul."

Sex is a gift from God, but it is not a spectator sport.

Porn is not about sex, but lust, shock, and money.

Pornography is for losers – those who have given up on God . . . themselves . . . and responsibility.

In the past pornography was limited to magazine and back alley theaters. Now eye-popping explicit sex is shipped free by the internet into every home in America. There are over 4.2 million pornographic websites.

Only an iron-will and a deep, deep love of Jesus and decency can escape the chains and fetters of this industry.

It is a well-known fact that Jews produced pornography in the 1930s to demoralize "Christian" Germany, to promote Bolshevik communism in Europe, and to turn Berlin into the Red Whore of Babylon.

“Secular Jews have played (and still continue to play) a disproportionate role throughout the adult film industry in America. Jewish involvement in pornography has a long history in the United States, as Jews have helped to transform a fringe subculture into what has become a primary constituent of Americana. These are the ‘true blue Jews’.” (Nathan Abrams).

“Jewish involvement in the X-rated industry can be seen as a proverbial two fingers to the entire WASP establishment in America. Some porn stars viewed themselves as frontline fighters in the spiritual battle between Christian America and secular humanism. According to Ford, Jewish X-rated actors often brag about their ‘joy in being anarchic, sexual gadflies to the puritanical beast’. Jewish involvement in porn, by this argument, is the result of an atavistic hatred of Christian authority: they are trying to weaken the dominant culture in America by moral subversion.” (Nathan Abrams).

Because Hitler and the Nazis banned porn and dismantled communism in Berlin, international Jewry declared war on Germany crushing the nation by turning the nations against the German state. WWII was the tragic result, and Palestine was the booty (no pun intended).

Pornography is not about free speech, but about money . . . lust . . . and shock.

We believe in free speech! But, there is a limit to free speech. You cannot yell “fire” in a public theater.

Likewise, we believe in art, but pornography is not art . . . nor are performers "stars." Pornography is obscene because it exploits sex for money . . . for control . . . for the demoralization of America.

Obscenity has never been protected speech. Pornographers deserve punishment, not protection. The government protect pornography because it is a 12 billion dollar a year industry which is taxed. When the government realized it could make money off the industry, it relaxed its enforcement with catastrophic results for every man, woman, and child in America.

The Truth About Pornography

Do not be foolish, but understand what the will of the Lord is (Ephesians 5:17)

-There is no romance or love in pornography.

-Porn is "of the flesh," of "this world," and "of Satan." It has one message: there is no God and no evil. Sex is good; all kinds of sex acts any place at any time before anyone is good.

-The Christian has to ask, "How can I take pleasure in that which God condemns (1 Corinthians 6:9-10)?"

-Ironically, watching porn is related to problems with arousal, sexual performance, confidence, and erectile dysfunction (Voon, V., et al. (2014). Neural Correlates of Sexual Cue Reactivity in Individuals with and without Compulsive Sexual Behaviors, PLUS ONE, 9(7), e102419. doi:10.1371/journal.pone.0102419).

-Watching porn creates a dirty conscience which wars against the soul (1 Peter 2:11). No Christian can watch pornography without guilt, self-condemnation,

-Porn is lie about women, sex, and love.

"Sex-packed porn films featuring freshly-dyed blondes whose evocative eyes say "I want you" are quite possibly one of the greatest deceptions of all time. Trust me, I know. I did it all the time and I did it for the lust of power and the love of money." (CBN, Shelly Lubben, former porn actress)

-Porn is addictive, and it rewires the brain making it less active and even dysfunctional. Studies reveal that those who watch a great deal of porn actually (The Brain on Porn. JAMA Psychiatry, 71(7), 827-834.)

-Obscenity is filled with perverse sex, Sodomy, and Lesbianism.

-Porn is a lie about what's important in life. There is more to life than sex, but porn sends a message that there is nothing more important than maximum gratification of one's sexual desires.

- Porn is not real. There is no sickness, or death, or suffering in pornography.
 - Porn does not make you a better, more noble, more courageous person.
 - It creates dissatisfaction with your body, your partner, and your sex life-- especially for men.
 - It drives you away from God and into idolatry.
 - Porn is a frontal assault on Christianity, marriage, and the family.
 - Porn is mood altering arousing passion, anger, jealousy, envy, regret, fear, and all the emotions in Pandora's dirty little box.
 - There are no morals or virtue in pornography. In fact, there are no unacceptable behaviors in porn.
 - Porn is created by Jewish antichrists to demoralize the West.
 - It puts ideas into your mind, and may lead some to commit sex crimes.
 - Women are not victims in pornography, they are predators using their prey for money, power, and drugs.
- "I never liked sex. I never wanted sex and in fact I was more apt to spend time with Jack Daniels than some of the studs I was paid to "fake it with." . . .*
- As we continue to traumatize ourselves by making more adult films, we use more and more drugs and alcohol. We live in constant fear of catching AIDS and sexually transmitted diseases" (CBN, Shelly Lubben).*
- Sex in marriage is a beautiful thing, but porn is the graffiti that mars it.
 - Sex is good and wholesome, but porn splatters it with dirt and perversion.
 - Porn distorts reality creating ideals about human sexuality that no woman, or man, can live up to.
 - Porn deceives one into believing that life is all about sex, instead of sex being a part of life; blinds people to the noble things of life while enslaving them to the banal, trivial, and sensual.
 - Porn is not art. Obscenity shows us the worst of humanity. Art shows us the humanness of being human. Nudity in art is not nakedness. Nakedness express sin and sham; Art shows us human emotions, loneliness, innocence, vulnerability. While we may not always know where the line is drawn between art and pornography, most of us recognize it when we see it.
 - Prostitutes and pimps in the porn industry do not make good marriage partners.

-It is difficult to fail at being a porn actress, but it is not difficult to catch a sexually transmitted disease.

-The big secret in the porn industry is that porn kills.

"But the porn industry wants YOU to think we porn actresses love sex. They want you to think we enjoy being degraded by all kinds of repulsive acts. The truth, porn actresses have showed up on the set not knowing about certain requirements and were told by porn producers to do it or leave without being paid. Work or never work again. Yes, we made the choice. Some of us needed the money. But we were manipulated and coerced and even threatened. Some of us caught HIV from that coercion. I personally caught Herpes, a non-curable sexually transmitted disease. Another porn actress went home after a long night of numbing her pain and put a pistol to her head and pulled the trigger. Now she's dead." But the porn industry wants YOU to think we porn actresses love sex. They want you to think we enjoy being degraded by all kinds of repulsive acts.

The truth, porn actresses have showed up on the set not knowing about certain requirements and were told by porn producers to do it or leave without being paid. Work or never work again. Yes, we made the choice. Some of us needed the money. But we were manipulated and coerced and even threatened. Some of us caught HIV from that coercion. I personally caught Herpes, a non-curable sexually transmitted disease. Another porn actress went home after a long night of numbing her pain and put a pistol to her head and pulled the trigger. Now she's dead. (CBN, Shelly Lubben)

-Pornographers do not contribute to the building a nation, they weaken and destroy all that is precious and worth preserving.

-Porn is a booby-trap to snare youth and to turn them away from Christ. It desensitizes the believer to sin . . . to salvation . . . and to responsible living.

-Sex is the wine in marriage, but pornography is a toxin that poisons it.

-Porn should be banned as the production of obscenity does not have Biblical sanctions or First Amendment protections; that is, a responsible Congress and President will push porn back into the shadows with the force of government.

-Porn is the fast food service for those on their way to hell (1 Corinthians 6:9, 10). 70% percent of youth stumble into pornography on the internet.

-“How do I know pornography depraves and corrupts? It depraves and corrupts me” (Malcolm Muggeridge)

-“Pornography exists for the lonesome, the ugly, the fearful - It's made for the losers” (Rita Mae Brown)

-A society that tolerates pornography commits social suicide.

Most likely, the porn industry is not going away anytime soon. The Jews control the porn industry. Any legal move to censor porn, is seen as a legal attack on Jews. The one who condemns the porn industry is most like to be branded a racist and anti-Semite. The last person that tried to ban porn from his country found himself in a World War being attacked by London, Paris, Moscow, and Washington D.C.--a war created by international Jewry, the ones who ran the porn industry.

REMEDY

Grow in love for Him. Jesus asked Peter, "Do you love me? (John 21). Only a deep, deep love of Jesus will deliver you from this addiction. A shallow love will not do. It has to be a deep, deep love.

Grow in self-control. The first fruit of the Spirit is "self-control." Learn to walk in the Spirit, and you will not fulfill the lust of the flesh (Ephesians 5:18; Galatians 5:16ff-23). Without self-control one cannot learn peace, love, or joy.

Porn has to be fought personally and individually, man to man, person to person. Either you are fighting against porn, or you are a victim of it! Be a victor, not a victim.

2 Timothy 2:22 "Flee the evil desires of youth and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart."

Pay careful attention to your character and what you are becoming. The way one's gains character is by passing the tests. The word "experience" (*dokime*) in Romans 5:4 (KJV) is translated "character" in the NIV. It is related to the word "test"; that is, character is developed by passing test after test after test.

Accountability is helpful. Being part of a Christian group where members ask the tough questions, "Did you get victory over porn this week?" can help.

Attend a church that "breaks bread" each week. Knowing you have to be clean in order to break bread (take communion) helps a person to be accountable. Knowing that you are going to attend church on Sunday to remember Christ helps one to pass tests during the week.

98. Whistling in the Wind

James 1:8

James 1:8 . . . he is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways.

James 3:10-14 My brethren, these things ought not so to be. Doth the fountain send forth from the same opening sweet water and bitter? can a fig tree, my brethren, yield olives, or a vine figs? neither can salt water yield sweet

Isaiah 5:20 Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!

Our text pronounces judgment on revolutionaries that seek to turn the world upside down by calling evil good and good evil. James says they are unstable souls in all their ways . . . and, it is these dystopian rats that destabilize society.

Lawyers call it “legalese,” but politically we call it “doubletalk” or “doublespeak.”

In his book “1984,” George Orwell created a fictional society wherein the English Socialist Party (INGSOC) employed a mind-control technique to control the malleable masses called “**doublethink**.”

This psychological tool “**describes the act of simultaneously accepting two mutually contradictory beliefs as correct, often in distinct social contexts.**”

The socialists believed that if they could get the common people to believe self-contradictory, patently absurd and irrational ideas as true, then the rank of file of humanity could be made to believe anything.

Doublespeak can be used **to be polite** as in “he is no longer with us,” (died); or **to hide** as when a socialist communist accepts the title “Progressive,” or is called a “community organizer” instead of a radical revolutionary; and, **to deceive and confuse** as referring to the sin of Sodomy as being “gay” or “normal.”

We are now in **the Age of Doublethink**. Consider how America and the rest of the world is under a cloud of doubletalk and are being tricked into accepting contradictions as both true:

- Evil is good, and good is evil.
- Light is darkness, and darkness is light.
- Bitter is sweet, sweet is bitter.
- “War is peace; *slavery is freedom*; ignorance is strength” – Doublespeak
- Murder is bad, but murder is good . . . if the government’s Navy Seals do it.
- Killing others is wrong because it violates human rights, but women should have a right to abortion.

- Women's health requires "therapeutic abortion."
- Male is female; female is male. You are what you feel.
- If you have XY chromosomes you are a man, but if a man thinks he is a woman with XX chromosomes, then he-it-she is a women.
- Equality demands that boys use women's restrooms, and women use men's restrooms.
- Americans believe that society should be based on "majority rule," unless there are trans genders present. Then all of society must change its ways to accommodate these confused psychotics.
- American was built on the Judeo-Muslim-Christian ethic.
- "America was founded on Islam"-Obama.
- All religions are equal, and no religion is more right than others.
- "You have to pass it, before we know what's in it" -Queen Nancy.
- "More surveillance is needed to stop terrorism."
- Theft is bad . . . unless the government does it in the name of taxation.
- America should not lock its doors at the border, but Americans should lock their doors at night.
- Even though Bill Clinton brags that he has slept with over 2000 women, he was a good president.
- Even though Hillary was deeply involved in Travelgate, Emailgate, Humagate, Filegate, Pardongate, Troupergate, Chinagate, cattle futures, the Gennifer Flowers, scandal Foundation favors, Whitewater, the Bengazi disaster, Asia fundraising, Hubble trouble, the Waco tragedy, and more, she is the "most qualified" person to be president (The Reverend Jesse Jackson).
- Higher taxes are necessary to make America prosperous.
- Hillary didn't receive a bribe, she accepted a donation to her husband's foundation.
- We believe in academic freedom, but if a professor quotes a Bible verse he violates "separation of church and state" rules.
- Creationism is religious; "scientific" evolution is not religious.
- Even with a 19 Trillion Dollar Debt America is the richest nation on earth.
- The rule of law and rule by law are both good.
- "Anti-Semitism will not be tolerated."
- It is not a planned assault on the structures of society by Congressional legislation; it is merely "a conspiracy theory."
- There is a "war on women," but not a women's war on men.
- We believe in religious toleration . . . except Christianity.
- Pornography is not evil or wicked, it is art—protected free speech, but calling a homosexual "queer" is hate speech.

- Obama was not a radical communist revolutionary. He was a “community organizer.”
- Isn’t “Yes, we can,” and “a change we can believe in” double talk for “revolution” and a revolt against conservative Christianity?
- Israel didn’t start a war, they just exercised their option of a “pre-emptive strike.”
- Even though America has more people in prison than the rest of the world combined, America is the freest country on earth.
- She a Christian prostitute; he’s a Christian homosexual pastor.
- Isn’t Planned Parenthood doubletalk for Planned Murderhood?
- There is no such thing as sin. Life is a matter of choices.
- Jews, even though they reject Christ as Savior, are the chosen people of God.
- Even though the world is in flames by Muslim terrorists, Islam is a religion of peace.
- We must protect our borders, but we shouldn’t build a fence. It’s O.K. for Americans to have fences around their yards, but it’s not O.K. for America to have a fence around its yard.
- Bill Ayers is not a lying revolutionary terrorist; he’s a human rights activist.
- Pornography must be protected under free speech laws, but those who say anything bad about homosexuals should be prosecuted for hate speech (Canada: Trudeau).
- If you call President Obama a lying, deceiving, homosexual pervert, you hate blacks.
- Christianity is bad, but secular-atheistic statism is good.
- Christianity is a religion, but secular atheism is not religious.
- We believe in free speech except for erecting a monument to the Ten Commandments.
- Stalin’s brand of socialism was bad, but the Obama-Clinton-Sanders brand of socialism is good.
- America is about freedom, but its O.K. for the government to limit the size of soft drinks a New Yorker can have in restaurant.
- All white people are racist, sexist bigots, “Black Lives Matter” is not about racism, but equality.
- We didn’t fire the workers, we just downsized the company.
- Enforcing a doctrine of separation of church and state is not persecution of Christianity.
- It is illegal to kill a bald eagle, but it is not illegal to kill an unborn child.
- “Black Lives Matter” except very few blacks protests the murder of black babies at America’s abortion mills.

- The government doesn't steal from the rich; it just "redistributes the wealth."
- White privilege is bad; bestowing privileges and franchises on Black people is good.
- We believe in a "living constitution."
- Rioting and destruction of property is considered a crime—a violation of common law, but when Hispanics burned cars, threw rocks, and broke windows at a trump rally in California, Obama said, "You don't need to do that." What happened to "You shall not . . .?"
- Communism is bad, but hammer and sickle socialism is good.
- Homosexual marriages are equal to heterosexual marriages.

FBI Director James Comey effectively told the Senate that the Fourth Amendment is a pain in the neck and his agents could operate more *efficiently* without it. (Fox News).

It is legal for Congress to open each session with prayer, but it is illegal to pray at a public school function.

Yes, we are in an Orwellian Age of Doublethink and Doublespeak where society is unstable in all its ways.

True Christianity, on the other hand, is about light, truth, clarification, and separation of wheat from the tares, sheep from the goats, and good from evil. Thus, God calls Christians to discern doublethink and doubletalk and to expose the leaven working through the government controlled media.

Hebrews 5:14 But solid food is for the mature, for those who have their powers of discernment trained by constant practice to distinguish good from evil.

More Doublespeak (provided by bizpacreview.com)

"Affirmative Action — A leftist term that makes preferential treatment for a particular race or minority group sound positive and moral.

Crony Capitalism — A phrase used by the left to describe governmental favors to businesses, as if capitalism is the cause, when, in fact, favoritism is a hallmark of fascism and socialism.

Custodial Artist — A euphemism for janitor.

Domestic Engineer — A euphemism for housewife.

Economically Disadvantaged Area — Euphemism for ghetto.

Enlarged Physical Condition — A nice way to describe someone who's fat.

Ethnic Cuisine — Otherwise known as foreign food.

Fair Share — A liberal demand, requiring high-income earners to pay sky-high taxes to share their wealth with under-achievers, causing economist Thomas Sowell to ask, “What is your ‘fair share’ of what someone else has worked for?”

Gender Reassignment -- A sex change.

Hate Speech or **Hateful Policies** — Speech or policy that the left disagrees with and wants eliminated, but described in a way to make you believe such policies promote hate, when they are merely written by people the left hates.

Herstory — A deviation of the word “history,” used to describe a historical study of women’s affairs to offset the “male bias” of history.

Homophobia — The left’s description of people who disagree with the political positions of the LGBT community.

Murderer — A lumberjack.

One-Percenter — A derogatory, class-warfare term used by the left to describe the wealthiest strata of society.

Black journalist shut’s up NBC panel: Let’s not pretend cops killing blacks is the problem

Outdoorsman — The new leftist doublespeak for someone who used to be called a bum; later commonly referred to as “homeless person.”

Pathologically High-Spirited — A psycho.

Political Correctness — An edict dictating that the masses conform to the principles of the left or be punished for past opinions.

Rainforest — A jungle.

Sanitation Engineer — A garbage man.

Social Justice — A leftist effort to create socialist laws that afford special treatment to the “victims” of inequities to ensure equal outcomes for all; the war against achievement, where excellence and success are unrewarded and people get punished for what their ancestors did.

Special Interests — Groups opposed to the interests of those contributing to leftists.

Substance Abuse — Liberal jargon for drug addiction.

Tax Scheme — What liberals call a tax cut proposed by conservatives.

Undocumented Immigrants — Otherwise known as illegal aliens.

Unpaid Sex Worker – A wife or girlfriend.

Vertically Challenged – A midget.

Visually Challenged – What they call you when you're ugly.

Wealth Redistribution – A fair-sounding term for confiscating money from those who have it, so liberals can give it to those who weren't that much poorer to begin with.

Wetlands – A swamp.

World Community – Also known as New World Order, such appealing phrases are used by leftists working toward establishing a utopist world of equal states controlled by the United Nations, so that the United States will be unable to achieve political dominance. "Community" used to mean your neighborhood; leftists now use it to mean government.

See how it's done? Now you, too, can use clever words to mask your true intentions."

99. Christ's Authority Over the Kings of the Earth

Revelation 1:5

"the Ruler of the kings of the earth."

THE MODERN DILEMMA

Is the world a better place when Christians surrender God's ordained civil institutions to pagans while believers associate only in ecclesiastical buildings?

Many pastors believe Christians should distance themselves from the civil government – an institution ordained by Him. Silence on the issues of the day is policy in some churches. This view only strengthens misapplications of verses like,

*"No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life"
(2 Timothy 2:4).*

Politics smells like a nasty, dirty affair and many Christians shy away from the dirt, sweat, and grit on the political gridiron.

Many evangelical Christians believe that politics is corrupt and that the only solution to the wormy occupation of political grubs is the second coming of

Christ. Many derive hope from corrosion in politics because they believe the more dandruff the government has the closer they are to a universal shampoo known as the *Last Judgment*. These Christians avoid engaging the political process, except for voting. In some circles, the “rapture” has become the antidote for venality.

Since Christ claims authority over all men, Christians deny the gospel when they fail to advance His claims over the institutions of men (John 17:2; Colossians 2:8-10; Revelation 1:5)

Furthermore the doctrine of separation of church and state only reinforces the nonfeasance of Christians toward politics. Why doesn't the doctrine mention

- Separation of religion from politics; or,
- Separation of philosophy from politics; or,
- Separation of morals from politics; or,
- Separation of science from politics?

Stalin reasoned, “Ideas are more powerful than guns. We would not let our enemies have guns, why should we let them have ideas.”

The strategy of modern humanists is to “eliminate the competition” so the ideas of secularism monopolize the podium. Pagans wage a relentless propaganda war against the gospel. The result is that the average Christian appears quite content to prefer pagan rulers over Christian rulers.

Humanists hammer the doctrine of separation of church and state into the American mind in order to frustrate attempts by Christians to promote their faith in the public debate.

Further, Christians are often in a defensive mode trying to avoid the criticism of “forcing their belief down people’s throats . . .” as if humanists aren’t trying to cram paganism down the throats of Joe Public.

Religion is about “ultimate values” . . . and, all men have them. Even atheists have ultimate values. Subsequently, all politicians are intensely religious. In the arena of public debate, it is a matter of whose values are going to prevail — the values of abortionists, or pro-lifers; the values of sodomites or the values of heterosexuals; the values of Muslims or the values of Christians; the values of atheists or the values of theists?

THE PREMISE

It is the premise of this section of this work that the doctrine of the Kingdom of God calls Christians to not only preach repentance and faith, but to call

national-local governments to surrender to the authority of Christ; that is, the kingdom of God intersects the kingdoms of men challenging them to forsake their idols and to surrender to His law-order.

Acts 17:30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men everywhere to repent:

THE KINGDOM DEMANDS POLITICAL INVOLVEMENT

Reason One: The Authority of Christ

Prior to His death and resurrection, at His weakest moment, Jesus claimed authority over “all flesh” (John 17:2); that is, He claimed all men were His property: children, teenagers, men and women, citizens and kings. All men including legislators and governors have a duty to arrange themselves under His authority.

The question is not whether men should acknowledge His authority but will pastors call civil authorities to recognize His authority?

After his death and resurrection, our Lord announced, “All authority in heaven and earth is given unto me” (Matthew 28:19, 20). If Jesus conquered death and rose the third day, then He is Lord!

Theologically, there are only two spheres: heaven and earth; the seen and the unseen; the material and the non-material. Jesus claimed authority over all. The term, “all” is comprehensive and excludes nothing. The ages with its generations, its histories, states and governments have a duty to surrender to Him. He claims jurisdiction over all men and all of man’s institutions. He is the Son and the earth must rotate around him. Thus, He ordered His early disciples to go into all the nations and claim them for Christ; that is, they were to Christianize the nations. This mandate includes not only individual hearts but the soul of nations. To surrender politics to pagans “falls short” of the glory of God (Romans 3:23). It is like turning over all engineering projects in America to the communist Chinese. If we fail to claim human institutions for Christ, we abandon them to be ruled by the cults of chaos.

Some may refute this statement by referencing Christ’s statement, “My kingdom is not of this world” (John 18:36); that is, His kingdom is not of this cosmos. But, what does this mean? Does it infer that Christ has no claim on men or nations? Or, that Christians should worry about getting men to heaven and not worry about getting heaven to earth?

Our Lord taught us to pray, “Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.” That is, our daily prayer is not about getting men’s will done in heaven, but getting heaven’s will done on earth; not about getting men’s hearts to heaven, but getting heaven into the hearts of men.

When our Lord said His kingdom is not of this world, He was giving a tactful, but truthful answer to Pilate. He was not empowering passivity or advocating non-involvement in politics. Rather, Jesus was telling Pilate that His jurisdiction was not germane to men, but *ad rem* to heaven.

Previously, religious leaders queried Christ about His source of authority; i.e., whether it was from God or from men. Here Christ unequivocally answers the question. His authority is ordained of God! It is not derived from men. In Greek the preposition “*ek*” designates “origin”; that is, Jesus was adamant that His authority did not originate with men on this earth, but it did include authority over the nations of the Earth. Though Pilate did not understand the implications of Christ’s statement, his answer did not exclude His authority on earth as affirmed by his charter we call “the Great Commission.”

Reason Two: The Titles Christ

The ascension of Jesus means nothing less than the reign of the Lord Christ:

Acts 2:36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

Peter sees Pentecost as the result of the ascension of his risen Lord to the right hand of God. Jesus was the son of David sitting upon God’s throne . . . but Peter sees the fulfillment as greater than the promise and calls us to recognize that Jesus’ ascension to the right hand of God is the dynamic fulfillment of the Davidic promise.

Paul called Jesus, “the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords” (1 Timothy 6:15). The word “potentate” means “ruler” or “sovereign.” The adjective “only” limits the title “sovereign” to Christ alone; that is, it is an exclusive title not bestowed on men. Congress is not sovereign! The United States is not sovereign! Not only is our Lord the supreme, paramount, absolute Sovereign in the universe, He is the only Sovereign . . . the ONLY POTENTATE! For a nation to claim sovereignty and independence from Christ is an act of treason, a joining of the rebellion mentioned in Psalm 2!!

For the government to incorporate the title “sovereign,” is a maneuver away from Christianity and a strategy to lay hold of the prerogatives that belong to God alone!

Jesus is also called “the King of kings” and in so doing, the apostle indicates that Christ is head over all kings, rulers, judges, governors, states, and governments – over all parliaments, legislators, and prime ministers.

Again, the issue is not whether Christ is in authority, **but will rulers acknowledge His sovereignty.**

There is only one Lawgiver, Judge, and King (Isaiah 33:22; James 4:12).

*Isaiah 33:22 For the LORD is our **judge**, the LORD is our **lawgiver**, the LORD is our **king**; he will save us.*

*James 4:12 There is **one lawgiver**, who is able to save and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?*

Congress is not a lawgiver. It only passes statutory codes that apply to corporations and corporate officers.

STATUTE. Black's Law Dictionary, 4th Edition. The written will of the legislature, solemnly expressed according to the forms prescribed in the constitution; an act of the legislature.

A "STATUTE" is NOT a law! Flournoy v. First National Bank of Shreveport, 197 LA 1057. 3 So.2d 244, 248.

A "CODE" is NOT a law! In Re Self v. Rhay, Wn 2d 261, in point of fact in law.

U.S. SUPREME COURT DECISION – ALL codes, rules, and regulations are for government authorities ONLY, not human/Creators in accordance with God's Laws. All codes, rules and regulations are unconstitutional and lacking due process..." Rodrigues v. Ray Donovan, U.S. Department of Labor, 769 F.2d, 1344, 1348 (1985).

United States Supreme Court Decision from 1796- [Cruden v. Neale, 2 N.C. 338 (1796) 2 S.E.] "There, every man is independent of all laws, except those prescribed by nature. He is not bound by any institutions formed by his fellowman without his consent."

A concurrent or "joint resolution of legislature is NOT "Law." Koenig v. Flynn, 258 N.Y. 292, 179 N.E. 705, 707; Ward v. State, 176 OKL. 368, 56 P.2d 136, 137; State ex rel. Todd v. Yelle, 7 Wash. 2d 43, 110, P.2d 162, 165).

SUPREME COURT DECISION – The common law (Biblical Law) is the real law, the Supreme Law of the land, the codes, rules, regulations, policy and statutes are "not the law." Self v. Rhay, 61 Wn (2d) 261.(parenthesis mine).

In Revelation 1:5, John calls Christ "the Ruler of the kings of the earth."

The definite masculine, nominative article "the" in English and "o" (omicron) in Greek narrows the field of ruler prospects to One Soul. John lets his readers

know in no uncertain terms that the Christ in Whom they have believed *is the Supreme Authority in the Universe*. His claim on nations is binding, absolute, and unapologetic. All presidents, governors, and judges have a duty to acknowledge his authority.

And, since Christ is Ruler of the kings of the earth, it is imperative that pastors announce His Reign and call kings and magistrates to surrender to His law-order. Christians must not embrace the political philosophy that there is a separation of church from state, of religion from politics, of the Bible from law. Because Christ claims jurisdiction over all governments, Christians must inject Biblical authority into political debates even though the anti-God forces whine and cry.

In Jeremiah 10:7, the prophet addresses the LORD as the **“King of the nations.”** Israel’s God claimed authority not only over Israel, but over the Philistines, Babylonians, and Assyrians.

The context of the title “King of the Nation” contains God’s admonition, “Do not learn the ways of the *polytheistic* nations” with their legal pluralism” because their “customs” (statutory laws) are worthless (10:2-3).

Likewise, *we must advance a pure gospel that proclaims the authority of Christ over all nations*. We have no right to bifurcate the gospel, to truncate its claims, or to stomp its message to something applicable only within the walls of a church. He must “have first place in everything” including family, politics, and government (Colossians 1:18)!

In Colossians 2:10, the apostle states Christ is **“the Head** of all Principality and Power.”

By “head” Paul means that Christ is the Seat of Government, the Leader, the Commander and Chief, and Director of human affairs. All earthly rulers and authorities are accountable to Him. In the apostle’s mind, the great sin is “not holding the head” (Colossians 2:19); that is, not recognizing and honoring Him. The Greek word for hold is *krateo* meaning “to seize.”⁹⁸ His headship is compromised when Christians do not claim and proclaim the risen, resurrected Christ of history.

Reason Three: the Arrival of the Kingdom of God

When John the Baptist began his ministry, he ordered the following:

⁹⁸ The word “hold” or “seize” is the same word for “took” in Matthew 9:25: “he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose;” and Matthew 12:11 “. . . , that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?”

Matthew 3:2 "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand."

The Kingdom of God entered history to deliver men from the evil of this age before the consummation of history at the end of the age. The presence of the Kingdom demanded a response from **ordinary men** (Luke 3:10, 11), **from tax collectors working for the Roman government** (Luke 3:12), **and from soldiers under the command of Caesar** (Luke 3:14). And, if Caesar had been present in the crowd, John would have called him "to give unto God what belongs to God."

Jesus laid down the Divine mandate: "Seek first the kingdom of God" (Matthew 6:33). Not only are Christians to seek first the Kingdom of God but government bureaucrats are required to seek first the Kingdom of God. Governments have a duty to arrange themselves under his authority. The gospel makes a claim on all men and all of man's institutions; that all men everywhere should repent and acknowledge rule of God (Acts 17:30).

The first duty of the state is to surrender to the rule of God; i.e., to seek first the kingdom of God and arrange itself under God's law-order. This means the state must recognize Christ as the King of the Nations (Jeremiah 10:7) and hold itself accountable to His Law-word. The duty of the State is to organize its legal system under the precepts of the Ten Commandments and see itself as the enforcer of God's laws. Its goal is to glorify God and to honor His holy Name.

The state has a duty to be Christian even as the man, the family, and the church has a duty to be Christian. **Any other position is to advance the death of God among men!**

We must remember that America is not a place, but a set of ideas. America was not founded on the "Judeo-Christian ethic"⁹⁹ but the Puritan ethic plain and simple!

William Bradford who helped compose the Mayflower Compact, stated the purpose of why the Pilgrims had come to the New World:

" . . . a great hope and inward zeal they had of laying some good foundation, or at least to make some way thereunto, for the propagating and advancing the Gospel of the kingdom of Christ in those remote parts of the world."

⁹⁹ The term "Judeo-Christian ethic" first appeared in print by George Orwell in 1939. It is a Jewish propaganda phrase used to turn Americans away from their Puritan roots to the new Zionist world order.

Consider the Coronation of Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II in the Abbey Church of St. Peter, Westminster, on Tuesday, the second day of June, 1953:

Archbishop: Will you to the utmost of your power maintain the Laws of God and the true profession of the Gospel? Will you to the utmost of your power maintain in the United Kingdom the Protestant Reformed Religion established by law? Will you maintain and preserve inviolably the settlement of the Church of England, and the doctrine, worship, discipline, and government thereof, as by law established in England? And will you preserve unto the Bishops and Clergy of England, and to the Churches there committed to their charge, all such rights and privileges, as by law do or shall appertain to them or any of them

Queen: All this I promise to do.

When the Queen is again seated, the Archbishop shall go to her Chair; and the Moderator of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, receiving the Bible from the Dean of Westminster, shall bring it to the Queen and present it to her, the Archbishop saying these words:

Our gracious Queen: to keep your Majesty ever mindful of the law and the Gospel of God as the Rule for the whole life and government of Christian Princes, we present you with this Book, the most valuable thing that this world affords.

Here is Wisdom; This is the royal Law; These are the lively Oracles of God.

Then the Lord who carries the Sword of State, delivering to the Lord Chamberlain the said Sword (which is thereupon deposited in Saint Edward's Chapel) shall receive from the Lord Chamberlain, in lieu thereof, another Sword in a scabbard which he shall deliver to the Archbishop: and the Archbishop shall lay it on the Altar and say:

Hear our prayers, O Lord, we beseech thee, and so direct and support thy servant Queen ELIZABETH, that she may not bear the Sword in vain; but may use it as the minister of God for the terror and punishment of evildoers, and for the protection and encouragement of those that do well, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

Then shall the Archbishop take the Sword from off the Altar, and (the Archbishop of York and the Bishops of London and Winchester assisting and going along with him) shall deliver it into the Queen's hands; and, the Queen holding it, the Archbishop shall say:

Receive this kingly Sword, brought now from the Altar of God, and delivered to you by the hands of us the Bishops and servants of God,

though unworthy.

With this sword do justice, stop the growth of iniquity, protect the holy Church of God, help and defend widows and orphans, restore the things that are gone to decay, maintain the things that are restored, punish and reform what is amiss, and confirm what is in good order: that doing these things you may be glorious in all virtue; and so faithfully serve our Lord Jesus Christ in this life, that you may reign for ever with him in the life which is to come. Amen.

This rite echoes the precept that the civil order is directly under God and established to execute justice under the law of God as part of His kingdom. For the state to renounce its position under Christ is to renounce its office and surrender to apostasy.

Consider the following history in America wherein states were Christians.

The 1629 Charter of Massachusetts states:

“Our said people be so religiously, peaceably, and civilly governed that their good life and orderly conversation may win and incite the natives of that country to the knowledge and obedience of the one true God and savior of mankind, and the Christian faith, which is the principle end of this colony.”

The 1662 Charter for North Carolina stated that they were:

*“Excited with a laudable and pious zeal **for the propagation of the Christian faith** in the parts of American not yet cultivated or planted and only inhabited by people who have no knowledge of Almighty God.” This, again, is not the policy of a secular nation.*

In 1663 the Charter for Rhode Island explained the colonists intent:

*“Pursuing with Peace and loyal minds, their sober, serious and religious intentions **of Godly edifying themselves and one another in the holy Christian faith**, a most flourishing civil state may stand and best be maintained with a full liberty in religious concernments.” Does this sound like the policy of a secular nation?*

William Penn wrote the charter for Pennsylvania stating:

“Out of a commendable desire to convert the savage natives by gentle and just manners to the love of civil society and Christian religion, hath humbly besought leave of us to transport an ample colony unto a certain country in the parts of America not yet cultivated or planted. ”

The Charter of Connecticut, New Hampshire, New Jersey and others were a virtual restatement of the Christian goals stated by these states.

Connecticut had the first constitution and in 1639 and it stated:

*“Well knowing when a people are gathered together, the Word of God requires that to maintain the peace and union of such people there **should be an orderly and decent government established according to God.**”*

Secular people do NOT establish government according to God. Their constitution went on to declare the colonists desire to:

*“Enter into combination and confederation together **to maintain and preserve the liberty and purity of the Gospel of our Lord Jesus which we now profess which, according to the truth of the said Gospel, is now practiced amongst us.**”(Constitution of Connecticut, 1639)*

Consider the Charter of New Haven:

*In June of 1639 the leading men of New Haven held a convention in a barn, and **formally adopted the Bible as the constitution of the State.** Everything was strictly conformed to the religious standard. The government was called the House of Wisdom, of which Eaton, Davenport, and five others were the seven Pillars. None but church members were admitted to the rights of citizenship. All offices were to be filled by the votes of the freemen at an annual election. For twenty years consecutively, Mr. Eaton—first and greatest of the pillars—was chosen governor of the colony. Other settlers came, and pleasant villages sprang up on both shores of Long Island Sound.(Ridpath’s History of the United States Volume I).*

In 1669, John Locke assisted in the drafting of the Carolina constitution under which no man could be a citizen unless he acknowledged God, was a member of a church, and used no reproachful, reviling, or abusive language against any religion. **Can you imagine if that was still a requirement in state constitutions today?** If they were not Christians, why would they put in writing that they were (Anghis, 2010)?

Consider the huge problem in America: By denying the law of God and its application to all men and all of man’s institutions, the church proclaims the death of God to men outside the walls of the church. Is not decadence, decay, and death in society due to the presumption that the law of God is a private matter and not a public matter? That Christians have no duty to hold the state accountable to kingdom law is suicide?

The average Christian mind cringes like a dove at the thought they have a duty to advance God's law order in a society hostile to religious instruction. Humanists preach "separation of church doctrine" from politics and modern Christians politely, sheepishly fawn to the presumption.

Christians are being programmed by the secular media to exercise cream-of-wheat tolerance with the radical, bone-crushing, socialistic legislative agenda of humanists.

Why don't modern Christians have steel conviction that God's law-order applies to humanists and to politics? **Because the church as a whole fails to require that the state be Christian**, it has surrendered the state to apostate reason and their sacred offices to the Philistines. Because the church has denied the law of God, God is irrelevant in politics.

Justification of the modern state is not founded on the Word of God but in natural reason. That God is dead outside the walls of the church is a great consolation to humanists, but it should be a sobering embarrassment to the church. Have we "lost our first love" (Revelation 2:4)?

Reason Four: Christ Requires the Obedience of the State

"Kiss the Son" said the Spirit to the nations (Psalm 2).

Much is made of a Christian's duty to obey government, but seldom will one hear preachers espousing the duty of governments to obey the Lord Jesus Christ. How can a Christian obey a government unless that government obeys God's law?

Christians are called to obey common law and to generally obey public policy except where it conflicts with a conviction germane to God's Word.

Romans 13:1 issues an order for Christians to render obedience to the state . . . but not every state. Surely, Paul's admonition to be "in subjection to governing authorities" does not include the "Nazi solution" or Stalin's "reign of terror" or the tyranny of a homicidal maniac such as a Pol Pot.

The Greek word "except" (eiv mh.) in Romans 13:1 automatically limits the command. The state to which the Christian is called to subject himself is a legitimate government "established by God" (NASB); that is, one that earnestly acknowledges the authority of Christ and one that accepts the limited purpose of government—to protect human rights and to minister justice to wrongdoers.

Thus, the Scripture anticipates that out of the sea of politics, Christian governments would arise that acknowledge the veracity of the Bible, the Ten Commandments, and the authority of Christ. It is to these states that Christians owe their allegiance and cautious obedience.

To teach that Christians have a duty to obey every government of man is to take a position that Christians should surrender to political bullies and madmen. A confession that tyrants must be obeyed is a position that denies the Lordship of Jesus Christ and the law of His kingdom. Rulers fail. Governments go awry. And when governments rebel against God's law-order, resistance becomes duty.

Any obedience rendered to the state must be limited and cautious.

If Jesus is Lord, it is not desirable or possible to always obey the state.

The obedience of Christ requires believers to disobey ultra vires legislation by civil rulers. It is political and cultural suicide for Christians to retreat into a piestic cubby-hole and abdicate their responsibility to confront errant government officials.

Surely, Benjamin Franklin and Thomas Jefferson was correct when they stated, "Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God . . ."

In conclusion, the Christian has dual citizenship, in heaven and on earth. Our prayers must always be, "**Thy kingdom come**;¹⁰⁰ Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven."

Not only do Christians have a duty to seek first the kingdom of God, states have a duty to seek first the kingdom of God. Our Kingdom responsibilities require us to Christianize a nation, to acknowledge the authority of Christ, and to surrender to His law-order.

Failure to acknowledge His authority over individuals, families, and states is to truncate the gospel of the Kingdom of God and abort the mission of the church.

100. The Christian Battle Cry

Revelation 15:3

"O Lord God the Almighty! Just and true are your ways, O King of the nations!" (Revelation 15:3).

"No King but King Jesus" (Revolutionary War Slogan)

¹⁰⁰ By "Kingdom," Jesus refers to the "rule of God," to the "authority of God" and not some alleged millennial reign at the end of time.

In listening to the nightly news, you come away with the notion that America's only hope is in presidential elections and voting the right candidate into office.

The belief that Jesus is the true King rocked the first century.

But, the Roman world was transformed, not by voting for the next Caesar, but by conquest of Christianity over paganism.

Have you ever asked yourself how Christianity came to dominate the Roman theater?

The Scripture says the early Christian preachers "turned the world upside down"? (Acts 17:6)

What was the core of this message that altered the course of history?

It was not the modern gospel of "fire insurance;" that is, come to Christ so you won't burn in hell.

The core of the message seems to center around Who Jesus is: Son, God-man, Savior, Lord, Master, and King.

A careful reading of Acts 17:1-7 reveals that at the tip of the spear of Paul's preaching against the citadels of political power was the proclamation that Jesus is King! The apostles reasoned that since Christ literally and tangibly rose from the dead, then He is Lord of All. If he rose from the dead, then He is King! By virtue of His death, burial, and resurrection, He demonstrated a King's victory over man's greatest enemies; and, if He is King, then He deserves our ultimate allegiance, and NOT CAESAR!

The Apostle Peter declared; "neither is there salvation in any other: For there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved" (Acts 4:12); and, when he preached that salvation was in Christ, he declared on Rome!

In recent times, Christians have lost salt-and-vinegar convictions that Jesus is "Prince of the kings of the earth;" that He is to be obeyed above all civil authorities. Consequently, Christians have become putty in the hands of politicians promising them a utopia on earth without the Kingdom of God.

The present decline of the gospel and its influence over the body of Christ demands that we renew the maxim of Christian Forefathers: "We Have No King But King Jesus!"

The belief that Jesus is the true King confronted the Roman world—an institution that asserted that salvation was in Caesar.

Jewish and Roman political authorities attempted to prevent the Apostles from proclaiming that Jesus Christ was Lord / Master / King by virtue of His

resurrection and ascension to the right hand of the Father (Acts 2:36). But, their persecutions, arrests, and assassinations failed to prevent the spread of the gospel and the growth of churches in the Mediterranean. Within four centuries Christianity captured the hearts and minds of Roman magistrates. In fact, the institutions of Europe bound themselves to King Jesus with churches and civil authorities arranging their services under His command.

Kings and priests powered their institutions under the doctrines of Christianity, and charted a course which became known as Western Civilization. German warlords, Druids, and Vikings bowed to the Lordship of Christ accepting His law-order as the rule for men. The surrender of men to the this Heavenly King was by no means perfect or replete, but the fundamentals of Christianity became a foundation stone upon which the European society was constructed.

John Calvin, the great Reformationist, believed that Jesus is the true King.

The focus on the sovereignty of God in all aspects of Creation led Calvin to assert that God’s law was not only applicable to spiritual rulers, but also to civil rulers. He did this by citing Scriptural passages such as Proverbs 8:15-16 – “By me kings reign, and princes’ decree justice. By me princes rule, and nobles, even all the judges of the earth”- Calvin developed the position that as the church was subject to Christ in its service of the gospel, civil rulers are to be subject to Christ in their service of governing. In Calvin’s mind, therefore, the rule of civil authority was paramount to the governance of society.

One government rules the spiritual or inward aspect of humanity, that is, spiritual government, and one government rules the external aspects of human life, that is, secular government. This idea he ultimately derives from Saint Augustine’s Two Cities, the City of God and the City of Man (John Calvin on Civil Government, “The Institutes of the Christian Religion.”)

Since the time of Calvin, Switzerland has been the most civil and reasonable of all state governments in Europe.

The Scots, diligent Bible students, believed that Jesus is the true King.

In 1560 the Reform Faith was established as the national religion of Scotland. Forty-three years later in 1603 James VI of Scotland became James I of England. In 1618 the king tried to force the pattern of the Catholic modified, Anglican Church upon the Scottish churches. And, these policies was renewed by his son Charles I in 1625.

The Scottish Presbyterians rejected this flawed, earthly, royal usurpation by signing the National Covenant of 1638– a religious declaration of independence from the state-run church.

The Scots continued their remonstrance and signed the Solemn League and Covenant of 1643—a pledged to devote themselves exclusively to the worship of God under the Crown Rights of Jesus Christ. Thus, they became known as *the Scottish Covenanters*. They opposed the doctrine of the Divine Right of Kings and taught that unlimited sovereignty belongs to God alone.

In the 17th century, Christians were once again forced to defend the “Crown Rights” of Jesus Christ. In spite of the disfavor of the English king, the Scots published their allegiance to their Savior which resulted in the bloody martyrdom of thousands of Scottish believers.

When the Scots opposed the despotic policies of King Charles II in 1662, King Charles banned the practice of Presbyterianism because the belief that “Jesus is King” was a huge threat to the monarchy. Charles denounced the Covenants and declared them to be “illegal,” that is, not only null and void, but criminal.

Having pledged their allegiance to King Jesus, the Covenanters refused to comply with the king’s orders. King Charles declared them to be “rebels.” They were enemies of the state much like King Ahab in the Old Testament declared Elijah to be an enemy of the state (2 Kgs. 21).

Driven from their pulpits by the sword of England, Scottish preachers set up shop in market places and taverns.

Thousands of Covenanters were labeled domestic terrorists. Villified, they were tracked down, arrested, tortured and imprisoned—and, sometimes executed. In spite of these severe persecutions and deprivations, those labeled as enemies of the state boldly met the king’s police waving banners:

*‘FOR THE WORD OF GOD AND THE TESTIMONY OF JESUS’ and
“FOR CHRIST’S CROWN AND COVENANT.”*

In May 1685 at Blackgannoch Moss, facing arrest and certain death, a bleeding remnant of 200 Scottish Covenanters vigorously proclaimed their faith:

*“LET KING JESUS REIGN, AND ALL HIS ENEMIES BE
SCATTERED!”*

The Puritans believed that Jesus is the true King.

Another historical example of the Church’s declaration of the Crown Rights of Jesus Christ is clearly seen in the theology of the Puritan Fathers”

“Basic in Puritan political thought is the doctrine of divine sovereignty. It was the sovereign God who created the state and gave to it its powers and functions. The earthly magistrate held his position and exercised his power by a divine decree. He was a minister of God under common grace for the execution of the laws of God among the people at large, for the

main tenancy of law and order, and for so ruling the state that it would provide an atmosphere favorable for the preaching of the Gospel. He was to so rule that the people of God, the elect, could live individually and collectively a life that was truly Christian.”(From: A Theological Interpretation of American History” by C. Gregg Singer)

The Colonial Patriots believed that Jesus is the true King.

The Christian doctrine of the sovereignty of God and the Crown Rights of Jesus Christ was prevalent in the minds of many patriots during the American Revolution in their struggle against the tyranny of King George III.

In January 1773, **the men of Marlborough**, MA unanimously and emphatically proclaimed:

“Death is more eligible than slavery. A free-born people are not required by the religion of Jesus Christ to submit to tyranny . . . (we) implore the Ruler above the skies, that He would make bare His arm in defense of His Church and people, and let Israel go” (Peter Marshall and David Manuel: “The Light and the Glory,” ISBN 9780800732714).

The cries for liberty not only came from pulpits and town halls, but Main Street colonists lifted up their voices in support of total independence from Britain. Most Crown-appointed governors remained loyal to King George. One governor wrote a letter to the Board of Trade in England saying:

“If you ask an American, who is his master? He will tell you he has none, nor any governor but Jesus Christ.” (“The Myth of Separation,” by David Barton).

This may have been the incident which gave rise to the cry which was carried by the messengers of the newly formed Committee for Intercolonial Correspondence:

“NO KING BUT KING JESUS”

Either your God will be your King or your king will be your god. Either you state that Christ is your King, or the state will seek to exercise prerogatives belonging to God alone.

On April 18, 1775, John Adams and John Hancock were at the home of Rev. Jonas Clarke, the Lexington pastor and militia leader. That same night Paul Revere rode the glory trail to warn them of the approaching Redcoats.

The next morning British Major Pitcairn surrounded by British troupes shouted to an assembled regiment of Minutemen:

“Disperse, ye villains, lay down your arms in the name of George the Sovereign King of England.”

The immediate response of Rev. Jonas Clarke or one of his companies was:

"We recognize no Sovereign but God and no King but Jesus."

And then: the shot that was heard around the world.

The Biblical South believed that Jesus is the true King.

During Lincoln's War against the Bible Belt Christians, the South needed to raise a flag to distinguish the confederate troops from the northern belligerents. Because many Scots lived in the South, Virginia came up with the Bars and Stars—an adapted version of the Scottish Covenanters Flag with the X-cross or St. Andrews Cross. The South saw the X-cross as a fitting symbol for their cause because St. Andrew refused to say "Caesar is Lord." His noble confession and consequent crucifixion became a symbol of resistance to tyranny. Because the South refused to submit to the tyranny of Abraham Lincoln, they took up the mantle, "No king, but King Jesus," and "Resistance to Tyranny is Service to God."

In no way does the Bars and Stars stand for slavery!! It stands for "No king, but King Jesus," and lawful resistance to a totalitarian state. They did not die for a failed cause, rather, they exhausted themselves in fighting for the most noble of causes—freedom from tyranny.

The great question: Do modern Christians believe that Jesus is even a king?

In this crucial hour of our nation's history it is past time that the true Christians assert total allegiance to the Kingship of our Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ. The crisis of the ages demands that we renew the historic Battle-Cry of our Christian Forefathers –

"WE HAVE NO KING BUT KING JESUS!"

Patrick Henry, a man fully engaged during his era stated, "It cannot be emphasized too strongly or too often that this great nation was founded, not by religionists, but by Christians; not on religions, but on the gospel of Jesus Christ!" And, the hub in the middle of these Christian doctrines is that Christ is King, Lord, and Master

John Jay, the first Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court, reported:

"Providence has given to our people the choice of their rulers, and it is the duty...of our Christian nation to select and prefer Christians for their rulers."

And, by Christian(s), the Justice referred to men who acknowledge the authority of King Jesus.

Our forefathers believed a Biblical Truth that Jesus in the only rightful King, and it resulted in their confrontation with the ungodly political, social and religious authorities.

However, there are many forces that seek to move men off this holy ground.

As the truth of the Crown rights of Christ were lost in Europe, Marxism spread like wildfire among Jews. Madmen came to power. Lenin, Stalin, Mao Tse Tung demanded total allegiance of their "subjects" at the expense of individual God-given rights of personal liberties, political philosophy and religious beliefs.

In the Twentieth Century alone, over 180 million people lost their lives due to secular governments where leaders saw themselves as some kind of god.

Even in this very hour, the average American struggles to put food on the table. Prayer and Bible reading are no longer embraced in the classrooms of America. Maniacs refuse to protect the lives of innocent unborn children. Radical feminists turned women against men; mothers against sons; and wives against husbands. Roughly, half of marriages end in divorce. Porn spread its seeds of destruction. Sodomites and transvestites and Lesbians demand an audience in the public schools. Gender bender doctrines twist the minds of our youth. Disrespectful, narcissistic Black punks march through the streets shouting, "Black Lives Matter." Psychopaths permit the invasion of Muslims into the West. Bombing, murders, and rapes dominate the news.

And, the saddest fact of all is that we do not hear Christians chanting, "No king, but King Jesus."

Rather, we hear Christian leaders encouraging compromised Christians to vote for the Lesser of Two Evils.

Our world is in a mess! Isn't it time to return to the doctrines that produced responsibility and freedom?

"No king, but King Jesus!"?

REFERENCES

Holy Scripture

1 Corinthians 7:23	506	Habakkuk 3	248
1 Kings 12	390	Hebrews 11:32-38	403
1 Kings 21:20	212	Hosea 5:6.....	171
1 Peter 2:11	634	I John 5:21	619
1 Peter 2:21	527	I Kings 12	283
1 Samuel 16	293	Isaiah 10:1-2	101
1 Samuel 8:10-20.....	88	Isaiah 19.....	278
2 Chronicles 12	331	Isaiah 36:1-20	128
2 Chronicles 23:13	320	Isaiah 56:10	345
2 Chronicles 28:19	183	Isaiah 9:16	164
2 Kings 1.....	354	James 1:8.....	639
2 Kings 10:30	385	James 4:12	552
2 Kings 17:7, 8	113	Jeremiah 17:16	269
2 Kings 19:20	343	Jeremiah 17:9.....	444
2 Kings 23	378	Jeremiah 22:4-5.....	326
2 Samuel 23:11-12	181	Jeremiah 33:22	35
2 Timothy 2:15	528	Jeremiah 44	255
Acts 12	485	Jeremiah 5:29.....	338
Acts 17: 6-7	513	John 2:15.....	487
Acts 4:12	490	Judges 3:2.....	288
Amos 5:6	465	Luke 1:35	480
Amos 6:12.....	189	Luke 20:22	591
Amos 7:13.....	208	Luke 6:11	472
Colossians 2:18-19.....	537	Mark 11:12-14, 21.....	611
Colossians 2:8	628	Matthew 10:34	475
Daniel 4:30	99	Matthew 15:1-8	478
Deuteronomy 17:12-20.....	150	Matthew 17:24-27.....	573
Deuteronomy 21:1-7	180	Matthew 6:10.....	24
Deuteronomy 32	76	Matthew 6:24	509
Deuteronomy 6:4.....	49	Matthew 6:9-10	45
Ephesians 4:6.....	520	Numbers 11:25	169
Esther 1:20	221	Numbers 31.....	363
Exodus 1:8	312	Proverbs 29:2	125
Exodus 18:21.....	166	Psalms 101	459
Exodus 20:13.....	367	Psalms 146	439
Exodus 20:17.....	298	Psalms 19:7	426
Exodus 20:3	48	Psalms 2.....	17
Exodus 21:12-14	195	Psalms 24	447
Ezekiel 34:8	329	Psalms 24:1	33
Faith in the Fight	416	Psalms 31:18	198
Genesis 12:12-13	395	Psalms 37	139
Genesis 9:1-6	67	Psalms 46:10	135
Genesis 9:5	199	Psalms 75	452
Habakkuk 1	228	Psalms 76	58
Habakkuk 2:20.....	242	Psalms 76:10	436
		Psalms 94:20	421
		Revelation 1:5	645

Revelation 12:10	10
Revelation 15:3	656
Romans 13	542
Romans 13:1	494
Romans 13:6	562
Zephaniah 1:7, 2:3	359

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Biblical Standards for Civil Rulers, Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry, SEDM website.

Fake/De Facto Government, Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry, SEDM website -- <https://sedm.org/fake-de-facto-government/>

Edward Griffin, **The Creature from Jekyll Island**, 4th Edition, (2008), American Media, CA.

Francis A. Schaeffer, **How Should We then Live**, Fleming H. Revell Co., New Jersey, (1971).

Gary DeMar, **You've Heard It Said**, (1991), Wolgeuth & Hyatt Publishers, Brentwood, Tennessee.

George Eldon Ladd, **A Theology of the New Testament**, (1974), Eerdmans, Grand Rapids, MI.

John R. Rushdoony, **Institutes of Biblical Law** (1973).

John Weaver Sermons, sermonaudio.com.

Peter Kershaw, **In Caesar's Grip**, (2000), Heal Our Land Ministries, Branson Missouri.

Sanders, J.O. (1971). **The Incomparable Christ**. Moody Press, Chicago.

Stockton, B. (2022). **The Five Pillars of the Gladiator Gospel 2.0**. Family Guardian: <https://nikeinsights.famguardian.org/forums/topic/five-pillars-of-the-gladiator-gospel-e-book/>

Stockton, **the Crisis of Church Incorporation**, Form #13.017, NikeInsights.famguardian.org/publications.

Stockton, **Commentary on Romans 13**, Form #17.056, NikeInsights.famguardian.org/publications.

The IRS Hoax, Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry, SEDM website.

<https://nikeinsights.famguardian.org/>

<https://famguardian.org/>

<https://sedm.org/>

ⁱ Martin Luther King, “A Letter from the Birmingham Jail”, April 16, 1963.

ⁱⁱ Blackstone, (Internet Resource: “William Blackstone Commentaries on Law”, Geocities.com.